Who We Are.
Stories of American Families

UPDATED
June 2026

William Dennis Hendricson

Synopsis

Who We Are, Stories of American Families is the tale of nine families that blended through marriage and other relationships over the centuries into the current 21st century family of William Dennis Hendricson, that's me, and my wife, Susan Lienau Hendricson.

As these families evolved over time, they cross paths with the famous and infamous who are highlighted in the stories told in this book: **Willem Frederic George Lodewijk van der Dussen**, a founding father of modern genealogy in Europe and first chronicler of Hendricson family history; **Maarten Schenck Van Nydeggan Hendriksz**, one of Europe's most villainous mercenary soldiers and his half-brother **Lambert Barentse Hendriksz**, Holland's most revered naval hero; **Peter Stuyvesant**, peg-legged soldier-politician leader of the New Amsterdam colony; legendary pirate of the Caribbean **Captain Henry Morgan**; ill-fated **Miles Morgan**, vanished in the Carolina's a decade before the Lost Colony of Roanoke; **Molly Reeve Webster**, the Witch of Hadley, catalyst for the Salem Witch Trials; and her nemesis, scientist, public health champion and witchcraft-monger, **Cotton Mather**; the mystic idealist, **William Penn,** whose political concepts guided Jefferson, Franklin and other founding fathers; **George Washington**, need I say more; **Daniel Boone**; legendary frontiersman; **Molly Pitcher**, Revolutionary War heroine; **General Daniel Morgan**, hero of Saratoga and Cowpens in the Revolutionary War; British **General Charles Cornwallis**, the most renowned Redcoat commander of the Revolutionary War; **Moses Black Harris**, famed Mountain Man of the American West; **Abner Doubleday,** Civil War General and rumored founder of baseball; **WZ Ripley**, a catalyst for 20th century White Supremacy dogma; **Ernie Davis,** Heisman Trophy winning college football player; **George Preston Marshall,** key founder of the National Football League in the U.S. and ardent segregationist; **Howard Cosell**, America's leading sports journalist in the 1970s; **John Lewis,** prominent U.S. Civil Rights leader; and **Shirley Povich**, Pulitzer prize winning sportswriter; with guest appearances by other notables including **Christopher Columbus**, on his first approach to the Americas; **Roger Maris**, U.S. baseball legend; the rock band **Blood, Sweat and Tears;** voting rights advocate **Evelyn T. Butts**; rockabilly and country western star **Jerry Lee Lewis**; film director **Oliver Stone**; and best-selling author of *On Death and Dying*, **Elizabeth Kubler-Ross.**

However, *Who We Are* does not center on these luminaries; they make cameo appearances, engaging various family members, past and present, in unique experiences, or serving as catalysts for societal phenomenon that influenced the lives of my ancestors. Instead, *Who We Are* is about people who did the best they could to build a safe, happy and prosperous life for themselves in America beginning in the 17th century. The individuals in the nine families who first immigrated to America were average folk, working class for the most part, with no royal connections or inherited wealth to prop them up. Two of the original immigrants came from merchant families that previously had accrued wealth in Europe, but through financial misfortune and political turmoil, had drifted so far away from prosperity that America was seen as their only recourse. Other original immigrants were from families that for generations had known only the meager existence of tenant farm labor. The first immigrants in two other families arrived on legal missions as young, unmarried men, and elected to seek their fortune in America rather than return to uncertain futures in Europe. *Who We Are* tells the stories of the people in these nine families before and after their arrival in America. All families have extraordinary stories, and collectively, these stories shape society.

About the Cover

Throughout history, majestic old oaks, with their massive limb structure, have been used to visually represent the composition and inter connections of families. I chose an oak for the cover art of this family history because of the connection of a particular oak with the early development of the Hendricson family in North America. For nearly 200 years, a Great White Oak was a principle landmark of the Rutgers University campus in New Brunswick, New Jersey. Before its disease riddled demise, the Rutgers Oak was described as majestic and awe-inspiring. The oak appears below in a photo taken by a Rutgers University student in 1963, shortly before the centuries old, but much weakened tree, was cut down after several large limbs fell to the ground. The Rutgers Oak is generally perceived to be the inspiration for poet Joyce Kilmer's 1914 collection of poems known as *Trees* (i.e., *I think I shall never see a poem as lovely as a tree),* the best selling book of poetry in U.S. history.

Distant Hendricson ancestors (then Hendrickson with K) played a role in the origins of Rutgers University. In the 1700s, members of the New Jersey Hendricksons sold a substantial parcel of land, which included the Great White Oak, to the Dutch Reform Church, which founded the University and built a campus on this land. Since the opening of the University in 1766, the Rutgers Oak served as gathering point at the center of the campus. It was a popular spot for student activities, wedding celebrations, picnics, and class reunions. After the first college football game between Rutgers University and the College of New Jersey (Princeton since 1896) on November 6, 1869, which Rutgers won 6-4, both teams *"repaired to the Great White Oak to congratulate each other on the competition."* (*Rutgers Footballers Carry the Field Over CNJ*; *Daily Targum*, November 9, 1869; *DeLassus D. Princeton Yearly Results-1869. College Football Data Warehouse. Accessed on June 10, 2024 via Internet Archive. www.archive.org*).

A photo of the Rutgers Oak shortly before it was cut down for safety reasons in 1963. The photo was taken by a Rutgers student working for the Associated Press. The photo and a story about Kilmer's poem appeared in U.S. and Canadian newspapers.
Image source: Associated Press Wire Press Photos. Newsroom Rutgers University. www.sebsnjaesnews.rutgers.edu. July 11, 2016. Accessed: 7/21/2024.

A side note: *Targum is an ancient Hebrew word referring to interpretation, translation and especially, paraphrasing, of the Old Testament. In the 19th century, Rutgers University students used targum as slang for a crib sheet (i.e., brief synopsis of a lecture). The student newspaper adopted the term to refer to a brief synopsis of campus news.*
Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 3/21/2024.

Cover image source: Licensed reproduction of image from iStock by Getty Images. Accessed: October 24, 2024.

Table of Contents

Synopsis 2

About the Cover 3

Prologue 7-9

Dedication 10

Chapter I – Context **11**

What is Genealogy? 11
The Nine Families 12
Purpose 12
Sources 12-20
Availability of Information 20-21
Scope and Uncertainty 21-22
Sources of Images 22
Foundational Work by Harold and Mildred Hendricson 22-23
Organization 24-25
Hendricson-Lienau Family Tree..... 26-27

Chapter II – Family Lineage Tables **28**

Roster of Individuals included in the Family History Lineage Tables 29-31
Hendricson 32-54
Morgan 55-66
Maris 67-74
Dennis 75-90
Goodman 91-103
Lienau 104-116
Girault 117-128
McAnespy 129-131
McManus 132-133

Chapter III - Pre-Immigration (Europe and England) Family History **134**

Hendricson 135-149
Morgan 150-157
Maris 158-160
Dennis 161-164
Goodman 165-168
Lienau 169-171
Girault 172-176
McAnespy 177-179
McManus 180-182

Summary Table of Pre-Immigration History of the Nine Families 183

Agenda For Nine Families Ancestral Tour 184-186

Chapter IV - Stories of Family Members in North America		**187**
Overview		187-188
Exploring America	Cornelius Lambert Hendrickson (1572-1651)	189-208
Here There Be Witches	Mary Reeve Webster (1618-1698); mother of Anna Goodman, who was wife of Benjamin Goodman Jr.	209-214
Beaver Pelt Economics	Hendrick Willemz Hendriksz (1636-1707)	215-224
The Morgans Go West	Morgan (1688-1767), Catherine (1692-1773) & Zack Morgan (1734-1795)	225-233
Okey and Friends	Okey Hendrickson (1734-1830)	234-257
Dining with Cornwallis	Eleanor Lindley Maris (1749-1783)	258-263
One Foggy Morning	Johann (John) Lienau (1808-1876)	264-279
Oregon or Bust	William Firman Hendricson (1824-1908)	280-310
Bright Lights of the Big City	Theodore Stefano Girault (1873-1943) & Bessie McAnespy Girault (1874-1946)	311-320
Harold & Mildred Go to War	Harold Hendricson (1919-1992) & Mildred Dennis (1919-2019)	321-348
Going to Ballgames	William Hendricson (1948 -)	349-374
Billy	William Carey Janes (1947-1967), my cousin	375-417
Becoming Who We Are	Susan (1949 -) and William Hendricson (1948 -)	418-439
Chapter V – Post Script, San Antonio		**440-446**
Chapter VI - Information Sources Used to Write This History		**447-474**
About the Author		**475**

Index to Notes

The histories of the nine families are amplified with "Notes On" discussion of circumstances that influenced these ancestors or the era in which they lived.

Concept of History 11
Gilded Age and 19th Century Genealogy 14-18
WZ Ripley, Author of *The Races of Europe* 18-19
Blyenbeck House 35
Bosworth Field 55-56
Book of Llandaff 58
David Morgan 59-60
Levi Morgan 61-62
Maris Home House in Springfield Pennsylvania 68
Free States in Northwest Territory 71
Roger Maris Connection 74
Lowden (Frenchtown) Washington and the Battle of Frenchtown 82-84

Manifest Destiny and Displacement of Indigenous Native Americans 85
Tory (British Loyalist) Militia During the Revolutionary War 95-96
Slavery in America 98
Oregon Land Donation Act of 1850 99-100
Radio in the 1920s and 1930s 110-112
Fille du Roi Immigration Program 118-119
Ashkenazi Jews Migration to Northern Europe 136-137
Dutch Surnames in 16th Century 141-142
Eighty Years War (War of Dutch Independence) 145-146
17th Century Transatlantic Travel to New Amsterdam 147
First Morgan Immigration to North America 155-156
Domesday Book and Magni Rotulli 158
French Huguenots 159
Quaker Beliefs and Practice in 17th Century England 160
William Penn and the Pennsylvania Colony 163-164
English Civil Wars 167-168
British Home Child Service 175-176
Surname McNellis 182
Historical Sources for 17th Century Dutch Exploration in North America 189-190
Wampum 196
Initial Encounters of European Colonists and Native Americans 204-206
Columbus' Trip to Iceland and Maybe Points West 206-208
Cotton Mather 213-214
Historical Sources for Pelt Smuggling and British Capture of Fort Orange 222-223
Beaver Pelt Industry 223-224
Legend of Molly Pitcher at the Battle of Monmouth 243-247
King's Highway 256-257
Star of the West's Supply Mission to Fort Sumter 276-278
Mysterious Ellen (Ella) Lienau 278-279
Wagon Trains 305-309
African and African-American Soldier's Participation in World War I 317-318
American Defense Society 318-319
Black Tom Island Munitions Explosion 319-320
V-Mail During World War Two 321-323
U.S. Army Point System at the End of World War II 331
Camp Clark and the Black Seminole Indian Fighters 335-337
George Preston Marshall and the Fight to Integrate the Redskins 360-364
Challenge to the Virginia Poll Tax 371-372
Nation's First Draft Lottery 376-379
U.S. Entry into the Vietnam Civil War 385-389
Armored Personal Carriers (APCs) in the Vietnam War 406-407
Death and Dying..... 427-429

Prologue

Genealogy and geriatrics are fellow travelers in the alphabet and in activity. After retirement, Individuals who are motivated to explore the evolution of their family have more time, and more urgency, to undertake genealogy as a hobby than during their family and career building years. Thus, deep dives into the question of "who and why we are the way we are" are often delayed until late in life, when, perhaps, there is too little time left to apply the lessons learned from this endeavor for oneself. Yet, many amateur geriatric genealogists aspire to leave behind "take-home messages" that hopefully will be read and pondered by unknown others in the future. These take-home messages include: **heritage** - how did we get to be who we are, as individuals, as a family, and beyond that, collectively as a society; **legacy** - what worth and lessons are we leaving behind that may benefit others in the future; and, **finality** - the urge to wrap things up. My wife, Susan Lienau Hendricson (1949 -), is a single child, and there are no male grandchildren from our union, so both the Lienau and Hendricson lines will come to an end within the 21st century. This sounds dour but it isn't. New families will emerge from what remains of our family. It's the way of history: lines of families form, are shaped by adversity, usually, but not always, adapt and evolve, more often than not flourish, and then scatter into new family groupings or insular lives, and the nuclear family fades away. At a micro level, that's the story of families; at a macro level, it's the story of nations.

I spent most of my 50-year work career doing precise scientific (biomedical) writing: research grants, research reports (chapters and journal articles), and academic governance documents needed for accreditation, compliance, strategic planning, institutional assessment, and program management. Most of this writing followed a prescribed, or at least an expected (customary) format with minimal leeway for variance. Because of my parent's fascination with genealogy, which you will read about later in this book, and my love of history, especially odd and unpredictable events and personalities that so often profoundly shaped the path of communities and nations, I made an effort over the years to read several family histories that my parents used as source materials for their research. I found them to be laudable works, undoubtedly the product of massive effort, but tough reading because they largely were comprised of long and chronologically organized lists of spousal partners and their many children; names, birth and death dates, place of birth, burial sites, but very little, if any, information that made these names on a page come alive as real people, and very few pictures, even for ancestors who lived in the age of photography, 1850 to the present. Most of these genealogies followed a prescribed template for presenting the name, date and place information that reminded me of the prescriptive writing I did for much of my career. Much factual information is communicated in these family histories, but there is no sense of a journey, and no sense of aspirations and their catalysts, or tragedies and their impact.

After promising my mother that I would use the family history documentation she and my father had created to write a book to be shared initially within the family, and then with others outside our familiar circle, I set a goal to produce a history that allowed our ancestors to come alive as people worthy of attention. I hoped that this approach would help our current family and others who might read this book appreciate these people of the past, and understand *why they were they way they were*. The leap from names, dates and places to an enriched history based on stories of our ancestors' life experiences involved three years of deep digging. The

detective work needed to assemble a historical record of "what came before" was engaging and satisfying in so many ways, akin to creating the final chapter of a page-turner novel that pulls diverse story lines together, and it fulfilled my lifelong desire to do writing that was allowed to deviate from a prescribed path – to chase a story wherever it went, even if it spun off into tangential events, as long as that diversion helped explain the life of an ancestor, or the circumstances in which they lived.

For me, the most exciting outcomes were all the small details and fortunate and unfortunate happenstances that comprise history, and often, make all the difference in outcomes. Equally compelling are the inexplicable connections between people, dreams and opportunities that lead to the events that we call history. In the past three years, I found my self discarding old concepts about the formation of our nation that, under inspection, were not sustainable against the actual historical record, i.e., the truth of things. I also found myself taking on new perspectives about how our nation came to be, and why we are the way we are – divided and contentious. In 2025, almost any commentary on the state of our nation begins with the over-used and cliché observation that we have become a divided society in recent times, with widely disparate interpretations of the past and differing visions of the future. In reality, this is not a new phenomenon; this is who we are now, and this is who we have always been. Americans never have been of a single mind. From the early 1600s to the present day, what we now know as America has been the proverbial two-sided coin: inspirational, heroic, innovative and persevering on one side; amoral, racist, larcenous, and violent on the other. Just as both sides of a nickel create its five cents of worth, both sides of America blend together to create who we were, and who we are now; not all admirable and virtuous, not all embarrassing and unsavory.

Stories

History comes alive as an added value to our lives through the act of discovery, the search for knowing, but more importantly, through the process of making connections among circumstances, events, people and beliefs, and then sharing these understandings and connections – **telling a story**. The "Notes On" sections that you will read in this book tell tales, albeit in abridged form, of circumstances, events, people and beliefs of which I had no knowledge, or just surface awareness as I pursued the task of learning about my ancestors. But these circumstances shaped the lives of past generations, and linger with us still, shaping why we are the way we are today. The most exciting days in developing this book, when I couldn't wait to hop up in the morning, grab some coffee, get to the keyboard and start typing, were devoted to writing my interpretation of these shaping factors. What I will remember the most vividly about the past three years is the challenge of figuring out how to capture in words what I had learned about historical figures with multiple defining characteristics, admirable and horrific, or, discovered about belief systems and values profoundly at odds with my present sensibilities. The daily challenge of creating a story from these discoveries and new perspectives drove this book to the finish line.

The philosophy of *Who We Are* can be summed up as follows:

- Much of the true catalysts for societal change move beneath the surface of events. Things that happen without noticeable consequence in their own time often shape the lives of generations that follow. Accordingly, anonymous people have often moved history.

- History is created by two intertwined elements. **Knowledge of what actually happened in the past** based on evidence derived from sound and objective scholarship, which allows meaningful assessment of events and trends. However, **the ways we remember the past, (stories, fables, legends)** are often just as powerful as what actually happened, and can provide the context to help understand *the way we were and the way we are now*.

Book Format

I organized this book around my pathway of discovery, the starting point of which was learning about my parents' fascination with genealogy. In doing so, I gaining an appreciation for genealogy as a passionate pastime for millions of people, as a major industry, and as a social status signal. Then, I digested what my parents discovered about the history of the Hendricsons and their connections to many other families over the centuries, and read my parents' list of unknowns, which became the launch pad for my own research. Accordingly, Chapter I contextualizes the task of writing a family history, explores the growth of genealogy in the U.S. as a hobby, and examines its uses and abuses. Chapter II introduces you to the 150 ancestors within nine families who moved the story forward; in essence, if this was a movie script, they are the protagonists and antagonists; some of these people play major roles, while others have brief cameos. Yes - 150 is a lot of people, but I felt it was important for readers to appreciate the complexity of familial growth and see how each family evolved and eventually intertwined. In Chapter III, you will learn about the origins of these families in continental Europe and Great Britain with focus on the family members who first made the transatlantic leap. Chapter IV, the longest component, presents stories of family members in North America who experienced unique circumstances or made decisions that profoundly influenced following generations. Chapter V brings the Hendricson chronology forward to 2025, and Chapter VI indicates the data sources and literature used to write this book.

For Chapter II, where the cast of players is introduced, I used a template that communicates the standard factoids, but also provides a synopsis of what I learned about who these people were and what they did, sometimes told in just a sentence or two for those in the distant and dim past, and in greater detail for more recent or more chronicled ancestors. An example of the template appears below.

<table>
<tr><th colspan="6">Maris Generation 8</th></tr>
<tr><th>Name</th><th>Life Span</th><th>Place of Birth And Death</th><th>Spouse Name</th><th>Life Span</th><th>Place of Birth and Death</th></tr>
<tr><td rowspan="2">Aaron Maris Jr.</td><td rowspan="2">1807-1872</td><td>B: Cane Creek, NC</td><td rowspan="2">Keziah Millis</td><td rowspan="2">1807-1885</td><td>B: Guilford, NC</td></tr>
<tr><td>D: Winfield, Kansas</td><td>D: Winfield, Kansas</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="6">Children: Married in 1826 in Orange, Indiana (near Indianapolis), Aaron Jr. and Keziah had five children including Edward Maris.</td></tr>
<tr><td colspan="6">Synopsis: Aaron and Keziah lived in Parke County, Indiana and Douglas, Illinois near Champaign – Urbana until 1870. Aaron started out as a farm hand, and accumulated enough money to buy farm and pasture property of his own. At age 63, for unknown reasons, they relocated to the community of Winfield in Cowley County, Kansas, near Wichita. Aaron died a year after arriving in Kansas and Keziah remained there until her death in 1885. Aaron and Keziah appear to have been the last actively practicing Quakers in the Maris line.</td></tr>
</table>

Dedication

This book would not exist without the support, nudging, questions and suggestions of my beloved wife and partner, Susan Lienau Hendricson, who provided the space, accepted the snail's pace of research that such a project requires, and tolerated my monopolization of the one desktop computer in our home.

Susan Lienau Hendricson

Chapter I - Context

What is Genealogy?

Genealogy is defined as the study of family origins and history. A genealogical study seeks to identify the starting point for a line of genetically inter-related people who comprise a distinct family, and identify chronological relationships among individuals comprising this family, moving from the past to the present. The outcome of this exploration is called a **family history.**

Accordingly, this document is a ***family history*** **for William Dennis Hendricson** and **Susan Lienau Hendricson**. For each of the families, identified below, which contributed to our union, I worked forward from ancestors as far back in history as could be confidently identified to January 2, 1971 when we married. Without DNA analysis, I cannot be 100% certain about relationships, but have high confidence in the lineage described in this document, based on research over the past three years and research previously completed by my parents.

=======

Notes on the Concept of History: The modern word "history" is derived from the Greek *histor* (learned, wise person) and *historia* (investigation leading to an account or narrative), which were incorporated into Latin, and centuries later emerged in Old English as *istoria* and French as *historie*. The concept of history has been defined variously as:

The memory of things said and done. (*Carl L. Becker; Everyman His Own Historian. American Historical Review. 1931; 37(2): 221-236. www.historians.org. Accessed: May 19, 2024)*

History is organized memory of past events, and the organization is all-important. History is not another name for the past, but rather stories about the past. (Henry Steele Commager; in *Jumonville N. Henry Steele Commager: Midcentury Liberalism and the History of the Present. Chapel Hill NC: University of North Carolina Press. 1999)*

History is understanding the past. Whoever wishes to foresee the future must consult the past; for human events ever resemble those of preceding times. Men ever shall be animated by the same passions, and thus they necessarily have the same results. (Niccolo Machiavelli; in *Black R. Machiavelli: From Radical to Reactionary. London: Reakton Books. 2022*)

A chronological record of significant events, such as those affecting a nation, an institution or a population of people, often including an explanation of their causes. *(Merriam Webster Dictionary. www.merriam-webster.com. Accessed: May 20, 2024)*

The study of events that occurred in the past, particularly in human affairs. *(Oxford Languages. www.languages.oup.com. Accessed: May 20, 2024)*

History is who we are and why we are the way we are.
(David C. McCullough, from a speech at Wesleyan College on June 2, 1984 and quoted in *Canty-Jones EE. "History is Who We Are and Why We Are the Way We Are." The Oregon Historical Society Blog – June 2, 2020. www.ohs.org. Accessed: May 20, 2024)*

As readers may have already surmised, David McCullough's definition is my favorite.

=======

The Nine Families

When Susan and I married in 1971, it was the culmination of the life journeys of 150 people over a thousand years in Europe and North America within nine families that comprise four paternal or maternal groupings. The contemporary surnames of these families are listed below.

- **Hendricson – Morgan – Maris:** Bill's paternal lineage
- **Dennis – Goodman:** Bill's maternal lineage
- **Lienau – McManus:** Susan's paternal lineage
- **Girault – McAnespy:** Susan's maternal lineage

Purpose

The primary goal of *Who We Are* is to tell the stories of the nine families that brought Susan and I together: verifiable truths, probable truths (but not completely nailed down), mysteries, myths, exaggerations (tall tales), rumors and speculations – all of what comprises the story, traditions and even the mythology of a family. A complimentary goal is to pass on the enjoyment of discovering and writing these stories to others who may read this book. Hopefully, other genealogists can use bits of this story to build their own family history, or use the format of this history to share the story of their families' journey.

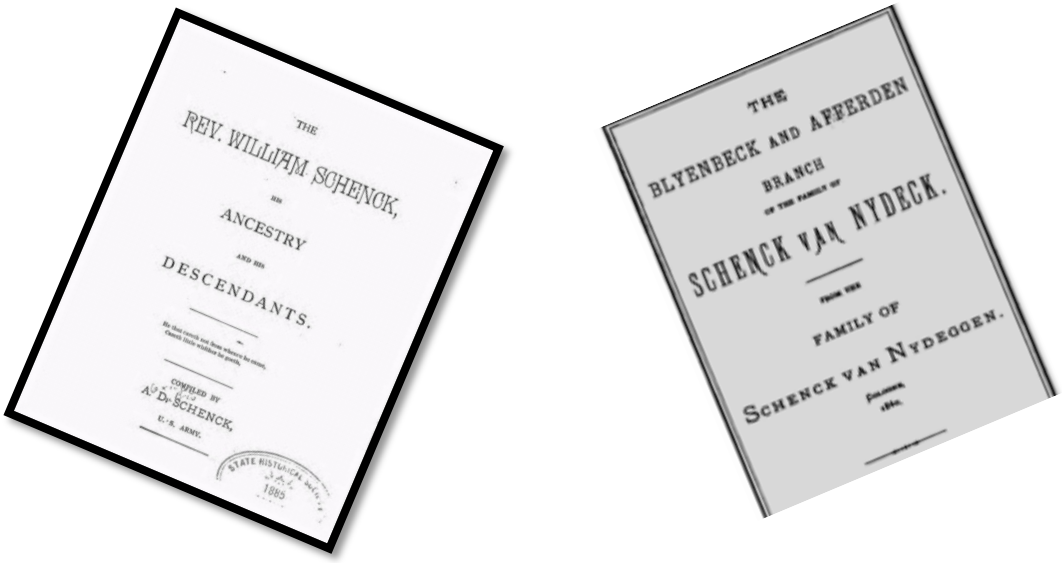
To tell the story of the origins and history of these nine families, I dug into the tales and traditions I have heard throughout my life, and attempted to answer the "journalism 6 questions" (who, what, when, where, how and as feasible, why), fill-in missing details, and explore rumors and other assertions that seemed more like fables than reality, but just-the-same, formed an important part of family lore. As I explored these questions, I caught the genealogy bug: the thrill of finally understanding the twisty, sometimes hard to believe, improbable, road to the present time, or the excitement of learning that a mysterious ancestor shrouded in uncertainty actually was a real person who did some of the things that family lore has ascribed to him or her. These were the "Wow Moments" that more than compensated for the drudgery of endless document checking, the frustration of dead ends, and the futility of false leads.

Sources

The sources used to explore our family history are indicated in Chapter VI: Information Sources. Citations for a majority of these sources appear within the book. In an era when many Americans are comfortable with ignoring or misconstruing well documented historical facts and trends, or simply making up new, and often fraudulent data to support their contentions (i.e., alternative facts), I felt it was important to show my cards by prominently displaying the sources that were used to document family history and to describe the social, religious, political and economic circumstances these families encountered. Numerous full citations admittedly break up the text and may increase the amount of reading, but represent an effort to make clear "where the history came from." I also hope that some of these citations will be useful to genealogists in other families who seek to explore the experiences of their ancestors.

These sources included 22 family histories written between 1843 and 2016 (identified in Chapter VI **by bold font**), data obtained from my parents who devoted more than a decade to genealogy research, reports by community historical societies, online genealogical resources, and my original research. Many data sources were reviewed such as the U.S. Federal Census

Data 1790 to present, reports of the U.S. National Archives and Records Administration, the Internet Surname Database, the U.S. Index of Death Certificates 1735-1948, colonial and U.S. immigration arrival reports, state, county and church (including Quaker Meeting House) reports of births, marriages, deaths and property purchases, property and business tax rolls, census reports, prison / reform school records, newspaper articles, obituaries, dairies and letters, publications of genealogical societies, and numerous history books and historical association websites. In particular, the later two sources enhanced understanding of the circumstances that influenced these families and the decisions they made.



Examples of Hendricson family histories written in the 19th century. The preambles of 19th century genealogies sometimes started with vile, racist screed about the superiority of the Teutonic blood coursing through the veins of European ancestors.

A side note: *The original Hendricson family surname was Schenck, later morphed to Schenck van Nydeck, and ultimately evolving to variations of Hendricks, Hendrickzoon and Hendrickson. It did not become Hendricson until 1845. The story of these surname changes is told throughout this history.*

For my Schenck ancestors, a principle source for the history of the family in Europe is a 256 page hand-written document, with more than 100 pages of accompanying illustrations of people and places, researched over three decades and ultimately completed in 1872 by a Dutch military officer by the name of Willem Frederic George Lodewijk van der Dussen (1816-1878). At the time of his retirement, he was army commandant of the city of Nijmegan. Colonel van der Dussen had a deep interest in Dutch and northern German (Cologne area) heritage, leading him to investigate and write a number of histories of Dutch and German families including the Schenck van Nydecks. After retirement from the military, van Dussen became a leading genealogist in the Netherlands and established a journal devoted to the science of genealogy, which included articles on the histories of numerous Dutch families. Colonel van der Dussen's history of the Schencks was apparently available to other individuals pursuing genealogy research in various versions as it evolved during years of writing. Two prominent Schenck family historians cited van der Dussen as a source before his tome on the Schencks was placed in the

Netherlands Genealogical Library at The Hague in 1872. The Library reproduced multiple hand written copies of van Dussen's work and ultimately typeset and printed an unknown number of copies, which were slowly added to library collections in Europe and the U.S. including the Brooklyn, NY, Museum Libraries and Archives.

Source: *van der Dussen WFGL (Willem Frederic George Lodewijk). Genealogy of the Old and Very Illustrious Family of Schenck van Nydeck (Nydegge) Beginning with Year 1368. Nijmegan, Netherlands: 256 hand-written pages (self-printed). 1872. Housed at Brooklyn, NY Museum Libraries. Special Collections. www.brooklynmuseum.org. Accessed: December 1, 2022.*

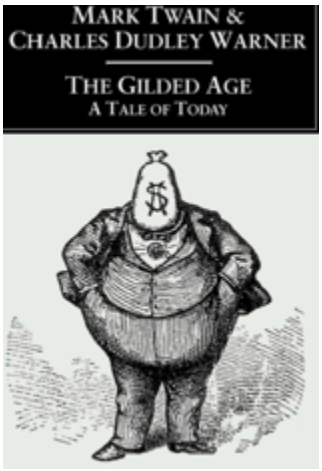
A page from WFGL van der Dussen's history of the Schenck family in Europe, which was placed in the Genealogy Library of The Hague in 1872. van der Dussen's history of pre-immigration Schenck family events is generally consistent with my own findings as reported in this book. *Image source: van der Dussen WFGL, 1872 (see prior citation).*

A four-generation Schenck van Nydeck family tree, created in the late 1860s by Colonel van der Dussen.
Image source: van der Dussen WFGL, 1872 (see prior citation).

=======

Notes on The Gilded Age and 19th Century Genealogy: Interest in exploring family history exploded in the U.S. during the Gilded Age, which bridged the 30-year span from the end of Reconstruction in 1877 to the early 1900s. The label for this era was derived from the novel, *The Gilded Age: A Tale of Today*, co-authored by Mark Twain and Charles Dudley Warner, which lampooned the "gilding of the lily" extravagance of the wealthy. As depicted in this novel, the upper crust of Gilded Age society benefitted financially from political corruption, placed high priority on acquiring and protecting elite social status and indulged in flashy displays of newly acquired wealth. (*Twain M, Warner CD. The Gilded Age: A Tale of Today. Hartford, CT: American Publishing Company. 1873)* Gilded Age wealth was stimulated in large part by the creation of a management class for the nations' burgeoning "big six industries": manufacturing, commercial

and residential construction, real estate (land speculation), municipal infrastructure (i.e., paved roads, bridges, tunnels, dams, sewers/drainage systems, train stations and ports), transportation (i.e., railroads and shipping) and banking/investment. Compensation for individuals in managerial or supervisory roles in these industries expanded dramatically, and individuals who owned these businesses became obscenely wealthy in comparison to the rest of society. Approximately 30% of Gilded Age households reaped the economic benefits of the ownership/management class. Forty percent of the public still lived at a basic day-to-day subsistence level, primarily as manual laborers, and the remaining 30%, mostly rural and mostly southern, attempted to survive punishing levels of poverty with episodic employment. (*Calhoun C. The Gilded Age: Perspectives on Origins of Modern America. Washington DC: Rowman and Littlefield Publications. 2007*)



Twain's only novel with a co-author satirized get rich quick land speculation schemes and political shenanigans in Washington D.C. that favored the wealthy at the expense of the poor. Although critical reviews at the time of publication were middling, the novel was reprinted more than 100 times in the 20th century, when it was often used to illustrate the social ill-effects of graft, corruption and materialism.

Image source: Project Gutenberg. www.gutenberg.org. Accessed: 3/3/2024.

The public's fascination with genealogy during the Gilded Age was driven by several factors. For many, affluence and the advent of the five-day workweek provided more money and time for hobbies and leisurely pursuits such as researching family history. The evolution of book publication technology made it relatively inexpensive to produce multiple copies of family histories for distribution to relatives and libraries, and advances in page printing also facilitated inclusion of pictures of current and past family members, a major catalyst for preparing genealogy books. Innovations in photography led to affordable personal cameras that created a national craze for recreational and vacation photography. The widespread availability of photo salons spurred the family portrait industry, and newly emerging photo restoration techniques allowed families to restore old tintypes of ancestors and make photographs of portraits that had hung on walls for decades, collecting dust. All communities, small and large, had a proliferation of newspapers that devoted extensive coverage to marriage and birth announcements, social events, family trips, school graduations, business start-ups, award ceremonies and obituaries, all of which were primary information staples for family historians in the Gilded Age. *(O'Hare S. Genealogy and History. Common Place: The Journal of Early American Life. www.commonplace.com. 2002: 22(3): 17-31. Accessed: April 26, 2024)*

The growth of the Church of Latter-Day Saints (LDS) and the creation of the Genealogical Society of Utah in the 1890s led to many "how to do genealogy" textbooks, and a popular journal devoted to genealogical research. Since its establishment in the early 19th century, the LDS community has been particularly enthusiastic about tracing family roots. Members of that

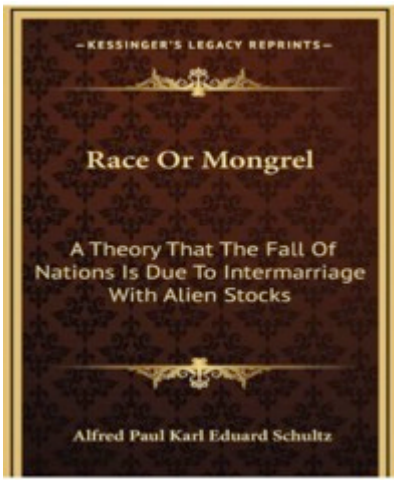
faith believe that all family members will reunite after this life, and thus it is important to be familiar with your ancestors so one can establish good relationships in the afterlife. (*Powell K. Why Mormons Research Their Ancestors. Learn Religions. www.learnreligions.com. Accessed: May 1, 2024)* In response to the rise of genealogy as a popular hobby, U.S. libraries and university's sponsored seminars on genealogical techniques that attracted large and enthusiastic crowds, and several genealogical speakers became celebrities. Genealogical and historical societies grew in size and scope during the Gilded Age, exerting considerable academic, cultural and political influence. For example, the American Historical Association (AHA) was established in 1884. The AHA's largest division was devoted to early American genealogy. The New England Historic Genealogical Society and its journal, the *New England Historical and Genealogical Register* were profoundly influential in guiding family history research and publication during the Gilded Age (*Hjorthen A. Reframing the History of American Genealogy: On the Paradigm of Democratization and the Capitalization of Longing. Genealogy. 2022; 6(1): 21-37. Accessed: May 1, 2024*). Membership in these societies was eagerly sought as a sign of elite social status, but difficult to obtain.

By the 1880s, many families had proceeded through multiple generations after immigration from other nations, and family founders were now in their 70s or 80s – individuals who may have experienced a transatlantic journey first hand, lived thru the turbulent era of Jacksonian Democracy, experienced or read about the exciting Frontiersmen era, participated in westward expansion, perhaps by wagon train, or survived the Civil War. To capture the oral history of these elders, it was fashionable for Gilded Age children or grandchildren to document ancestors' lives to learn family origins before this oral history was lost. In many ways, genealogical writing was an extension of nation's passion for diary writing in the 1880s and 90s, much of which was devoted to remberances of ancestors and siblings. *(Bunkers S. Midwestern Diaries and Journals. What Women Were, and Were Not, Saying in the Late 1800s. In: Studies in Autobiography. Olney J. NY: Oxford University Press. 1988)*

Other motives were at play in U.S. genealogy at the end of the 19th century. In addition to capturing oral history, a strong motivation was proving linkage to the Revolutionary War Era to distinguish the family historically and socially from the mass of 19th century immigrants flowing into the U.S., especially those with Mediterranean, Balkan, Irish and South American ancestry. *(Calhoun, 2007)* For example, the Daughters of the American Revolution and the Society of Mayflower Descendants were established in this era, as were many regional historical heritage societies such as the Daughters of the Republic of Texas. (*Des Jardins J. Women and the Historical Enterprise in America: Gender, Race and the Politics of Memory, 1880-1945. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press. 2003)*

Another genealogy catalyst was the desire to demonstrate that a family's lineage was comprised of pure Teutonic (i.e., White) blood without mongrelization, a crude post-Civil War, Jim Crow Era, label for people with multiracial heritage. *(DeSantis VP. The Shaping of Modern America, 1877-1920. Wheeling, Illinois: Forum Press. 1989)* White America in this era was profoundly concerned with racial and cultural differences, and overt anti-Black, anti-Semitic and anti-immigrant hostility pervaded Gilded Age society. *(Foner E. Reconstruction: America's Unfinished Revolution. NY: Harper and Row. 1988)*

This 1903 anti-immigration cartoon by Louis Dalrymple appeared in newspapers and news magazines. Mediterranean and Caribbean immigrants are depicted as rats swimming ashore. *Garcia MT. Nativist, Anti-Immigrant Sentiment in the U.S. Has a Long History. National Catholic Reporter (NCR). June 27, 2018. www.ncronline.org. Image source: New York Public Library Digital Collection. Accessed: 4/27/2024.*



The tenants of Alfred Schultz's *Race or Mongrel* were not considered outlandish in the Gilded Age. Schultz contended that: supremacy of Northern European Caucasians is indisputable; a nation's strength lies in racial purity; nations decline when Whites marry alien stock; and America will sink into decay unless immigration is rigorously restrained. Although denounced by some scientists, church leaders and politicians at that time, Schultz's theories were endorsed by racist organizations well into the 20th century. These concepts were uttered by numerous Republican candidates in the 2024 U.S. election cycle. *Schultz AP. Race or Mongrel. Boston MA: LC Page Co. 1908 (3rd ed.). Accessed: April 29, 2024 from CURIOSity Collection at Harvard University Library (www.CURIOSity.lib.harvard.edu).*

The inter-related pseudo-sciences of phrenology, craniometry and physiognomy contributed to the race and class-obsessed environment of the Gilded Age by providing a convenient, if bogus, scientific aura for those seeking evidence of the physical, intellectual or moral superiority of Caucasians, and support for the presumed social dangers of mongrelization. Phrenology involved measuring bumps and indentations in the skull to predict mental capacity and psychological traits. Craniometry led to judgments about an individual's intellectual prowess based on the shape, size and weight of the skull, and physiognomy allowed "investigators" to judge a person's character through analysis of facial expressions. Although widely debunked by the legitimate 19th century scientific community, phrenology, craniometry and physiognomy were held in high esteem among the general public, at least in part because purported research derived from these techniques supported assumptions about the racial superiority of those with northern European ancestry. For example, one of the popular books in 1885 was: *How to Read Character: A New Illustrated Hand-Book of Phrenology and Physiognomy, with a Descriptive Chart* by Samuel R. Wells *(New York: Fowler and Wells Publishers; Available from APA PsycBooks website www.psycnet.apa.org. Accessed: April 19, 2024)*

Phrenology captured the imagination of the Gilded Age public because the concepts were easy to understand and were displayed in colorful illustrations. For many people, phrenology was their first encounter with the supposed science of the brain. Ability to engage in discussion about phrenology was considered a sign of intellectual sophistication. *Stiles A. Popular Fiction and Brain Science in the Late Nineteenth Century. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press. 2012.*

Image source: Getty Images. www.gettyimages.com. Accessed: 5/1/2024.

Phrenologists set up shop in major cities during the Gilded Age and for a fee, delivered assessments of character and intellect. Not all people in the Gilded Age believed the pseudoscientific flim-flam of phrenology, including Ambrose Bierce, a prominent investigative journalist, who regaled against the practice in newspaper articles. *Morris R. Ambrose Bierce: Alone in Bad Company. London and NY: Oxford University Press. 1999.*

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 5/3/2024.

Toward the end of the Gilded Age, a best selling book by William Z. Ripley spread the unfounded theory of a superior sub-set of the Caucasian race, untainted by other bloodlines: the Nordic type, and described the attributes of what would eventually be called a Master Race: tall, thin, light skin, hair and eyes, long skulls (associated with high intelligence by craniometry advocates) competitive, truthful and individualistic. *(Ripley WZ. The Races of Europe: A Sociological Study. NY: Appleton and Company. 1899. Accessed via Google Books at www.books.google.com on April 18, 2024)*

=======

Notes on WZ Ripley, Author of *The Races of Europe*: Ripley's venture into racial anthropology was an odd detour from his primary career focus. After earning a PhD from Columbia University in economics in 1893, he held a series of academic and governmental appointments over the following 40 years related to management of industrial development with emphasis on interstate commerce and efficient use of railroads. He was a professor of economics at Harvard for decades and also taught at MIT and Columbia. Between 1900 and 1930, he was appointed to many federal commissions by Presidents Roosevelt, Taft, Wilson, Coolidge and Hoover to develop regulations for interstate transportation by railways, negotiate contracts and policies between railroad and coal companies, negotiate settlements for railway strikes, and establish protocols and railway worker protections when the eight hour workday was implemented in

1916. In the 1920s, he created a plan for coordinated and more efficient use of the nation's railways known as the Ripley Plan, which enhanced the influence of the Interstate Commerce Commission, on which he served for many years. He became a fierce critic of speculative Wall Street investment practices during the Roaring 20s and was a "voice in the wilderness" in 1925 when he predicted the crash of the stock market. Near the end of his life, he admitted that he had limited personal interest in anthropology, but hoped to take advantage of public fascination with racial stereotypes by researching and writing the *Races of Europe* to finance the college education of his children. The book was a best seller in the U.S. and England, so that goal was accomplished.

The book was championed in the U.S. by the noted race monger and white supremacist eugenicist, Madison Grant, author of *The Passing of the Great Race, or The Racial Basis of European History (1916; New York: Charles Scribner's Sons).* Grant's theories spawned widespread belief in the replacement theory, which contributed to a virulent anti-immigrant environment in the U.S. during and after World War I, and provided support for the racist screed of the Ku Klux Klan, which exerted profound social and political influence throughout the U.S. in the 1920s. In a different sphere of his life, Grant was an influential conservationist and environmentalist who was credited with saving the California redwoods from logging. He led efforts to place dozens of animals on endangered species lists and created regulations in many states to bar hunting of these animals. Grant was an effective advocate for the national park system and was instrumental in creating the Glacier and Denali National Parks. He also was an ardent gun control advocate, not a popular position in the gun-crazed culture of the early 20th century. (*Spiro J. Defending the Master Race: Conservation, Eugenics and the Legacy of Madison Grant. Boston: University Press of New England. 2009)*

=======

Given the prevailing racial beliefs at the end of the 19th century, it is not surprising to read the cringe worthy language employed in family history books of that era to establish a Teutonic origin story. A Schenck family history by Augustus D. Schenck resorted to such language, per excerpts below.

"It may be of interest to know of what manner of race of people among whom this ancient family found its origin. In the dim ages of the past, the races of the Teutonic Aryans swept away the weaker nations in their course, or vivifying (i.e., enlivening, animating) them with their fresh and vigorous blood. Their bodies were more hardy, their minds more vigorous than those of other tribes. Their young men cut neither their hair nor beard till they had slain an enemy."

"Physically, they were of vast stature and these gigantic Teutons derided the Roman soldiers as a band of pigmies, and excited astonishment by their huge body and muscular limbs, with long yellow hair floating over their shoulders, and fierce bright blue eyes and clear blond complexion. They were a race remarkable for personal dignity, but with excessive pride, and for a boundless spirit of individual enterprise. With these traits, they untied a simplicity and truthfulness, which was always observed by strangers."

Source: *Schenck AD. The Rev. William Schenck: His Ancestry and His Descendants. Washington DC: Rufus Darby Publisher. Originally published in 1843 with updates in 1869 and 1883. Re-*

released by Higginson Book Company (www.higginson.com) in 2015 and also available at Google Books. (www.books.google.com). Accessed: December 3, 2022.

A side note: *The excerpts above that surmised the Teutonic heritage of the Schenck family line did not appear in the original 1843 publication. This language was added in an 1869 update and embellished in the 1883 publication. One potential explanation for the insertion of racial superiority language in 1869 was the publication of various "Classification of the Races of Europe" in the 1860s, which were less vitriolic assertions of northern European prominence than Ripley's theories, but none-the-less, provided an implied ranking of human characteristics and capacities that popularized the concept of a Teutonic sub-set within the Caucasian race. Perhaps AD Schenck was swayed by these theories, which gained traction in the U.S. during the Reconstruction Era after the Civil War. (Gossett TF. The Teutonic Origins Theory in Race: The History of an Idea in America. Gossett TF. London and New York: Oxford University Press. 1997)*

In Chapter III, Pre-Immigration Family History, a possible alternative background story for the Schenck family will be introduced that Augustus Schenck either did not consider, or perhaps elected not to mention, given its inconsistency with the concept of Teutonic origin.

Availability of Information

Each of the nine families has a pre-immigration (Europe) and a post-immigration (North American) history. However, the richness of ancestral information varied among the family lines. In several lines, the pre-immigration history was limited to names, dates and locations going back to approximately 1800. For other families, extensive information was available from a number of sources dating back to the medieval period when surnames first emerged, comprising 20 or more generations. Solid connections exist for eight of the nine families between the European pre-immigration history and the lives of family members in North America. For one family line (Dennis), the connection is not yet pinned down. Confidently linking the North American phase of a family to the European pre-immigration phase often came down to the diligence of a recording clerk at an immigration port of entry in a North American city. Typically, these clerks recorded the immigrating families personal and surnames, previous names or variations, the wife's maiden name, number of children (total and traveling with them), dates of birth of family members, departure port, city of residence before immigration, religion, race, names of immigrants' parents, parents' residence and parents' occupation(s). Clerks indicated on the entry ledger if the immigrant had an occupational permit (i.e., equivalent to modern day work visa) or other relocation papers, including prison releases.

The growing sophistication of Artificial Intelligence (AI) search resources using Natural Language Processing (NLP), such as ChatGPT (Chat Generative Pre-Trained Transformer), was tangibly evident during the period of research and writing for this book. Inquires submitted to AI "ask and answer" systems in 2022 typically resulted in generally accurate, in comparison to traditional information sources, yet superficial responses, neatly composed in paragraph form. However, the AI responses sometimes were comically off base, a reflection of the information sources that they had been fed to build memory (i.e., garbage in, garbage out). In spite of these limitations, AI responses were sometimes useful as guideposts, indicating where to start a deep dig for more pertinent information. However, by 2025, when *Who We Are* was finalized, AI

responses to questions were more sophisticated, included fewer errors when compared to other well-regarded sources, and often were helpful in identifying literature pertinent to topics.

Scope and Uncertainty

In telling these stories, I primarily focused on individuals who advanced the story toward our marriage in 1971. Each of the nine contributing families immigrated to North America from Northern Europe or from the British Isles between 1620 and 1880. Additionally, members of two of the families (Morgan, Hendricson) spent time in North America before 1620 (i.e., before the Pilgrims) as explorers, and a member of the Girault family came to Canada in the 17th century as part of a controversial population enhancement program, but elected to return to France. Once established in America (i.e., the Dutch and British colonies, and then the U.S. after 1789) or in the eastern provinces of Canada, most of these families lived in rural areas or on the frontiers of society, had agrarian occupations and were large in number, often including six or more children. Instead of delving into the lives of each of the approximately 480 siblings that evolved from the marriages and relationships described in this history, I focused, with a couple of exceptions, on the one offspring within each generation who made decisions about occupation, place of residence and marriage that contributed to the current Hendricson-Lienau line, in other words, the people who moved the story forward.

Conflicting or ambiguous descriptions of events abound in the historical literature, especially in the histories of folks who were not the VIPs of the society in which they lived. In these instances, I used phrases such as “it appears,” “as best as can be determined” or “apparently” to indicate that uncertainty exists about a particular incident. Terms such as “probably” and “likely” are used to discuss potential causal relationships, and my own non-evidenced interpretations are labeled as “speculation.” When catalysts for decisions and actions are described, the discussion is identified as speculative if only pieces of the story are available, and phrases such as “for unknown reasons” are used if I could find no contributing factors.

Chapter IV presents stories of the adventures and misadventures of members of the nine families in North America. These stories are arranged chronologically, starting in 1611 and concluding in the 1970s. Well-chronicled historical events involving these family members are conveyed in these stories, many of which include interactions with famous individuals or involvement in notable events. For example, one family member was instrumental in saving the life of a future U.S. President. No one knows exactly what was said among the participants, or the exact, moment-by-moment sequence of events on that freezing cold night in the midst of a Revolutionary War battle. The ability to capture an event photographically would not exist until 80 years after that fateful night, and cell phone cameras would not exist for another 230 years. Yet, based on what can be extracted from published historical accounts of the incident, I attempted to reconstruct the event with focus on our family member’s actions. Later in Chapter IV, I describe the participation of an ancestor in a remarkable dinner conversation/debate with perhaps the most recognizable of the British Generals leading the effort to defeat the American Revolutionaries. Although the evening’s events have been depicted in books published by historians, books written by two of the principle participants in this 18th century dinner party, and also conveyed in a long-running regional theatre production, no one alive today knows exactly what was said that evening, or the ardor with which thoughts were expressed, which

may have been intense, since much of the evening was a debate about the defining issue of that era: slavery, the sequela of which we are still debating today.

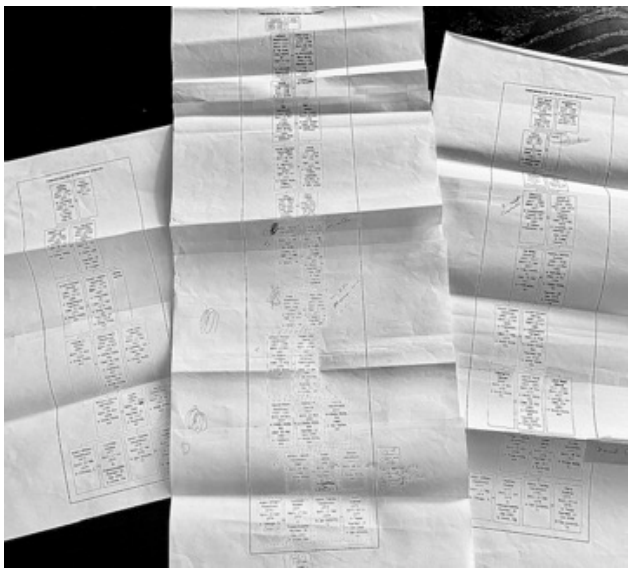
For yet another ancestor, after several months of research, I was not convinced that this person truly existed, and pondered the possibility that this name from the distant past was actually a confabulation of several people with similar names, existing in the same time frame with similar occupations and parallel movements from nation to nation. But imagine the excitement when this ancestor's name, in his own hand writing, appeared on a port of entry roster bright and clear, which led to discoveries of other signatures on employment and entry/exit documents that created a paper trail for this distant ancestor that largely matched family rumors – a real person who had an amazing life emerged before my eyes. For these and other stories, reconstructions of the events were based on interpretation of the available research that I perceived to be the most accurate (or most likely to be accurate), often among several accounts with minor to major differences. But when you do not witness an event first hand and rely on other sources, there is always the potential of error. Additionally, in the process of distilling complicated events and situations into a hopefully succinct narrative, I may have fallen prey to over-simplification, leaving out key details or circumstances, or perhaps failed to recognize pivotal contributing factors – errors of summarization and omission.

Sources of Images

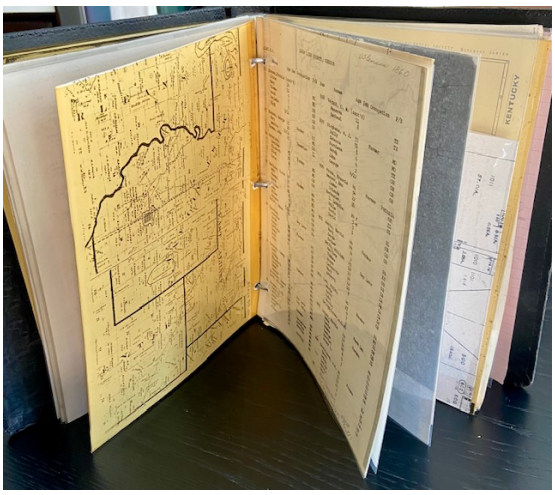
The authenticity of images was verified by scanning with *Google Lens*. With the exception of family photos from personal collections of immediate family members, all images were retrieved from *Wikimedia Commons (www.commons.m.wikimedia.org)* and *Wikipedia (www.en.m.wikipedia.org)* or from other sites identified in the image legends, including *Internet Archive* (www.archive.org), *Project Gutenberg* (www.gutenberg.org), *iStock by Getty Images,* with license *(www.istockphoto.com)* and *The Library of Congress* (www.loc.gov). If there is no source designation for a picture, it means that the image came from a family photo collection. As best as I can determine, all images are in the public domain, or were acquired under license agreements.

Foundational Work by Harold and Mildred Hendricson

My parents, Harold Maris Hendricson and Mildred Dennis Hendricson, devoted extensive effort to family history in the pre-internet era of the 1980s. They explored family roots with old school detective work: visiting cemeteries to photograph gravestones, and traveling to county offices to review birth, death, and marriage records. Working with county clerks, they obtained copies of real estate contracts, deeds, employment records, wills, obituaries and census reports to uncover facts about our ancestors' lives. They scoured the records available through the Church of Latter Day Saints Genealogical Library and researched books in public libraries written by ancestors or genealogical societies. They corresponded by mail with other individuals around the nation who were studying Hendricson, Maris, Morgan, Dennis and Goodman histories to gain access to documents that played a prominent role in our research. Harold and Mildred also accumulated a collection of family photos dating back to the earliest days of photography in the 1850s. I promised my mother years ago that I would one day take all of their information, add new research, incorporate families on Susan's side, and produce an integrated family history. Hopefully, this family history does justice to Harold and Mildred's vision for this project.



A few of the dozens of family trees assembled by Mildred and Harold Hendricson in the 1980s.
Mildred's parents, Archie and Maude Dennis, were avid photographers, and were diligent in assembling photo albums, which assisted my parent's efforts to identify descendants. However, my father's parents apparently were not keen on photography, and thus few pictures from my Dad's family survived to this day. The same phenomenon occurred on Susan's side. Susan's mother's family, the Girault**s**, were avid photographers, and maintained family photo albums that included pictures of people and places well back into the 19th century, with "who and where" notations on the back of photos. Few pictures exist from her father's family, the Lienau's. Fortunately, alternative data sources existed for the Lienau's and the other families included in *Who We Are*, which helped to fill-in the stories of their lives in Europe and in North America.



One of the many family history notebooks compiled by Harold and Mildred Hendricson in the 1980s. These notebooks, full of deeds, licenses, wills, birth and death certificates, obituaries, maps and tax rolls, were a foundational information source for the Hendricson, Maris, Morgan, Dennis and Goodman families.

Organization

- **Chapter II - Lineage tables for each family**. Each table begins with the first ancestor that I could confidently identify. The lineage tables allow readers to gain familiarity with the names of ancestors in the nine families, and read brief summaries of their lives, which in some cases are augmented in chapters III or IV.
- **Chapter III – European/English pre-Immigration history**. This chapter introduces readers to the history of each family before immigration including: (1) origin of the surname, (2) geographic origin, (3) first appearance of the surname in public records, (4) synopsis of pre-immigration history, and (5) names of ancestors that first immigrated to North America.
- **Chapter IV – Stories of Family Members on North America**. This chapter tells stories of individuals that were influential in family development or experienced pivotal events in our nation's journey to the present. The events depicted in these stories occur during a 360-year time span, spanning 1611 to the 1970s.
- **Chapter V – Post Script, San Antonio.** This chapter summarizes our life after Susan and I moved to San Antonio, Texas.
- **Chapter VI - Information Sources.** This chapter cites databases and published literature used to develop this family history. Most of the sources are identified within the text. Prior published histories of the nine families are **highlighted in bold font** within the bibliography.

Comment on Gender: The family stories reflect the predominant positions of males in hierarchy and social status throughout history. Much more was learned about the males in almost all of the spousal pairs in Chapter II (Family Lineage Tables) because public records and prior histories described the lives of husbands far more than wives. Remarkable women were identified in the research process for this book, but I know less about their lives than their spouses. In Chapters II, III and IV, readers are encouraged to note the following female contributors to the family legacy, and recognize that there is likely more to their stories than is known, and vastly much more yet to be learned about the lives of many other women in these nine families.

Ancestor	Life	Family	Note
Aelide van Rayde van Nydeggan	1353-1430	Hendricson	Driving force behind an estate remodeling business that brought financial security to the family.
Jennetje Priem Nadal Hendrickz	1551-1628	Hendricson	A celebrity in 16th century Holland above and beyond her naval hero husband.
Joan Alice Wilmot Goodman	1524-1588	Goodman	Obtained political and government positions usually denied to women in 16th century England.
Sonnetje Rutgers Hendrickson	1573-1645	Hendricson	Started 2nd known elementary school in North America. A female college graduate, rare for her time.
Jeanne Barbier	1653-1717	Girault	Selected for Louis XIV's Fille du Roi (Daughters of the King) program to increase the population of Canada, where she became a leader in the colony.
Kathryn Bound Heiden Maris	1707-1754	Maris	Founded Quaker Friends Meeting Houses, and was an outspoken abolitionist.

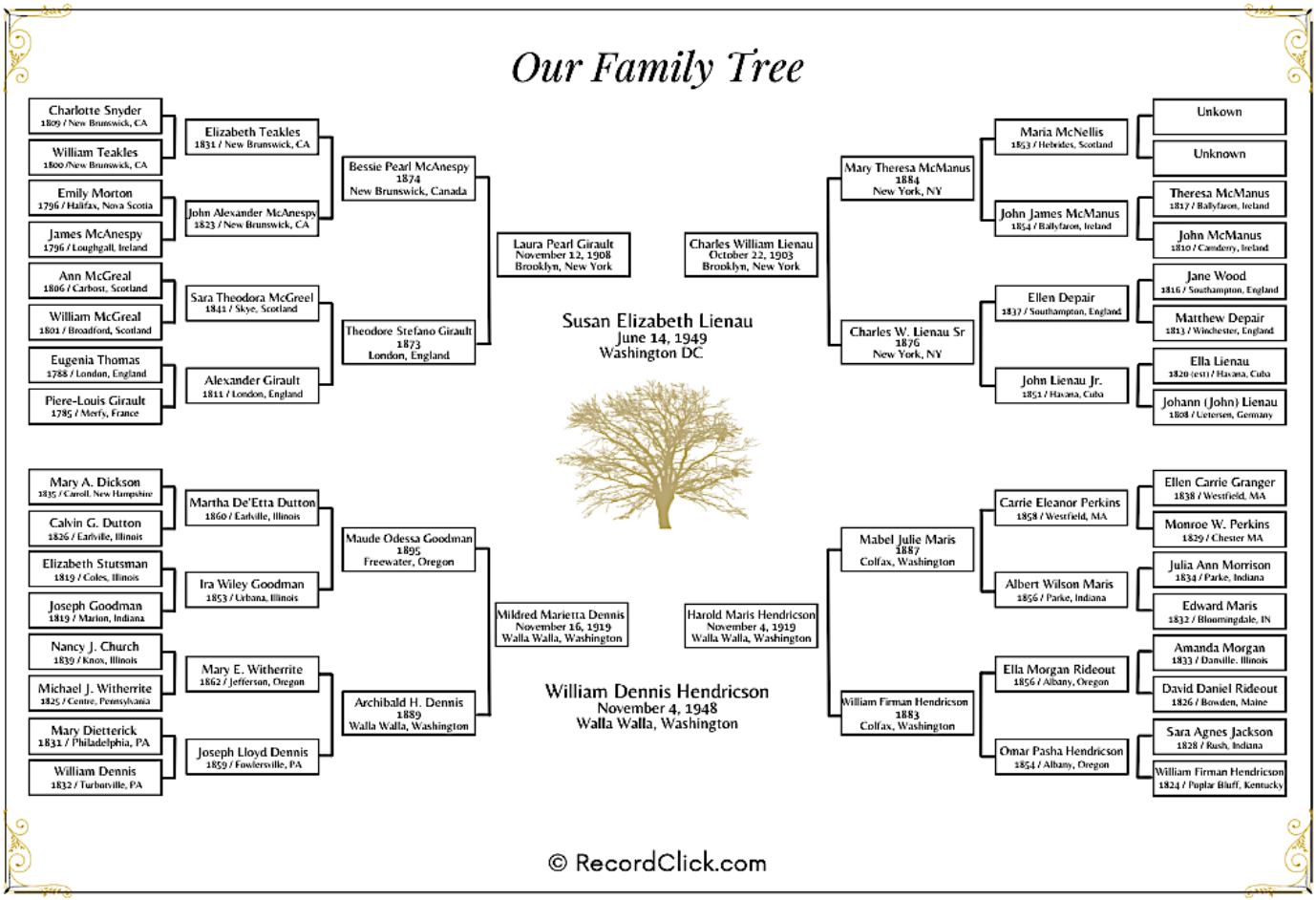
Tabitha Goodman	Est: 1730-1800	Goodman	Mixed race common law wife of an 18th century Goodman ancestor. Overcame prejudice to run a business and gain acceptance.
Drusilla Morgan	1795-1870	Morgan	Overcame personal tragedies and economic crises to lead her family to Oregon via wagon train.
Sarah Agnes Jackson Hendricson	1828-1892	Hendricson	Overcame financial disasters and an often-absent husband to reach Oregon by wagon train while pregnant with her second child.
Ella Lienau	Est: 1820-1890	Lienau	Her maiden name is unknown. She may have been German, English or Cuban. She possibly had a sea-faring career until meeting John Lienau in the Caribbean.
Margaret Amanda Morgan	1833-1917	Morgan - Hendricson	Amanda led her family to Oregon by wagon train, and was instrumental in building a successful pioneer farm.
Bessie Pearl McAnespy Girault	1874-1946	Girault	Rose to a managerial position within NYC telephone system, an ardent suffragette, community organizer and supporter of U.S. engagement in WWI.

Comment on Terminology Used for Native Americans: Except when quoting verbatim from historical documents that often used the term "Indian" to refer to the indigenous peoples of North America, one of the following identifiers is used: Native Americans, Native Peoples, Native Tribes, or the name of specific tribal groups, such as Kiowa or Lenape.

Comment of Terminology Used for Racial and Ethnic Groups: Except when quoting verbatim from historical documents, the current U.S. Census terminology is used for racial and ethnic groups with the primary groups being: White, Black, Asian, Native American, Pacific Islander or Mixed Race (race), and Hispanic (ethnicity). Occasionally, for clarity, a more precise origin identifier is used such as Caribbean Black.

Lienau and Hendricson Family Tree: Page 26 is a Lienau-Hendricson tree displaying the most recent five generations for each family. Additional generations further back in history are described in the lineage tables in Chapter II. Page 27 provides clarifying comments about the family tree.

Hendricson - Lienau Family Tree (most recent five generations)



The top half of the table displays both sides of Susan's family: Girault / McAnespy on the left and Lienau / McManus on the right. The bottom half depicts the sides of my family: Dennis / Goodman, left, and Hendricson / Morgan / Maris, on the right.

Abridged middle names. Because of format restrictions, the middle names of some family members were abridged. Full names of these individuals appear below.

Mary Ann Dickson	Archibald Howard Dennis	Ralph Cornelius McNellis
Calvin (John) Green Dutton	Maude Odessa Goodman	Monroe Wendall Perkins
Nancy Jane Church	Mildred Marietta Dennis	David Daniel Rideout
Michael James Witherrite	Harold Maris Hendricson	William Firman Hendricson
Mary Elizabeth Witherrite	Charles William Lienau Jr.	John James McManus
William Albert Dennis	Mary Theresa McManus	Sara Theodora McGreal
John Alexander McAnespy	Charles William Lienau Sr.	Bessie Pearl McAnespy
William Firman Hendricson Jr.	Theodore Stefano Girault	Carrie Eleanor Perkins

Note: There is uncertainty about the spelling of Mary Dietterick's maiden name (lower left hand corner of the family tree). It also appears as Deiterick or Deiterich on some records.

++ The Family Tree template was purchased from www.RecordClick.com on February 20, 2025.

Nearly 60 individuals from other family lines, listed below, married members of the Hendricson, Morgan, Maris, Dennis, Goodman, Lienau, Girault, McManus and McAnespy families. Some of these individuals, such as Sara Theodora McGreal (Girault line), Mary Elizabeth Witherrite (Dennis line) or Martha De'Etta Dutton (Goodman line) are included in the family tree on page 27. Undoubtedly, the McGreals, Duttons, Witherrites and the other families have compelling histories. However, their stories are beyond the goals and scope of this history.

Archer	Holladay	Steeps
Barbier	Horsley	Stutsman
Beekman	Hughes	Suitgert Luitgert
Belcher	Jackson	Teakles
Blackwell	Jeffries	Thomas
Bloemensweerde	Lewis	Van Guelder
Bodenham	Mathew	Van Keldenbrock
Bowen	McGreal	Van Kirk
Bugg	McNellis	Van Nuys
Collier	Millis	Van Rayde
Depair	Morrison	Vaughn
Dutton	Nadal	* **Webster**
Evertse	Perkins	Wilmot
Fox	Pickett	Wilsmith
Garretson	Powell	Wilson
Griffin	Price	Winter
Gunne	Richards Smith	Witherrite
Heiden	Rideout	Wyckoff
Hendrickse	Rutgers	
Herbert	Springer	***Morgan**

***** The one in-law that is featured in a elaborated story in Chapter IV is Mary (Molly) Reeve Webster, who was the mother of Anna Webster Goodman, wife of Benjamin Goodman Sr. and mother of Benjamin Goodman Jr., key figures in the early North American history of the Goodman family. Molly led a tumultuous life in England and in the Colonies and became the famed "Witch of Hadley," whose trial and physical abuse triggered the witchcraft frenzy in New England. Molly's story was just too good to pass up.

****** The North American line of the Morgan family from Wales, which readers will encounter throughout this history, could have been listed in the "married into" roster. The Morgans are included among the primary contributing families for several reasons: the sheer extent of Morgan-Hendricson interaction in the 18th and 19th centuries, many Morgan-Hendricson marriages including one that was pivotal to family evolution, dozens of children with one Morgan and one Hendricson parent (who, as young adults, sometimes married other Morgans or Hendricsons), personal relationships among prominent members of each family, and mutual Hendricson – Morgan relationships with pivotal figures in American history.

Chapter II – Family Lineage Tables and Narrative

The lineage table for each family begins with the first ancestor that could be confidently identified. From generation to generation, I only focused on individuals who advanced the story toward 1971 when Susan and I were married. For example, one of our ancestors may have had six children, but only one of these offspring made relationship decisions that linked them to the family as it exists today. The story-advancing individual is identified in **bold highlighting** in the Children box of each generational summary. Across the nine families, 150 individuals are identified in the lineage tables. A roster of these individuals appears on pages 29-31. In a few instances, the names of spouses are unknown, and these are identified as such.

The synopsis for each generation provides a brief snapshot of what is reliably known about the husband, wife and children comprising that generation, and key events that influenced their lives. Where indicated, information provided in the synopsis for some family members is further developed in Chapters III and IV.

Unless otherwise indicated in Chapters II, III, and IV, the primary information sources were: the genealogical notebook compiled by Harold and Mildred Hendricson in the 1980s, the published family histories highlighted in the bibliography, and my own research using the online search tools and the published works that appear in Chapter VI. A number of publications that might be of special interest to readers also are highlighted throughout the book.

At times in Chapters II, III, and IV, a degree of reasonable speculation was exercised, derived from known facts, when describing family members' actions and the potential catalysts for decisions. As you will read, my ancestors found themselves in remarkable circumstances. The available historical record often does not completely connect the dots about what happening and in what sequence for some of these events. At times, I had to piece together multiple and sometimes varying accounts of events, often with detail gaps. Hopefully I have identified all of the situations in the narrative of these families where informed deductions were made in order to communicate an understandable story. I take responsibility for any errors, omissions, misinterpretation or inconsistencies that may occur in this history.

Roster of Individuals in the Family History Lineage Tables

Hendricson Ancestors		
Wihelmus Christianhus Schenck van Nydeggan 1219-92 Mechtildis Schenck van Nydeggan 1220-1278	Daniel William Hendrickson 1709-76 Magdalena van Nuys Hendrickson 1710-38 Ida Wyckoff Hendrickson 1710-84	Thomas Henry Morgan 1504-1606 Elizabeth Bodenham (Morgan)* 1538-1606
Christianous Schenck van Nydeggan 1260-1334 (spouse unknown)	Ouke (Okey) Hendrickson 1734-1830 Mary Anne Steeps Hendrickson 1742-1822	Henry William Morgan 1567-1653 Elizabeth Winter (Morgan)* 1564-1637
Ludovicus Schenck van Nydeggan 1297-1363 Aleid Bloemensweerde van Nydeggan 1325-1397	Daniel Elbridge Hendrickson 1769-1863 Sarah Herbert Hendrickson 1770-1828	John William Morgan 1596-1651 Rebecca Richards Smith (Morgan)* 1593-1642
Hendrik Schenck van Nydeggan (Van Nydeck) 1346-1403 Aelide van Rayde (van Nydeck) 1353-1430	John Firman Hendrickson 1794-1824 Nancy Agnes Wilson Hendrickson 1798-1834	Charles William Morgan 1635-1720 Susan Powell (Morgan)* 1646-97
Hendrich Schenck van Nydeck 1371-1452 Aleide van Keldenbrock van Nydeck 1368-1450	William Firman Hendrickson (Hendricson) 1824-1908 Sarah Agnes Jackson Hendricson 1828-92	Morgan Wilm Morgan 1687-1767 Catherine Garretson Morgan 1692-1773
Henry Schenck van Nydeck (Hendrickse) 1436-1508 Henrji Jan Van Stappaerts Hendrickse 1450-1521	Omar Pasha Hendricson 1854-1913 Ella Morgan Rideout Hendricson 1856-1937	Zackquill Morgan 1734-1797 Drusilla Springer Morgan 1740-96
Rutger Hendrickse Schenck van Nydeck 1480-1554 Gennetje Rutger Beekman Hendrickse 1489-1551	William Firman Hendricson Jr. 1883-1948 Mabel Julia Maris Hendricson 1887-1981	James Morgan 1771-1855 Dorothy Prickett Morgan 1777-1853
Barent Rutgerse Hendriksz 1518-1572 Noeltje Evertse Hendriksz 1524-75	Harold Maris Hendricson 1919-92 Mildred Dennis Hendricson 1919-2019	Drusilla Morgan 1795-1870 James Price 1796-1849
Lambert Barentse Hendriksz 1549-1625 Jennetje Priem Nadel Hendriksz 1551-1628	**William Dennis Hendricson 1948 -** **Susan Lienau Hendricson 1949 -**	Margaret Amanda Price Morgan 1833-1917 David Daniel Rideout 1826-84
Cornelius Lambert Hendrickson 1572-1651 Sennetje Rutgers Hendrickson 1573-1645	**Morgan Ancestors**	**Ella Morgan Rideout Hendricson 1856-1937** **Omar Pasha Hendricson 1854-1913**
Daniel Hendriksz 1604-40 Emma van Guelder Hendriksz 1612-1640	John Morgan 1428-92 Janet Mathew (Morgan)* 1445-94	**Maris Ancestors**
Hendrick Willemz Hendrickson 1635-1707 Jane Suitgert Luitgirt Hendrickson 1639-1692	Thomas Mathew Morgan 1482-1538 Elizabeth Vaughn (Morgan)* 1486-1528	Richard Dunwall de Maris 1568-1641 Agnes Griffin (Maris)* 1572-1640
William Hendrickson 1670-1712 Willemptje van Kirk Hendrickson 1672-1712	Rowland Morgan 1508-77 Blanche Thomas (Morgan)* 1512-1607	Richard George Maris Sr. 1595-1648 Alice Collier (Maris)* 1599-1666
		George Edward Maris 1632-1706 Alice Wilsmith (Maris)* 1632-99

John Maris Sr. 1669-1747 Susannah Lewis Maris 1673-1747	**Goodman Ancestors**	**Lienau Ancestors**
John Maris Jr. 1709-1792 Kathryn Bound Heiden Maris 1707-1754	John Thomas Goodman 1485-1542 Agnes Gunne (Goodman)* 1473-1561	Wilhem Linau 1674-1743 Gesche Boot Fesefeld (Linau) 1678-1749
George Maris 1743-1782 Eleanor Mary Lindley Maris 1749-1783	Alexander Goodman 1449-1516 Mary Hughes (Goodman)* 1458-1519	Hinrich Linau 1713-1775 Anna Engelcke Ossenbruggen (Linau) 1717-91
Aaron Samuel Maris 1774-1843 Sarah Holladay Maris 1781-1817	Thomas Wylliam Goodman 1519-1572 Joan Alice Wilmot (Goodman)* 1524-1588	Hans Hinrich Lienau 1742-1809 Maria Ilsabe Ladiges Lienau 1746-1811
Aaron Maris Jr. 1807-1872 Keziah Millis Maris 1807-1885	Edward Goodman 1539-1611 Katherine Jeffries (Goodman)* 1550-1590	Joachim Detlief Lienau 1770-1842 Anna Margaretha Knoop Lienau 1764-1843
Edward Maris 1832-1868 Julia Ann Morrison Maris 1834-1905	John William Goodman 1586-1670 Mary Archer (Goodman)* 1610-90	Johann (John) Lienau Sr. 1808-76 Ella or Eslen (maiden name not confirmed) 1820-1890 (est.)
Albert Wilson Maris 1856-1941 Carrie Eleanor Perkins Maris 1858-1899	Benjamin Goodman 1639-1735 Johanna Anna Webster Goodman 1640-1719	John Lienau Jr. 1851-82 Ellen Depair Lienau 1837-1909
Mabel Julia Maris 1887-1981 **William Firman Hendricson Jr. 1883-1948**	Benjamin Goodman Jr. 1662-1735 Louisa Lucy Blackwell Goodman 1682-1750	Charles William Lienau Sr. 1876-1940 Mary McManus Lienau 1884-1940
Dennis Ancestors	Robert Goodman 1703-59 Mary Francis Bugg Goodman 1703-1785 Elizabeth Astel Horsley** 1707-1763	**Charles William Lienau Jr. 1903-69** **Laura Pearl Girault Lienau 1908-81**
William Dennis 1832-1893 Mary Deiterick 1831-1903	Bartlett Batholomew Goodman 1731-1799 Tabitha Gibson** 1730-1800 (est)	**Girault Ancestors**
Joseph Lloyd Dennis 1859-1936 Mary Elizabeth Witherrite Dennis 1862-1940	George Washington Goodman 1777-1853 Marget Bowen Goodman 1788-1867	Charles Girault 1740-1804 Jeanne Barbier (Girault) 1746-1812
Archibald Howard Dennis 1889-1978 Maude Odessa Goodman Dennis 1895-1979	Joseph Goodman 1819-76 Elizabeth Stutsman Goodman 1819-1881	Pierre-Louis Girault 1785-1820 Mary Eugenia Thomas 1788-1849
Mildred Dennis Hendricson 1919-2019 **Harold Maris Hendricson 1919-1992**	Ira Wiley Goodman 1853-1917 Martha De'Etta Dutton Goodman 1860-1938	Alexander Girault 1811-1882 Sara Theodora McGreal Girault 1841-1876
	Maude Odessa Goodman Dennis 1895-1979 **Archibald Howard Dennis 1889-1978**	Theodore Stefano Girault 1873-1943 Bessie Pearl McAnespy Girault 1874-1946
		Laura Pearl Girault Lienau 1908-81 **Charles William Lienau 1903-1969**

McAnespy Ancestors	McManus Ancestors
James McAnespy 1796-1862 Emily Morton McAnespy 1796-1844	John McManus 1810-1863 Theresa McManus (maiden name unknown) 1817-1864 (est.)
John Alexander McAnespy 1820-1887 Elizabeth Teakles McAnespy 1831-1907	John James McManus 1854-1915 Mary Maria McNellis McManus 1853-1925
William Oliver McAnespy 1857-1917 Mary Ann Belcher McAnespy 1861-1933	**Mary McManus Lienau** **1884-1940** **Charles William Lienau Sr.** **1876-1940**
Bessie Pearl McAnespy Girault **1874-1946** **Theodore Stefano Girault** **1873-1943**	

* In England and Wales, the fashion of wives' adopting their husbands surname did not commence until approximately 1650, and was not firmly entrenched until the 18th century.

** May not have been formally married to their spouse.

Hendricson Lineage Table

The Hendricson family primarily originated in Germany and is comprised of 22 generations, 11 in Europe pre-immigration and 11 in North America after immigration. As you will note when reviewing these generations, the family surname evolved considerably through the centuries. The final change in surname did not occur until 1845.

Hendricson Generation 1					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth (b) And Death (d)**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Wihelmus Christianhus Schenck van Nydeggan	1219-1292	B: Nydeggan, Germany (Gr) D: Unknown	**Mechtildis Schenck van Nydeggan** Maiden name unknown	1220-1278	B: Nydeggan, Gr D: Afferden, Gr
Children: Wihelmus and Mechtildis had six children including **Christianous Schenck van Nydeggan.**					
Synopsis: Wihelmus and Mechtildis Schenck van Nydeggan are the first family members in our Hendricson line that are mentioned in a public record. After 200 years in the Nydeggan area, the Schencks had risen from craftsmen to a position of status in the Duchy of Julich, one of the most powerful feudal jurisdictions in the 13th century German Federation. Wihelmus was appointed to the influential Pincerna Noster position (i.e., social coordinator, master of kitchens, commissary and vineyards) in the hierarchy of the Duchy, and became a confidant to Count Wilhelm IV von Julich. As discussed in Chapter III, Pre-Immigration History, Wihelmus' decision to sell most of the Schenck van Nydeggan property to the Church of Cologne had political ramifications and led to the demise of family influence in the Duchy, economic hardship for following generations and movement of his descendants to the Netherlands. *Source: Moller W. West German Noble Families of the Middle Ages. Foundation for Medieval Genealogy (www.fmg.ac). Darmstadt: Verlag & Degener. 1995. Available via the Center for Medieval and Renaissance Studies. Oxford University Library. Accessed: December 8, 2022.*					

Hendricson Generation 2					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Christianous Schenck van Nydeggan	1260-1334	B: Afferden, Gr D: Cologne, Gr	**Unknown**	N/A	
Children: Christianous fathered 10 children including **Ludovicus Schenck van Nydeggan.**					
Synopsis: The last Schenck van Nydeggan head of household to live exclusively in Germany, Christianous attempted to maintain the remaining family property with minimal success. Christianous may have had relationships with several women without formally marrying any of them. It appears that one of the women who bore several of his children was Dutch, which may account for his son Ludovicus, choosing to reside in the Netherlands.					

Hendricson Generation 3					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Ludovicus Schenck van Nydeggan	1297-1363	B: Goch, Netherlands (NL) D: Blyenbeck, NL	**Aleid Bloemensweerde**	1325-1397	B: Goch, NL D: Goch, NL
Children: Ludovicus and Aleid had five children including **Hendrik Schenck van Nydeggan.**					
Synopsis: Ludovicus and Aleid were the first Schenck van Nydeggans to reside in the Netherlands after the fall-out with the Duke of Julich, which is further discussed in Chapter III, Pre-Immigration History. Aleid was the first Dutch wife of a Schenck van Nydeggan.					

Hendricson Generation 4					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Hendrik Schenck van Nydeggan Also: van Nydeck	1346-1403	B: Afferden, Gr D: Blyenbeck, NL	**Aelide van Rayde** Also: van Nydeck	1353-1430	B: Druten, NL D: Blyenbeck, NL
Children: Hendrik and Aelide had four children including **Hendrich Schenck van Nydeck.**					
Synopsis: Hendrick and Aelide used a new compound name, Nydeck, possibly a derivation of Nydeggan, or more likely, a composite of Nydeggan and Waldeck Manor (picture below) where the van Rayde family worked in administrative roles similar to those of the Schencks at Nydeggan. Hendrik and Aelide started an estate/manor remodeling business, beginning with renovation of the run-down Blyenbeck property.					

This sketch of the Waldeck Manor was created in the 1770s. Many still-surviving castles were remodeled in the late medieval era to look more like country estates and less like fortifications. New manors were constructed from the ruble of fallen-down medieval castles.

Image source: WikiMedia Commons. www.common.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 12/14/2022.

Hendricson Generation 5					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Hendrich Schenck van Nydeck	1371-1452	B: Blyenbeck, NL D: Blyenbeck, NL	**Aleide van Keldenbrock**	1368-1450	B: Druten, NL D: Blyenbeck, NL
Children: Hendrich and Aleide had four children including **Henry Schenck van Nydeck**					
Synopsis: Little is known about their lives other than they worked for their parents, Hendrik and Aleide, in their renovation business, and lived at the Blyenbeck estate with their children.					

The Schenck van Nydeck family crest, created late in the 14th century after the marriage of Hendrik Schenck van Nydeggan and Aelide van Rayde. The crest remained in use at least until the 1600s.

Image source: WikiMedia Commons. www.common.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 12/15/2022.

Sources for Schenck van Nydeggan generations 1-5:

Moller W. West German Noble Families of the Middle Ages. Foundation for Medieval Genealogy (www.fmg.ac). Darmstadt: Verlag and Degener & Co. 1995. Available via the Center for Medieval and Renaissance Studies. Oxford University Library. Accessed: December 8, 2022.

Schenck AD. The Rev. William Schenck: His Ancestry and His Descendants. Washington DC: Rufus Darby Publ. 1843. Re-released by Higginson Book (www.higginson.com) in 2015. Also available at WorldCat Digital Library Catalog. www.searchworldcat.org. Accessed: December 2, 2022.

Schenck AD. The Rev. William Schenck: His Ancestry and His Descendants. Washington DC: Rufus Darby Publ. Updated in 1869 and 1883. Re-released by Higginson Book (www.higginson.com) in 2015. Also available at Google Books. www.books.google.com. Accessed: November 30, 2022.

Schenck RB. The Ancestors and Descendants of Rulef Schenck, A Genealogy of the Onondaga County New York Branch of the Schenck Family. From records complied by A.A. Schenck. Detroit, Michigan. 1911. Available via wikitree (www.wikitree.com) site for Christianhus Schenck, aka Pincerna de Nideke (Nydeggan in medieval Dutch). Accessed: November 30, 2022.

van der Dussen WFGL (Willem Frederic George Lodewijk). Genealogy of the Old and Very Illustrious Family of Schenck van Nydeck (Nydegge) Beginning with Year 1368. Nijmegan, Netherlands: 256 hand-written pages (self-printed). 1872. Housed at Brooklyn, NY Museum Libraries. Special Collections. www.brooklynmuseum.org. Accessed: December 1, 2022.

Hendricson Generation 6					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Henry Schenck van Nydeck (Hendrickse)	1436-1508	B: Blyenbeck, NL D: Nordheim, Gr	**Henrji Jan Van Stappaerts**	1450-1521	B: Cologne, Gr D: Nordheim, Gr
Children: Henry and Henrji had five children including **Rutger Hendrikse.**					
Synopsis: Henry and Henrji used Hendrikse as their surname, the first couple to move away from Schenck van Nydeck. Schenck family historians speculated that they selected Hendrikse to honor Henry's father, Hendrich, or to recognize their similar first names, Henry and Henrji; I found no evidence for either theory. Another speculation is that they desired to distinguish themselves for unknown reasons from the Schenck van Nydeck dynasty at Blyenbeck. Both died and are buried in Nordheim, Germany, 240 miles away, which lends credence to this theory.					

=======

Notes on Blyenbeck House: Generations 3 – 7 of the Schenck van Nydeck / Hendrikse family, spanning 1380 to 1580, were based in the village of Bleijenbeek (modern: Blyenbeck), on the Netherlands side of the border with the German Federation. In 1380, Hendrik Schenck van Nydeggan and wife Aleide van Rayde van Nydeggan purchased the property in a 14th century version of a bankruptcy sale, remodeled the main building and constructed a number of smaller homes, which they sold to other family members and local Bleijenbeek residents. Numerous family members lived in and around the Blyenbeck House, pictured below, for next 200 years.

In the 1564, the Dutch soldier of fortune, Maarten Schenck Van Nydeggan Hendriksz, managed to swindle a brother of Barent Rutgerse Hendriksz, the rightful owner of Blyenbeck House, out of the property by threatening violence (for which Maarten was well known) and legal maneuvering. The later was accomplished by kidnapping the daughters of two local magistrates and threatening the young women with depravity unless the judges did his bidding, which was to evict the owners and deed the property over to Maarten. The Hendriksz family fought back in a protracted legal battle that was ultimately settled by the High Court of the Dutch Republic. In 1571, the Court ordered a battalion of the Dutch army to physically evict Maarten and his family from Blyenbeck and required him to pay for damages incurred during his residence. More details about Maarten's life appear in Chapter III. During World War II, the German army used the site as an operations center during the Battle of Arnheim where the Germans held off a British and American advance known as Operation Market Garden. The main structure on the property was destroyed in subsequent U.S. bombing raids as the Allies surged into Germany.

A rendering of the Blyenbeck House painted in 1860 that depicts the remodeling by Aelide van Rayde and Hendrik Schenck van Nydeggan. The main structure was known as Castle Bleijenbeek prior to restoration.

Image source: Bleijenbeek Castle. Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 12/16/2022.

Hendricson Generation 7					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Rutger Hendrickse Schenck van Nydeck	1480 - 1554	B: Cologne, Ger D: Brielle, NL	**Gennetje Rutger Beekman**	1489 – 1551	B: Cologne, Ger D: Brielle, NL
Children: Rutger and Gennetje had five children including **Barent Rutgerse Hendriksz.**					
Synopsis: Rutger was likely the first Hendrickse / van Nydeck to work full-time as a merchant. Rutger and Gennetje moved away from the Blyenbeck compound and settled in Brielle, near the Atlantic coastline.					
Hendricson Generation 8					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Barent Rutgerse Hendriksz	1518-1572	B: Brielle, NL D: Utrecht, NL	**Noeltje Evertse (Evertsdotter)**	1524 - 1575	B: Utrecht, NL D: Utrecht, NL
Children: Barent and Noeltje had two children Including **Lambert Barentse Hendriksz.**					
Synopsis: Prior to his marriage to Noeltje in 1548, Barent also had at least two children out of wedlock with Anna van Beslaer (1518-1554), one of which was **Maarten Schenck Van Nydeggan Hendriksz** (1539-1589), the infamous Dutch Soldier of Fortune.					

Hendricson Generation 9					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Lambert Barentse Hendriksz	1549-1625	B: Briele, NL D: Rotterdam, NL	**Jennetje Priem Nadal**	1551 - 1628	B: Utrecht, NL D: Utrecht, NL
Children: Lambert and Jennetje had five children Including **Cornelius Lambert Hendriksz.**					
Synopsis: Lambert was one of the most famous and successful of Dutch admirals in the 16th and 17th century. His ironic nickname was *Mooy Lambert (Beautiful Lambert)*, because he was anything but beautiful. In contrast, Jennetje was considered to be quite attractive and was the subject of many portraits, which were sold commercially and were much sought after as the couple's fame grew. Jennetje's parents were Spanish, but lived in the Netherlands during the decades-long Dutch-Spanish War, known as the 80 Years War (War of Dutch Independence). This conflict is discussed in Chapter III, including Mooy Lambert's pivotal role in the war and his other naval exploits.					

A portrait of Jennetje Priem Nadal, wife of Lambert Hendriksz, by an unknown artist. Jennetje often posed as religious figures, but also was portrayed in contemporary high fashion. She was the source of great public fascination in Holland, and gained celebrity apart from her famous husband, a unique occurrence for that era. She made public appearances on her own, also rare. One of her most popular events was a children's story hour in which she read and commented upon popular Dutch fables to auditoriums filled with children on the lower level, while parents filled the upper balconies.

Image source: Senorita Jennetje Priem Nadal. Geni.com (www.geni.com). Accessed: 12/18/2022.

Hendricson Generation 10					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Cornelius Lambert Hendrickson	1572-1651	B: Utrecht, NL D: Utrecht, NL	**Sennetje Rutgers**	1573-1645	B: Utrecht, NL D: Utrecht, NL
Children: Cornelius and Sennetje had 12 children, including **Daniel Hendriksz.**					
Synopsis: Cornelius was the first family member to consistently use Hendrickson as a surname. He was an explorer and cartographer and the first European to map New York Bay, both coasts of Long Island, the interiors of Connecticut and Pennsylvania, and the coastlines of Delaware and New Jersey. The story of his explorations appears in Chapter IV.					

Hendricson Generation 11					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Daniel Hendriksz	1604-1640	B: Utrecht, NL D: Utrecht, NL	**Emma van Guelder**	1612-1640	B: Utrecht, NL D: Utrecht, NL
Children: Daniel and Emma had two children: **Hendrick Willemz Hendriksz**, and his sister **Ida Ede Hendriksz** (1630-1691).					
Synopsis: Daniel and Emma died in a carriage accident when their children were five (Hendrick) and ten years old (Ida Ede). Their grandparents (Cornelius and Sennetje) took in Hendrick and Ida Ede and raised them in their home. Sennetje died in 1645, but Cornelius cared for the children by himself until a few days before his death. Cornelius arranged for Hendrick, age 15, to be placed in an English boarding school and Ida Ede, age 20, secured a position with a neighboring family as a nanny and tutor. Ida Ede was the second Hendriksz to reach North America (after grandfather Cornelius) when she immigrated to New Amsterdam with her new family in 1653. She married James Way in Newtown, Long Island (now Queens) and lived the rest of her life in New York as did her eight children. Although arriving in America before her brother Hendrick, Ida Ede and husband James started a different familial line, the Way family, and played no role in the Hendrickson/Hendricson family described in this book.					

Hendricson Generation 12					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Hendrick Willemz Hendrickson	1635-1707	B: Utrecht, NL D: Monmouth NJ	**Jane Suitgert Luitgirt**	1639-1692	B: Ghent, NL D: Albany, NY
Children: Hendrick and Jane had four children including **Willem (William) Hendrickson.**					
Synopsis: Hendrick was the first member of our Hendrickson line to reside permanently in North America. Hendrick married Gisseltje Alberts (1637-1677) shortly after immigration to New Amsterdam. They had one son who returned to the Netherlands with his mother after the couple divorced. Jane was Hendrick's second wife. The couple had four children, all born in America. Like his grandfather, Hendrick used the surname Hendrickson after he arrived in North America. The story of Hendrick and Jane's life in the Americas is told in Chapter IV.					

Hendricson Generation 13					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Willem (William) Hendrickson	1670 - 1712	B: Flatbush, NY D: Monmouth, NJ	**Willemptje van Kirk**	1672 - 1712	B: New York, NY D: Monmouth, NJ
Children: William and Willemptje had six children Including **Daniel William Hendrickson.**					
Synopsis: Willem, who anglicized his name to William as a young adult, was the first member of the Hendricson family who was born and lived his entire life in North America. Willemptje's parents came to New Amsterdam on the same boat (*Rooseboom*) as Hendrick Hendrickson. William was a miller, operating a gristmill between Amboy and Middletown, New Jersey. Willemptje's parents took in the couple's six children after Willemptje and William both died in a smallpox epidemic in 1712.					

Hendricson Generation 14					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Daniel William Hendrickson	1709-1776	B: Monmouth, NJ	**Magdalena van Nuys**	1710-1738	B: Brooklyn, NY D: Monmouth, NJ
		D: Somerset, NJ	**Ida Wyckoff**	1710-1784	B: Flatbush, NY D: Somerset, NJ
Children: Daniel and Magdalena had four children during their eight-year marriage, including **Ouke (Okey) Hendrickson**. Magdalena died when all four children were less than seven years old. Daniel married Ida several years later and they had two children.					
Synopsis: Daniel operated gristmills like his father. The largest was located on the Millstone River near New Brunswick, NJ. Daniel managed other business enterprises and was involved in county governance. Later in his life, Daniel received medical training, opened a practice with two offices in central New Jersey and was referred to as Dr. Hendrickson for the last 25 years of his life. Two of Daniel and Magdalena's sons became physicians.					

Hendricson Generation 15					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Ouke (Okey) Hendrickson	1734-1830	B: New Brunswick, NJ D: Cabin Creek, KY	**Mary Anne Steeps**	1742-1822	B: Somerset, NJ D: Poplar Flat, KY
Children: Okey and Mary Anne had eight children including **Daniel Elbridge Hendrickson.**					
Synopsis: Okey Hendrickson served in the Revolutionary War as a medical officer during dozens of engagements with the British, and was close to George Washington during the New Jersey phase of the war, housing Washington and his staff at the family home in New Brunswick, NJ. Okey participated in the Christmas attack on Trenton (i.e., Washington Crossing the Delaware), and began the Hendrickson's westward expansion across the continent when he uprooted his family from a comfortable life in New Jersey and moved to frontier Kentucky. The story of Okey and Mary Anne's adventures appears in Chapter IV.					

Hendricson Generation 16					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Daniel Elbridge Hendrickson	1769-1863	B: Hightown, NJ D: Poplar Flat, KY	**Sarah Herbert**	1770-1828	B: Somerset County, NJ D: Poplar Flat, KY
Children: Daniel and Sarah had 16 children during their marriage, including **John Firman Hendrickson.**					
Synopsis: Daniel and Sarah moved to Kentucky in 1792 as married adults. Daniel was a farmer by trade but soldiered in militia campaigns against Native tribes and fought in the War of 1812. Most of Daniel and Sarah's surviving children remained in Kentucky for their entire lives.					

Hendricson Generation 17					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
John Firman Hendrickson	1794-1824	B: Poplar Flat, KY D: Highland, Ohio	**Nancy Agnes Wilson**	1798-1834	B: Mason County, KY D: Highland, Ohio
Children: John, a farm laborer, and Nancy had three children including **William Firman (WF) Hendrickson** prior to John's death in 1824 at the age of 30.					
Synopsis: WF Hendricson was born just two months before his father died when a grain silo collapsed and fell on him. John Firman Hendrickson was helping his father-in-law repair the grain silo in Highland, Ohio when the accident occurred. Nancy and the three children lived with her parents in Ohio until her untimely early death in 1834 at the age of 36.					

Okey Hendrickson was instrumental in developing the village of Poplar Flat, Kentucky, near the Ohio River. Several generations of Hendricksons were born in Poplar Flat, but most moved north into Ohio, Indiana and other states of the Northwest Territory, or emigrated to the West Coast.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 6/9/2024.

Hendricson Generation 18					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
William Firman (WF) Hendrickson (Hendricson)	1824-1908	B: Poplar Flat, KY D: Albany, OR	**Sarah Agnes Jackson**	1828 - 1892	B: Rush, Indiana D: Albany, OR
Children: William and Sarah married in 1848 and had seven children, including **Omar Pasha Hendricson,** Bill and Shirley's paternal great grandfather.					
Synopsis: Like Okey Hendrickson in the preceding century, William (WF) was a pivotal figure in Hendricson family history. After the early deaths of both parents, WF was essentially loaned-out by his maternal grandparents to a local farmer as a laborer when he was 11 years old. He worked manual labor jobs on land and water for the next 10 years in Indiana, Michigan, Illinois, Wisconsin and Iowa as he slowly made his way west. WF traveled the Oregon Trail four times to seek his fortune on the West Coast including a year as a 49er during the California Gold Rush. WF married Sarah after two of these wagon train journeys, and after two more trips across the continent finally settled near Albany, Oregon in the fertile Willamette Valley. WF and Sarah became prominent citizens in the early development of the region. Chapter IV provides more information about the lives of WF, Sarah, and Sarah's father Onias Jackson, with emphasis on WFs numerous crossings of the continent by wagon train. Considering WF's status in the community, it was surprising that no photographs of him could be found. Hopefully, future family historians can locate images of this important contributor to our legacy. I did locate one picture of Sarah, taken many years after their arrival in Oregon. This picture appears in Chapter IV.					

Location of New Albany, Oregon south of Portland in the Willamette Valley, the target of many Oregon trail travelers. Of the 400,000 western emigrants between 1843 and 1868, 90% went to Utah, Oregon or California. *Johansen DO. Empire of the Columbia. A History of the Pacific Northwest. 2nd ed. New York: Harper Collins. 1967.*

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 5/2/2024.

A watercolor of the Willamette Valley drawn in 1845 by Henry Warre, a British army officer who traveled to the Oregon Territory to spy on American settlers.

Image source: Jette M. Lithograph of the Valley of Willamette River. Oregon History Project. www.oregonhistoryproject.org. 2003. Accessed: 5/03/2024.

Hendricson Generation 19					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Omar Pasha (OP) Hendricson	1854-1913	B: Albany, OR D: Heppner, OR	**Ella Morgan Rideout**	1856-1937	B: Salem, OR D: Mill City, OR
Children: OP and Ella had three children, including **William Firman Hendricson Jr.**, my paternal grandfather.					
Synopsis: Omar Pasha (OP), for unknown reasons, apparently was named after a Turkish general in the Crimean War (Omar Pasha). He was a sheriff in Colfax, WA at the time of their marriage, which was the sixth marriage between the Hendricson and Morgan families since 1750. The previous five occurred in New Jersey (3), Kentucky (1) and Indiana (1). Chapters III and IV depict the events leading up to the pivotal sixth Morgan-Hendricson marriage. After OP's death, Ella moved to Mill City, Oregon, near Albany, within a few miles of her parent's farm.					

OP and Ella in 1900. OP worked in farm machinery sales and in his father's grocery store prior to completing a law enforcement course, and landing jobs as Deputy Sheriff and Sheriff in the Colfax, WA. During OP's police career, he was Director of Game Day Security for the Washington Agricultural College (WAC) football team, which played in nearby Pullman. WAC became Washington State College in 1902. When OP returned to the grocery business, the couple and their children moved to the area of Pendleton, Oregon where they ran a store in town and lived on a small farm near Heppner, Oregon.

Colfax, Washington, located in Whitman County (red), played a role in family history. From 1870 to 1940, members of the Maris, Dennis, Goodman and Hendricson families lived and worked in Colfax.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 5/22/2024.

A photo of the 1900 WAC versus UW game for the state of Washington championship, apparently a muddy affair. *Image source: Frykman GA. Creating the People's University: Washington State University, 1890-1900. Pullman: WSU Press. 1990. Accessed: 5/22/2024.*

Hendricson Generation 20					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
William Firman Hendricson Jr.	1883-1948	B: Colfax, WA D: Walla Walla, WA	**Mabel Julia Maris**	1887-1981	B: Colfax, WA D: Tacoma, WA
Children: William and Mabel had two children, **Harold Maris Hendricson**, my father, and **Yvonne Elizabeth Hendricson (Janes)**, 1913-1993, an aunt.					
Synopsis: It's sad to say that I know very little about William Firman Hendricson Jr. other that he was described as quiet and kindly, and that he died unexpectedly a few weeks before I was born in 1948. I regret not asking Harold and Mildred about him when I still had the opportunity. He was in the grocery business with his wife Mabel during the 1940s, but there are indications that he had other jobs as a do-it-all handyman or general contractor before purchasing the grocery store. The grocery store existed under a different name, Ellis Market, at its location on the outskirts of Walla Walla for many years before the Hendricson's acquired it. Mabel's father, Albert Wilson Maris, was one of the few cross-continent immigrants who returned to the Midwest (Indiana) and lived the rest of his life there after spending about 20 years in Washington and Idaho. Mabel was born in Colfax, Washington, but spent much of her youth in a little village near Lewiston, Idaho where her mother died in 1899. She moved back to Colfax in 1908 and met William F. Hendricson soon after. They married in Spokane in 1911 and moved to Walla Walla, where they lived the rest of their lives. Yvonne Hendricson married Robert Edwin Janes in 1934 and had four children, Robert, William, Katherine and Nancy. Yvonne and Robert lived for much of their married life in a waterfront home in Gig Harbor, Washington, located west of Tacoma. William was killed in action in December 1967 during the Vietnam War. He was 20 years old.					

A high school graduation photo of William Firman Hendricson. He appears to have been quite tall.

A photograph of a pencil etching of Mabel Julia Maris at age 18 in 1905. Photographs of etchings were popular in the pre-World War I era to produce more artistic photographic portraits.

William Firman Hendricson Jr. and Mabel Maris Hendricson at the time of their marriage in 1911.

Left: Mabel with son Harold in 1920. Right: Mabel with grandchildren Shirley and Bill in 1954.

Mabel with family in 1975. Left to right: son-in-law Bob Janes, daughter Yvonne Janes, granddaughter Shirley Hendricson, daughter-in-law Mildred Hendricson holding great grandson Adam Hendricson, son Harold Hendricson, Mabel, and granddaughter-in-law Susan Hendricson.

Hendricson Generation 21					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Harold Maris Hendricson	1919-1992	B: Walla Walla, WA D: Freeland, WA	**Mildred Marietta Dennis**	1919-2019	B: Walla Walla, WA D: Freeland, WA
Children: Harold and Mildred married in 1946 and had two children: **William Dennis Hendricson** (1948 -) and **Shirley Hendricson** (1950 -).					
Synopsis: Harold had an adventurous life from an early age. In 1935 at the age of 16, he was selected to represent Walla Walla at a National Boy Scout Conference in Washington DC, where he came down with a severe case of either measles, mumps or pneumonia (accounts from family members differ). Whatever it was, he could not return home with his troop leaders. He remained in a DC hotel by himself for several months to recover, eventually returning to Walla Walla (Walla^2) by train. In 1941, he was a student at Whitman College in Walla^2 when Japan attacked Pearl Harbor, pulling the U.S. into the Second World War (WWII). Harold immediately volunteered and based on his academic record and scouting achievements, was selected for Officer Candidate School (OCS), which he completed at Forth Knox, Kentucky, ranking 3rd in a class of 167 candidates. Second Lieutenant Hendricson was assigned to the First Armored Division in the U.S. Fifth Army, and shipped to Ireland to prepare for the impending U.S. landings in North Africa. One month later, Harold was among the first wave of American soldiers to go ashore at Oran in Algeria in November 1942 and served in the first American tank					

unit to see combat in North Africa against General Erwin Rommel's Afrika Corps. He was captured during the disastrous (for the U.S.) Battle of Kasserine Pass in February 1943, but escaped in a nighttime breakout from a barbed wire pen in which he and several other U.S. and British soldiers were held. He was wounded later the same week when his unit repulsed a Nazi attack, but his Sherman M4 tank was blown up by a direct hit from a German Stuka light bomber, earning the first of six Purple Heart medals during WWII. During 1943, he engaged in several tank battles with German forces in North Africa until Rommel's eventual surrender, was promoted to First Lieutenant, was awarded a second and third Purple Heart for combat wounds, and became a commander of an Armored Tank Company.

During WWII, the equipment of an armored tank company consisted of 17 tanks, two jeeps, one supply truck, one half-track personnel carrier, and, when available, one tank retriever. The personnel included five officers (a 1st Lt. commander and four 2nd Lts) and approximately 100 enlisted men. Each Sherman tank was staffed by one officer and four soldiers. *(Danby J. Men of Armor. Havertown, PA: Casemate Publishers. 2022)* Harold's letters to Mildred during WWII suggest that at least five of the tanks that he commanded were blown up by German artillery or aircraft fire during the North African and Italian Peninsula campaigns. He experienced wounds and burns from flying metal debris, aircraft machine gun fire and flaming gas spewing from tanks during several of these explosions. The casualty and mortality rate of U.S. tank company officers in North Africa and Italy, mostly in their early 20s, fresh out of OCS school, and literally learning on the job, was very high *(Danby, 2022).*

After Rommel's surrender in North Africa, Harold was transferred to Sicily to prepare for the invasion of Italy. After training under General George Patton, he participated in the Allied invasion of Italy commencing with the landing at Salerno, south of Naples, in September 1943, and then the landing at Anzio Beach, further north and closer to Rome, an ill-conceived attempt to outflank the entrenched Nazi defense in January 1944, where he and thousands of U.S. and British soldiers were encircled and trapped for nearly five months. During the battle that finally led to the break out from the Anzio beachhead, he was awarded the first of his two silver stars for leading an attack on a panzer tank column that stymied a major German counterattack, and then opened access to a paved highway that became one of the main route for troops and vehicles to flow off the beach. *(Bowditch J, Komer R. Anzio Beachhead. Nashville, TN: The Battery Press. 1954.)*

After the Anzio breakout, he commanded a tank company (Company B, 1st Battalion, 1st Armored Division, a component of the U.S. Fifth Army) for a year as the Americans, (including African-American and Asian-American brigades), British divisions and a multi-national force including Italian partisans, a Jewish brigade, Brazilians, South Africans, Moroccans, New Zealanders, Canadians, and Polish troops, fought their way north through the rugged and mountainous Italian peninsula. During one of many attacks on Nazi forces, Harold suffered a catastrophic head injury when the cement lined turret lid of his tank was accidently slammed into the side of his head by a crewmember that did not see Harold stick his head up through the hatch. He was evacuated to a recuperation hospital near London for two months. He rejoined his unit for the final push through northern Italy that commenced in February 1945.

On April 23, 1945, near the end of the Italian campaign, now Captain Hendricson was awarded

a second silver star for leading an attack on a German position at Sorboto that led to the capture of 600 soldiers including nine generals and 64 artillery pieces. The attack helped secure a bridgehead across the Po River. Two days later, he jumped off his tank to lead a search along the banks of the Po River for a missing Lieutenant under his command. During the search, he was hit by a German bazooka salvo from the other side of the Po, suffering shrapnel injuries to his hands and legs. Harold rejected evacuation so he could participate in the final attack and crossing of the Po on April 26, 1945. Three days later he participated in a reconnaissance mission into Milan to determine the level of German resistance, which turned out to be minimal. His unit, the 1st Tank Battalion, occupied Milan's central plaza, where they were fed breakfast and lunch by joyous Milan citizens. *(Howe G. Capt. Harold M. Hendricson, In: Battle History of the 1st Armored Division, "Old Ironsides." Pgs. 412-430. Washington DC; Combat Forces Press. 1954)*

After the German surrender in Italy, Harold was assigned to the U.S. Army of Occupation in Germany where he served as provisional mayor of Ulm, a town in Bavaria, for a few months. In this transitional governance program, American and British officers managed German cities in the immediate aftermath of the war. Finally discharged in 1946, he pondered not returning to Walla[2], but eventually headed back home where he re-united with Mildred. The couple had known each other casually before the war. A few months after his return, Harold and Mildred married on November 16, 1946. The story of how their relationship endured four years of WWII separation is told in Chapter IV via excerpts from their war correspondence. Over the next four years, Harold worked in his parent's grocery business, known as the Community Grocery, which primarily served migrant workers in the onion and sugar beet fields near Walla[2]. Harold and Mildred lived in an apartment over the grocery store when I was born in 1948, followed by my sister, Shirley, in 1950.

When the Korean War broke out in 1950, Harold rushed to re-activate, which was a challenge because he was listed as disabled due to his many WWII injuries. Ultimately, he prevailed and after another training stint at Fort Knox, served two years as a tank commander and training officer in Korea, earning a Bronze star for his service with the 25th Infantry Division. Harold elected to stay in the regular army after returning from Korea. Over the next 20 years, he rose to the rank of full Colonel, commanded an armored battalion in Germany, was a brigade commander during a second tour in Korea, graduated from the Industrial War College of the Armed Forces, completed his bachelors degree in political science at the University of Nebraska (the first Hendricson college graduate since Hendrick Hendriksz 300 years earlier), and held a managerial position at the Pentagon at the end of his career. Overall, my parents, Shirley and I were stationed in Kentucky, California, Texas, Virginia (twice) in the U.S., and in five towns in Germany during Harold's two European tours between 1956 and 1966.

After leaving the army, Harold and Mildred spent a year in a Winnebago evaluating retirement spots on the West Coast before purchasing a beachfront home on several acres near the small town of Freeland on Whidbey Island, Washington. Harold's retirement passions were salmon fishing, upgrading numerous boats he purchased, creating gemstone jewelry in a rock shop he built on the property, rooting for the Seahawks (he and Mildred were season ticket holders from the Hawk's inaugural season) and traveling the country in motor homes.

Left: **The M4 Sherman tank, the workhorse of U.S., British and Canadian armored divisions in WWII, nicknamed the Ronson after a 1940's cigarette lighter with the motto, "lights every time" because the Sherman was highly flammable. Right: A tank retriever, which was a Sherman outfitted with a hydraulic hoist that could lift and drag damaged tanks to maintenance areas.**

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 9/11/2024.

Left: **Aerial image of the Anzio landing zone, where U.S. and British landing craft nosed up to the beaches of a popular Italian holiday resort. Right: Soldiers of the U.S. Fifth Army jump out of landing craft and wade ashore.** *Information and image source: Bowditch & Komer, 1954.*

Images available via Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 9/11/2024.

An April 29, 1945 photograph and 16mm film of a Sherman tank from the 1st Armored Division rolling into a Milan square dominated by the massive Duomo di Milan appeared in U.S. newspapers and in newsreels preceding movies. Harold claimed that a *Stars and Stripes* photographer shot the picture and film while sitting on his tank.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 9/11/2024.

Images From the Life of Harold Maris Hendricson

Newly commissioned Second Lieutenant Harold Maris Hendricson after graduating from Officer Candidate School (OCS) in 1942. Within days, he was shipped to Ireland to train for the first American military campaign of the European War, which occurred in North Africa.

Harold in North Africa in 1943 with a cameo helmet and his Thompson submachine gun.

With Shirley and Bill in 1950 in Walla Walla before re-joining the army.

In the 1960s, Harold was a Armored Battalion commander in Germany at the height of the Cold War, his favorite assignment.

Harold enjoyed Army life, especially when he was in the field and not behind a desk.

One of Harold's proudest moments was when his battalion basketball team won the European Armed Forces Championship in 1964 and made the final four in 1965. Harold considered himself the team's General Manager (GM), and as GM took their performance seriously, attending games home and away, and strategizing with the coach over lineups and tactics. The many victories (48-4 over two years) were a source of frequent celebrations in the Hendricson household. Player number 33, next to GM Hendricson, was Lt. Charley Warner, an All-American at Oregon, and one of the last two cuts for the 1964 U.S. Olympic team. The other final cut was current Spurs coach Gregg Popovich. In addition to Warner, players 14, 31 and 23 in the back row and 22 in the front were former college players.

During the Vietnam War, Harold's second tour in Korea included training a division from Thailand for service in Vietnam. The division's graduation ceremony included presentation of gifts from the Prime Minister of Thailand. During that period, Army officers wore *Dress Whites*, which had a decidedly naval appearance.

Shirley Hendricson (1950 -)

Shirley Hendricson in a 2007 photo, has lived in Germany, Virginia, Maryland, Illinois and Whidbey Island, Washington.

Shirley Hendricson, daughter of Harold and Mildred Hendricson, was born in Walla Walla, Washington, on January 8, 1950, the same year that Harold re-joined the military. Shirley's youth, like mine, was characterized by frequent movement from place to place and school to school as her father pursued his military career. By the time of our graduation from high school, Shirley and I had each attended at least 18 different schools (sometimes several in the same year) in such diverse locations as Pacific Grove, California, Lowden, Washington, Killen, Texas, Hampton, Virginia, six towns in Germany (Mannheim, Ulm, Goeppingen, Bamburg, Nuremburg and Stuttgart) and Fairfax, Virginia.

As Army Brats constantly moving from base to base, we spent a lot of time together in our early years. Shirley may be wondering … "and why do I have to stand by the rifle?"

During the first grade, Shirley bounced back and forth between a school near swank Carmel, California on the Pacific Ocean and a four-room school (1^{st} – 9^{th} grades) in tiny Lowden Washington amidst the dry hills of rural eastern Washington. During second grade, Shirley attended four different schools in Washington, Texas and Germany. Talk about a unique education! Despite all the school switching and the attendant social disruptions, Shirley was an excellent student, maintaining strong grades throughout.

A grades 1, 2 and 3 class photo from one of the years that Shirley (3rd row up, 3rd from right) attended Lowden School. I am top row center.

Shirley Hendricson at approximately age 25. The photo might have been taken during the year she attended fashion design school in Chicago. But it's probably not Chicago; it doesn't look cold enough to be the Windy City.

Shirley graduated from George Mason University in Virginia and commenced a diverse business career, finding success in a number of fields including fashion and design, professional associations, the travel industry, continuing education for public school teachers, landscaping, and managerial positions for a hardware store, a vineyard and event center, and a Wild Birds Unlimited (WBU) franchise. The WBU franchise has been Shirley's greatest success story. She bought a down and out, failing store, and moved the entire operation to a new town (Freeland, Washington) in a storefront that she completely remodeled. Starting with almost no customer base from the previous owners, Shirley steadily built up her WBU clientele and sales volume over a ten-year period to a high level. Accomplishing this in a rural area (located on an island in the Puget Sound) with low population density was not an easy task by any means. Customer loyalty was critical. Through the opening process and the establishment years for the store, Shirley also served as the primary caretaker for her mother, Mildred, who suffered a sequence of strokes contributing to dementia, which resulted in several lengthy nursing home rehabilitations, adding to Shirley's range of responsibilities.

Culminating a long relationship, Shirley married David Putnam Osborne (1946-1996) in 1992 in a ceremony at her parent's Whidbey Island home, exchanging vows with the Puget Sound as a backdrop. David was an MIT graduate and also an accomplished yacht restorer on the East Coast, in constant demand for his craftsmanship. David's specialty was restoration of 25-40 foot

Vindo sail yachts made in Sweden with teak or mahogany cabins, decking and interiors. *(Mate F. The World's Best Sailboats. New York: W.W. Norton. 2008.)* The couple purchased a home in Silver Spring, Maryland. Unfortunately, David passed way in 1996.

David Osborne and Shirley Hendricson

Soon after, Shirley relocated to Whidbey Island to be close to and assist Mildred who was 80 years of age. Mildred and Shirley resided together in two Whidbey Island homes over the next 22 years, with both locations on the water affording panoramic views of the ocean and Olympic Mountains. Shirley and Mildred were dedicated gardeners, with a focus on raspberries.

Shirley built gardens and did elaborate landscaping at their Whidbey Island homes, supported over the years by her five Weimaraners, Whidbey, Murphy, Nadee, Grace and Scout.

Shirley and Mildred at their home on Whidbey Island, WA in 2006.

Hendricson Generation 22					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
William Dennis Hendricson	1948-	B: Walla Walla, WA D: N/A	**Susan Lienau Hendricson**	1949-	B: Washington DC D: N/A
Children: Married in January 1971, William (Bill) and Susan have two children: **Adam William Hendricson (1974 -)** and **Aaron Charles Hendricson** (1978 -).					
Synopsis: The birthplaces of our (Susan and Bill) family cover all four points on the compass: Bill (West – Walla Walla, Washington), Susan (East – Washington DC), Adam (North – Evanston, Illinois), and Aaron (South – San Antonio, Texas). Susan and I had long careers in elementary and higher education. Adam graduated from Tulane University in New Orleans in 1997, continued his studies to earn a PhD from the same institution and is a research scientist in Connecticut. Aaron graduated from Emory University in Atlanta in 2000, earned a law degree (J.D.) from the University of Texas at Austin and is an attorney in Dallas, Texas. **Chapter V provides additional information on the lives of Bill, Susan, Adam and Aaron.**					

Susan and Bill; 1971

2006

2022

Adam and Aaron Hendricson

Morgan Lineage Table

The Morgan family that is linked to our Hendricson family originated in Wales and is comprised of 13 generations: seven in Europe pre-immigration and six in North America after immigration.

An old Welsh joke goes something like this: "If a Morgan shrugs his shoulders on a street corner in Wales, he will almost certainly bump into two other Morgans." As subsequently discussed in the pre-Immigration history of the Morgans (Chapter III), there is a high frequency of the Morgan surname in Wales, and marriages among different branches of the Morgan clan were common throughout history. Consequently, there has been controversy and inaccuracy in prior Hendricson and Morgan histories about designating **THE** Morgan line in Wales that represents the appropriate starting point for tracing Hendricson-related Morgan immigration to North America. Based on my research, I am confident that the lineage depicted below represents the Morgan line directly associated with the Hendricson family in North America.

Morgan Generation 1					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
John Morgan	1428-1492	B: Monmouthshire Wales	**Janet Mathew**	1445-1494	B: Llandaff, Wales
		D: Tredegar, Wales			D: Tredegar, Wales
Children: John and Janet had 11 children including **Thomas Mathew Morgan.**					
Synopsis: John Morgan was one of the most influential people in Wales in the 15th century. He was designated as a Knight of the Holy Sepulcher for his participation in a mini-crusade that was ceremonial and partially tourism, although he did manage to get into a few scraps with Muslim militia. The mission, mostly successful, was to retrieve memorabilia from prior crusades left behind by English knights and soldiers. William was characterized in ballads and sonnets of the day as extraordinarily large, both vertically and horizontally. He was commonly identified as *Y Marchog Tew* (the "Fat Knight) in the social media of the day: minstrel groups, puppet theatre, public readers, posters, portraits, and graffiti; the later was quite a problem in the 15th century as it is today. John did have military prowess as he fought to much acclaim on Henry Tutor's (King Henry VII) side at the pivotal Battle of Bosworth Field (August 22, 1485). John's heroics that day cemented the close ties of his family with Tudor kings in the coming decades.					

=======

Notes on Bosworth Field: This was the final and most significant battle of the War of Roses between two houses (lines of noble families) contending for the English throne: the Lancaster's who wore a tunic badge decorated with a red rose and the Yorks, whose tunic badge was a white rose. The current king in 1485 (Richard III, a York) was killed early in the battle, and the insurgent Lancastrian forces led by Henry Tudor ultimately defeated his army. Henry was installed as King Henry VII. The Welsh, led by Sir John Morgan, supported the Lancaster House by providing a safe harbor for Henry's army to land, comprised 25% of the Lancastrian soldiers, and fought under the red rose in several battles leading up to Bosworth Field.

Sir John Morgan and the Welsh soldiers wore the Lancaster's red rose emblem during the War of the Roses. *Carpenter C. War of the Roses: Politics and the Constitution in England, c. 1437-1509. Cambridge Medieval Textbooks. New York: Cambridge University Press. 2002. Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 5/24/2024.*

=======

Morgan Generation 2					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Thomas Mathew Morgan	1482-1538	B: Tredegar, Wales D: Llangurig, Wales	**Elizabeth Vaughn**	1486-1528	B: Porthaml, Wales D: Monmouthshire, Wales
Children: Thomas and Elizabeth married in 1506 and had nine children including **Rowland Morgan.**					
Synopsis: Sir Thomas Mathew Morgan was the personal attendant (esquire) and lead barrister for Kings Henry VII and Henry VIII, and, as such, was involved in considerable palace intrigue, leading to his nickname – *The Conspirator*. Thomas and Elizabeth were the lord and lady of a substantial estate in Monmouthshire, Wales near present day Cardiff. The estate and surrounding community, known as Tredegar, are described in Chapter III.					

Morgan Generation 3					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Rowland (Roland) Morgan	1508-1577	B: Tredegar, Wales D: Tredegar, Wales	**Blanche Thomas**	1512-1607	B: Llanarth, Wales D: Glamorgan, Wales
Children: Rowland and Blanch married in 1533 and had four children during their eight-year marriage including **Thomas Henry Morgan.** Rowland and Blanche separated in 1541. Both eventually remarried, but tax and parish records do not identify any additional children.					
Synopsis: As best as could be determined, Rowland was the first of a series of Morgans who were appointed, later elected, to the position of Sheriff of Monmouthshire (Monmouth County) or Glamorganshire (Glamorgan County), or both simultaneously, in Wales.					

Source for Welsh history in the 15th and 16th centuries:
Griffiths RA. The Principality of Wales in the Later Middle Ages, 1277-1536. Cardiff: University of Wales Press. 1972.

Morgan Generation 4					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Thomas Henry Morgan	1534-1606	B: Monmouthshire, Wales D: Tredegar, Wales	**Elizabeth Bodenham**	1538-1606	B: Machen, Wales D: Tredegar, Wales
Children: Married in 1561, Thomas and Elizabeth had 12 children including two sons: **Henry William Morgan,** born in 1567, and **Thomas William Morgan**, born in 1571. Chapter III will describe both son's roles in the Hendricson family history.					
Synopsis: Thomas Henry was an accomplished individual. He was educated at the Middle Temple Hall, one of four academic Inns of the Royal Court, graduating as a barrister. He served as Sheriff of Monmouthshire for 12 years and served as a Parliament Member (PM) for 15 years. During the second of Thomas' five terms as a PM, Elizabeth replaced him as County Sheriff, becoming the first Welsh women to hold the title. She was re-appointed twice. Elizabeth was also appointed the first female mayor of the village of Tredegar.					

Morgan Generation 5					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Henry William Morgan	1567-1653	B: Tredegar, Wales D: Tredegar, Wales	**Elizabeth Winter**	1564-1637	B: Machen, Wales D: Llandaff, Wales
Children: Henry and Elizabeth married in 1592 and had four children including **John Morgan.**					
Synopsis: Henry served a 12-year term as Sheriff of Glamorgan County and 6 years as Sheriff of Monmouthshire. It appears that he and Elizabeth experienced a financial downturn in the 1640s, likely due to the English Civil Wars, based on the economic circumstance of their son John and grandson Charles as described in Morgan generations six and seven.					

Morgan Generation 6					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
John William Morgan	1596-1651	B: Tredegar, Wales D: Llandaff, Wales	**Rebecca Richards Smith**	1593-1642	B: Cardiff, Wales D: Llandaff, Wales
Children: John and Rebecca had five children including **Charles William Morgan** and **Henry Morgan** (1635-1688), the notorious Pirate of the Caribbean. The Crown knighted Henry because his privateering was aimed at Spanish and Dutch shipping and plantations. The Dutch and Spanish were major economic rivals of England during this period in history.					
Synopsis: John and Rebecca's source of income from leasing farm and gaming land to tenets dried up during the 1630s for unknown reasons. They apparently left Tredegar and moved around quite a bit based on the various birthplaces of their children before finally settling in the village of Llandaff where parish and shire records indicate they were merchants.					

Morgan Generation 7					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Charles William Morgan	1635-1720	B: Llandaff, Wales	**Susan Powell**	1646-1697	B: Glamorgan, Wales
		D: Llandaff, Wales			D: Llandaff, Wales
Children: Charles and Susan had three children including **Morgan Wilm Morgan.**					
Synopsis: Charles and Susan were farmers in Glamorgan County, and also re-established a relationship with the Tredegar estate. Deeds and tax reports in Llandaff and Cardiff city records, and information in *The Book of Llandaff* (see note below) indicate they operated farm-to-market produce shops in Tredegar village, Llandaff and Cardiff.					

=======

Notes on *The Book of Llandaff*: The *Book* is an account of people and events in Glamorgan County, Wales including Cardiff and Llandaff Village, originated in 1125 by clerics at Llandaff Cathedral. The *Book* reports property and business ownership, acquisitions, and taxes in Glamorgan with focus on land donated or sold to the Church or to Anglo Saxon Kings beginning in the 7th century. The *Book* also documents marriages, births and deaths, residences, construction of buildings and prominent social events over a thousand-year period. The original writers used 149 early medieval Welsh records, known as charter scrolls, to document property transactions and events in the preceding centuries. The *Book* also includes biographies of noted family groups (i.e., clans such as the Morgans) in the Llandaff area. The Book was updated continuously through the 18th century, and is thousands of pages in length. It has been digitized by the National Library of Wales. A 150-page segment of the *Book* can be viewed at the Llandaff Cathedral. Elements of Morgan family history are derived from the *Book of Llandaff. (Sims-Williams P. The Book of Llandaff as a Historical Source. Suffolk: Boydell and Brewer. 2019)*

=======

Morgan Generation 8					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Morgan Wilm (William) Morgan	1687-1767	B: Llandaff, Wales	**Catherine Garretson**	1692-1773	B: Christiana, Delaware
		D: Bunker Hill, West Virginia (WVA)			D: Frederick, VA
Children: Morgan and Catherine had eight children including **David Morgan,** a famous frontiersman, **and Zackquill Morgan,** founder of Morgantown, WVA.					
Synopsis: Morgan graduated from Cambridge University, completing legal training in London and also was ordained as a Church of England Clergyman after theology education. He was the first in the Morgan line linked to the Hendricson's to immigrate to the Colonies. The story of Morgan and Catherine's life in Delaware and relocation to the western frontier appears in Chapter IV. Morgan, Catherine and their children were the first permanent European settlers in West Virginia and played important roles in the development of that state.					

=======

Notes on David Morgan: David Morgan (1721-1813) was likely adopted by Morgan and Catherine Morgan and was probably mixed race, Native American-European. David worked as a surveyor early in adulthood. In this capacity, he was employed by notable colonial Virginians Patrick Henry, Peter Jefferson (father of Thomas Jefferson) and Thomas Fairfax (Lord Fairfax), who owned much of Virginia west of the Shenandoah Valley. Through Lord Fairfax, David was hired to train and mentor a 17 year old by the name of George Washington who desired to become a surveyor. Between 1749-1752, David and George Washington surveyed the land holdings of Lord Fairfax in the western region of the Virginia Colony to establish boundaries between Virginia, Maryland and Pennsylvania. During this expedition, they completed surveys and maps for nearly 200 parcels of land that now comprise the eastern neck of the state of West Virginia. Washington and David Morgan then surveyed and mapped land that Washington had inherited on the Ohio River. After Washington departed to join the Virginia Regiment in the British Colonial Army late in 1752, David mapped the entire course of the Ohio River that now serves as the western boundary of West Virginia. During their surveying work, Washington met David's younger brother Zackquill (Zack) Morgan, and established a long-standing relationship.

David served in a Virginia militia unit of the British Colonial Army as a scout and translator during the French and Indian Wars in the 1750s. He was with his brother Zack and George Washington during the ill-fated Braddock's Campaign in Pennsylvania. During the final battle near the Monongahela River in 1755, David was wounded by a saber blow to his face when he pulled a French officer from his horse. In spite of the wound, he and Zack helped George Washington organize a retreat of the surviving troops, saving many lives. Zack, David, Daniel Boone and other frontier marksmen kept the French soldiers and their Native allies at a distance as Washington rounded up remaining troops, organized litters to carry the wounded, and executed a retreat. (*Preston D. Braddock's Defeat: The Battle of the Monongahela and the Road to Revolution. Oxford: Oxford University Press. 2015.)*

This painting by Auguste Regnier depicts Colonel Washington directing the Monongahela retreat. The kneeling figure at the left represents David Morgan and the standing figure to his left represents his brother Zack. The artist's intent was to distinguish Washington's actions from those of the mortally wounded Braddock and depict the heroism of the Morgans and other frontiersmen.
Cross D. Washington's First War.
www.ColonialWilliamsburgOnline.org. September 12, 2020.
Accessed: 5/17/2023.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons.
www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 5/25/2024.

During the Revolutionary War, David served with brother Zack in a Virginia regiment comprised of frontiersmen "experienced in the crafts of Indian warfare", fighting at the battles of Saratoga and Monmouth, among others, in the Northern Campaign. David later joined the Colonial Army of the South, commanded by General Daniel Morgan (a distant relative who readers will meet

later in the book), led riflemen units during the Battles of Cowpens, Fort Laurens and Guilford Courthouse, and was present at the Yorktown Siege. When David returned to West Virginia (WVA), he established several towns including Fort Morgan, PettyJohn and Fairmont, and built the Morgan-Gold House at Bunker Hill, WVA, now a National Historical Site. He participated in campaigns against the Northwest Tribes in Ohio and Indiana in conjunction with Daniel Boone. David and wife, Sarah Stevens (1731-1802) had eight children, who all migrated into the Northwest Territory (Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan, Wisconsin and eastern Minnesota). Five of the eight offspring settled on farms near Danville, Illinois. Two of David and Sarah's children married Hendrickson's; one son married a daughter of Okey Hendrickson and a daughter married one of Okey's sons. Both of Morgan-Hendrickson couples settled in Ohio.

Morgan-Gold House built 1805 – 1809 by David Morgan in Bunker Hill, WVA and now a National Registered Historic Landmark. The Gold in the name recognizes an investor who raised funds for the construction. *Image source: Farmhouse Near Bunker Hill in Berkeley County WVA. Library of Congress. www.loc.gov. Accessed: 5/23/2024.*

=======

Morgan Generation 9					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Zackquill (Zack) Morgan	1734-1797	B: Bunker Hill, WVA D: Morgantown, WVA	**Drusilla Springer** (2nd wife)	1740-1796	B: New Jersey D: Morgantown WVA
Children: Zack and Drusilla were married in 1765 and had 13 children including **James Morgan,** a leading abolitionist, and the noted frontiersmen **Levi Morgan.**					
Synopsis: After receiving 1000 acres of land in Berkeley County, WVA from his father (Morgan Morgan), Zack built upon his father's legacy in this frontier area. Zack had a lengthy military career starting with Braddock's 1755 campaign in Pennsylvania during the French and Indian War, four years of service during the Revolutionary War and scouting on numerous frontier militia operations against Native Peoples in WVA and Ohio. During his military activities, Zack served under George Washington, and participated in several militia campaigns with Daniel Boone. In recognition of his military service during the Revolutionary War in the famed Virginia Riflemen Regiment, Zack received a large grant of land from the Virginia General Assembly, which he used to develop the area now known as Morgantown, WVA. Zack managed the planning of Morgantown and established the first business in the new community.					

Map indicates location of Berkeley County and the community of Bunker Hill in the northeast panhandle of West Virginia.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org.
Accessed: 5/25/2024.

=======

Notes on Levi Morgan: Levi (1766-1828) followed his parents Zack and Drusilla to West Virginia around 1780, but soon after moved westward to the newly opened Kentucky Territory, which became a state in 1792. Levi staked a claim to 700 acres at the intersection of the Salt River and the Ohio River in northern Kentucky where he farmed for the rest of his life. However, Levi is primarily known for his frontiersman and Indian fighter exploits, which earned him considerable fame and were detailed in novels and paperbacks about 18th century frontier life. *(Eckert A. The Frontiersman (7th Ed.). New York: Bantam Books. 1980)* This literature, especially the paperbacks (heavily illustrated brief novels, similar to modern graphic novels), became wildly popular in eastern U.S. cities in the early years of the nation, stimulated interest in frontier life, and promoted migration to Kentucky, West Virginia and Ohio.

Example of a Frontiersman paperback novel. *Conway WF. The Incredible Adventures of Daniel Boone's Kid Brother – Squire Boone. 1818. Reprinted - Lexington, KY: Squire Boone Village Printing. 1992. Available from Amazon Books.* The public was fascinated with accounts of frontiersmen heroics. *Davy Crockett's Almanacks*, which started in 1832 before his death and continued annually until 1856, his 1834 autobiography, and the touring play based on his myth, *The Lion of the West*, were the most popular paperback series, book and theatrical performance of the 1830s. *Hutton PA. Davy Crockett, Still King of the Wild Frontier, And a Hell of A Nice Guy. Texas Monthly. www.texasmontly.com. November 1986. Accessed: March 12, 2023.*

Levi often served with Daniel Boone (1734-1820), Simon Kenton (1755-1836), known as the Daniel Boone of Ohio *(Eckert, 1980)*, and once with his uncle David Morgan during territorial militia and federal government campaigns against the native Miami, Shawnee and Delaware tribes in Ohio and Indiana. These tribes had formed a Confederacy to protect their homelands from the disorganized onslaught of European settlers. The entire series of campaigns, which occurred between 1788 and 1794, was labeled as the Northwest War. Quite often, militia or U.S. army leaders ignored Levi's advice, which was: show of force first, negotiate second, but if necessary to fight, avoid European style tactics. Consequently, federal militia often blundered into ill-conceived engagements with the well-organized Tribal Confederacy.

On November 4, 1791, the most disastrous of these blunders occurred near the Wabash River in Ohio (i.e., Battle of the Wabash; St. Clair's Defeat). A federal army of 1200 soldiers was led by General Arthur St. Clair. He was insistent on standard European tactics, which included only

fighting during daylight and camping in open fields for a more orderly deployment. Despite being warned by Levi Morgan that a large force of Miami, Shawnee and Lenape tribesmen was beginning to encircle the army's position, St. Clair failed to relocate the camp to a more favorable position in a nearby forest or even to increase the number of sentries. His troops were surprised in a pre-dawn attack from all sides by the Confederacy and virtually wiped-out. Nearly 700 U.S. soldiers were killed, and another 400 were captured and later ransomed back for weapons. It was the most substantial defeat and largest U.S. loss of life in any battle with Native tribes, far exceeding Little Big Horn. *(Eid LV. American Indian Military Leadership: St. Clair's 1791 Defeat. Journal of Military History. 1993; 57(1): 71-88)*

After this experience, Levi refused further service with U.S. military during the campaign to clear tribes from the Northwest Territory. Levi turned his focus to farming and serving as a hunting guide, mostly for Easterners and Europeans who wanted to experience the Frontier Spirit. However, Levi still managed to get into conflicts with the Miami tribe who claimed he led hunting parties onto tribal lands and depleted the wildlife. On one hunting trip, which he advertised as a frontier safari in eastern newspapers, several Miami warriors kidnapped Levi and brought him to their main encampment near present day Franklin, Ohio. At the camp, Levi endured three days of tribal torture rituals including being hung from a horizontal bar by metal claws hooked into his chest, as depicted in the 1970 movie, *A Man Called Horse*, starring Richard Harris. The movie, which depicts an Englishman named John Morgan on an American Frontier Hunting Safari, is based on Levi Morgan's experiences with Native Americans. Levi died in 1828 while hunting near his farm at Salt Lick when a early fall blizzard surprised him. He sought shelter in a hallowed out Sycamore tree, but froze to death over night.

Scene from *A Man Called Horse*, based on Levi Morgan's experiences as a frontier hunting guide for wealthy Europeans and eastern seaboard residents.

Johnson DM. A Man Called Horse. In: Indian Country. New York: Ballantine Books Group (Penguin Random House). 1953.

Image source: The Telegraph. www.telegraph.co.uk. November 24, 2022. Accessed: 5/25/2024.

=======

Morgan Generation 10					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name(s)**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
James Morgan	1771-1855	B: Bunker Hill, WVA D: Bunker Hill, WVA	**Dorothy Prickett**	1777-1853	B: Monongalia Va D: Morgantown, WVA
Children: James and Dorothy had 13 children including **Drusilla Morgan.**					
Synopsis: James was less of a frontiersman than his father Zack or brother Levi. He operated several businesses in the vicinity of Bunker Hill. Dorothy was a schoolteacher and also functioned as an accountant for the family businesses. James was a prominent abolitionist and campaigned for WVA admission into the United States as a free state. In June 1855, a gang of pro-slavery militia murdered the elderly James as he was gardening at his Bunker Hill home. Virtually all of James and Dorothy's children, including Drusilla Morgan, moved north into the free states of Indiana and Illinois between 1810 and 1850. They sought opportunity to be productive farmers without competition from large slave plantations that dominated agriculture in Virginia, and which they feared would emerge in West Virginia. The efforts of James and other abolitionists finally paid off when pro-Union groups rebuffed efforts by pro-slavery elements to derail the statehood initiative. WVA was admitted into the Union, after extensive political maneuvering, as a border state on June 20, 1863, eight years to the day after James' assassination. Under terms stipulated by President Lincoln, WVA was allowed admission to the Union on the condition that the state constitution must include a provision calling for gradual elimination of slavery, a demand that was ultimately met.					

Morgan Generation 11					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Names**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Drusilla Morgan	1795-1870	B: Morgantown, WVA D: Albany, OR	Drusilla had four husbands.		B: N/A D: N/A
Children: With her four husbands, Drusilla had six children, most of them with 3rd husband, James Price. Her children included **Margaret "Amanda" Morgan.**					
Synopsis: As you will read in Chapter III, this family history is being written because Drusilla made a difficult decision in a period of extreme trauma. Drusilla's first husband was a physician, Dr. Boaz Burris Cox, who died of pneumonia at age 33. Her second husband was William Arnett, an independent farmer, who died shortly after their marriage when thrown from a horse. Drusilla married James Price (1783-1849) in 1823, and this marriage lasted 26 years, producing all but one of her children. After her 3rd husband's death, Drusilla married John James Price, apparently not a relation, who died of unknown causes two years later. After the sudden death of her fourth husband, Drusilla was at a personal and economic crossroads: remain in the Midwest and continue operation of a struggling farm, or take a major gamble by investing all of her remaining money in a dangerous wagon train journey to the newly opened Oregon Territory to start over with no guarantee of success.					

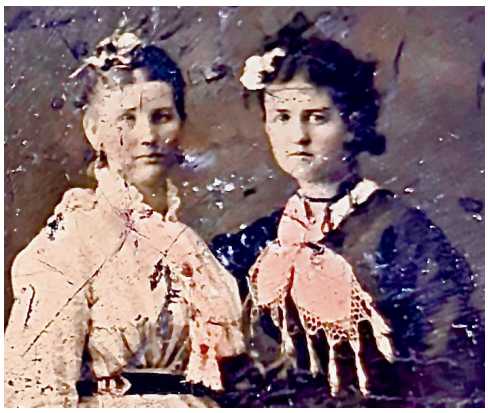
Morgan Generation 12					
Maiden Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Margaret Amanda Morgan	1833-1917	B: Danville, Illinois D: Albany, OR	**David Daniel Rideout**	1826-1884	B: Danforth, Maine D: Portland, OR
Children: Married in 1853, Amanda and David had eight children including **Ella Rideout.**					

Synopsis: David Rideout worked as a lumberjack and as a fishing guide at his family's lodge at East Grande Lake in Maine, and then tried the lobster industry in Massachusetts. After struggling as a commercial fisherman, David traveled to California with a million others in 1849 as part of the Great Gold Rush in an attempt strike it rich. After two unsuccessful years mining for gold, he headed to Oregon to try vegetable and fruit farming. This venture worked out better than his prior efforts and he bought a small house two miles from his nearest neighbors, a recently relocated family from the Midwest who arrived via the Oregon Trail. David was quick to notice an attractive young women at his neighbor's property, who was in charge of efforts to start up their farm. Within a year, Amanda Morgan, Drusilla Morgan's daughter, and David Rideout were married. The couple lived on a farm near Albany, Oregon, but David's occupation was listed as miner on the 1870 and 1880 Oregon Census, which is puzzling. There is evidence of marital difficulties. David, without Amanda, periodically lived in Fort Bidwell, California during the 1870s and 80s, near the present-day Modoc National Forest.

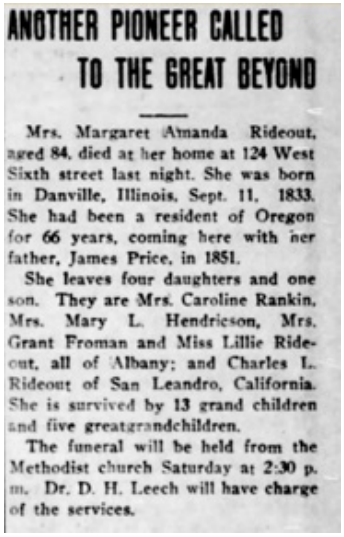
Descriptions of Amanda in prior Morgan and Hendricson family histories comment on her determined nature and competence. Amanda became the leader of the Morgan clan during the wagon train journey to Oregon and was instrumental in securing their land donation after arrival. With Drusilla's blessing, Amanda directed the creation of the Morgan farm near Albany and remained in charge after her marriage to David Rideout. With David's frequent absences, Amanda also was responsible for management of the Rideout farm.

Although the advertisement above indicates a 1947 start-up date, the Rideout family operated a "sportsman lodge" on the U.S. side of East Grande Lake since the early 19th century. It was one of the first recreational / vacation lodges in the state and still is an attraction today. The lake and Rideout Lodge are a short distance from the McAnespy farm in New Brunswick where Susan's grandfather and grandmother (Theodore Stefano Girault and Bessie McAnespy Girault) met and married.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/19/2024.



A photo of Amanda Morgan Rideout, left, and one of her daughters, not identified, taken in the 1880s.



ANOTHER PIONEER CALLED TO THE GREAT BEYOND

Mrs. Margaret Amanda Rideout, aged 84, died at her home at 124 West Sixth street last night. She was born in Danville, Illinois, Sept. 11, 1833. She had been a resident of Oregon for 66 years, coming here with her father, James Price, in 1851.

She leaves four daughters and one son. They are Mrs. Caroline Rankin, Mrs. Mary L. Hendricson, Mrs. Grant Froman and Miss Lillie Rideout, all of Albany; and Charles L. Rideout of San Leandro, California. She is survived by 13 grand children and five greatgrandchildren.

The funeral will be held from the Methodist church Saturday at 2:30 p. m. Dr. D. H. Leech will have charge of the services.

Amanda Morgan Rideout's obituary in the *Albany Daily Democrat*, September 14, 1917. The obituary inaccurately notes that she accompanied her father John James Price to Oregon. He actually died two years prior to Amanda's journey west with a group of 13 Morgan's including her mother Drusilla Morgan.

Image source: Newspapers.com. Online Archive. www.newpapers.com. Accessed: 7/1/2024.

Morgan Generation 13					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Mary Eleanor (Ella) Morgan Rideout	1856-1937	B: Albany, OR D: Walla Walla, WA	**Omar Pasha (OP) Hendricson**	1854-1913	B: Albany, OR D: Walla Walla, WA
Children: Married in 1880, Ella and OP had three children, including **William Firman Hendricson Jr.**, my paternal grandfather.					
Synopsis: Omar Pasha (OP) Hendricson was a sheriff in Colfax, Washington at the time of his marriage to Ella**.** Because OP moved from Albany to take the job in Colfax, which is 450 miles away, the circumstances that led to Ella and OPs marriage are unknown. Since they were both born in Albany and likely knew each other in school, it is probable that a relationship already existed before OP accepted the job in Colfax. Ella inherited a spirited nature from her fiery mother Amanda Morgan. Ella was determined to obtain an education beyond high school. She worked multiple farm and in-town jobs after high school graduation to raise tuition to enter the newly established Oregon State University in 1877 at the age of 21. Ella completed a two year Teacher' College program at OSU, and used the degree to obtain an elementary school teaching job in Albany. After marriage to OP Hendricson and relocation to Colfax, WA,					

and later to Pendleton, Oregon, Ella balanced caring for her children and working in their family businesses for many years.

Synopsis: The Hendricson Lineage Table, generations 20 – 22, describes the evolution of the Hendricson family lineage after Omar and Ella's marriage. In summary, Ella and Omar's son William Firman Hendricson Jr. married Mabel Julia Maris in 1911. They had two children: Harold Maris Hendricson, my father, and Yvonne Hendricson, an aunt. Harold Hendricson married Mildred Marietta Dennis in 1946, a union that produced me, William Dennis Hendricson, and my sister Shirley Hendricson. I married Susan Elizabeth Lienau in 1971 and Shirley married David Putman Osborne in 1992.

Ella Rideout Hendricson at age 22 in a colorized photo. Note: The spots on her face are from water damage to the photo.

Ella, husband OP, and daughter Daisy shortly after the 1893 opening their grocery and sundry store in Pendleton, Oregon.

Ella and OP Hendricson with children, William Firman Jr., (age 22), Ellis Omer (age 11), and Daisy Lora (age 24) in 1904.

Maris Lineage Table

The Maris surname originated in France, but the Maris line linked to our Hendricson family relocated from France to England during the 16th century, most likely due to religious persecution. The Maris line is comprised of 11 generations that could be identified with confidence: two in England pre-immigration and nine in North America after immigration.

Maris Generation 1					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth (B) And Death (D)**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Richard Dunwall de Maris	1568-1641	B: Unknown	**Agnes Griffin**	1572-1640	B: Bromsgrove, ENG
		D: Grafton Flyford England (ENG)			D: Grafton Flyford ENG
Children: Richard and Agnes had an unknown number of children, but one of them was **Richard George Maris**, who went by George Maris as an adult.					
Synopsis: A Maris family history written in 1885 and seemingly well researched, reported that Richard Dunwall de Maris was born in Northern France to Huguenot parents (i.e., French Protestants who believed in Calvinistic concepts). The family fled to England shortly after the St. Bartholomew's Day Massacre of Huguenots by a Catholic mob in 1572 (Chapter III).					

Maris Generation 2					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth (B) And Death (D)**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Richard George Maris Sr.	1595-1658	B: Flyford Grafton, ENG	**Alice Collier**	1599-1666	B: Ombersley, ENG
		D: Flyford Grafton, ENG			D: Flyford Grafton ENG
Children: Married in 1622, George and Alice had 12 children including **George Edward Maris Jr.**					
Synopsis: Other than where they lived and live span, I could not find any information about Richard and Alice.					

Maris Generation 3					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
George Edward Maris Jr.	1632-1706	B: Inkborough, ENG	**Alice Wilsmith**	1632-1699	B: Inkborough ENG
		D: Springfield, PA			D: Springfield, PA
Children: George and Alice were married in 1659 and had six children including **John Maris Sr**.					
Synopsis: George was a successful shoemaker who owned three shops in Worcestershire. George and Alice converted to Quakerism around 1670 and were devout practitioners. As discussed in Chapter III, they were harassed and imprisoned by government officials for their Quaker beliefs. Not surprisingly, George and Alice were attracted to William Penn's Quaker-centric colony in Pennsylvania, and immigrated there with six children, arriving on the ship *Bristol Comfort* on October 1, 1683. George quickly rose to prominence after purchasing 1000					

acres from Penn on the day after his arrival. He served in the Pennsylvania Assembly from 1684-1693, was a court magistrate after completing a course of legal training, established the Springfield Friends Meeting House, which Alice managed, and built a substantial, by early colonial standards, house for his family, which Alice named "Home House" that was located on State Road in Springfield, PA, today a suburb of Philadelphia.

George and Alice Maris arrived in Pennsylvania (PA) on the *Bristol Comfort* with the household items listed below on the ship manifest. Note the 90 pounds of shoes! George obviously planned to continue his shoe and boot-making career in Pennsylvania.

[3.0 3.1] Balderston, Marion. *Pennsylvania's 1683 Ships and Some of Their Passengers*. Pennsylvania Genealogical Magazine. (Philadelphia, Pennsylvania: Genealogical Society of Pennsylvania, 1965) 24 (2): 84.

Loaded on the *Bristol Comfort* "23 [May] George Morris (Maris): 10 doz. dressed calf skins; 1 qtr. malt; 3½ qtrs. wheat; 3 bushels oatmeal; 90 lbs. shoes; ½ cwt. pewter; cwt. brass manufactured; 2 flitches bacon; 20 cwt. wrought iron; 6 doz. woolen stockings; 10 cwt. cheese; 1 bbl. beer; 3 doz. plain sheepskin gloves; 1½ firkins butter; 33 yds. flannel; 11 pcs. English earthware; 1/15 hhd. aquavita; 2¼ cwt. lead shot; ¼ cwt. gunpowder; 20 ells English linen; 10 parcels several wares value £18 10s."

=======

Notes on the Maris Home House in Springfield PA: No illustrations could be found, but the house was described as having seven ground floor rooms, a cellar and an attic. The original Home House stood until 1800 when a Maris descendent replaced the wood structure with a two story stone and wood house with five bedrooms that was continuously occupied by the Maris family until 1985, when it was remodeled into a office building for three law practices.

Pennsylvania State Historical Marker designating the original site of the Maris Home House in the town of Springfield.
Image Source: A family photo by William D. Hendricson.

Source for early Maris family history:
Maris GL and Pinkerton Maris A. The Maris Family in the U.S. A Record of the Descendants of George and Alice Maris, 1683-1885. West Chester, PA: FS Hickman Printing. 1885. Digitized by HathiTrust in 2013. Available from www.onlinebooks.library.upenn.edu and Amazon Books. Accessed: February 3, 2023.

=======

Maris Generation 4					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth (B) And Death (D)**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
John Maris Sr.	1669-1747	B: Inkborough, ENG	**Susannah Lewis**	1673-1747	B: Haverford, PA
		D: Springfield, PA			D: Springfield, PA
Children: John and Susanna each immigrated to the Pennsylvania Colony with their parents when they were teenagers. They met several years later and married in 1693. The couple had 11 children including **John Maris Jr**.					
Synopsis: John and Susanna continued their parents' Quaker faith and were active in starting Friends Societies in small towns along the Delaware River. Susanna was particularly active as a spiritual leader and frequently conducted Friends meetings.					

Maris Generation 5					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
John Maris Jr.	1709-1792	B: Springfield, PA	**Kathryn Bound Heiden**	1707-1754	B: Chester, PA
		D: Springfield, PA			D: Orange County, North Carolina (NC)
Children: Married in 1735, John and Kathryn had six children including **George Maris**.					
Synopsis: Kathryn's first husband, Andrew Heiden, died at age 24 when trampled by a run-away carriage one week after their marriage. John and Kathryn moved to North Carolina in 1736 to take over management of a farm and blacksmith shop inherited from her parents. For unclear reasons, they moved back and forth between NC and Chester PA almost every year until they finally settled in 1748 in Chester, a few miles southwest of Philadelphia on the Delaware River. Chester PA Quaker Society notations indicate that John made additional trips between NC and PA without Kathryn. Like their parents and grandparents, John and Kathryn were devoted Quakers and proactive abolitionists, often speaking at anti-slavery rallies. Maris family historians conjectured that the frequent relocations were related to establishing Friends Societies in both states. Quaker histories contend that they were involved in an early version of the Underground Railroad, smuggling run-away slaves to PA, technically a free state. However, many wealthy PA residents including Quakers and Benjamin Franklin owned slaves. Franklin often ran advertisements for slave sales in his newspaper, the *Pennsylvania Gazette*.					

To be SOLD,
A Very likely breeding Negroe Woman, and a Boy about two Years old. The Woman is fit for any Business either in Town or Country. Enquire of William Bas-don, over-against the Coffee-House in Front Street.

An advertisement for sale of a slave in Ben Franklin's *Philadelphia Gazette.* Franklin's views on human equality changed in later life. He was a supporter of the PA Gradual Abolition of Slavery Act passed by the PA General Assembly in 1780, the first abolition legislation in North America, and in 1787 was elected the first president of the PA Abolition Society, yet he never freed his household slaves.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 5/23/2024.

Maris Generation 6					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
George Maris	1743-1782	B: Chester, PA D: Snow Camp, NC	**Eleanor (Ellie) Mary Lindley**	1749-1783	B: Chester, PA D: Snow Camp, NC
Children: George and Eleanor were married in 1770 and had seven children during their 12-year marriage including **Aaron Samuel Maris**.					
Synopsis: Despite his Quaker perspectives, George served in the 6th Battalion of the 6th Pennsylvania Regiment during the Revolutionary War, fighting in several battles including the Battles of Brandywine and Germantown in 1777 near Chester where British Troops defeated colonial forces led by George Washington. *(Boatner MM. Encyclopedia of the American Revolution. Mechanicsburg. PA. Stackpole Books. 1994)* The colonials were trying to block the British from entering Philadelphia, but failed. After these battles, British regiments ransacked Chester, stripped homes of food, liquor, tools, bedding and winter clothing, and set fire to many dwellings. Ellie resisted when the Redcoats entered her house and was clubbed to the floor, breaking her jaw but survived the injury with lingering effects - frequent infections. The Maris home was stripped of furniture, which the Redcoats used for campfire kindling, as well as kitchen utensils, silverware, their wagon, the family's two horses, and farm tools. After losing an eye due to a musket misfire during the Battle of Monmouth in 1778, George was discharged from the Continental Army and returned to Chester. However, Ellie and George's challenges were not over as will be seen in Chapter IV.					

Maris Generation 7					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Aaron Samuel Maris	1774-1843	B: Snow Camp, NC D: Parke, Indiana (IN)	**Sarah Holladay**	1781-1817	B: Alamance, NC D: Parke, IN
Children: Married in 1797, Aaron and Sarah had 11 children including **Aaron Maris Jr.**					
Synopsis: Aaron was raised in an "it takes a village" fashion at an isolated Quaker commune in Snow Camp, NC after his parents' deaths in the winter of 1782-1783. Adhering to Quaker abolitionist values and uncomfortable with the slave culture in NC, Aaron and Sarah (who he met at Snow Camp as a child) packed up their meager belongings and headed for the free state of Indiana in 1807 with their infant son Aaron Jr. and their other surviving children. They both found work in Parke County, Indiana near the small farming community of Rockville. Aaron worked as a farm laborer and wagon driver, and Sarah was a domestic in the home of the town's banker. Parke County is in western Indiana 60 miles from Indianapolis, and had a strong Quaker community at that point in its history. Sarah died of tuberculosis in 1817, and Aaron married Mary Chambers (1779-1839) two years later. The Maris family has a strong presence in Parke County to this day.					

=======

Notes on Free States in Northwest Territory: Formally known as the *Territory West of the Ohio River*, the Northwest Territory was established in 1787 by the Congress of the Confederation, which existed 1781-1789 during the Articles of Confederation phase of our nation's history. The Northwest Territory comprised the states of Ohio, Indiana, Michigan, Illinois, Wisconsin and a portion of Minnesota. The U.S. formally acquired these lands in the 1783 Treaty of Paris between Great Britain and the American Colonies. Development of a governance structure for this vast swath of land was triggered by the uncontrolled influx of hunters, land speculators and homesteaders into the region after the Revolutionary War, leading to constant conflicts among these groups, and often deadly conflicts with the native Miami, Delaware, Shawnee and Potawatomi tribes.

The Northwest Territory in 1787. As individual regions within the Territory met population and governance criteria and were admitted into the U.S. as states, the Territory shrunk, and was dissolved as a government entity in 1803.

McCullough D. The Pioneers: Heroic Settlers Who Brought the American Ideal West. New York: Simon and Schuster. 2019.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org
Accessed: 7/2/2024.

The governing structure for the territory, known as the Northwest Ordinance of 1787 provided a Bill of Natural Rights for residents, which included: prohibition of slavery, free public education up to age 14, guaranteed freedom of expression and religious practice, trial by peers and a fee simple land ownership concept in which property ownership was in perpetuity, rather than a term-limited lease system which was the common practice in 18th century colonial America.

These freedoms proved to be popular, especially with individuals like Aaron and Sarah Maris who abhorred slavery and also who could not compete in a slave-powered agricultural economy. With a territorial government structure in place to regulate immigration into the region and establish cities based on a specified street grid and planning protocol, the European population grew dramatically while the Native American population, after a campaign of eviction (i.e., the Northwest War) declined precipitously. Pressured by federal and territorial militia, tribes were driven north into Canada or west into the Great Plains. Although our Maris line ultimately moved to the Pacific Northwest, the majority of the other Maris families elected to put down roots within Indiana, Illinois and other states evolving from the Northwest Territory.

=======

Maris Generation 8					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Aaron Maris Jr.	1807-1872	B: Cane Creek, NC	**Keziah Millis**	1807-1885	B: Guilford, NC
		D: Winfield, Kansas			D: Winfield, Kansas
Children: Married in 1826 in Orange, Indiana (near Indianapolis), Aaron Jr. and Keziah had five children including **Edward Maris**.					
Synopsis: Aaron and Keziah lived in Parke County, Indiana and in Douglas, Illinois (just south of Champaign – Urbana) until 1870. Aaron started out as a farm hand, and eventually accumulated enough money to buy farm and pasture property of his own. At age 63, for unknown reasons, they relocated to the small community of Winfield in Cowley County, Kansas, near Wichita. Aaron died a year after arriving in Kansas and Keziah remained there until her death in 1885. Aaron and Keziah appear to have been the last actively practicing Quakers in the Maris line.					

Maris Generation 9					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Edward Maris	1832-1868	B: Bloomingdale, IN	**Julia Ann Morrison**	1834-1905	B: Parke, IN
		D: Douglas, Illinois			D: Parke, IN
Children: Edward and Julia married in 1853 and had six children including **Albert Wilson Maris**.					
Synopsis: We could find almost no details about the lives of Edward and Julia Ann other than that he fought for the Union Army in the Civil War and was present at the Battle of Gettysburg.					

Maris Generation 10					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Albert Wilson Maris	1856-1941	B: Parke, IN	**Carrie Eleanor Perkins**	1858-1899	B: Westfield, Mass
		D: Parke, IN			D: Lewiston, Idaho
Children: Albert and Carrie married in 1878 in Douglas, Illinois and had five children including **Mabel Julia Maris**.					
Synopsis: Albert was what we might call an entrepreneur today. He was engaged in a variety of businesses in various locations. Carrie's family moved from Massachusetts to Douglass, Illinois in 1870 where she met Albert in school and they married eight years later. They traveled to the state of Washington during 1883, probably by train rather than by an oxen-pulled wagon. Albert and Carrie ultimately settled in Colfax, Washington, which is in eastern Washington near the city of Pullman where Washington State University is located. In 1890, they moved to Lewiston, Idaho, where Carrie died in 1899. Albert continued to move around, landing in Spokane, Washington in 1914 where he married Alice Newlin (1861-1956). Albert and Alice soon after returned to Indiana, where the couple remained for the rest of their lives.					

Carrie Perkins Maris, at age 30. Originally from Massachusetts, Carrie aspired to be a nurse, but family financial struggles after moving to the Midwest prevented education after high school. I could not locate a reliably accurate picture of her husband, Albert Wilson Maris.

Maris Generation 11					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Mabel Julia Maris	1887-1981	B: Colfax, WA D: Des Moines, WA	**William Firman Hendricson Jr.**	1883-1948	B: Albany, OR D: Walla Walla, WA
Children: Mabel and William (WF) married in 1911 and had two children: **Harold Maris Hendricson**, and Yvonne Elizabeth Hendricson (Janes).					
Synopsis: Mabel was born in Colfax, Washington, but spent much of her youth in Lewiston, Idaho where her mother, Carrie Perkins, died when Mabel was 12. She moved back to Colfax in 1908 as a young adult and met William F. Hendricson Jr. soon after. They married in Spokane in 1911 and moved to Walla Walla, where they lived the rest of their lives. Mabel and William owned a grocery store, which Mabel continued to operate for a few years after WF's death in 1948. After selling the business, Mabel secured a position as Director of Prentice Hall, a student residence at Whitman College in Walla Walla, which housed all of the sororities, as well as other freshman and sophomore women. She held this job for 20 years. A highlight of that position was chaperoning the sorority sisters on annual Spring Break trips to Hawaii. As described in generations 20-22 in the Hendricson family lineage table, Mabel's son Harold married Mildred Marietta Dennis in 1946 after both Harold and Mildred returned from World War II military service. Photographs of Mabel at various stages of her life appear on pages 43 and 44. In a full circle moment, Mabel attended the graduation of Susan and I from Dickinson College in 1971 in Carlisle PA, less than 100 miles from Springfield PA where George Maris Sr. and Alice Wilsmith Maris established the family line in North America in 1683 and built the Home House.					

Mabel Hendricson, left, at the 1971 Dickinson College graduation. With Mabel from left: Shirley, Mildred and Harold Hendricson.

=======

Notes on the Roger Maris Connection: Like much of the U.S. male population in the 1950s and 60s, Harold Hendricson was a fan of baseball, especially the New York Yankees. My dad and I attended many Yankee games in NYC, and other cities whenever we were in the States, often driving long distances to catch Yankee road games in Detroit, Chicago or Washington DC. Part of the attraction was Roger Maris, who clubbed 61 homers in 1961 to break Babe Ruth's long-standing record. During that season, Maris and teammate Mickey Mantle smashed equal numbers of homers all summer until Mantle developed a serious hip infection, requiring drainage, from a botched flu injection and he missed the last two weeks of the season, finishing with 54 dingers. Maris became a celebrity and even made a movie with the already iconic Mantle. In the 1960s, my parents often stated that Roger Maris was a relative via the family line of Mabel Maris (Hendricson), a connection that I was happy to mention during baseball conversations throughout my life.

Image source: Getty images. www.gettyimages.ca. Accessed: 7/3/2024.

However, Roger was not a member of Mabel's Midwestern Maris family. In fact, his real name was not Maris; it was *Maras*, uncomfortably pronounced *Mar–ass*. In 1903, Roger's grandparents immigrated from Croatia to Minnesota where they changed their name to Maris after tiring of taunting about the Maras pronunciation. Roger's parents later moved their family to South Dakota where he was a multi-sport star in high school, especially excelling in football. In a 1952 game he scored seven touchdowns in five ways: kick-off returns (2), punt returns (2), interception (1), TD run (1), and a TD pass reception (1), still a national record. In the 50s, the big money was in baseball, so he turned down 33 college scholarships and signed with the Cleveland Indians. Roger was somewhat the rebel, and reverted to using Maras for his initial minor league seasons. He joined the Yanks in 1959 as Roger Maris. *Delaney J. Maris & Mantle's Home Run Race. New York Daily News. www.nydailynews.com. September 19, 2022.*

=======

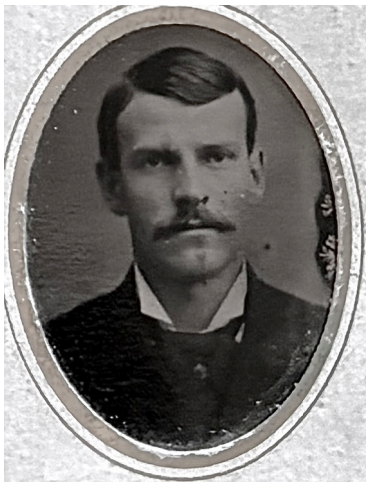
Dennis Lineage Table

The Dennis surname originated in France, but has been established in the Cornwall region of England since the 13th century. The Dennis family that I could most confidently link to our Hendricson-Lienau line lived in Lesnewth, Cornwall prior to immigrating to Pennsylvania (PA) in the early 19th century, part of a mass exodus of young adults from Cornwall to North America.

Dennis Generation 1					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
William Dennis	1832-1893	B: Turbotville, PA	**Mary Deiterick**	1831-1903	B: Philadelphia, PA
		D: Prosser, WA			D: Centre Township, PA
Children: Married in 1857, William and Mary had five children including **Joseph Lloyd Dennis.**					
Synopsis: My research indicates that William's father immigrated to the U.S. from the Cornwall region of England, and married a woman from a family already established in Pennsylvania. After investigation of candidates for William's father, I've narrowed the list to five individuals who immigrated from Cornwall to Pennsylvania as young adults between 1811 and 1826, but available evidence sheds no further light on his ancestry. William was born in Turbotville, PA in 1832, grew up in Bloomsburg, PA and married Mary Deiterick in 1857 who sometimes spelled her name as Deitterick or Deiterich. William and Mary settled in Fowlersville, PA, known as Centre Township in the 19th century. Several of William's decedents still live in the nearby town of Berwick. Bloomsburg, Fowlersville and Berwick are adjacent communities in central Pennsylvania along the Susquehanna River. For much of his adult life, William worked as a carpenter specializing in wagon and carriage construction. Bloomsburg newspaper articles indicate he held positions in municipal government for that town in the 1870s. For 20 years, a women by the name of Sarah Fox (1807-1890) resided in his home. I have not determined if Sarah Fox, listed as a widow on Census Reports, was a relative, a boarder in their home, a domestic (i.e., housekeeper) or played some other role in their lives. Soon after Sarah's death, William departed for Washington and established a residence in a rural community 40 miles from Umatilla Oregon where his son, Joseph Lloyd Dennis, lived. As best as I can tell, his wife Mary did not accompany him to Washington where he met a tragic fate – killed in an accident while working on a wheat threshing machine. (*Man Meets Tragic Death On Threshing Machine. The Daily Morning Astorian. August 27, 1893. Accessed from OldNews.com on September 21, 2024).* William is buried in Horse Heaven Hills Cemetery near Benton City, WA.					

William Dennis at approximate ages 30 and 60. He lived much of his life near Fowlersville, PA, before moving to Washington near the end of his life.

Dennis Generation 2					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Joseph Lloyd Dennis	1859-1936	B: Centre Township, PA D: Walla Walla, WA	**Mary Elizabeth Witherrite**	1862-1940	B: Jefferson, Oregon D: Stateline, OR
Children: Married in 1886, Joseph and Mary had three children: Artie Innes Dennis (1891-1893), **Archibald Howard Dennis** (1889-1977), and Dewey Delano Dennis (1898-1978).					
Synopsis: Joseph relocated from Pennsylvania to Umatilla, Oregon in the 1880s, striving to establish a farm and horse ranch. Umatilla is on the Oregon side of the Columbia River, and served as a campsite for the Lewis and Clark Expedition in 1806. Mary was born in eastern Oregon after her parents, Michael Witherrite (1825-1882) and Nancy Church Witherrite (1838-1907), independently traversed the Oregon Trail in 1850 and 1853 respectively. Mary's parents met at church and married in 1857. Ironically, the Witherrites were from Boggs, PA, near Centre Township, but the Dennis and Witherrite families apparently did not know each other.					



Joseph Lloyd Dennis in the early 1880s, shortly after he arrived in Oregon from Pennsylvania.

Joseph Lloyd Dennis at approximate age 60. The identity of the babies is not known.

Mary Witherrite at age 40. Mary pushed her children to attain solid education. Sons Archie and Dewey attended Walla Walla College founded by Seventh Day Adventists.

Archie and Dewey Dennis undertook associate arts degrees in business administration at Walla Walla College. The original classroom building where they completed coursework is still used by the renamed Walla Walla University.
Image source: Oregon Conference of Seventh Day Adventists. www.oregonadventists.org
Accessed: 7/24/2024.

The red dot indicates the location of Umatilla on the Oregon side of the Columbia River. The river curves south near Umatilla and then flows west to the coast. The Columbia is the Oregon – Washington border from Umatilla to the Pacific Ocean. Umatilla was established as a farm to market distribution center (i.e., river port).
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org.
Accessed: 7/5/2024.

The map shows eastern Oregon and Washington including key communities in the Dennis, Goodman, Maris and Hendricson stories: Walla Walla, Umatilla, Milton-Freewater and Pendleton. The eastern side of Washington beginning with Walla Walla and heading north is known as the *High Palouse*, after the native Palus tribe, and is a major wheat growing region comprised of prairies, rolling hills and sparse population.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/5/2024.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/5/2024.

Left: The Walla Walla region has developed a substantial vineyard industry over the past 50 years, and the downtown area has an array of bistros, cafes, tasting shops, bookstores, bed and breakfasts and art galleries. Right: The Palouse Falls on the Snake River is a major attraction 50 miles from Walla Walla for camping, hiking and kayaking.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 12/20/2024.

Dennis Generation 3					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Archibald (Archie) Howard Dennis	1889 - 1977	B: Walla Walla, WA D: Walla Walla, WA	**Maude Odessa Goodman**	1895-1979	B: Freewater, Oregon D: Walla Walla, WA

Children: Married in 1916, Archie and Maude had two children: Lloyd Neal Dennis (1917-1992) and **Mildred Marietta Dennis** (1919-2019) who is my mother. Lloyd is my uncle.

Synopsis: For most of their 60+ year marriage, Archie and Maude lived in the small rural community of Lowden, Washington, 12 miles west of Walla Walla. Archie and Maude were literally founding citizens of the community, which was originally known as Frenchtown because French Canadian and Metis (i.e., mixed race) trappers and their families wintered in the area beginning in the 18th century. Lewis and Clark's travel log includes a notation about interacting with Metis traders at a Frenchtown in 1806. Archie and Maude built a home in Lowden that was completed in 1919 and they resided in that house, with additions, until 1969. Archie was a rural mail carrier for 43 years with a daily 75-mile route mostly on dirt (dry pan) roads until the 1950s. Maude and Archie leased pasture to local ranchers to graze horses and cattle, had a large vegetable garden, and raised some cattle of their own.

Archie was a sought-after carpenter and repairman who picked up projects as he went from farm to farm on his rural mail route. His vehicle was often loaded with more furniture than mail. As a boy, I remember accompanying my grandfather on his route, leaving before dawn and returning home in the late afternoon. People walked out to the mailbox when they spied the swirl of dust following Archie's Dodge as he came down the road, and many conversations ensued, often leading to carpentry or repair jobs for Archie. He only drove Dodge's, and he wore out many of these vehicles over the decades on his dusty mail route.

Early in their marriage, Maude worked for the Pacific Telephone Company, rising to a supervisor level and also had a second job as the manager of a bookstore in Walla Walla, the Book Nook. Later, Maude was the cook at the Lowden Public School, which handled 1st – 9th grades in a two-story building. Shirley and I attended parts of the first and second grade at that school, which is now an upscale Winery. Maude also directed the 4-H Club for high school students for nearly 30 years.

Their son, Lloyd, was a successful businessman in Walla Walla, initially in the logging industry. Later he owned a bowling alley with automatic pin setting and ball-retrieval, which he installed himself. **Daughter Mildred's life is summarized on pages 86-88 and son Lloyd's life is summarized on pages 89-90.**

Lowden, Washington in 1916 (re-named from Frenchtown) when Archie and Maude moved to the community. The house they built was to the left of the two-story building at the left edge of the picture. The photo was colorized to improve clarity. *Image source: Family photo by Archie Dennis.*

Archie and Maude standing on their just purchased property in 1916 shortly after their marriage.

The Lowden School was built in 1916, and became the centerpiece of the community. It was a main reason that Archie and Maude decided to live in Lowden. Grandchildren Shirley and Bill attended the school for parts of the first and second grades. *Image source: Seattle Times. Pacific Northwest Magazine. November 2, 2023. www.seattletimes.com. Accessed: 7/6/2024.*

Archie and Maude in 1922 with children, Lloyd and Mildred.

Archie's postal service retirement reception in 1955.
1st row from left: Bill, Roma Dennis (Lloyd's first wife). Lloyd holding son Michael, Maude, Archie, Mildred, Harold, Shirley. 2nd row from left: Dewey Dennis, (Archie's brother), Elizabeth (Dewey's wife), Carol Dennis (Lloyd and Roma's daughter), Blanche Goodman (Lester's wife), Lester Goodman (Maude's brother), Diana Dennis, (Lloyd and Roma's daughter).

Archie with his five grandchildren in 1953. From left: Diana Dennis, Archie holding Michael Dennis, Shirley Hendricson, Bill Hendricson, and Carol Dennis.

Maude and Archie in 1966 on their 50th wedding anniversary.

=======

Notes on Lowden (Frenchtown), Washington and the Battle of Frenchtown: European trappers residing in Canada and Canadian Metis established the community now known as Lowden in the 1700s. Metis are the offspring of unions between French Canadian trappers and Indigenous Peoples in the Canadian Provinces of Alberta and British Columbia and the Canadian Northwest Territories. By the end of the 18th century, the majority of trappers, and their families, in Washington and Oregon were second or third generation Metis. Beginning in the 1770s, Metis trappers started to winter in an area west of Walla Walla attracted by a stream for water and bathing, abundant grassland for grazing animals, and substantial wildlife for food supply. A tent settlement was established and called Le Village des Canadiens. *(Jackson JC. Children of the Fur Trade: Forgotten Metis of the Pacific Northwest. Corvallis: Oregon State University. 2007)* The village stream came to be known as Dry Creek, because that's what it was in the summer - dry. By the 1820s, Metis started to live year-round in Le Village des Canadiens, joined by elderly members of the Walla Walla Tribe, creating a community of 500 people. In 1823, the first permanent log cabins were built on the western edge of the village by French trapper Michel Pellissier and Metis partner, Catherine D'Aubuchan, and by Lizette Walla Walla Lavadour, (1817-1891) daughter of a former tribal chief, and French partner Joseph LaRocque. A general store, chapel, stable, and meeting hall followed. In 1845, the community was nicknamed Frenchtown by wagon train masters who traded with the Metis on their way to Oregon. The Frenchtown nickname stuck, even with Metis residents. In the 1850s, substantial numbers of White emigrants decided that the Walla Walla area was just as suitable for homesteading as western Oregon, leading to pressure on the U.S. Army to clear the land of Indigenous Peoples. *(Barman J. French Canadians, Furs, and Indigenous Women in the Making of the Pacific Northwest. Vancouver, BC: University of British Columbia Press. 2014)*

In 1854, displays of military manpower and firepower, threats of violence and several incidents of actual violence failed to induce the Cayuse, Walla Walla, Umatilla, Nez Perce and Yakima tribes to vacate their ancestral homelands. Fearing forced removal, the tribes finally agreed to negotiate a best conditions obtainable treaty with the U.S. military and the U.S. Superintendents of Indian Affairs for the Territories of Washington and Oregon (*Trafzer C. Walla Walla Treaty Council 1855. Oregon Encyclopedia. Oregon Historical Society www.oregonencyclopedia.org. September 26, 2023. Accessed: May 23, 2024*) In the resultant treaty, the tribes traded 60,000 square miles of their ancestral Washington range for 780 square miles in northeastern Oregon, two other smaller tracts near Umatilla, Oregon and received $200,000 and farming equipment in compensation. *(State of Washington. Governor's Office of Indian Affairs www.goia.gov. Treaty of Walla Walla, 1855. Accessed: May 23, 2024)*

In May 1855, 5,000 members of the Walla Walla and four other tribes, led by 15 elected delegates, met with the Territorial Governors of Oregon and Washington and their Indian Affairs Directors to negotiate boundaries for tribal lands in light of White settlers' demands for homesteading rights.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/18/2024.

The treaty defined areas in Washington that were off-limits to White settlers, and also allowed the tribes to continue hunting and fishing on their homelands. Settlers breached the treaty almost immediately by squatting on restricted lands, and conflicts occurred when tribesmen attempted to hunt and fish on these lands per stipulations of the treaty. After his pleas to the U.S. Army and the Washington Territorial Office of Indian Affairs for treaty enforcement were ignored, the Walla Walla chief, Peopeomoxmox, formed a homelands protection confederation among the Cayuse, Umatilla and Yakima tribes.

The tribes were provided a fairly lenient timetable for relocation, and not surprisingly, few Native families departed promptly. In July of 1855 at the Fort Walla Walla trading post owned by the Hudson Bay Company, Anglo settlers, Walla Walla tribesmen and several Metis accused each other of horse theft and other real or imagined misbehavior, which led to the inevitable gunplay. Several Natives, Metis and settlers were wounded, and one settler soon after died of his injuries. The catalyst for this incident was ambiguous, but the Hudson Bay Company decided to abandon the fort, which was then looted and burned by a group of Walla Wallaians, further exacerbating Anglo antipathy for the Tribe. Hoping to avoid recriminations against his people, Peopeomoxmox presented a formal apology and provided winter robes and horses as gifts to settlers. In spite of Peopeomoxmox's efforts to de-escalate the situation, persistent settler agitation led the Territorial Governor to order the Metis and Walla Wallians to vacate Frenchtown immediately.

A sketch of Walla Walla Chief Peopeomoxmox (1790-1855), drawn by Gustav Sohon, a U.S. Army officer, during the 1855 treaty negotiations with the U.S. military and Washington and Oregon Territory representatives.

Image source: Yakima Herald-Republic, www.yakimaherald.com in an article titled: Battle of Walla Walla Had A Local Context. December 16, 2022. Accessed: 7/19/2024.

Although a few Metis families in Frenchtown headed back to Canada rather than depart for arid Oregon, most ignored the evacuation order, as did the Walla Wallaians. Fueled by distorted accounts of the Fort Walla Walla incident, a militia of 360 White settlers named the Oregon Mounted Volunteers (OMV), formed in the Willamette Valley in November 1855 without knowledge of the U.S. Army or the Governors of Oregon and Washington. The OMV marched toward Frenchtown along the Columbia River with the goal of forcing the Metis and Walla Wallians to leave. At Umatilla, members of the Walla Walla tribe along with Cayuse, Umatilla and Yakima confederates, numbering around 300 tribesmen, began to follow the OMV, riding along a ridgeline about a mile north of the militia unit as it moved east toward Frenchtown along the Walla Walla River. *(Jackson JC. The First Regiment of the Oregon Mounted Volunteers and the Yakima Indian War of 1855-56. Portland: Ye Galeon Press. 1996)*

The OMV reached Frenchtown on December 6, 1855 and the following morning attacked at dawn, marching across Dry Creek and into the village during a snowstorm. The Metis and the tribal confederation counter-attacked, resulting in casualties on both sides. After the initial

assault and counter-attack, Peopeomoxmox, one teenager, and five elders who comprised the tribal leadership council, surrendered to the OMV in hopes of curtailing the violence. One elder was left behind with the Metis leaders, which included Lizette Walla Walla's daughter, Elizabeth. Peopeomoxmox and the others were led away by a group of OMV troops to an abandoned Jesuit mission, where they were tied to chairs and held hostage. When the teenager attempted to escape, several OMV volunteers shot and killed the entire group. Their bodies were decapitated, mutilated, and thrown onto the trail leading into Frenchtown. *(Trafzer C, Scheuerman R. Renegade Tribe: The Palouse Indians and the Invasion of the Inland Pacific Northwest. Pullman, WA: Washington State University Press. 1986)* Predictably, Frenchtown resistance hardened. Three days of back and forth battle ensued. The OMV and Metis repeatedly captured and then lost the cabins on the western edge of town near Dry Creek. Although the battle was inconclusive, on the December 11 the Metis leadership agreed to cease hostilities and "painfully remove ourselves from our home." *(Trafzer, 1986)* At the time of their surrender, Elizabeth and the other Metis leaders did not know that the OMV were also planning to withdraw later the same day. The OMV were dismayed by the fierce resistance, the heavy casualties within their unit, and were concerned about the repercussions of Peopeomoxmox's death. And, they were almost out of ammunition. The OMV accepted the Metis offer, and quickly departed the area. The majority of the Metis in Frenchtown returned to Canada, and most of the Walla Wallians reluctantly relocated to the reservation in northeastern Oregon. No one in the OMV was punished or reprimanded for the murders of Peopeomoxmox and the other tribesmen. *(Jackson JC. A Little War of Destiny: The Yakima/Walla Walla Indian War of 1855-1856. Amazon: CreateSpace Independent Publishing Platform (CIPP). March 26, 2011. Amazon merged CIPP into Kindle Direct Publishing www.kdp.amazon.com in 2018. Accessed from KDP on May 23, 2024)*

In spite of the urgency to clear the land for White settlement, Frenchtown was largely unoccupied until a grain storage facility with a railroad siding was constructed in 1910. Soon after, a school, general store, gas station and other businesses were built. The community was renamed Lowden in 1916 after Francis Lowden, a local farmer who led the revitalization. Archie and Maude Dennis built their home and purchased pasture on the western edge of Lowden bordering Dry Creek in 1916-1917. The Frenchtown homes of Michel Pellissier and Catherine D'Aubuchan, and Lizette Walla Walla and Joseph LaRocque, both adjacent to Dry Creek, likely stood on this land, although the precise location of these buildings has not been established.

The expulsion of the Metis from Frenchtown is often referred to as the Battle of Walla Walla as indicated on this historical marker near Lowden. However, most historians refer to the 1855 conflict as the Battle of Frenchtown. *Elliot TC. The Murder of Peu-Peu-Mox-Mox. Oregon Historical Quarterly. 1934; 35(2): 123-130. Accessed via Journal Storage (JSTOR) www.jstor.org on March 17, 2023.*

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 7/19/2024.

=======

Notes on Manifest Destiny and Displacement of Indigenous Americans

Archie and Maude Dennis played no role in the removal of the Walla Walla and other tribes from the land that became their homestead in Lowden. Yet, they and millions of European immigrants to the Eastern Seaboard in the 17th and 18th centuries and westward moving settlers in the 19th century, benefitted from the unwavering policy of the U.S. government to clear indigenous Americans from their homelands by any means necessary. By 1871, when the U.S. Congress prohibited additional treaty-making with Native Americans, 374 treaties had been enacted over the previous 100 years, almost all involving land acquisition and population relocation. *(Pucha FP. American Indian Treaties: History of a Political Anomaly. Berkeley, CA: University of California Press. 1997)* Politicians who wrote the treaties to remove tribes from land desired by Whites and the settlers that acquired these properties had no problem with these actions because they considered Indigenous tribes to be intellectually and culturally inferior nomads, with no societal infrastructure recognizable to Europeans and no legal jurisdiction over lands they hunted or occasionally farmed. *(Pucha, 1997)*

After 1800, the U.S. government came to understand the nation building potential of the vast expanse of territory beyond the Mississippi that awaited resource harvesting and settlement. Only an inconvenient Indigenous population between 600,000 and 1,200,000 stood in the way. To build a case for westward expansion, presidential candidate James K. Polk used the concept of *Manifest Destiny* in the 1844 campaign to justify the "obvious (manifest) and certain belief (destiny)" that it was the divine and inevitable mission of the U.S. to spread from Atlantic to Pacific, and instill "the American Way of Life," an early expression of American exceptionalism. (*Byrnes ME. James K. Polk. A Biographical Companion. Bloomsbury Digital Resources. ABC-CLIO. www.abc-clio.com. 2001*) Perceptions of racial dominance were intertwined with territorial lust in Manifest Destiny, primarily the notion that the American Anglo-Saxon race was "separate, innately superior, and destined to bring good government, commercial prosperity and Christianity to the American continent." *(Horsman R. Race and Manifest Destiny: The Origins of American Racial Anglo-Saxonism. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press. 1981*). From 1600 to 1900, 4.7 million Native Americans died from warfare with Whites, European diseases and the effects of forced displacement. For example, during the Indian Removal Act of 1830, 100,000 Creek, Choctaw, Chickasaw and Cherokee were relocated to bleak reservations in Oklahoma. Many thousands died during this journey known as the "Trail of Tears." *(Fitzgerald D. The Cherokee Trail of Tears. Portland, OR: Graphic Arts Books. 2008)*

The 1830 Indian Removal Act, instigated by President Andrew Jackson, allowed land agents to acquire 50 million acres of Native American homeland in Alabama, Mississippi and Georgia via bribes, false promises of better land, threats and violence. The 1830 Act became the model for hundreds of subsequent treaties that opened Indian Land to Whites. (Fitzgerald, 2008)

Image: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 10/16/2024.

=======

Dennis Generation 4					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Mildred Marietta Dennis	1919-2019	B: Walla Walla, WA D: Greenbank, WA	**Harold Maris Hendricson**	1919-1992	B: Walla Walla, WA D: Freeland, WA

Children: Mildred and Harold were married in 1946 and had two children: **William Dennis Hendricson** (1948 -) and **Shirley Hendricson** (1950 -).

Synopsis: Mildred graduated from Washington State College in 1941, the first person in her family to earn a four-year college degree. After college, she began a teaching career at Kalama, Washington High School. At the start of World War II, the Department of Defense created the Women's Army Corp (WAC). Mildred was one of the first to sign-up and completed basic training and two specialty certification courses in the summer of 1943 at Fort Des Moines, Iowa. Subsequently, she served at the Army Air Force (AAF) Base in Eagle Pass, Texas, the AAF Hospital in Windsor Locks, Connecticut (commonly known as Bradley Field) and the AAF Hospital at Westover, Massachusetts. Her assignments included serving as a dietician, mess hall supervisor, accountant, and WAC recruiter. While stationed at Eagle Pass, she made recruiting trips to San Antonio, the beginning of her association with the city, and conducted enlistment events in the lobby of the Menger Hotel. After discharge, she returned to Walla Walla, and in 1946 married Harold Maris Hendricson, also from Walla Walla and a WWII combat veteran.

At the start of the Korean War, Harold resumed his military career, which took Mildred and the family to many locations in the U.S. and Europe over the ensuing 25 years including Kentucky, California, Texas, Hampton and Fairfax, Virginia, and postings at five bases in Germany. Mildred and Harold retired to Whidbey Island in 1974 where they purchased a beachfront home at Mutiny Bay on the Puget Sound, which became a magnet for family gatherings for decades. They traveled throughout the western U.S. in their motor home and established winter residences in Arizona and later in San Antonio. After Harold passed away in 1992, Mildred continued to divide her time between San Antonio and Whidbey Island for several years. Returning to Whidbey Island full-time in 1996, Mildred and daughter Shirley shared homes in the communities of Freeland and Greenbank for more than 20 years.

Mildred returned to teaching high school in Fairfax, Virginia in 1967, working with special needs students. While residing in San Antonio in the 1990s, she became involved with the English as a Second Language (ESL) Program for the Northeast Independent School District (NEISD), coordinating ESL tutoring for hundreds of clients and receiving a NEISD volunteer of the year award. She was an accomplished quilt maker, creating dozens of exquisitely designed quilts for her family, working for months on each item. Mildred loved gardening and often took home the honors in flower shows for the roses that adorned her Mutiny Bay home. Mildred and family members enjoyed many trips together including: Hawaii, Alaska, Germany, Holland, Italy, Cozumel, Catalina Island, Las Vegas, New Orleans, Atlanta, Yosemite, and the Grand Canyon.

A synopsis of Harold Hendricson's life appears on pages 44-49 (Hendricson Generation 21).

Images from the Life of Mildred Dennis Hendricson

Mildred and brother Lloyd in 1928. Got to be a story here; Martha and George Washington?

Mildred Dennis, age 22, shortly after graduating from Washington State College, now Washington State University.

At the onset of WWII, Mildred enlisted in the Women's Army Corp (WAC). She was assigned to the Army Air Force (AAF). During the War, she was stationed at bases in Iowa, Texas, Connecticut and Massachusetts.

Mildred with her family in 1955: Shirley, Bill and Harold.

Mildred and family in 1966.

Mildred and Harold in 1992 at their home on Whidbey Island during Shirley and David's wedding.

Lloyd Neal Dennis (1917 - 1992)

Lloyd Dennis in 1935 at age 18.

Lloyd Neal Dennis was born on December 23, 1917 in Lowden, Washington, and lived most of his life in nearby Walla Walla. Lloyd had rheumatic fever as a child, which led to a life-long heart murmur. Always fascinated with creating, modifying and repairing appliances and machinery, Lloyd attended Washington State College (now Washington State University) to major in mechanical engineering. He went to college for a year but financial constraints in the 1930s Depression Era sent him into the workforce as a mechanic, initially at Blue Mountain Cannery (later known as Green Giant) in Dayton, WA. In Dayton, friends introduced Lloyd to Roma Buroker and they were married on May 31, 1940 three months after they met. They were married for 39 years until Roma passed away in 1979. Lloyd and Roma had three children: Carol (1941 -), Diana (1945 -) and Michael (1953 -). Diana married Verlan Cochran in 1969, and they had two children: Dean Cochran (1971 -) and Vince Cochran (1974 -). Michael married Martha "Marty" Daly in 1984.

Lloyd and Roma, 1940

Lloyd and Roma, 1971

Lloyd and Roma's family in 1978. From left: Michael, Roma, Lloyd, Diana, Carol and grandsons, Vince and Dean

Lloyd married Dorothy Goodhew in June 1980. They were together in Walla Walla until Lloyd's death in March 1992. Dorothy passed away in 1997 in Boise, Idaho while visiting her daughter.

Lloyd and Dorothy, January 1992.

Lloyd had a long, varied and successful work career. Unable to serve in the military during WW II because of his heart murmur, Lloyd accepted a position at Inland Machine Works in Walla Walla, doing extensive mechanical work for the military and on agricultural equipment. Lloyd was adept at altering the design of machinery to meet the needs of his clients, and he was an inventor, creating new devices to enhance function or utility. For example, in 1957, Lloyd received a patent for an overdrive system he invented for his WW II era Willys MB Jeep. A well-known business owner in Walla Walla called Lloyd the "best mechanic in the country. He was able to fix anything!"

After the war, Lloyd owned a logging business from 1946-1954, and then worked at Jay Mar Mills (later known as Walla Walla Mills) as a mechanic.

Lloyd, second from left, with daughter Diana, and logging crew in 1949 with a full load heading for delivery to his mill.

In 1961 Lloyd starting working as a mechanic at Walla Walla's largest bowling alley, Bowlaway, (now Bowlaway Lanes). Four years later, Lloyd and Roma purchased the bowling alley from owner Gene Struthers and operated the business for 14 years until Roma passed away and Lloyd's subsequent retirement in 1979. During their ownership, Lloyd upgraded the bowling alley with an accelerated ball return and made numerous other modifications to the facility. Lloyd also was an expert carpenter who enjoyed remodeling his home and for fun played golf in retirement. Lloyd died on March 4, 1992 on the 13th hole while playing at the Veterans Memorial Golf Course in Walla Walla, WA. In his memory, daughter Carol purchased a Linden tree, which was planted on the course.

Carol Dennis currently resides in Walsenburg, Colorado after many years in California; Diana and husband Verlan Cochran live in Palouse, WA after previously residing in Alaska and Montana; and Michael Dennis and wife Marty live in Edmonds, WA. Grandson Dean Cochran and wife Tina live in Clarksville, TN and grandson Vince Cochran and wife Betty Jo reside in Fairbanks, Alaska.

Goodman Lineage Table

The Goodman family that is linked to the Hendricson's originated in Northern France, with indication that they may have migrated from Denmark. The family moved to England at some point after the Norman Invasion (1066) and settled in a rural area of central England. The Goodman line is comprised of 13 generations: five in Europe pre-immigration and eight in North America after immigration. A genealogical website known as "*Goodman Ancestors of Early Colonial and Pre-Civil War America*" supplemented my research as an information source for 15th- 19th century Goodman history.

Goodman Generation 1					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Alexander Goodman	1449-1516	B: Chelmarsh, ENG D: Chelmarsh, ENG	**Mary Hughes**	1458-1519	B: Unknown D: Chelmarsh, ENG
Children: Alexander and Mary were married in 1477 and had eight children. One of them was named **John Thomas Goodman.**					
Synopsis: Alexander and Mary lived in a rural area and were involved in farming and sheep grazing as tenants who leased plots of land on an estate owned by local nobility.					

Goodman Generation 2					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
John Thomas Goodman	1485-1542	B: Chelmarsh, ENG D: Shrewsbury, ENG	**Agnes Gunne**	1473-1561	B: Unknown D: Chelmarsh, ENG
Children: According to Parish records, John and Agnes were married in 1511. They had four children including **Thomas Wylliam Goodman**.					
Synopsis: Agnes was 12 years older than John, and had been married previously, a union that produced three children who also lived with John and Agnes. Like his parents, John was a tenant farmer and sheep grazer.					

Goodman Generation 3					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Thomas Wylliam Goodman	1519-1572	B: Badby, ENG D: Chelmarsh, ENG	**Joan Alice Wilmot**	1524-1588	B: Bedfordshire, ENG D: Chelmarsh, ENG
Children: Married in 1551, Thomas and Joan had eight children including **Edward Goodman.**					
Synopsis: After Thomas and Joan married, the economic fortunes of the Goodman family changed substantially for the better because Joan Alice Wilmot was the principle heir of a major landowner and leading political figure in Chelmarsh. Instead of tilling crops and tending sheep, Thomas and Joan managed an estate, leasing land to other small plot farmers and collecting lease fees as well as a portion of the income from crop and sheep sales.					

With new-found affluence, Thomas found time to attend Cambridge, became involved in town government, served on land management commissions, held a magistrate position in a lower level misdemeanor court, and was appointed to the Shire (County) Council of Commissioners. Joan received a designation as Lady Joan Alice for her work in sponsoring and planning a parish school, and a network of wells and aqueducts, including a rudimentary sewer system. After Thomas' death in a hunting accident, Lady Joan replaced him on the Land Commission, and was re-appointed several times, an unusual occurrence for a female in 16th century England.

Goodman Generation 4					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Edward Goodman	1539-1611	B: Chelmarsh, ENG D: Southill, ENG	**Katherine Jeffries**	1550-1590	B: Bedford, ENG D: Southill, ENG

Children: Edward and Katherine were married in 1571 and had four children including **John William Goodman.**

Synopsis: Katherine died in 1590 several days after given birth to her fourth child, and Edward established a relationship with **Mary Bushnall** by 1593. It does not appear that they ever married. Mary had six children from her first marriage, forming a substantial combined family. The couple moved from Chelmarsh to work as property and household managers at Southill Park, which was a 16th century weekend destination resort located in a bucolic area two hours north of London near the present day town of Bedford.

Southill Park was comprised of a substantial lake with an island in the middle and with two covered docks for fishing and renting row boats, a medieval estate house available for weddings and honeymooning couples, a 70 acre forested area with trails, an adjoining gaming area of 450 acres that could be leased for hunting events, Georgian style hedged gardens, a great lawn leading to the manor house for outdoor social events and games, and an equestrian loop for horseback and carriage riding. Within the manor, there were overnight guest rooms, small and large dining halls, small and large ballrooms and several parlors (meeting rooms) all of which could be leased for vacations, conferences, weddings and other events. British royalty used Southill for knighting ceremonies and the following reception and dinner. More details on Southill Park appear in Chapter III.

Goodman Generation 5					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
John William Goodman	1586-1670	B: Southill, ENG D: London, ENG	**Mary Archer**	1610-1690	B: Southill, ENG D: Southill, ENG

Children: Married in 1635, William and Mary had seven children including **Benjamin Goodman**.

Synopsis: William and Mary Goodman lived and worked at Southill Manor. After John's death in 1670, Mary continued to reside at Southill as the Grande Dame of the facility, presiding over social events associated with knighting ceremonies, weddings and holiday celebrations.

Goodman Generation 6					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Benjamin Goodman Sr.	1639-1735	B: Southill, ENG D: Hanover, Virginia (VA)	**Johanna Anna Webster**	1640-1719	B: Bedfordshire, ENG D: Farnham, VA
Children: Benjamin and Anna were married in 1659 and had six children including **Benjamin Goodman Jr.** Benjamin Sr. had a short-lived prior marriage and several relationships with other women concurrent with his marriage to Anna. These involvements produced at least 16 children, most of whom lived with Benjamin and Anna at Southill until adulthood.					
Synopsis: Southill Park encountered financial difficulties and closed in 1665, costing Benjamin his job and residence. It appears that Benjamin and Anna struggled financially to meet the basic needs of their large family and decided to seek better fortune in the American colonies. In 1668, Benjamin and Anna landed in Rappahannock, Virginia (now Essex County) with 11 of the younger children in tow (eight from Ben's prior wife and relationships), and also with Anna's mother and father, Molly Reeve Webster and William Webster. Benjamin and Anna purchased land west of Richmond in an area known as New Kent where they operated several businesses including horse breeding, building wagons and carriage repair. *(Chamberlayne CG. Vestry Book of Blisland Parish, New Kent and James City Counties, Virginia, 1721-1786. Richmond, VA: Churchill Gibson Printing. 1939. Internet Archive. www.Internetarchives.com. Accessed: January 29, 2023)* Prior to immigration, Anna had joined a Quaker Friends Society; she likely needed Quaker forgiveness given Ben's proclivities. Once established in Virginia, Anna was active in creating Friends groups in her new home, and often ran afoul of authorities with her outspoken condemnation of slavery, and her sharp tongue. Molly Reeve and William Webster lived with Ben and Anna for just a couple of months, and aghast at the hardscrabble nature of frontier Virginia and the slave culture, headed for New England, which they hoped would be less arduous and more civilized. Anna only saw her mother twice after their departure, both on family reunions near Philadelphia. Anna and Ben paid for these reunion trips because her parent's financial situation did not improve in New England. The story of how Molly Reeve Webster's became the Witch of Hadley, a principle figure in the Massachusetts Witch Trials, is told in Chapter IV.					

Goodman Generation 7					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Benjamin Goodman Jr.	1662-1735	B: Goldington, ENG D: Isle of Wight, VA	**Louisa Lucy Blackwell**	1682-1750	B: New Kent, VA D: Hanover, VA
Children: Benjamin Jr. and Lucy were married in 1700 in New Kent, Virginia. The couple had six children during their marriage including **Robert Goodman.**					
Synopsis: Benjamin Jr. and Lucy continued the family businesses in New Kent, VA. Benjamin and Lucy both belonged to a Quaker Friends Meeting Group, and were twice jailed and fined for abolitionist activities including chaining themselves to a slave auction platform.					

Goodman Generation 8					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Robert Goodman	1703-1759	B: New Kent, VA D: Beaverdam, VA	**Mary Frances Bugg**	1703-1785	B: New Kent, VA D: Mecklenburg, VA
			Elizabeth Astel Horsley	1707-1763	B: New Kent, VA D: Beaverdam, VA

Children: Robert married Mary Frances Bugg in 1724 and they had five children together between 1725 and 1741. Robert also had a relationship with Elizabeth Horsley during the same time period that produced one child, **Bartlett Bartholomew Goodman**, born in 1731. Elizabeth is described as Robert's wife in several Goodman genealogies. The specifics of Robert's relationships with Mary Frances and Elizabeth are lost to the fog of history. However, it is well documented that Robert lived the final 10 years of his life with Elizabeth in the rural community of Beaverdam, VA.

Synopsis: Robert inherited 100 acres of land from his father, Benjamin Jr., in 1735 adjacent to the original Goodman family property in New Kent. Robert and Mary, (together at this point in time), added several more businesses on the new property including a silver smith. They built a new home for themselves, constructed several other houses that they sold to other families, and expanded the horse breeding operation. Essentially, they created a small town, which came to be known as Roundabout Creek.

One of the children of Robert and Mary Goodman, **Benjamin Lewis Goodman** (1727-1781), was an officer in the Little River, Virginia regiment of the Southern Continental Army under the command of General Daniel Morgan (from a different Morgan line). In November 1781, shortly after the British surrender at Yorktown, Benjamin, with six other officers and seven enlisted men, walked out of a lunch celebrating the victory at a tavern in Hayes Station, South Carolina. Tory (loyalist) militia, hiding behind surrounding buildings, suddenly attacked the 14 colonial soldiers in front of the tavern. Goodman and colleagues fought their way to a blockhouse (a fort-like structure used during tribal attacks), where they held off nearly 100 attackers for several hours until the Tories tossed burning wood onto the roof, setting the building ablaze. With several members of their group badly wounded and smoke engulfing the building, Benjamin decided the only recourse was surrender. However, as he and the others exited into a mass of taunting militia, the Tory leader, the infamous **Bloody Bill Cunningham,** directed his men to grab the officers, drag them to a nearby oak tree, and hang them. In short order, Benjamin Goodman and two other officers were strung up on a single branch, which snapped due to their combined weight, sending the men crashing to the ground. Bloody Bill and several Tory followers set upon the three officers with axes, hacking them to death. Bill then ordered his followers to turn on the remaining prisoners, and they were clubbed and stabbed to death. Bloody Bill and his Tory militia fled the town, soon to continue his killing spree, which included assassinations of the Lt. Governor of South Carolina, a state Supreme Court judge and two state senators as well as a massacre at Cloud's Creek where 28 people were murdered. The war in South Carolina continued throughout 1782, nearly a year after the Yorktown surrender.

A monument in Hayes Station, South Carolina identifies the 14 victims of Bloody Bill Cunningham's Hayes Station Massacre. Benjamin Goodman's name is second from the bottom. Although an officer, Goodman is not designated as such on the monument.

Image source: Familypedia Fandom. www.familypedia.fandom.com. Hayes Station Battle Memorial. Accessed: 5/25/2024.

=======

Note on Tory (Loyalist) Militia During the Revolutionary War: Contrary to the impression left by basic histories of the American Revolution, such as might be read in high school, there was limited support in the colonies for complete separation from Great Britain and establishment of an independent nation. Most estimates (there were no opinion surveys in the 1770s) by respected Revolutionary historians (i.e., David McCullough) suggest that only one-third of the colonial population were enthusiastic about leaving the empire. Support for independence and nationhood was particularly weak in the southern colonies, where many residents, particularly the landowner (i.e., planter) class, believed that the slavery system would be maintained if the British quelled the Revolution. This was an unfortunate misconception. The abolition movement in England was already gaining strength fueled by the British High Court's 1772 decision in the Somerset vs. Stewart Case that slavery had no precedent in English law. The ruling held that slaves could not be forcibly transported into or out of England, and that slaves escaping from English colonies could not be returned for punishment or re-enslavement. After a series of half steps, the United Kingdom totally banned slavery with the 1833 Slavery Abolition Act, which applied to all of their colonies. However, Tories (loyal to the Crown) in the colonies did not know or refused to believe the abolition events in England, and supported British military efforts to quash the Revolution. *(Huzzey R. Freedom Burning: Anti-Slavery and Empire in Victorian Britain. Ithaca NY: Cornell University Press. 2012)*

Many Tory militias were formed, primarily in the South, and fought alongside Redcoat units. Additionally, Tory militia conducted their own operations, in loose coordination with British commanders, aimed at terrorizing "Whigs," who were political leaders and organization that supported the independence efforts. Whigs drew their name from the British Whig party of that era that condemned British colonial policies, including slavery. Two of the most ruthless Tory militia leaders were **James Lindley,** brother of Eleanor Mary Lindley and brother-in-law of George Maris that we met previously in the Maris Lineage Table, and the aforementioned Bloody Bill Cunningham. In the early years of the Revolutionary War, Lindley and Cunningham operated concurrently, swooping into rural Whig-leaning villages, shooting citizens and burning down buildings. Local residents typically mounted a resistance, leading to casualties on both sides, and the event earned the label of a battle. *(Brown F. Strain of Violence: Historical Studies of Violence and Vigilantism. Oxford Press. 1975)*

Lindley, and his 16 year-old teenage son, William, were captured during a larger and more conventional battle near Laurens, South Carolina in 1779, tried the next day, and sentenced to hang. Both were marched up to the gallows, but after his dad met his fate, William was pardoned and released in a show of leniency, apparently assuming he had learned his lesson. William instead formed his own Loyalist militia and terrorized villages in the western areas of South and North Carolina for two more years until killed in a Whig ambush.

Cunningham was more ruthless than Lindley as evident by his actions at Hayes Station. Bloody Bill originally volunteered for the Continental Army and fought on the colonists' side in a few skirmishes. However, when Bill's mentally challenged adolescent brother, Wyatt, visited him at a winter camp, several colonial officers made fun of the child, making him cry, infuriating Bill. He deserted to the Tory side, and formed his own unit after Lindley's demise. After several years of violent raids and assassinations, known as the Bloody Scout in South Carolina newspapers, Cunningham achieved his goal of terrifying the state leadership. He became a pop culture figure in spite of his violence, and evaded an entire colonial brigade sent to track him down. After the Bloody Scout, he fled to the Bahamas where he robbed banks, looted homes and stole sailboats, which he sold at profit in Jamaica. He died from pneumonia during a European vacation after years as a successful Caribbean outlaw. *(Lewis JD. The American Revolution in South Carolina. South Carolina Loyalists in the American Revolution; William "Bloody Bill" Cunningham. 2018. www.carolana.com. Accessed: February 20, 2023)*

Cunningham assassinates a South Carolina Judge during the Bloody Scout. Bloody Bill became a folk hero to Southern Loyalists. His murderous deeds were glossed over in newspaper articles. Bloody Bill's gang murdered 175 people during the Scout.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 5/28/2024.

This painting depicts teenager "Dicey" Langston standing in front of grandfather Solomon Langston, a Whig leader in Laurens, South Carolina, telling Bloody Bill to shoot her instead of her grandparent. Cunningham relented and left without harming either Langston.
Image source: Listverse. www.listverse.com. August 28, 2014. Accessed: 6/2/2024.

Resource for the career and crimes of Bloody Bill Cunningham:
Knapp S. "Bloody Bill" Cunningham: Profile of a South Carolina Loyalist. The Newberry Observer www.newberryobserver.com. December 31, 2022. Accessed: May 24, 2024

=======

Goodman Generation 9					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Bartlett Batholomew Goodman	1731-1799	B: Hanover, VA D: Iredell, NC	**Tabitha Gibson Goodman**	1730-1811	B: Unknown D: Iredell, NC (?)
Children: Bartlett and his common law spouse Tabitha were the parents of 10 children including **George Washington Goodman.**					
Synopsis: Previous genealogies observed that Tabitha was possibly mixed race or African Caribbean, and may have been deemed unsuitable for formal marriage in 18th century Virginia. However, some accounts report that Bartlett and Tabitha were formally married in 1750. It is known that Bartlett and Tabitha left the Goodman communities in New Kent and Roundabout Creek and spent most of their lives in North Carolina working as farm laborers. Bartlett later purchased a modest property near Iredell, NC and bred racehorses and operated a racetrack. Tabitha apparently was well accepted in North Carolina. Prior family histories comment that Tabitha ran a popular alehouse in Iredell. After Bartlett's death in 1799, she may have moved to Kentucky with some of her children, but this has been disputed.					

Goodman Generation 10					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
George Washington Goodman	1777-1853	B: Iredell, NC D: Coles County, Illinois	**Marget Bowen**	1788-1867	B: North Carolina D: Coles County, Illinois
Children: George and Marget were married in 1803 in Kentucky. The couple had six children including **Joseph Goodman**.					
Synopsis: After struggling to maintain his father's (Bartlett Goodman) racehorse farm as a profitable enterprise, George sold the horses and land at an auction, and moved to Kentucky in 1803. He soon met and married young Marget Bowen when she was 15. George and Marget purchased 1000 acres at low cost from the state land office, which was eager to attract and retain new residents. They farmed in Kentucky for 30 years, but profitable years were outnumbered by years in red ink. As other Hendrickson, Morgan and Maris families had discovered, small independent farms, operated with paid farm hands, were not competitive with much larger slave plantations. The free labor pool was small and unskilled, which hindered the scope of non-slave farming. Eventually, George and Marget moved north to the free state of Illinois, settling in Hutton, a town in Coles County on the eastern side of the state. Coles County was a hotbed of the Illinois abolition movement because much of the population had migrated from New England. In Hutton, George worked for an agricultural supply company and established a farm where he raised corn. Profitable farming was just as challenging in Illinois as in Kentucky during the pre-mechanized era due to limited manpower, erratic weather in the growing season and harsh winters, all of which contributed to crop failures.					

=======

Note on Slavery in America: When Hendrick Willemz Hendrickson (pages 38 215-224) arrived in New Amsterdam on the ship *Rooseboom* (Rose Tree) on June 2, 1663, he and other passengers walked down a gangplank to a crude dock where wagons driven by African slaves drove them to a building on what is now Wall Street for completion of migrant paperwork. Adjacent to the migrant house was the New Amsterdam slave auction. The Dutch West Indies Company (DWIC), Hendrickson's employer, was a major player in African and Caribbean slave trade in the 1600s. By mid-century 500,000 people worked as slaves in Dutch colonies worldwide. The DWIC brought the first shipload of slaves to New Amsterdam in 1655 on the ship *Witte Paert* (White Horse), and by the time of Hendrickson's arrival, slaves represented 25% of the city's population. *(Maika DJ. Tale of the White Horse: First Slave Trading Voyage to New Netherland. Dutch National Archief (Archive). www.nationalarchief.nl. Accessed October 14, 2024)* DWIC-owned slaves constructed government and commercial buildings, private homes, churches, roads, sewers, aqueducts and walls and tilled a tobacco plantation occupying what is now Central Park in Manhattan, a pattern that was repeated over the next 200 years in literally every major city of the Americas. The DWIC slaves completed many construction tasks ahead of schedule. Seeing an opportunity for profit, the DWIC began to sell excess slaves at auction to private citizens. For example, on May 16, 1664, the DWIC auctioned 30 male and female slaves to 21 citizens at an average price of 400 guilders per slave (roughly $1200 in 2025). Auctioning surplus slaves became a routine feature of New Amsterdam life, attracting large crowds in a carnival-like atmosphere, an activity that would occur in many communities, north and south, in the emerging American colonies for two centuries. Boston, Providence, Philadelphia and New York each extracted considerable municipal income from slave auctions. *(Goodfriend J. Slavery in Colonial New York. Urban History. 2008; 35(3): 485-96)*

Like Hendrick Willemz Hendrickson, other families in our tree who immigrated to America before the Civil War (Morgan, Goodman, Maris, Dennis, Lienau) likely pulled into port adjacent to slave ships. For example, in 1668, the family of Benjamin Goodman Jr. and Anna Webster (Goodman Generation 6) landed at Port Royale on the Rappahannock River, the busiest slave offloading and auction site in the Virginia Colony. Overall, between 1619 and 1809, when U.S. slave importation was banned, 13 million Africans and Caribbeans disembarked slave ships at Port Royale and other coastal sites including New Amsterdam. *(Maika, 2024)*

The only person in this family history known to be a slave owner is General Daniel Morgan of the Morgan line discussed later in this book. As a war hero, Morgan's life is documented in historical literature including his slave ownership. Given the ubiquity of slave ownership in pre-Civil War America, I suspect other ancestors held slaves. Searching for this information is challenging, but new websites are coming online including the digitized *1850 Slave Schedules* via Ancestory.com. In the 1800s, slave owners annually completed a form to document slave population because slaves counted toward a states' population calculation, which determined congressional representation. In 1850, the U.S. federal census included the "Slave Schedule" among its required forms for the first time. Compliance was good and a massive trove of information about acquisition and ownership of slaves was obtained, which is now available to researchers.

=======

Goodman Generation 11					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Joseph Goodman	1819-1876	B: Marion, Indiana D: Umatilla, OR	**Elizabeth Stutsman**	1819-1881	B: Coles County, ILL D: Umatilla, OR
Children: Joseph and Elisabeth were married in 1840 in Charleston, Illinois. The couple had 11 children including **Ira Wiley Goodman**.					
Synopsis: Joseph worked on his parent's farm in Illinois and then took over day-to-day management when he was about 30 years old. Like his parents, he struggled between lean and profitable years, at the mercy of the short midwestern growing season and severe winters. After attending a seminar on the virtues of Oregon farming in 1854, Joseph and Elizabeth decided to save money to fund an Oregon Trail journey for their large family. With this goal in mind, the family relocated in 1859 to Putman, Missouri, near St. Joseph, a major wagon train start-up point. By 1862, they had their finances sufficiently in order to join a convoy of 41 wagons and 170 people for the journey west. In 1863, Joseph and Elizabeth secured a land donation of 320 acres from the state of Oregon for farmland near Umatilla. Joseph developed and managed their homestead farm until 1873, when son Ira Wiley Goodman took over.					

The Oregon Territory population grew from 7,000 in 1845 to 60,000 in 1859 when statehood was granted. 90% of emigrants arrived by wagon train, and as evident in this photo, a majority of the arrivals were children and young adults. The journey was arduous with 10% mortality prior to 1850, but improved after health care standards and sanitation practices were imposed.

Image source: National Oregon/California Trail Center. www.oregontrailcenter.org. A Day on the Trail. Accessed:

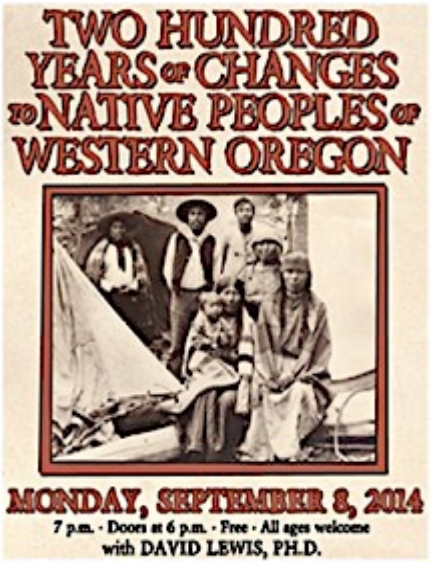
=======

Notes on Oregon Land Donation Act of 1850. To spur and also to regulate emigration into the Oregon Territory, the U.S. Congress passed the Oregon Land Donation Act of 1850. In its original form, the law allowed white males and married white women to claim 320 acres of free land. Essentially, this allowed married couples to acquire 640 acres of land. The Land Donation Act of 1850 was also notable in that it was the first Congressional Act in U.S. history that established women's right to own property, thereby creating the precedent for female property ownership that continues to this day. (*Johansen DO. Empire of the Columbia. A History of the Pacific Northwest. 2nd edition. New York: Harper Collins. 1967*)

The Land Donation Act was instantly popular, spurring thousands of cross-continent emigrants into Oregon, so much so that Congress halved the land donation to 320 acres by the time that the Goodman family reached Oregon. The territorial government maintained an inventory of available plots, which settlers could review or even personally inspect, with the most prized plots located near the Columbia River and in the Willamette Valley. Settlers submitted a rather

elaborate application, designed in part to prove that they were literate and had capacity to complete business management forms. On the application, prospective claimants designated the acreage plots they desired to acquire, and then waited in settler camps for up to a year for the territorial government to approve their application, or negotiate alternative property if there were several claimants for the same plot.

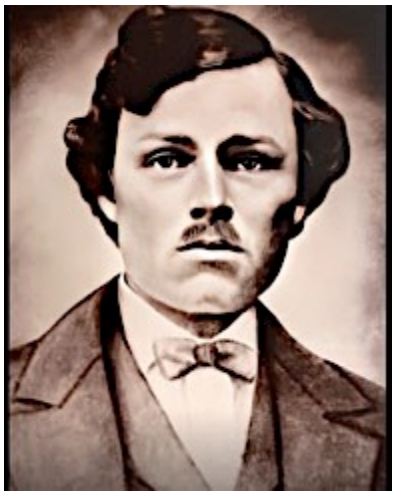
To gain permanent title to the land, claimants had to reside full-time on the property (i.e., no absentee ownership) for four years and make tangible improvements: access roads, fencing, wells, residence structures, crops planted and harvested. The Donation Act was amended several times in the 1850s to allow widows to claim property and later to allow "American half-breed Indians above the age of 18" (actual language) to claim acreage. The later amendment was notable in that it was the first time Congress approved the concept of Native Americans owning property (but not Indigenous Canadians). It also was the first time Congress acknowledged that some of the population was of mixed race and allowed these individuals to own property. In the Pacific Northwest (i.e., Washington and Oregon), the mixed race population was substantial by 1860, a by-product of frequent common-law marriages and other relationships among Native Americans and the many European trappers and explorers living in the region during the 1830s and 1840s. Although Oregon was granted statehood in 1859 as a Free State, many populations were denied access to land donations and citizenship: U.S. born Blacks, Africans, Hawaiians, Filipinos, others from the Pacific region and a long list of Canadian Indigenous Tribes.



Much of what I learned about the Oregon Land Donation Act and its impact on the Native Peoples of Oregon came from webinars and podcasts by David W. Lewis, PhD, who was Tribal Historian for the Confederated Tribes of the Grand Ronde Community. Although the campaign to clear Native Peoples from land desired by White settlers was less violent than in the Northwest Territory (Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, etc.), it was just as effective in removing unwanted Natives from their ancestral homelands. *Lewis DW. Tribal Histories of the Willamette Valley. Portland State University: Ooligan Press. 2023.*
Image source: Oregon Historical Society. www.ohs.org. Accessed: 7/9/2024.

=======

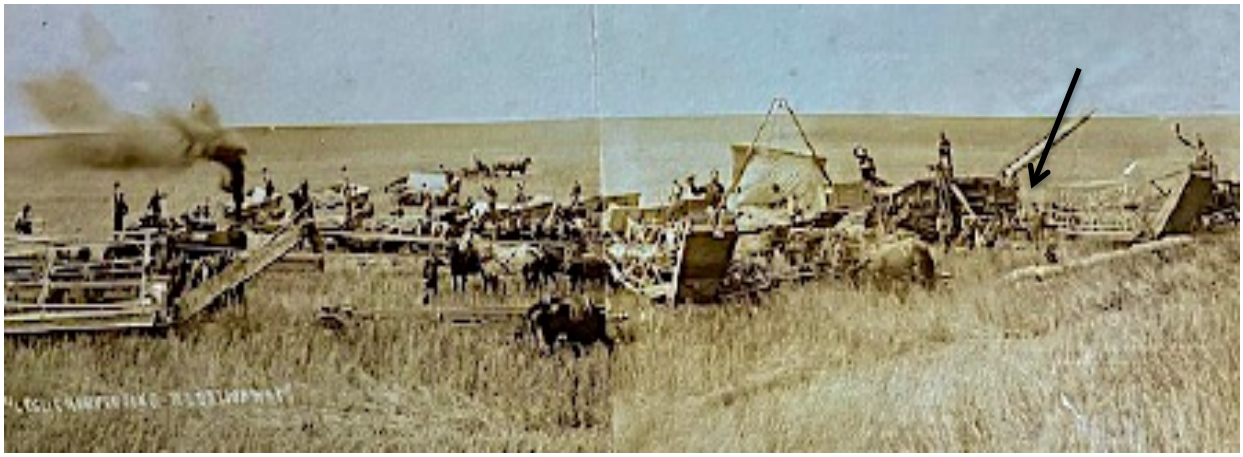
Goodman Generation 12					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Ira Wiley Goodman	1853-1917	B: Urbana, ILL D: Umatilla, OR	**Martha De'Etta (Etta) Dutton**	1860-1938	B: Earlville, ILL D: Walla Walla, WA
Children: Ira and Etta married on December 2, 1876 in Umatilla, Oregon. The couple had numerous children including **Maude Odessa Goodman**, the 11th of their 13 offspring.					
Synopsis: Ira and Etta farmed south of Umatilla in an area known as Greesewood Creek and later near Milton-Freewater, Oregon. They also lived in nearby Walla Walla for several years. We do not know specifically what kind of farming they did, but given the primary crop of arid east Oregon, they likely were wheat farmers. Almost everybody was involved with wheat in one way or the other in that region during the late 19th century. To make extra money, Etta worked the wheat fields as a cook, often accompanied by one or more of her children to help with food prep and serving. All indications point to a difficult life for Ira and Etta. Five of their children died before the age of 20 and they changed residences often, including several periods of time when they lived apart. Ira and Etta ultimately were divorced in 1905.					



These are apparently the 1876 wedding day pictures of Ira Wiley Goodman and Martha De'Etta (Etta) Dutton. Ira was 23 and Etta was 16.

A photo of Ira Goodman in the 1890s. He is pouring gold coins or nuggets into a bag? The meaning of the image is unclear: good fortune or an aspiration for future wealth?

Etta Dutton Goodman and daughter Maude with their field camp wagon in the Oregon wheat fields, circa 1905. Etta and Maude served meals and patched up injuries for crews of 20-30 men needed to operate a large thresher, such as pictured below.



This panoramic photograph (note seam in the middle) was taken by a photographer for the *Seattle Star* newspaper in 1907 to accompany an article on new farming techniques in the Pacific Northwest. The focus of the article was the locomotive tractor (at left) that rolled on iron wheels, and the wingspan of the wheat thresher – 15 yards on each side of the central engine, a total of 32 yards wide including the locomotive! A team of horses on either side of the locomotive pulled the wings of thresher blades, with handlers (i.e., wingmen) making sure the pace was the same for each wing. Grandfather Archie Dennis, an 18 year-old teenager, is in the picture, although he is difficult to see in this reduced image (indicated by the arrow). He functioned as a wingman and as a mechanic on the thresher team.

Image source: The Seattle Star Archive, 1899-1947. Newspapers by Ancestry. www.newspapers.com. Accessed: 7/10/2024.

Goodman Generation 13					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Maude Odessa Goodman	1895-1979	B: Freewater, OR D: Walla Walla, WA	**Archibald (Archie) Dennis**	1889-1978	B: Walla Walla, WA D: Walla Walla, WA
Children: In 1916, Archibald (Archie) Dennis (1889-1976) and Maude Odessa Goodman (1895-1979) were married in Walla Walla, Washington. Archie and Maude had two children, Lloyd Neal Dennis (1917-1992) and **Mildred Marietta Dennis** (1919-2019). Mildred was the mother of Shirley and I, and Lloyd was our uncle.					

Synopsis: See Generation 3 of the Dennis line, page 79, for a synopsis of Archie and Maude's life together. Maude and Archie's son, Lloyd Neal Dennis married Roma J. Buroker (1918-1979) and they had three children, Carol, Diana and Michael who currently live in San Francisco, Palouse, WA and Edmonds WA respectively. Lloyd later married Dorothy Denny Goodhew (1917-1997) after Roma passed away. As described in the preceding Hendricson family lineage, Maude and Archie's daughter Mildred married Harold Maris Hendricson in 1946 after both returned from WWII military service. Mildred and Harold's son, William Dennis Hendricson (me) married Susan Lienau Hendricson in 1971 and our sons, Adam and Aaron, currently live in Dallas, Texas and Cheshire, Connecticut respectively. Mildred and Harold's daughter, Shirley Hendricson, married David Osborne in 1992. Shirley currently resides on Whidbey Island, Washington.

In 1920, Maude, Archie, Maude's sister-in-law Helen Goodman holding Mildred, Maude's brother Lester Goodman holding Lloyd, and an un-identified relative or neighbor. The photo was colorized to enhance clarity.

Lienau Lineage Table

The Lienau surname has been associated with the German state of Schleswig-Holstein near the Denmark border for many centuries. The first Lienau family member that I could confidently identify was born in Uetersen located north of Hamburg, the largest city in the region, in the 17th century. Little is known about the initial four generations of the Lienau line who all lived in or near Uetersen. Histories of Schleswig-Holstein (see: *Carr. Schleswig-Holstein 1815-1848* in the Information Sources chapter) indicate that its proximity to the Baltic Sea (east of the Denmark Peninsula) and the North Sea (west of the Denmark Peninsula) and the Elbe and Trave Rivers dictated the occupations of 17th – 19th century men in this region. Commercial fishing, the whaling industry and boat building were leading occupations. Men who were not in these industries were agricultural workers, primarily involved in dairy farming with the region's famous Holstein cattle. A village with the name Linau has existed about 40 miles from Uetersen since the medieval era. The spelling of the surname Linau by generations 1 and 2 in the following lineage table suggests that unknown ancestors prior to the 17th century may have lived in this village, before their descendants relocated to Uetersen.

In the late feudal period, farmers with some degree of affluence (i.e., owned parcels of farm land or owned land with access to the Elbe or the oceanfront) were known as Bonden and paid taxes to whatever Danish or German nobility controlled the land at any point in time. Bonden also contributed a portion of their crops or fish catch to the Lord's commissary. The Bonden had some rights, such as trial by peers, and an administrative unit known as the Ding, by which they could make infrastructure decisions for the common good of the Bonden class, such as road construction, refurbishing docks, or building fishing boats to be shared by the community. Common serfs (indentured workers) toiled on the farms or fishing boats of the Bonden in exchange for shelter, subsistence plots to raise vegetables and animals, and fishing rights. The tax rolls of 17th – 19th century Schleswig-Holstein and the ten-year census did not indicate occupation with the consistency of the British tax and census reports of that era. The Schleswig-Holstein rolls did indicate property ownership, number of people in households, spouse names, and participation in Ding and peer courts, which provided evidence of economic status.

Lienau Generation 1					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Wilhelm Linau	1674-1743	B: Uetersen, Germany D: Heflingen, GER	**Gesche Boot Fesefeld**	1678-1749	B: Uetersen, GER D: Heflingen, GER
Children: Married in 1707, Wilhem and Gesche had six children including **Hinrich Linau**. Gesche Boot (maiden name) was married previously to a man with the Fesefeld surname, and brought three children from that marriage into the family.					
Synopsis: Wilhelm was a Bonden and probably a dairy farmer. The Fesefeld family had been prominent in the north German city of Bremen since the medieval period suggesting that Gesche Boot likely was from a high status family suitable for marriage to a Fesefeld. The cause of the demise of her first marriage, or how she met Wilhelm are unknown.					

Lienau Generation 2					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Hinrich Linau	1713-1775	B: Heflingen, GER D: Uetersen, GER	**Anna Engelcke Ossenbruggen**	1717-1791	B: Rotterdam, Holland D: Uetersen, GER
Children: Hinrich and Anna married in 1736, and had seven children including **Hans Hinrich Lienau.**					
Synopsis: Hinrich Linau was also a Bonden and likely took over management of his parent's farmlands, although I do not know this as a certainty. Anna was born in Holland, and it is not clear how she and Hinrich met. The Ossenbrugen's were prominent merchants in Rotterdam, suggesting that Anna may have brought some degree of wealth into the family.					

Lienau Generation 3					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Hans Hinrich Lienau	1742-1809	B: Heflingen, GER D: Uetersen, GER	**Maria Ilsabe Ladiges**	1746-1811	B: Pinneburg, GER D: Uetersen, GER
Children: Hans and Maria married in 1765 in Vienna, suggesting that the couple or their parents had a degree of affluence. The couple had five children including **Joachim Detlief Lienau.**					
Synopsis: Hans Hinrich was the first in the family to spell his surname as Lienau. Hans was listed as a farmer on a 1785 tax roll, presided over the Uetersen Ding for nine years, and was listed as a peer court judge in the 1790 Schleswig-Holstein census, suggesting social prominence.					

Lienau Generation 4					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Joachim Detlief Lienau	1770-1842	B: Moorrege, GER D: Uetersen, GER	**Anna Margaretha Knoop**	1764-1843	B: Bremen, GER D: Uetersen, GER
Children: Married in 1793 in Lubeck, a major seaport in Schleswig-Holstein, the couple had three children including **Johann Lienau,** who was their youngest child. Johann's siblings were approximately nine and eleven years older.					
Synopsis: Joachim owned at least two pieces of property totaling about 1500 acres, a home in the village of Uetersen and several boats, suggesting Bonden status and a degree of affluence. Anna was from a prominent family in Bremen. Both her father and brother served as mayors of Bremen and were officers (vested partners) in the Bremen franchise of the Hanseatic League, a powerful trading association, which dominated the economy of Northern Europe during this period of time.					

Lienau Generation 5					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Johann (John) Lienau Sr.	1808-1876	B: Uetersen, Germany D: New York, NY	**Ella or Ellen** Surname Uncertain	Est. 1811-1890	B: Ireland (est.) D: New York City

Children: The date of Johann and Ellen's marriage is uncertain. Best evidence is that they married in Cuba in 1850 or 1851. The couple had three children: **John Lienau Jr.**, born in 1851, Mary Lienau (1853-1896) and Anna Lienau (1856-1937).

Synopsis: Johann (John) was a livelong seaman, working in various capacities on ships in Germany, England, the Caribbean and New York from his teenage years to late into his 60s. By the time he established himself in New York in the 1860s as John Lienau, he was a ship captain, and possibly owned his own steamboat, or was a partner in syndicate that owned steamboats. The origins of John's relationship with his spouse Ella (also reported as Ellen or Eslen) remain a mystery. John identified his spouse as Ellen Lienau on U.S. Census Records, without providing a maiden name. However, research by a family historian in Ireland indicates that her surname likely was Dodd, and she was Irish. Ella's migration to the U.S. paralleled John's: relocated to England in the 1840s, then moved from England to the Caribbean around 1850, and entered the U.S. a few years later. Research for this book indicates that John and Ella likely met in Havana, Cuba during the phase of his career when he was working for an English ship company, the Royal Mail Steam Packet Company, serving ports in the Caribbean.

As the name implies, the company provided mail and parcel service, including delivery of household furniture, wagons and carriages between England and major ports in the Caribbean, and also offered tours to South American coastal cities, one of the first nautical lines to offer vacation cruises. By the 1850s, it was the largest shipping company in the world. Havana was one the ports served by the Royal Mail Steam Packet Company, so it is conceivable that John spent a far amount of time in that city. How Ella got to Havana and what she did there are unknown. It is likely that John Lienau Jr. was born in either Cuba or San Juan, Puerto Rico, which was John's residence from 1850 - 1854. John and Ella did not enter the U.S. as immigrants until 1854 after he shifted employment to the U.S. Mail Steamship Company. The couple lived in New York City (NYC) from 1854 until 1876. After her husband's death, Ella resided with her son, John Jr., and daughter-in-law Ellen Depair Lienau in NYC until her son's death in 1882. Ella continued to live with Ellen Depair until her death in approximately 1890.

John and Ella's daughters Mary and Helen married two brothers (Mary: Louis Hastings; 1851-1904; and Anna: William Francis Hastings, 1859-1937). Mary and Anna and their husbands lived in the NYC area for the rest of their lives. Each couple had numerous children.

The story of John's career at sea and his participation in an important event in U.S. naval and political history is told in Chapter IV.

Lienau Generation 6					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
John Lienau Jr.	1851-1882	B: Havana, Cuba or San Juan, Puerto Rico	**Ellen Depair**	1837-1909	B: Southampton, ENG
		D: New York, NY			D: Brooklyn, NY
Children: John Jr. and Ellen were married in 1873, and had three children: **Charles William Lienau,** Walter Lienau and Ellen Lienau.					
Synopsis: John Jr. followed his father's footsteps and pursued a nautical career. Unfortunately, he died in an onboard accident of unknown nature at age 31. Ellen arrived in the U.S. in 1849 from England at the age of 12. After John's death, Ellen supported herself, her children and John's mother by working as a bookbinder and illustrator. She lived the rest of her life in Brooklyn, and did not re-marry. Son Walter Lienau (1870-1935) worked as an engineer for the borough of Queens until the age of 40 and then worked for the U.S. Postal Service until he was 58. Walter and his wife, Mary Wood, retired to Danbury, Connecticut in 1928 where they lived the remainder of their lives. There is no indication that they had children. Daughter Ellen Lienau (1873-1946) lived in Brooklyn or Manhattan all of her life. The historical record for her life is sparse, but there is no indication that she ever married or had children.					

Lienau Generation 7					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Charles William Lienau Sr.	1876-1940	B: New York, NY	**Mary Theresa McManus**	1884-1940	B: New York, NY
		D: New York, NY			D: New York, NY
Children: Married on November 27, 1901, Charles and Mary had two children: **Charles William Lienau Jr.** Susan's father, and Helen Lienau (1908-1987), Susan's aunt.					
Synopsis: Possibly influenced by his mother, Ellen Depair, who worked in the printing industry, Charles Sr. became a bookbinder. He worked for several book publishers in New York including Harper Brothers and moved up to the position of printing supervisor for Alfred Knopf. In spite of these career advancements, the family still struggled through lean years financially. The 1929 stock market crash and ensuing depression were catastrophic for the New York publishing industry, leading to closures of all but a few companies, and many workers in the industry, including Charles Sr., lost their jobs. From 1929 onward, Charles Sr. worked as an elevator operator in Manhattan office buildings. Charles Sr. also had a farm where he raised and bred muskrats, ermine, mink and fox for sale. I do not know if this was a weekend hobby, or a more serious business enterprise that developed after he left the publishing industry. I was not able to determine if his farm was in upstate New York or in Canada.					

Mary's parents immigrated from Ireland to the U.S in 1865 as preteens, arriving on the same day, but on different ships. Her parents eventually met in NYC and married 17 years later. Background information about Mary's parents and other McManus ancestors appears in Chapter III.

Helen Lienau married John Francis Knoebel (1906-1968) in 1930 and the couple moved to Southampton, Long Island where they raised two children.

Charles Lienau Sr. at his farm, circa 1935.

Charles Lienau Jr., (right) with Charles Lienau Sr., circa 1935. This is the only picture Susan has of Charles Lienau Jr. and Sr. together. Hopefully, a better, full-face, image of Susan's grandfather will be found in the future.

Lienau Generation 8					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Charles William Lienau Jr.	1903-1969	B: Brooklyn, NY D: Rockville, Maryland (MD)	**Laura Pearl Girault**	1908-1981	B: Brooklyn, NY D: Rockville, MD

Children: Charles and Laura married in 1935, and had one child, **Susan Elizabeth Lienau.**

Synopsis: To help with family finances, Charles Jr. joined the workforce full-time when he was 14 years old after completing 8th grade. He was particularly attracted to the new world of electronic communication, and by the age of 17, Charles was working as a radio salesman for Center Music on 6th Street in Manhattan. The first commercial radio station, KDKA in Pittsburgh, started broadcasting on November 2, 1920 with a full evening of live reports on the Harding-Cox Presidential election. As the *NY Times* proclaimed in a headline announcing the first broadcast: *Things Will Never Be the Same Again*. Radio took 1920s America by storm. Owning a radio was perceived as a symbol of progress, upward mobility, and openness to innovation. Charles did well as a radio salesman, supplementing his parent's income and making enough money to live on his own. By the mid-1930s, his focus had shifted to another new technological breakthrough: high fidelity, stereo turntables; i.e., Hi-Fi. Music in the 1930 – 1950 era was the dominated by the Big Band Sound - Tommy Dorsey, Benny Goodman, Artie Shaw, Duke Ellington, Fats Domino, Glenn Miller and many others. People were eager to play in their own home the music they heard in concerts, nightclubs, movies, and on the radio (but with low fidelity). Hi-Fi equipment (turntables, amplifiers and speakers, and later stereo-capable radios) was purchased as soon as it hit the showroom floor.

Charles anticipated the Hi-Fi market, and broke away from Center Music to form his own company in the 1940's: Lienau Associates. He secured vendor contracts with Garrard Turntables and with the Fisher Company that made the highest rated stereo console in that era, and became a distributor for both companies. People who wanted cutting edge sound systems in their homes often purchased a combined Fisher-Garrard Home Hi-Fi Stereo System.

Working out of their apartment in Brooklyn, Charles and Laura experienced success, but competition was intense in the Hi-Fi industry in metropolitan New York. In 1947, Charles and Laura decided to stake out a new turf in the Washington DC area. Starting out in an office/store room beneath a delicatessen in Silver Spring, Maryland with a drippy ceiling, Charles gradually acquired the capital to build his own office complex. In the late 1950s, Charles anticipated another emerging market and expanding his product line to include 8 track cartridges and players, which he handled through a second business known as Lawrence Associates. Shortly after establishing Lawrence Associates, he built a warehouse for the cartridge arm of his business to handle the massive demand for 8-track music. Over a 50-year career in the technology end of the communication and music industries, Charles literally worked his way up from store clerk to being a major high fidelity distributor on the East Coast.

In addition to success in business, Charles loved high performance sports cars, especially Ford Thunderbirds, enjoyed traveling with family and friends, took great pleasure in family vacations at their Bethany Beach, Delaware cottage, and was an ardent fan, and season-ticket holder, of

the Washington Redskins. Horse racing also was one of Charles' favorite pastimes. Charles' closest friend was Ernie Blanche, a CPA, who was fascinated with horse racing, especially the mathematical odds of placing winning bets. Blanche wrote a popular book on race track betting titled *"Off To The Races. Horse Sense and Track Logic,"* and he even appeared on the television quiz show, *What's My Line?* Charles and Ernie enjoyed betting on the horses at D.C. area tracks, which included the famed Pimlico Race Course. Often the Lienau and Blanche families would go to the races on weekends. Susan often reflects on the grand time that she and her pals had at the racetrack. In her words, "Before we got to the track, my dad would give me $20.00 for placing bets. I would make my picks for each race, and he would place $2.00 bets for me. Of course, I usually left the track with no money, but it was great fun. Between races, the Blanch kids and I would run around the grandstands and buy candy and soda, having a blast."

The wildly popular Fisher-Garrard Stereo System of the 1950s and 1960s. This Hi-Fi console was an essential entertainment system for modern homes of that era.
Image source: Quora. The 50s, 60s & 70s Diner. A Blast From the Past. www.diner.quora.com. Accessed: 7/13/2024.

=======

Notes on Radio in the 1920s and 1930s: By 1925, the question, do you own a radio in your home, was included on many state census surveys, and it appeared for the first time on the 1930 U.S. national census. By 1930, there were more radios in American than people, and the major networks broadcast a full slate of half-hour or full hour programming every evening: news and political commentary, dramas (*Perry Mason, the Shadow, the Lone Ranger, Green Hornet*), comedies (*Our Miss Brooks, Fibber McGee and Molly, Amos and Andy*), musical variety, game shows (i.e., the original *What's My Line?*) and broadcasts of sporting events, most notably boxing matches, but also baseball, rowing competitions and college football. In the 1930s, over 70% of American households listened to the broadcasts of the heavyweight fights between the American Joe Louis (the Brown Bomber) and German Max Schmeling, which had massive U.S. versus Nazi Germany symbolism. Broadcasts of the powerhouse gridiron teams of the 1920's, the University of Illinois (with star Red Grange, the Galloping Ghost), Notre Dame, Centre College, Michigan and Georgia Tech are widely credited with raising public awareness of post secondary education. Many families' first visit to a college campus was to attend a football game. Programming that dominated the local airways included gospel music, church services and bible hours, broadcasts of famous tent evangelists of the era (Billy Sunday, Sister Aimee), agricultural talk shows, and white nationalist social commentary.

A side note: *The KKK owned more than 50% of the small town, 100 watt, daylight hours radio stations in the South and Midwest, and one 50,000 watt station in Washington DC. (Harcourt F. Ku Klux Kulture. America and the Klan in the 1920s. Chicago: University of Chicago Press. 2017)*

Radio was a completely new communication concept that literally appeared out of the blue and provided a forum where much of the nation for the first time could participate in momentous events simultaneously, and "call-in" to share their opinions about controversies. Radio was particularly popular in rural areas as a way to combat isolation and to stay up-to-date with national and international news. Demand for radio in rural areas is credited with speeding up the pace of electrification.

I remember my mother describing the excitement in Lowden when my grandparents (Archie and Maude Dennis) purchased the first radio in the community. Twenty or more neighbors would squeeze into their living room to listen to popular comedy shows, the *Lowell Thomas with the News of the Day* program and Walter Winchell's animated news and entertainment industry (i.e., Hollywood) broadcasts. Then everyone retired to the kitchen for desserts, and for some in attendance, adult beverages – a "Radio Night in America" tradition.

KDKA in Pittsburgh, the world's first open-air radio station. There were only 1000 receivers in 1920 to hear the first broadcasts, but the number swelled into the millions over the next five years.
Image source: The Pennsylvania State University Library Digital Collections. www.digital.libraries.psu.edu. Accessed: 7/29/2024.

Red Grange of the Fighting Illini trailed only Babe Ruth as the biggest sports star of the 1920s. Radio broadcasts of 20s college football drew huge audiences and increased public awareness of college opportunities.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/30/2024.

Perceived as a test of Nazis vs. American systems and steeped in racial overtones, the Louis–Schmeling matches of the 1930s drew the largest radio audiences prior to WWII. Schmeling won the 1st bout and Louis won the 2nd. A 3rd never occurred due to WWII.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/30/2024.

Source for information on impact of radio on life in the 1920s and 1930s:
Bathgate G. Radio Broadcasting: A History of the Airwaves. New York and London: Pen and Sword History. 2020.

=======

Images from the Life of Charles William Lienau

Charles at age five (1908) in Brooklyn, New York. His parent's financial challenges prevented Charles from attending school beyond the 8th grade.

Charles, Laura and daughter Susan, plus a fidgety cat, in 1953.

Proud dad with daughter Susan on the Washington Mall in 1956.

Charles William Lienau Jr. President of Lienau Associates and Lawrence Associates in Silver Spring, Maryland.

Party hat night on a Caribbean cruise with friends. Laura Lienau is 2nd from left, Charles is 1st on the right, and daughter Susan is 3rd from right.

Laura and Charles Lienau, 1965.

Lienau Generation 9					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Maiden Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Susan Lienau Hendricson	1949-	B: Washington DC D: N/A	**William Dennis Hendricson**	1948-	B: Walla Walla WA D: N/A
Children: Susan and I were married in January 1971 in Silver Spring, Maryland at her parents' church, the First Baptist Church of Silver Springs. We welcomed two children into the world: **Adam William Hendricson** in 1974, born in Evanston, Illinois, and **Aaron Charles Hendricson** in 1978, born in San Antonio, Texas.					
Synopsis: Susan originally enrolled in Kueka College, a small liberal arts institution on the Finger Lakes in upstate New York. Kueka was too isolated for Susan and she transferred to Dickinson College in Carlisle Pennsylvania. Like many Boomers, Susan and I met in college on a blind date set up by friends. Our first date was on Valentine's Day, 1969 when we attended a concert by Tom Rush, a 60's folk singer-songwriter. Susan was a psychology major and the first Lienau to graduate from college. After marriage during our senior year, we lived in Carlisle in a small house on the edge of town that had seen its better days, but was home for us, and where we first learned useful home-repair skills such a fixing a sheet rock ceiling that was falling down. Susan's first job after graduation was caring for children with Downs Syndrome and my post-graduation job was working on a construction crew building a Ramada Inn. We departed for Evanston, Illinois the following September where I attended graduate school at Northwestern University and Susan took a teaching job while doing research in the Educational Psychology Department of Northwestern. Chapter V provides additional information on our life together.					

Susan and I graduated from Dickinson College, which was founded by Declaration of Independence signers John Dickinson and Benjamin Rush on land donated by William Penn's son. Dickinson was the 1st college opened in the newly formed United States, matriculating its 1st class 6 days after the signing of the Treaty of Paris in 1783. Dickinson is the 7th oldest college in the America's including the Colonial period and was the westernmost college in the U.S. until the 19th century.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/1/2024.

Images From the Life of Susan Lienau Hendricson

Happy Childhood!

Susan Hendricson and Susan Belsky, best friends since high school.

30 great years at Coker Methodist School

Left: The team at San Antonio Assistance League Art Department

Below: Susan with sons Adam and Aaron in 2007, and with grandkids Merritt and Finley Hendricson in 2021.

Girault Lineage Table

The Girault surname originated in France, and for centuries has been prevalent in the Ardennes region of northeastern France, of which Reims is the principle city. The first Girault family member that was confidently identified was born near Reims in the early 19th century.

Girault Generation 1					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Charles Girault	1740-1804	B: Merfy, France (FR)	**Jeanne Barbier**	1746 1812	B: Chalons-Sur-Marne, FR
		D: Merfy, FR			D: Merfy, FR
Children: Married in 1772, Charles and Jeanne had six children during their 32-year relationship including **Pierre-Louis Girault.**					

Synopsis: In the Ardennes regional census reports of 1770 and 1780, Charles was listed as a shop owner and livery driver, and Jeanne was listed as a papiers (i.e., documents) aide for the Deputy Intendant of Reims. In 18th century France, an Intendant was the Crown's chief administrative officer for an assigned town or rural region. An Intendant functioned as the city manager in an urban area or a county commissioner in a rural area. The Intendant's office for a major city like Reims contained a substantial infrastructure of administrative personnel similar to what exists today for municipal government in U.S. cities. Intendants were employees of the large civil service system in France, and rotated from city to city every 3 years to prevent corruption. Jeanne's role as a document aide within the Reims Intendant office is not defined, but suggests that she might have been well connected and well educated by the standards of that era for females.

Jeanne's great-grandmother, also named Jeanne Barbier (1653-1718), was a *Fille du Roi (Daughter of the King)* immigrant to Canada, as described on the next page. After arriving in Quebec, Canada in 1670 at the age of 17, great-grandmother Jeanne signed a marriage contract with Bernard Champlain, but quickly arranged to have that union dissolved based on his public infidelity. Within a few months, she married Julien Plumereau, who was killed soon after during a tavern altercation. Not deterred, Jeanne's great-grandmother next married Francois Blain, who was a seaman. He died 11 years later during a geographic charting expedition to South Africa and was buried near present day Cape Town, leaving his spouse and children stranded in Quebec.

After receiving word of Jacques' death more than a year after the incident, Jeanne successfully petitioned the Quebec Intendant, Jean Talon, for permission to leave the colony, one of only a few Fille du Roi allowed to depart. Jeanne and her children returned to Reims in 1683 and later settled in Merfy. She had several relationships after returning to France, one of which led to the birth of Jeanne's grandmother, Suzanne Habelin (1690-1764), who, in turn, gave birth to Jeanne's Barbier's mother, Marie-Josephe (1716-1779), who adopted the Barbier surname, perhaps to honor her Fille du Roi ancestor. Marie-Josephe was married and widowed twice, but unattached when Jeanne Barbier (wife of Charles Girault; I know, its confusing!) was born.

=======

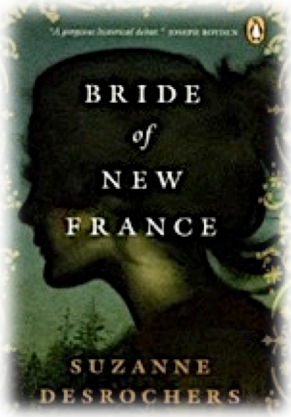
Notes on the Fille du Roi: Unlike colonization of the Dutch and English settlements in America where approximately 40% of the early immigrants were female, the population of New France (present day Quebec, Canada) in the 17th century was 95% single males, who were mostly fur trappers and soldiers, and well known for rowdy behavior. Efforts to attract families to this rough frontier colony were not productive. French King Louis XIV (i.e., the fabled Sun King) desired to make the struggling colony conducive to families to promote community development. He also saw the need to evolve the economic base of the colony from singular dependence on fur trapping toward family-owned agriculture. Abandoning efforts to attract family units to New France, the Sun King decided to send young females with "demonstrated capacity for fertility," to the Quebec colony in an immigration program he named Daughters of the King (Fllle du Roi). Fertility capacity was defined as the ability to bear ten children, however that was measured in the 1600s. An aggressive recruitment campaign targeted teenage females from poor families and young females "already turned out by their families and living sordidly on the streets" (i.e., likely references to banditry and prostitution). Fille du Roi participants were offered a substantial dowry of 300 livres (roughly $22,000 in 2025) to make the transatlantic journey to Canada. Between 1663 and 1678, approximately 1,500 French females agreed to become Fille du Roi and boarded ships bound for New France including great grandmother Jeanne Barbier. Many of the Fille du Roi candidates were personally "screened" by the Sun King. Approximately 20% of the young women died during the journey, mostly due to ships lost at sea, not uncommon for the notoriously unseaworthy French cargo ships of that era, and also due to infectious disease that spread rapidly in the squalid below deck areas assigned to the Fille du Roi.

Upon arrival in Quebec, Fille du Roi were assigned in groups of 25 to a Guardian, who arranged temporary housing, "promoted chastity and piety prior to marriage by limiting pre-match contact with gentlemen of the colony," and, critically, functioned as the matchmaker. Young female immigrants matched to a suitor signed a marriage contract, which they had to honor within 30 days or risk loss of their dowry. However, Fille du Roi were allowed to back-out of the marriage for reasonable cause within the initial three months after exchanging vows. Of the Fille du Roi who reached New France, 90% married within a year of arrival, which stimulated dramatic population growth within the colony, so much so that the program was terminated after 15 years due to excessive population growth in relation to resources.

A rendition of Fille du Roi presenting themselves to eligible bachelors in New France. The women carrying a satchel and wearing a top hat is the Guardian who coordinated matchmaking.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/3/2024.

Jeanne Barbier's likely grim teenage existence in France probably led her to apply and be selected for the Fille du Roi. There is evidence that she blossomed considerably in her 13 years

in New France. During her final five years in the colony, she sat on the Colony Commission, a 30-member body equivalent to what would be called a city council today, as one of the three appointments reserved for females. Her dossier (area of responsibility) was community health education, and it is known that she functioned in previous years as curator of records for the Quebec Intendant's office. These assignments suggest that she was literate and was held in esteem within the colony. A historical novel by Suzanne Desrochers describes the Fille du Roi experience in the New France colony.



Although the central character in this historical novel is from high society, and not representative of the actual Fille du Roi, the author graphically depicts the harrowing transatlantic crossing, the awkward matchmaking and subsequent marriages of young females participating in this colonization program.
Desrochers S. Bride of New France. Toronto: W.W. Norton and Co. 2013.

=======

Girault Generation 2					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Pierre-Louis Girault	1785-1820	B: Merfy, FR D: Reims-La-Brulee, FR	**Mary Eugenia Thomas**	1788-1849	B: London, ENG D: London, ENG
Children: Pierre never married, although he fathered a child, **Alexander Girault**, with an English women named Mary Eugenia Thomas. Alexander was Susan's great grandfather.					
Synopsis: In spite of the animosity between France and England during this period of time, Pierre traveled often between the two nations. Port of entry records indicate he entered and exited England seven times between 1809-1813. His occupation notation on entry ledgers indicated that he was an agent of the Paris stock market known as the Bourse. A liaison with an English citizen, Mary Eugenia Thomas, led to the birth of his son, Alexander in 1811. Pierre also shows up in the historical record as a member of a French Royalist Regiment (i.e., supported re-establishment of the monarchy) during the 100 Days War in 1815 when Napoleon returned to France and attempted to regain power. French Royalists fought with the British-Prussian Coalition army that defeated Napoleon in a series of battles near Waterloo in Belgium. Pierre was listed as an injured causality, which is 19th century language for broken limbs or musculoskeletal damage rather than saber, gunshot or shrapnel wounds. His injuries apparently were so severe that he spent the rest of his brief life in an institution for the infirm in Reims-La-Brulee. Mary Eugenia raised Alexander in London after Pierre-Louis's institutionalization. She worked as a seamstress but had connections with the royal court of George III as dresser of royal					

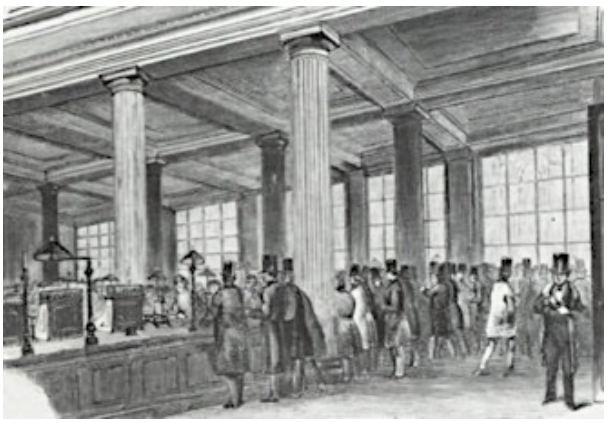
family spouses. Possibly through these connections she met an attorney, Thomson Cunningham, who did legal work for the Crown and also was a Parliament Member. They married at St. Mary Le Bone Cathedral in 1819 when Alex was eight years old. No evidence was found that indicated whether or not Cunningham adopted Alexander, and Alexander continued to use the surname Girault in his adult life. Mary Eugenia was widowed in 1829 when Cunningham died of Typhoid Fever. I found no information about Mary Eugenia's later life other than an 1849 death certificate.

Girault Generation 3					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Alexander Girault	1811-1882	B: Reims, FR D: London, ENG	**Sara Theodora McGreal**	1841-1876	B: Skye, Scotland D: London, ENG

Children: Married in 1860, Alexander and Sara had three children including **Theodore Stefano Girault**, Susan's grandfather.

Synopsis: Thomson Cunningham's will allocated financial support for Alexander's education. Alexander attended and graduated from University College London, and soon after entered London's thriving banking industry. During the 1830s, he was an accounts manager at the London Joint Stock Bank and in the 1840s, was promoted to a managing partner. The London Joint Stock Bank was a new concept in banking in England. Prior to the 1830's, all banks were privately held by affluent families or consortiums of merchants and nobility. These banks functioned as private repositories and investment vehicles for the wealthy. Average citizens could not access private banks. In contrast, a joint stock bank was owned and controlled by a group of shareholders, who, although wealthy, came from more diverse backgrounds. Joint stock banks also accepted deposits from anyone who met reasonably attainable financial criteria, and offered what we today call savings accounts and Certificates of Deposit (CDs) with small, but steady investment returns. *(Michie RC. British Banking: Continuity and Change from 1694 to the Present. New York and London: Oxford University Press. 2016)*

Alexander's banking career was rewarding, leading to a posh lifestyle in an upscale area of London. Sara, at age 18, was 31 years younger than Alexander when they married. They met three years earlier when Alexander was on a hiking vacation in the Hebrides. Before and after their marriage, the couple traveled abroad extensively including visits to Athens, Rome, Cairo, Damascus, Baghdad and Istanbul, and often spent their August holiday in Turkey. The couple's first child, Emily Alexanderine Girault (1860-1947), was born in that nation several months after their marriage in Corum, a major Hittite Empire archeological site with a hot springs resort where the couple owned an apartment. Like many affluent Londoners in the 19th century, Alexander had a deep interest in Middle Eastern archeology. He was a financial supporter of The Royal Geographic Society and one of the original investors in the Corum Archaeological Museum. His passion for archaeology likely explains the many visits to Corum, although the hot springs may have added to the appeal. The story of Alexander, Sara and their youngest son, Theodore Stefano, is further developed in Chapters III and IV.



An 1840 illustration of the lobby of the London Joint Stock Bank. The bank popularized the concept of family banking and savings accounts. In the 1850s, more than 250,000 English citizens had accounts with this bank. One of London's largest banks in the 19th and 20th centuries, it was acquired by HSBC Holdings in 1992.

Image source: wididata.org. www.m.wikidata.org. Accessed: 8/4/2024.

A Hittite "Husyindedevase" vase carbon-dated from 1650 BCE displayed at the Corum Archaeological Museum. Alexander Girault was an original investor in a 19th century predecessor to this museum. The Hittite Empire encompassed much of present-day Turkey, Crete and Syria. The Hittite capital, Hattusa, was near Corum.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 8/4/2024.

The Lion's Gate, entry to the Hittite capital and temple at Hattusa, a UNESCO World Heritage Site.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org Accessed: 8/4/2024.

Girault Generation 4					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Theodore Stefano Girault	1873-1943	B: London, ENG	**Bessie Pearl McAnespy**	1874-1946	B: Portage Vale, New Brunswick, CA
		D: Hastings-on-Hudson, NY			D: New York, NY

Children: Married in 1901 in New Brunswick, Canada, Theodore and Bessie soon after moved to New York City where they raised their three children: Evelyn Elizabeth Girault (1902-1984; Susan's aunt), Theodore Alexander Girault (1904-1980; Susan's uncle), and **Laura Pearl Girault**, 1908-1981, Susan's mother.

Synopsis: Theodore's life in many ways epitomizes the rags to riches American Dream scenario, and is far too complex to summarize here. The Girault family history in Chapters III and IV tell the full story of his experiences on both sides of the Atlantic. Theodore was born into a wealthy family and seemingly was set for an upper crust existence in London. After several unfortunate and inexplicable events, he instead spent his childhood in the clutches of England's 19th century child welfare system, and then participated in an infamous child labor immigration program (or deportation, depending on your point-of-view), landing as a teenage farm worker in rural Canada. After many years in a farming environment, Theodore and new wife Bessie re-invented themselves as urban dwellers on 2nd street in Manhattan. In New York, Theodore embarked on 40-year career in the investment industry, starting out as a low level clerk with a fledgling firm, and by the 1930s, rose to a senior management position within that company, which by then had evolved into Morgan Stanley, Smith Barney.

Susan's aunt Evelyn worked in the Manhattan financial industry for 20 years before marrying Frank Peter Meister (1902-1977) in 1945, a navy man returning from WWII. After living for over a decade near Southampton on Long Island, Evelyn and Frank relocated to Memphis, Tennessee for his job and lived there for the rest of their lives.

Susan's uncle Theodore (Theo Jr.) married Edith May Patterson (1903-1983) in 1931. After graduating from Dartmouth College, the first family member to graduate from college, Theo commenced a 40-year with the Bell Telephone Company, eventually moving his family, which now included daughters Phyllis Elizabeth Girault (1935-2018) and Catherine Girault (1943 -) to Baldwin, Long Island. After retirement, Theo and Edith moved to Southampton, close to the eastern tip of Long Island. Susan and I remember visiting Theo and Edith in Southampton, where Theo took us out on his rather extensive sailboat, designed for racing, and showed us what it was like to move really fast on the water while leaning backwards over the side, struggling to keep sail lines taught. At Dartmouth, Theo was indeed a BMOC as student president of the college's famed Glee Club and as a four-year letterman on the Dartmouth Crew, which won many rowing regattas in the 1920s, a top collegiate sport of that era.

Theo and Edith's daughter Catherine, in a family history coincidence, married Peter Hendrickson, a Long Island architect, and potentially a relative of Cornelius and Hendrick Hendrickson at some level. However, this possibility has not yet been investigated.

Bessie and Theodore Girault in 1901 after their arrival in New York City. They were 27 years old and both obtained jobs in NYC in the cutting edge communication technologies of that era: telephones and telegraphs.

Bessie with children Evelyn and Theodore (Theo Jr.) in 1907. Laura Girault would arrive in 1908.

Left: Theo Sr. with Evelyn & Theo Jr. in 1910 (colorized).

Right: Laura at 18 months.

Theodore and Bessie at age 65 and their home in Hastings-on-the-Hudson, where their daughter Laura married Charles William Lienau.

Images from the Life of Evelyn Girault Meister

Evelyn at age four and brother Theo at age two in 1906.

Evelyn Girault Meister and Frank Meister at their Long Island home in the 1950s. The couple moved to Memphis, Tennessee in the 1960s for Frank's job as a regional representative for the A. Schraders and Sons Company.

Evelyn with her sister Laura, niece Susan and Adam Hendricson, 1977.

Evelyn reading to two year old Aaron Hendricson, 1980.

Images from the Life of Theodore Alexander Girault

Theo's 1927 Dartmouth College yearbook photo. *(Internet Archive. www.archive.org)* **Theo was President of the Dartmouth Glee Club in his senior year. After winning the National Intercollegiate Glee Club Contest that year, the Dartmouth Men's Glee Club was invited by President Coolidge to sing at the White House during a state dinner for the President of Cuba. In 1926 and 1927, the Dartmouth Men's Eight Crew, including Theo, won several regional regattas and finished third each year in the Intercollegiate Rowing Association (IRA) national championships. Pictured below is the 1926 final with the Dartmouth Eight at the top near the grandstands.** *Shephard C. IRA Regatta Results, 1871-1981. Rowing Association of American Colleges. May 5, 2008. www.irarowing.com. Accessed: March 27, 2023.*

College rowing was the 2nd most popular college sport in the 1920s, next to football. Rowing was the first sport to be covered via "live" onsite radio broadcasts. CBS Radio broadcast Saturday afternoon college rowing events leading up to the IRA Championships. *Socolow MJ. Live From America's Rhineland: The Poughkeepsie Regatta and Early American Network Sports Broadcasting, 1925–1940. J Sport History. 2016; 43(2): 149-167.*
Image: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/7/2024.

In a 1957 photo from the *Dartmouth Indian* newspaper, Theo Girault stands with high school QB Bill Gundy and Bob Blackman, Dartmouth football coach. Theo was President of the Dartmouth Alumni Association in the 1950s and devoted considerable energy to recruiting football players. Gundy started at QB in 1958 and 1959 with a record of 14-3-1, winning the Ivy League championship in 1959.
Terrel R. Here Are the Best of the Ivies. Sports Illustrated. Nov 30, 1959. www.vault.si.com. Accessed: March 29, 2023.
Image Source: Archive By Year. www.theDartmouth.com. Accessed: 3/28/2023.

Girault Generation 5					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Laura Pearl Girault	1908-1981	B: Brooklyn, NY D: Rockville, MD	**Charles William Lienau**	1903-1969	B: Brooklyn, NY D: Rockville, MD

Children: Married in 1935, Laura and Charles had one child: **Susan Elizabeth Lienau**, born in 1949. Laura and Charles were married in picturesque Hastings-on-the Hudson at the home of Laura's parents, pictured on page 121. A wedding announcement in the *NY Times* stated that the ceremony took place on the terrace of the home.

Synopsis: After living for a number of years in Kings, New York, Laura and Charles took the big leap and moved south to the Washington D.C. area to seek a more promising environment for Lienau Associates, their Hi-Fi stereo equipment wholesale business. Guessing correctly that the D.C. area with its fast growing suburbs would be fertile ground for the business, Charles and Laura did well financially in the 20 years following the move. Their first home in the D.C. area was in Silver Springs, Maryland, near the company office. Shortly after Susan's birth, Laura and Charles purchased property in a newly developing area in Rockville, Maryland, known as Manor Club and built a home that was adjacent to the 15th hole of the club's golf course. Susan grew up in this house, and, not surprisingly became a champion golfer, following her mother's footsteps, an avid golfer who played several times a week when weather allowed. Bill speaking here: The one time that I played a round with Laura and Susan, it quickly became apparent that I was destined to finish in third place in this trio. Mother and daughter had uncanny accuracy – nary a ball off their clubs landed in the rough. In addition to her devotion to golf, Laura was a member of a bowling team for many years, played bridge frequently, was extensively involved with the First Baptist Church in Silver Spring where Susan and I were married, and enjoyed cooking for family and friends.

When Susan was eight years old, Laura and Charles purchased a summer beach cottage in Bethany Beach, Delaware that was well used by family and friends for many years. The Lienau family traveled with friends on cruises to the Caribbean – 1960s style cruising, which has little resemblance to the massive floating hotels of 2025.

Laura was a woman of great patience with a forgiving attitude. I sorely tested her calm demeanor on several occasions while Susan and I were dating. One time, I volunteered to park Laura's car in the garage, and managed to nearly take-out the center column between the garage doors. Another incident led to the shattering of a glass tabletop on her patio. Laura was gracious in both instances, telling her daughter's anxious suitor to not fret about the damage – things can always be repaired.

As previously described in the Hendricson and Lienau lineages, Laura and Charles' daughter Susan Elizabeth for some reason agreed to marry me on a snowy January day in Silver Spring, Maryland.

Images From the Life of Laura Girault Lienau

Laura Girault in 1933 at age 25.

Laura Lienau in 1940 at Hopewell Cape National Park in New Brunswick.

Laura Lienau with daughter Susan in 1955.

Laura with daughter Susan on her wedding day in January 1971.

Laura and newborn grandson Adam Hendricson in 1974.

With grandson Adam in 1975.

McAnespy Lineage Table

The McAnespy surname originated in Northern Ireland, and is almost exclusively associated with a specific rural parish, Armagh, in Northern Ireland. The first McAnespy family member that I could confidently identify was born in the late 18th century.

McAnespy Generation 1					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
James McAnespy	1796-1862	B: Loughgall, Northern Ireland	**Emily Morton**	1796-1844	B: Halifax, Nova Scotia, CAN
		D: Portage Vale, New Brunswick, Canada (CAN)			D: Portage Vale, CAN
Children: Married in 1822, James and Emily had six children including **John Alexander McAnespy**, all born in the New Brunswick Province of Canada.					
Synopsis: James appears to have come from a long line of Irish tenant farmers who raised crops on estates owned by absentee English nobility or wealthy English merchants. Like millions of his countrymen, James immigrated to North America as a young man, landing in Quebec in 1821, and soon after made his way to New Brunswick to try his hand at farming. He established a farm on land purchased at low price from the province government, which was eager to populate the region with Northern Europeans. In January 1822, James met Emily when he was helping rebuild a church damaged in a fire. Emily's brother was a church alderman, supervising the restoration, and facilitated James and Emily's introduction. In spite of the long winters and short summer growing season of New Brunswick, James and Emily managed to operate a relatively successful farm that served as the family home for several generations.					

McAnespy Generation 2					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
John Alexander McAnespy	1820-1887	B: Portage Vale, CAN	**Elizabeth (Lizzy) Teakles**	1831-1907	B: Sussex, CAN
		D: Portage Vale, CAN			D: Portage Vale, CAN
Children: Married in 1851, John and Lizzy had eight children including **William Oliver McAnespy** and **Bessie Pearl McAnespy.** Bessie lived with her brother on his farm as a teenager, where she met a young immigrant farm hand by the name of **Theodore Stefano Girault.**					
Synopsis: John and Lizzy expanded the New Brunswick farm started by his parents, eventually purchasing two adjacent farms, which were managed by a son and a son-in-law. They also moved into the dairy and cattle breeding businesses. By the time of his death in 1887, John and Lizzy had separated. She first moved to St. Johns, the main city in New Brunswick, and later moved to Toronto, apparently losing contact with her children for a period of time, which may explain Bessie's residence at the farm of her older brother William.					

McAnespy Generation 3					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
William Oliver McAnespy	1857-1917	B: Portage Vale, CAN D: Hartford, CT	**Mary Ann (Amy) Belcher**	1861-1933	B: Boston, MA D: Hartford, CT
Children: William Oliver was a bachelor until age 43 when he and Mary Ann (Amy) Belcher were married in 1900 after a brief engagement. The couple had no children.					
Synopsis: William Oliver, known as Will to his family and friends, was at a Canadian Farm Bureau meeting in St. Johns, New Brunswick (NB) in 1885 where he attended a presentation on a British child and teenager immigration program designed to provide laborers for low population rural areas. Intrigued, Will signed up to participate, and two years later, three 13-year old English orphans arrived at his farm near Portage Vale, NB. Will took in one of the teenagers, and the other two boys went to work on adjacent McAnespy farms. The teenager that Will placed on his farm was Theodore Stefano Girault. From the preceding Girault Family Lineage Table, you know the rest of the story (i.e., Theo meets Bessie McAnespy, Theo and Bessie marry, and move away from rural New Brunswick to a new life in New York City). In 1899, Will was vacationing in Montreal where he met Amy Belcher from Boston. Amy worked as an editor for a publishing house, and had won a trip to Montreal in a company raffle. After a brief romance (Amy visited Portage Vale once and Will visited Boston once), they married in 1900. For reasons that are not clear, Will abruptly sold his farm and moved with Amy to Hartford, Connecticut where he purchased a printing business. They spent the rest of their lives in Hartford with Amy running the business after Will's death.					

Will McAnespy's New Brunswick farm in 1900 (photo colorized to enhance clarity).

Theodore Stefano Girault, left, with William Oliver (Will) McAnespy in 1912, a number of years after both moved from New Brunswick to the U.S. Will was as a father figure to the orphaned Theo for 13 years on his farm, and they remained close after each moved to the U.S.

McAnespy Generation 4					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Bessie Pearl McAnespy	1874-1946	B: Portage Vale, CAN D: New York, NY	**Theodore Stefano Girault**	1873-1943	B: London, ENG D: Hastings-on-Hudson, NY
Children: Married in 1901 in New Brunswick, Canada, Bessie and Theodore soon after moved to New York City where they raised three children: Evelyn Elizabeth Girault (1902-1984; Susan's aunt), Theodore Alexander Girault (1904-1980; Susan's uncle), and **Laura Pearl Girault**, 1908-1981, Susan's mother.					
Synopsis: Bessie's father, John Alexander McAnespy, died in 1887 while estranged from his wife who apparently had no interest in taking care of Bessie. At age 14, Bessie went to live with older brother William, where she soon after met a young English immigrant, Theodore Girault, who had been placed by the British Home Child Service as a laborer on his farm. Fourteen yeas later, Bessie and Theo married at a small chapel in Portage Vale, and soon after departed for New York City. Additional information about Bessie and Theo's life together appears in Chapter IV. Photographs of Bessie, Theodore and their children appear on page 123. As previously described in the Lienau and Girault lineages, Bessie and Theo's daughter Laura married Charles William Lienau Jr. in 1935.					

Sources on 18th century Irish Immigration to North America:

Connolly SJ. On Every Tide. The Making and Remaking of the Irish World. New York: Basic Books. 2022.

Kelly J. The Graves Are Walking. The Story of the Irish Famine of the 19th Century. New York: Henry Holt and Company. 2012.

Kenny K. The American Irish: A History. New York: Longman Publishing. 2000.

McManus Lineage Table

The McManus surname originated in Ireland, and for centuries has been prevalent in Roscommon County in central Ireland. The first McManus family member that I could confidently identify was born in a small Roscommon village early in the 19th century.

McManus Generation 1					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
John McManus	1810-1863	B: Camderry, Ireland (IR) D: Ballyfarnon, IR	**Theresa McManus** Maiden name unknown	1817-1864	B: Ballyfarnon, IR D: Ballyfarnon, IR
Children: Married in 1837, John and Theresa had 7 children including **John James McManus.**					
Synopsis: John was a tenant farmer near the village of Ballyfarnon on an estate owned by a wealthy Scottish family who made their fortune as North Sea boat builders. The Scottish family also was a partner in an ownership group that purchased and renovated a castle near to Ballyfarnon. The castle became a popular resort for holidays, weddings and vacations in the 19th century, and today is a five star golf-oriented resort.					

McManus Generation 2					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
John James McManus	1854-1915	B: Ballyfarnon, IR D: Brooklyn, NY	**Mary Maria McNellis**	1853-1925	B: Colonsay, Hebrides, Scotland D: Brooklyn, NY
Children: John James and Mary Maria were married in April 1882 at a mass wedding ceremony, among 1000 couples, at St. Patrick's Cathedral in Manhattan on Easter Sunday. The couple had four children including **Mary Theresa McManus,** Susan's paternal grandmother.					
Synopsis: John James and Mary Maria departed Belfast on different immigration ships in February 1865 and both arrived in New York on the same day – April 15, 1865 (the day Abraham Lincoln was assassinated). John James arrived on the *Jeanie Johnston*, and Maria on the *William Munn II*. The Irish shipping industry benefitted from high demand among poor rural Irish for travel to North America. Dozens of hastily constructed packet ships, designed to carry mail packets both ways and immigrants one way, were produced at the beginning of the immigration surge, and many more were built annually to replace ships that became unseaworthy after several transatlantic trips due to shoddy materials and assembly. John James was 11 when he arrived and Maria was 12. Although both lived in Brooklyn, they would not meet and begin courtship until 1880, 15 years later.					

Source for travel of John James and Mary Maria, and other Irish immigrants to America:
New York Passenger List, 1820-1891. Database with Digitized Images of Port of Entry Logs. *FamilySearch.* https://FamilySearch.org: February 10, 2024. Citing NARA Microfilm Publication M237. Washington D.C. National Archives and Records Administration (NARA). [records of 13 million passengers arriving in NYC]

A replica of the immigrant transport, the *Jeanie Johnston*, pillared in Irish newspapers for disease, danger and death. Conditions on the *JJ* were no doubt just as squalid as other immigrant ships, but ironically, the *JJ* never had a fatality in 22 Atlantic crossings, each with 200 adults and children crammed into the hold. Infectious diseases were rampant on immigrant ships. Passengers reported that sharks followed in the wake of ships because so many bodies were buried at sea, giving rise to the term, Coffin Ship.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/9/2024

McManus Generation 3					
Name	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth And Death**	**Spouse Name**	**Life Span**	**Place of Birth and Death**
Mary Theresa McManus	1884-1940	B: New York, NY D: New York, NY	**Charles William Lienau Sr.**	1876-1940	B: New York, NY D: New York, NY
Children: Married in November 1901, Mary and Charles Sr. had two children: **Charles Lienau Jr**., Susan's father, and Helen Lienau (1908-1987), Susan's aunt.					
Synopsis: The synopsis on page 107 summarizes the lives of Mary McManus and Charles Lienau Sr. Their son, Charles William Lienau Jr., married Laura Pearl Girault in 1935 (See pages 107-108). Charles Jr. and Laura lived in New York for 12 years until moving to Washington DC, where they welcomed their daughter, Susan Elizabeth Lienau in 1949. Charles, Laura and Susan moved to suburban Maryland in the 1950s where Susan grew up and attended high school. Susan met me in college and we married in 1971. Helen Lienau married John Knoebel (1906-1968) in 1930. They lived in Southampton, Long Island where they raised two children.					

Mary McManus in 1937. Mary was Susan's paternal grandmother.

Chapter III - Pre-Immigration History

Chapter II introduced the names and basic life details of the 150 individuals in nine families that advanced our family's story toward my marriage to Susan in 1971. Chapter III provides information about the European history of each family prior to North American immigration in these categories:

(1) origin and evolution of surname
(2) geographic origin
(3) first appearance of surname in public records
(4) synopsis of European / English pre-immigration history
(5) first family member(s) to immigrate to North America

This chapter and the following Chapter IV (Stories of Family Members in America) provide additional information about ancestors in the old and new worlds: origins, myths, family legends, adventures, accomplishments and "fog of distant history" mysteries.

Hendricson

Origin and Evolution of Surname

The original family name when it was first appeared in medieval records in the 12th century was Schenck; not Hendrikse, Hendriksz, Hendrickzoon, or Hendrickson, surnames that would not begin to occur until the 1500s in The Netherlands. The name would not become "Hendricson with C and no K" until 1845 in the United States. There are three theories about the origin of the Schenck name. Only one of these theories fits with the Teutonic saga depicted by Augustus Schenck, author of the original published history of the Schenck family (1843) that was discussed at the beginning of this book. One of the origin theories, discussed below, may have Augustus spinning in his grave. (*Schenck AD. The Rev. William Schenck: His Ancestry and His Descendants. Washington DC: Rufus Darby Publisher. Originally published in 1843 with updates in 1869 and 1883. Re-released by Higginson Book Company (www.higginson.com) in 2015 and also available via www.books.google.com)*

A side note: *Family histories that served as foundational sources for the pre-immigration origins of the Hendricson family are listed on pages 147-149. These sources are 50 to 180 years old. Although much of the basic information communicated in these histories appears to be fundamentally accurate, research over the past three years, using modern data sources and search techniques that my genealogy-minded ancestors could not imagine in a wild hallucination, has added layers of detail, and additional or different plausible interpretations of our predecessors' journey through life.*

The most prominent origin theory for the Schenck surname is that it likely evolved from the Germanic tribal names of Scenko or Scenken, which were used as far back as the 4th century to designate an innkeeper or the person who brought liquor to military encampments. (*Hanks P, Hodges, F. A Dictionary of Surnames. London: Oxford University Press. 1989)* Roman writers of that era used both Scenko and Scenken to refer to operators of village taverns and the wagon drivers who transported libations to military camps in Germania. As with Scenko and Scenken, when surnames began to emerge in pre-medieval times in Europe (i.e., the 5th through 10th centuries following the collapse of Roman influence), they were often derived from a role or function played by individuals or a craft historically associated with a particular family. As the population increased and relocated from isolated farms and villages to much larger feudal estates or cities in the 11th through 15th centuries, the family's habitation (i.e., location: town, nearby castle, estate or church) was typically added to the occupational/functional title to further distinguish one individual from others, as in Johannus Steinmetz van Fulheim (in other words: Johannus, a stone cutter, from the town of Fulheim).

A second theory, that Augustus Schenck likely would have endorsed, is that the word Schenck is derived from a Norse practice that was passed on to Germanic tribes when Scandinavians migrated south into present day Germany and Poland seeking tillable lands in the 8th and 9th centuries. (*Green DH. Language and History in the Early Germanic World. New York and Cambridge: Cambridge University Press. 1998)* The Norse used hallowed out pig and boar shank bones as spouts for leather bags that stored wine and mead. With social intermingling, this practice was adopted by Germanic tribes in the post-Roman Era. In German, Shank was

pronounced and eventually, several centuries later, spelled as Schenck. The word came to mean pourer or provider, as in pouring wine, providing meals, or leading the service of a meal for a large group. Schenck was used as the title for an individual in a tribal leaders' retinue who supervised food, wine and ale preparation, and coordinated the pre-meal tasting to detect poison or spoiled food, the later being fairly common, and a far more frequent threat to health than murder by poison. This role usually passed from father to son, ensuring a continuation of family social status and influence within the tribes' hierarchy. *(Blark G. Surnames and the History of Social Mobility. Princeton NJ: Princeton University Press. 2014)*

A third theory is that the surname Schenck and the similar surnames Shenk, Schenk and Schenke were derived from the Ashkenazi Jewish culture in Northern Europe. (*Malkiel D. Reconstructing Ashkenaz: The Human Face of Franco-German Jewry, 1000-1250. Palo Alto, CA: Stanford University Press. 2016*) Variations of Schenck were commonly used in Ashkenazi communities in northern Europe during the 5^{h} through 10th centuries. Similar to the Germanic tribes, individuals with the name Schenck in Jewish communities were often owners or operators of inns, taverns, communal halls and recreational campsites where games, tournaments and theatrical events occurred. They also were food and liquor wholesalers. For example, during the eight through tenth centuries, only Ashkenazi Jews were allowed to brew and sell liquor in eastern Russia and adjoining lands including what is now Poland and Belarus. (*Ehrlich AM. Encyclopedia of the Jewish Diaspora: Origins, Experiences and Culture. Camden, UK and NY: Bloomsbury Publishing USA. 2008)*

=======

Notes on Ashkenazi Jews Migration to Northern Europe: The Ashkenazi are one of two primary ancestral groups within the Jewish faith. The majority of Ashkenazi migrated from the Middle East to Italy during the first century AD, but many others relocated, voluntarily and involuntarily, to the Balkans (present day Bulgaria, Albania, Croatia and Serbia), the Aegean Islands, Greece, Turkey and even to southern France. Many Ashkenazi arrived at these locations as slaves of Roman families, or in various forms of indebted servitude as tutors, scribes, nannies and domestic workers. The other ancestral group was the Sephardic Jews that primarily migrated from the Middle East and North Africa to Spain and Portugal. Sephardic Jews also were enslaved or survived with limited rights and protections on the fringes of Roman society during the first through fifth centuries, even after Catholicism became the official state theology of Rome, and persecution of Jews was outlawed, at least theoretically.

As Roman military power, economic influence and infrastructure declined in the fourth and fifth centuries, many Jewish slaves escaped or were released from their servitude when Roman towns, agricultural communes and military outposts collapsed or were abandoned in the outlying regions of France, Greece, Turkey and the Balkans. These individuals joined with Ashkenazi communities in Italy who were migrating north to escape persecution and disenfranchisement. (*Malkiel D. 2016)*

During the fifth through eighth centuries, bands of Ashkenazi Jews moved into Germania where they established functional relationships with the indigenous tribes of Northern Europe, who were undergoing considerable change themselves: slowly converting to Christian theology or a transitional pagan-Christian hybrid, developing agrarian versus nomadic economies, and

building fixed communities linked to early versions of protective castles. (*Mosk C. Nationalism and Economic Development in Modern Eurasia. NY: Routledge. 2013)* Demonstrating adaptability, the Ashkenazi incorporated elements of tribal languages, social customs, attire and religious practices to their culture and identity, and established a niche within these Germanic communities as merchants (i.e., pre-medieval import-export businesses), owners of hospitality sites such as taverns, halls, inns, and gaming sites (i.e., camps where tournaments of military skills and holiday festivals were held) and functioning as "learneds" who could read, write and communicate in several languages, and thus translate, negotiate and write documents. After Charlemagne expanded Frankish rule and stabilized much of Europe in the late eighth century, Ashkenazi groups moved into present-day Poland and gradually gained economic influence, particularly in an area of eastern Poland known as Silesia. The Ashkenazi in Poland spoke a unique language that incorporated Hebrew, Slavic and ancient Germanic tribal words, creating an early form of Yiddish, and also practiced a hybrid religion based in traditional Hebrew beliefs blended with Roman Catholic practices and lingering vestiges of non-Christian tribal rituals. Until the 11th century, Ashkenazi communities were generally well accepted in Silesia, but increasingly frequent eruptions of anti-Semitism in that region may have made Silesia a less attractive location. *(Ehrlich, 2008; Elukin J. Living Together, Living Apart: Re-thinking Jewish-Christian Relations in the Middle Ages. Princeton NJ: Princeton University Press. 2007)*

=======

I don't know which of the origin theories is most likely correct, and suspect, given the similarities in these origin stories, that all three may have played a role in the establishment of the Schenck surname for the familial line that eventually, over centuries, morphed into the Hendricksons, and then, fairly recently, into the Hendricsons, with a "C and no K". However, it is well established that the Schenck title, and associated surname, became important within the feudal system that dominated medieval society for many centuries.

The Schenck title (Latin: Pincerna Noster; cup-bearer, or less frequent: sommelier, bartender, food arranger; www.latin-dictionary.net) was prized in feudal courts, as it was often a stepping-stone to a nobility title. During the height of the feudal system in Germany, the Schenck had a complex job description. The person in this role was hand picked by the Count (next to the Emperor, the top nobility position in German feudal pecking order) and thus had to be someone the boss trusted. The Schenck coordinated social activities for the Count, including banquets, ceremonies and festivals, home and on the road, (there could dozens of these annually), coordinated daily meal preparation, supervised the estate vineyards, wine cellar, vegetable fields and managed the commissary (food storage). The Schenck also functioned as a stand-in for the Count during meet-and-greets with village mayors and craft guilds, represented the Count at secondary conferences, and coordinated the tasting of all wine, ale and food that was provided for the Count and his entourage. Typically, the Schenck did not do this himself – he was too important to the estate to take a chance on severe GI distress or even death. (*Luthern A. Testing for Poison Still a Profession for Some. Smithsonian Magazine. June 26, 2009. www.smithsonianmag.org. Accessed May 9, 2024)* Generally, the Schenck requested the individuals who prepared and delivered the meal and spirits to consume the product of their

labors during the Tasters Meal before the nobility and their retinue arrived. (*O'Brian P. Feudalism in Medieval Europe. NY: Cavendish Square. 2016*)

Depiction of a Taster's Meal by a late medieval artist. The designated taster at the left prepares to consume the meal while the Schenck, second from left, supervises, and the servers await the outcome of the tasting.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 8/10/2024.

Typically, the Schenck served in this demanding position for 4-5 years, and assuming successful performance, was rewarded with a lower level nobility title, usually Lord, and assigned other duties within the Count's realm. Frequently, a high performing Schenck moved up to be one the Count's inner circle of advisors for financial, real estate, agricultural, political or military matters. Because each feudal district, known in the German system as a Duchy, employed a Schenck, individuals with this title adopted the name of their Duchy as part of their name. For example, as we will see in the next section: Wihelmus Christianhus Schenck Van Nydeggan.

Geographic Origin

The Hendricson line has been traced in several family histories to the small town of **Nideggen (medieval: Nydeggan)** in western Germany 25 miles from Cologne (Koln) and 30 miles from Aachen in the state of North Rhine-Westphalia. Nydeggan/Nideggen was the ancestral home of the family throughout the medieval period until the 1400s when the Schenck Van Nydeggan family moved to nearby Holland after their financial status diminished.

The present-day village of Nideggen is located near the border of Germany and Holland.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/11/2024.

First Appearance of Surname in Public Records

The original Schenck family surname first appeared in tax rolls around the year 1000 in the region of present day Poland known in medieval times as **Silesia.** The region derived its name from the Silingi tribe, a sect of the larger Vandal culture. Silesia centered on the modern day city of Wroclaw, located on the Oder River in eastern Poland. For centuries, the Silingi and other Germanic tribes fought turf battles within Silesia until the newly formed Polish state

finally gained control late in the tenth century, establishing a feudal order modeled on the Germanic system and installing the Roman Catholic Church as state theology. *(Harc L. Cuius Regio? Ideological and Territorial Cohesion of the Historical Region of Silesia, circa 1000-2000. Wroclaw, Poland: www.ebooki.com.pl)* At least one distant Hendricson ancestor apparently was assigned the Pincerna Noster (Schenck) role within the Piast Duchy of the new Polish nation, which may account for the Schenck surname, although other factors, previously discussed, likely played a role in the Schenck surname derivation.

The highlighted area indicates the location of the medieval region known as Silesia in eastern Poland. Distant Schenck ancestors departed Silesia and moved 500 miles west to the Nydeggan area around the year 1000.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/10/2024.

For unknown reasons, the Schenck family left Silesia, possibly because tribal attempts to regain control made it a dangerous place. In addition to tribal revolts and the ensuing social instability, if the Silesian Schencks were Ashkenazi, waves of anti-Semitism, which escalated after Roman Catholicism was installed, also may have made the region less attractive. The Schencks moved westward a few hundred miles, settling in Nydeggan early in the 11th century. This rural community, nestled in a forested valley, was part of the vast Duchy of the Count of Julich during the medieval period. The centerpiece of the duchy was a picturesque castle high on a hill overlooking the village of Nydeggan. The castle and surrounding structures including a chapel have been fully restored, and are a significant tourist attraction today. If the Schencks who departed Silesia were Ashkenazi, they apparently shed their Hebrew identity entirely and adapted to the reality of an intensely Christian environment in Nydeggan.

Nydeggan Castle between Cologne (Koln) and the Dutch border in the German state of North Rhine-Westphalia is the ancestral home of the Schenck van Nydeggan / Hendricson line.
Image source: Stadt Nideggen. Website of the town of Nideggen. www.nideggen.de. Accessed: 8/10/2024.

Synopsis of Pre-immigration History

The Counts of Julich were among the most powerful feudal leaders in the late Holy Roman Empire (HRE) of the 11th – 16th centuries. The HRE included present-day Germany and Austria, and parts of Poland, Czechoslovakia, Hungary, the Netherlands, Belgium, France and Italy. It was comprised of dozens of territorial governance units known as duchies and principalities that underwent constant mergers and separations. The history of the HRE is complex and often

confusing. A book by Barbara Stollberg-Rilinger, *The Holy Roman Empire: A Short History*, explains the evolution of the constantly shape-shifting HRE without a deep dive into the intricate political, economic and military alliances that held the empire together. (*Barbara Stollberg-Rilinger. The Holy Roman Empire: A Short History. Princeton NJ: Princeton University Press. 2018)*

After relocating to Nydeggan, members of the Schenck family rose substantially in stature and social rank over a two hundred-year period comprising roughly 1000-1200. During these centuries, family members worked as skilled craftsman with titles in the Julich estate records such as blacksmith/sharpener, machinist, armsman (weaponry), vintner (winemaker) and pleader. A pleader was a literate person who served as a representative for villages or tenant families in dealings with the Duchy over property, harvest or livestock disputes, and taxation issues (i.e., pleading the village's case before the Count or a judicial court). Pleaders also developed contracts, invoices, receipts and deeds for the village leaders who likely were illiterate. The Schenck family's rise in social standing culminated with the appointment of two consecutive family members to the prized Pincerna Noster position within the Julich Duchy.

The first was **Christianhus Schenck van Nydeggan** (1197-1246), (also listed as Christianhus Pincerna in duchy records) and the second was his son, **Wihelmus Christianhus Schenck van Nydeggan** (1218-1292)**.** Christianhus was appointed as Pincerna Noster in 1246 and served less than a year before his death in the same year. We know little about his life, other than he previously worked as the platzwart (groundskeeper) for the Julich vineyards, which were said to be among the largest in Germany at that time. His son, Wihelmus Christianhus, was appointed to the role in 1247 and appears to have served as Pincerna Noster longer than usual, at least eight years, suggesting successful performance and a good relationship with the Count. Of course, Christianhus and Wihelmus already used Schenck as a surname, possibly a linkage to Ashkenazi heritage and/or an occupational role in Silesia, so maybe the Count (William Julich IV; 1210-1278) concluded that they had Pincerna skills in their blood. Given Wihelmus's long tenure, it appears that the Count was correct.

Even before Christianhus Schenck van Nydeggan was appointed Pincerna Noster, the family had sufficient resources to start buying property of their own. Julich records of deeds and transactions indicate that the Schenck van Nydeggans acquired more than 10 estates (typically a residence with farm, pasture or game lands) within and adjacent to the Julich Duchy. In 1255, at the close of Wihelmus Christianhus' tenure as Pincerna Noster, the Count of Julich awarded him a title, which was Lord of Blyenbeck and Afferden, representing the areas within the Duchy where the family owned the bulk of their property. In exchange for this title, the family also gained the privilege of paying dramatically higher taxes and supplying soldiers and equipment in times of conflict. The papers that document the conferral of this title directly identified the names of the new Lord, **Wihelmus Christianhus Schenck van Nydeggan,** and his wife, **Mechtildis Schenck van Nydeggan** (1220 – 1278). As far as I can determine, this is the first time that specific members of the family were identified by full name in a public record. *(House of Julich. Wikipedia. www.wikipedia.org. Accessed: December 3, 2022)*

Wihelmus Christianhus apparently was a good businessman, and made the Schenck Van Nydeggan estates profitable, which pleased the Count (more taxes). After serving as the

Pincerna Noster, Wihelmus appears to have become a court favorite and chief advisor to the Count. However, for unknown reasons, in 1279, Wihelmus sold virtually all of his property to the Electorate of Cologne, a principality of the Holy Roman Empire (HRE), which functioned as the political, financial and military arm of the Church of Cologne led by an Archbishop who was also one of the most powerful princes in the HRE. *(de Quetteville H. History of Cologne. The Catholic Encyclopedia. November 28, 2009. www.catholic.com/encyclopedia. Accessed: December 3, 2022)* The Electorate allowed the Archbishop to wield both theological and feudal power. Previous Schenck family historians conjectured that Wihelmus was heart-broken over the recent death of his wife, Mechtildis, who was said to be quite devout, and sold the properties to the Church in her honor, or he may have owed considerable money to the Electorate of Cologne, which also served as a medieval investment banker. Whatever the reason, the sale highly displeased the Count of Julich, who was engaged in a long-standing political struggle with the Electorate of Cologne. Wihelmus and the family soon became persona non-gratis, leading his descendants to scramble toward a new financial model – entrepreneurship, a new homeland and a new name.

The next several Schenck Van Nydeggan generations retained small portions of the family's pre 1279 property holdings, but crops were increasingly unproductive, failing to produce revenue to keep up with taxes, further displeasing the Count. In 1376, Hendrick Schenck van Nydeggan, the great grandson of Wihelmus, married Aleide van Rayde from a successful mercantile family in Holland, who was wealthy in her own right, owning several properties and a castle at Waldeck. Hendrick and Aleide modified their surname to van Nydeck (combining Nydeggan and Waldeck), possibly to sound more Dutch or maybe to create a more catchy business name.

Under the name Nydeck, the couple found success with a business that renovated old castles and designed manor houses – the country residential estates that began to replace stone and mortar fortress castles. In the 1400s, Hendrick Schenck van Nydeck's son and grandson added Hendrikse (possibly to indicate son of Hendrick, but perhaps for other reasons) to their name (Henry Hendrikse Schenck van Nydeck). In following generations, Schenck and van Nydeck were slowly dropped in favor of the surnames Hendrikse, Hendriksz or Hendrikzoon (depending on personal preference), which served as the primary surnames for family members who enjoyed successful in business, the military, exploration and cartography over the next 200 years.

Two brothers led especially notable lives during the Netherlands phase of the Hendricson family history: **Maarten Schenck Van Nydeggan Hendriksz** (1539-1589), and **Lambert Barentse Hendriksz** (1549 – 1625). Maarten and Lambert were actually half-brothers (same father, different mothers), and had high levels of public notoriety for different reasons. The brothers also had different approaches to formulation of their name.

=======

Notes on Dutch Surnames in the 16th Century: In a period of considerable flexibility and experimentation with surnames, Maarteen and Lambert occasionally used, or were referred to by others as "Hendrikzoon", another form of "son of Hendrick". For reasons that will soon become apparent, Maarten preferred to retain the ancestral Schenck van Nydeggan, whereas Lambert did not. Surnames unrelated to occupation or habitation were a new concept in England and Europe in the 16th century. It was considered stylish and modern among people

with status to develop unique surnames with personal meaning, while the less affluent (i.e., craftsmen and laborers) continued to use occupation and/or residence as a basis for a surname. (*Patrick H. Dictionary of Family Names. Volume 2. London & Oxford: University Press. 2003)*

=======

Maarten Schenck van Nydeggan Hendriksz

Maarten was the illegitimate son of Barent Hendriksz (1519-1571) who was also Lambert's father. Maarten was born near the family's ancestral home in Nydeggan, Germany. Maarten's mother, Anna van Beslaer, brought him to Nijmegan in the Netherlands when he was two years old, and shortly thereafter married Dederick Hendriksz, who was a cousin of Barent Hendriksz. After Anna and Dederick started to have children of their own, Maarten appears to have become inconvenient. When he was 12, his mother and stepfather essentially paid the mercenary knight Christoffel van IJsselstein (1521-1593), to take Maarten off their hands. *(van der Broek, 2016; citation below)*

For the next 10 years, Maarten functioned as a page, assisting the knight in tournaments of military skills (archery, swordplay, horseback riding, and the new skill of pistol shooting) and supporting him in military campaigns throughout Europe. Mercenary knights contracted with nobles and local governments to represent them at tournaments, provide security and function as soldiers during hostilities. When he was 22, van Ysselstein arranged for Maarten to join the army of William of Orange, the leader of the Dutch revolt against the Spanish rulers of the Netherlands in the late 1500s, known as the 80 Years War (War of Dutch Independence). Maarten led a unit of 20 men who undertook sabotage missions behind enemy lines and conducted commando operations at sea in small boats to sink Spanish gunships. Maarten apparently was an incessant braggart and not well liked by his Dutch military colleagues, who, he claimed, blocked his promotion to a higher rank. During his tenure with the commando unit, Maarten also swindled a relative out of a castle (the Blyenbeck estate; see page 35). Maarten lost much of his financial assets and prestige when his relatives took the case to the Dutch High Court, and won a settlement, which led to Maarten's eviction from the estate.

Maarten's military career was the topic of Dr. Olga van den Broek's, dissertation, which was later published in The Netherlands. Van den Broek describes her subject as "fearless, cruel, genius and beastly". He was a clever strategist, but never shied away from violence to intimidate foes. (*van den Broek O. Maarten Schenck van Nijdeggen: Career in War Time. Boxmeer, NL: Van Dinter Media. 2016)*

Maarten Schenck van Nydeggan Hendriksz, Dutch soldier of fortune.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 2/11/2023.

Disgruntled, Maarten approached the Spanish for a high level military position, which they granted. For the next 10 years, he served as a general in the Spanish Army of Flanders,

defeating the Dutch in several battles. In 1580, discouraged by a perceived lack of respect from his Spanish superiors, he again switched teams, jumping back to the Dutch army, serving once more as the leader of a commando team. After complaining about low pay, he resigned his position with the Dutch military and formed his own mercenary unit as a private enterprise. His services were in high demand and he led successful military operations all over Europe for many clients, one of which was the Electorate of Cologne, the same organization that received the property of Wihelmus Christianhus Schenck Van Nydeggan three hundred years earlier.

On August 10, 1589, Maarten led a raid to kidnap the leader of a political group in conflict with his current employer, a Dutch ally of English Queen Elizabeth I. In five skiffs, Maarten and 20 commandos floated down the Waal River into Nijmegan; ironically, his hometown, where the rear windows of many of the finest homes were inches from the river edge as shown below.

Homes lining the Waal River in Nijmegan. These centuries-old residencies have been restored over the years. The home that Maarten Schenck van Nydeggan Hendriksz and his commandos tried to enter probably looked like these buildings. *Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 2/14/2023.*

Their plan was to float to the riverside house of the targeted individual, climb through windows to enter the home, grab their prey, jump back into the boats, and make an escape. Heavy rains the day before swelled the river with a strong current that pushed four of the skiffs beyond the designated home. Maarten and the remaining men in his skiff proceeded with the plan anyway. With difficulty due to the swirling current, his band clambered off the boats, climbed up and through the windows into a house where they found a heavily attended wedding party in full swing: musicians, dancing, a 16th century version of an open bar, and dozens of people celebrating. While fighting the current, Maarten tied up to the wrong house!

Surprisingly, the wedding guests rushed to repel Maarten and his men, and an alarm was sounded to alert the local militia who soon arrived. In the ensuing chaos, Maarten dove through a window to escape, missed the skiff below and landed in the river. The rapid current was too much for him and he drowned. His body was retrieved downstream the next day. It was decapitated and quartered. The head was presented to the bride and groom who placed it on a spike in front of their house. The Nijmegan mayor came by a week later to retrieve the head, which he hung from the front gate of the walled section of the city. Several weeks later, Maarten's remains were assembled into an elegant coffin purchased by his wife Maria Van Geire, and a funeral service, "with friends, neighbors and colleagues in admiration', was held at St. Stephen's Church in Nijmegan. Apparently, the citizens of Nijmegan forgave quickly.

An embellished depiction of the drowning of Maarten Schenck van Nydeggan Hendriksz. *Image Source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 2/11/2023.*

Lambert Barentse Hendriksz (Hendrikzoon)

Lambert Barentse Hendriksz was Maarten's younger brother by a different mother. Unlike Maarten, Lambert was born in the Netherlands in the town of Brielle, experienced a traditional childhood in a stable home, and was happy to include reference to his father, Barentse, in his name, whereas Maarteen, for obvious reasons, was not. It is not known if Lambert ever met Maarten. It seems likely they would have met considering that they had the same father who lived until the siblings were adults, and they both pursued military careers in roughly the same time frame. Yet, no evidence of their interaction was found. Lambert attended a Dutch naval academy and served as a cadet/apprentice on commercial (East Indies Company) and military ships. His travels included Ireland, Iceland and the North Atlantic, the Mediterranean, east and west coasts of Africa, and islands in the Indian Ocean. After receiving an appointment to the regular Dutch Navy, Lambert slowly moved upward through officer ranks over a long active duty career, ultimately becoming the Rotterdam harbormaster and then naval commander for the principle Dutch fleet that was stationed at Rotterdam.

In recognition of his burly physique, rugged features, and "general lack of handsomeness" as one of naval colleagues noted, his ironic nickname in the navy became "Mooy Lambert" (Lambert the Beautiful). At the height of his fame, he was commonly referred to by that name in the Netherlands. When researching his life, it was noted that several historians used Mooy Lambert as if it was his actual name.

Lambert Barentse Hendriksz (Hendrikzoon), often referred to as Mooy Lambert, was one of Holland's greatest naval heroes. *Lawrence C. Origins of the Cult and Iconography of Dutch Naval Heroes. Netherlands Quarterly of the History of Art. 1992; 21(4): 265-295.*

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 2/13/2023.

Although the Rotterdam fleet was a main focus of Lambert's career, his notoriety primarily comes from his actions away from Rotterdam. He first rose to public awareness at the naval Battle of Dunkirk in 1605 when he led a Dutch fleet that defeated a much larger pirate fleet composed of a coalition of Irish privateers, Dutch dissidents, and the Dunkirk Corsairs, who

were state-sponsored French pirates. The pirate fleet had raided coastal towns in England, France and the Netherlands and disrupted shipping in the English Channel for 10 years before Mooy Lambert destroyed much of the fleet and captured the commander of the pirate confederation, Adriaan Dirksen. After Dunkirk, Lambert became an anti-pirate specialist for the Netherlands in the English Channel and later in the Mediterranean.

In 1607, Lambert served as Vice Admiral and ship commander during a surprise Dutch attack on the principle Spanish fleet in the Bay of Gibraltar. After blocking the narrow outlet of the bay with six ships to prevent Spanish escape, the Dutch commander, Jacob van Heemskerk, attacked straight into the Spanish fleet with 20 ships. In the first exchange of fire from both sides, a Spanish cannonball tore through Heemskerk's right leg, severing it, and he bled to death in the first minutes of the battle. Mooy Lambert took command of the Dutch forces on his ship, *de Tygre,* and focused the attack on the three largest Spanish galleons, which all exploded and sank when powder magazines were hit. Demoralized, Spanish officers and crews fled ten other large galleons and 15 smaller gunships, which were quickly sunk. Eight other galleons and corsairs under construction were also destroyed. The battle resulted in the complete destruction of Spain's primary fleet. The Dutch victory led to the Twelve Years Truce between Spain and the Netherlands, and Spanish recognition of the legitimacy of the Dutch Republic that was formalized in a treaty known as the Peace of Munchen.

From 1615-1623, Mooy Lambert commanded the Dutch Fleet of the Mediterranean District to protect merchant shipping from the Barbary Pirates based in Tunisia and the Algerian Corsairs. In a major, multiple day battle in 1618, Mooy Lambert's fleet defeated a combined Barbary-Algerian Fleet, destroyed their primary harbor, and freed several hundred Dutch hostages.

Lambert Hendriksz is the father of the North American explorer Cornelius Lambert Hendriksz (Hendrickson). Lambert's grave can be visited at the Saint Laurens Church in Rotterdam. A naval museum nearby has a collection of Mooy Lambert artifacts including a model of *de Tygre.*

=======

Notes on the 80 Years War (Dutch War of Independence): From 1278 through 1740, the monarchy known as House of Habsburg, based in Austria, was the most powerful political, economic and military entity in Europe. For example, all of the Kings of the Holy Roman Empire from 1440-1740 were Habsburgs. Through a combination of marriage, political maneuvering, financial mergers, and warfare, members of the Habsburg royal line, and their entourage of administrators, ruled a number of European nations including Spain in the 16th century. Holland did not exist as a distinct nation at this point in history. Instead it was a loosely affiliated group of 17 provinces, called the Low Countries, including Holland, present day Belgium, Luxemburg and parts of Germany and France. Throughout the medieval period, these provinces were ruled by a variety of German duchies or French provinces.

Stimulated by the Protestant Reformation spreading through Europe in the early 1500s, seven provinces that comprise what we today know as The Netherlands, broke away from the other Low Country provinces that were less enamored by the Reformation. Shortly after, the seven provinces came under the rule of the Spanish Habsburgs via marriage when a daughter of Isabella and Ferdinand of Spain (sponsors of Christopher Columbus) married a Dutch Duke. The Catholic Church urged the Spanish monarchs to suppress the Reformation Movement in the

newly acquired Dutch territory. A harsh Spanish Governor was sent to the Dutch provinces with a military force, known as the Army of Flanders, and violence quickly ensued, provoking a Dutch separatist movement, leading to a sequence of Dutch revolts and Spanish reprisals.

By 1568, the Dutch separatists, with external help from England and non-Catholic groups in France, organized a formidable army and a naval force that was smaller than the Spanish fleet but better managed. Fighting raged on and off, with several multi-year lulls until 1648 when the Peace of Munster formally recognized the seven provinces as the Dutch Republic. Spain and the Habsburgs retained the other 10 Low Country provinces, known as the Catholic Netherlands. During the 80 Years War, the Dutch East and West Indies Companies thrived. The Companies honored their contracts with Habsburgs by annually distributing a share of their profits to the Spanish monarchy in spite of the conflict. War and business do make strange bedfellows. (*Hart M. The Dutch Wars of Independence. Warfare and Commerce in the Netherlands, 1570-1680. New York: Routledge. 2014*)

=======

First Family Member to Immigrate to North America

Hendrick Willemz Hendrickson (1636-1706), grandson of Dutch explorer Cornelius Lambert Hendrickson, (1572-1650) was the first member of our family to immigrate and live permanently in the New World. He arrived in New Amsterdam (present day Manhattan and Brooklyn) in 1663 on board the ship *Rooseboom* (Rosetree), with 18 families (76 adults and children), one other single man and two single women.

A sketch of the *Rooseboom*, a 17th century Dutch ship known as a "Fluyt," which refers to a contract-for-hire vessel. The Dutch Naval Admiralty in the 17th century required sketches and specification books for all vessels built by merchants including the Dutch East and West Indies Companies in effort to monitor the nation's losses due to piracy. *Unger RW. Dutch Shipbuilding in the Golden Age. History Today. 1981; 34(1): 29-46.*

Image source: University of South Florida Educational Technology Clearinghouse. www.etc.usf.edu. Accessed: 2/17/2023.

Hendrick became embroiled in the affairs of the Dutch colony, including an investigation of black market beaver pelt smuggling, and the transfer of the colony to the English. The story of Hendrick Hendrickson's early years in North America, focusing on the fall of New Amsterdam to the British and the Hudson Valley beaver pelt industry is told in Chapter IV.

Although Hendrick Hendrickson was the first person in the line to establish permanent residence in North American (he lived the last 43 years of his life in New York and New Jersey), his grandfather **Cornelius Lambert Hendrickson** lived onboard ships and camped on shorelines of Long Island, New England, New Jersey, Delaware and Pennsylvania from 1611 to 1616 as he mapped these regions for the Dutch West Indies Company. He is recognized as the first European to enter Pennsylvania, and is considered one of the most important early explorers of

North America. The story of Cornelius Hendrickson's travels in North America appears In the Chapter IV.

=======

Notes on 17th Century Transatlantic Travel to New Amsterdam: Hendrickson's one-way adult transatlantic ticket on the *Rooseboom* cost 36 Dutch guilder, equivalent to $2160 in 2020. Children over three years traveled half-price at 18 guilder ($1080), infants traveled free, and married couples received a reduced rate of 25 guilder each, or 50 guilder total ($3000). Adding up these fees, a Rotterdam to New Amsterdam trip for a family of two adults and two children cost $5160 in present day dollars. For point of reference, the annual income of pastors, attorneys and physician / surgeons in 17th century Netherlands was roughly 600 guilder ($36,000), skilled tradesmen (guild craftsmen) averaged 500 guilder ($30,000), and outdoor laborers earned approximately 300 guilder ($18,000). In contrast, high-level military leaders were paid 1,200-1,500 guilder ($72,000-$90,000) annually. Thus, travel to North American was not out of the economic reach of the upper level of professions in the Netherlands, and even a moderate-income family likely could scrimp and save for several years to generate the funds required to transport the family across the Atlantic. Actually, New Amsterdam was eager to have laborers immigrate to the colony to build the houses, churches and other community facilities needed to accommodate the influx of new residents arriving every month. The colony provided financial subsidies and housing to low income laborers as an incentive. *(Reden C. How Transatlantic History Shaped the World as We Know It: The Transatlantic Crossing. www.royalcaribbean.com. April 25, 2022. Accessed May 17, 2024)*

Passengers were required to bring their own bedding, two changes of clothing, eating utensils, personal hygiene supplies, and there were tight limits on the amount of baggage stored in the hold. No first class accommodations existed on the *Rooseboom* or any of the passenger ships sailing the North Atlantic. Everyone traveled in open bays one or two levels below deck, lying on the floor or on racks hung on the inside of hulls. Passengers were allowed topside only a couple of hours per day at scheduled times to minimize deck crowding. Two meals a day of meager rations were provided. Communicable and hygiene-related illnesses were rampant by the end of the journey. On the return trip to the Netherlands, the ship was loading with beaver pelts, lumber, mail from colonists, government officials and occasionally, private passengers disgruntled with life in the colony.

Between 1630-1667, at least one passenger ship like the *Rooseboom* departed a Netherland port each month with 70-100 passengers and at least one ship returned east with cargo for European markets. The passage routes became sufficiently routine that inbound and outbound ships sometimes rendezvoused mid-journey to exchange news about the colony or back home in the Netherlands, balance out provisions and even exchange passengers who changed their minds about their destination. (*Dobson D. Transatlantic Voyages, 1600-1699. Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co. 2009; Jacobs J. New Netherland: A Dutch Colony in Seventeenth Century America. Leiden: Brill Academic Publishers. 2005)*

=======

Sources for the Evolution of the Hendricson Family Through the 17th Century

In addition to research conducted for this book and Harold and Mildred Hendricson's genealogy notebook, the sources on the flowing pages were consulted to document family history. In

some instances, my interpretation differed from these earlier accounts based on information that was not available to prior historians., or my own differing interpretation of events. Sources are listed chronologically based on the publication date. Two family historians have the same initials: AD Schenck. One is Augustus Schenck and the other is Alexander Schenck. They apparently did not know each other personally, but Alexander Schenck indicated that he had read the 1843 family history written by Augustus Schenck.

Schenck AD. (Augustus) The Rev. William Schenck: His Ancestry and His Descendants. Washington DC: Rufus Darby Publisher. Originally published in 1843 with updates in 1869 and 1883. Re-released by Higginson Book Company (www.higginson.com) in 2015 and also available at Google Books. (www.books.google.com) Accessed: December 3, 2022.

Schenck AD. (Alexander) The Blyenbeck and Afferden Branch of the Family of Schenck van Nydeck From the Family of Schenck van Nydeggen. Original: Cologne, Germany. 1860. [Printer unknown]. Accessed from Internet Archive (www.archive.org) on May 17, 2024.

Ferber H. History of the Family of Schenck van Nydeggan, 1225-1860, in particular of the Warlord Martin Schenck van Nydeggan with Historical Information Regarding Afferden, Blyenbeck and Other Estates. Cologne, Germany: Neuss Printing. 1860. English Translation by Marijke T. Neuberger. Baltimore: Gateway Press. 1987. Accessed: December 3, 2022 via Google Books. www.books.google.com.

van der Dussen WFGL (Willem Frederic George Lodewijk). Genealogy of the Old and Very Illustrious Family of Schenck van Nydeck (Nydegge) Beginning with Year 1368. Nijmegan, Netherlands: 256 hand-written pages that were reproduced by the Dutch Genealogical Library of The Hague. 1872. Housed at Brooklyn, NY Museum Libraries. Special Collections. www.brooklynmuseum.org. Accessed: December 1, 2022.

Schenck AD (Alexander). The Blyenbeck and Afferden Branch of the Family of Schenck Van Nydeck (with additional Information on Roelef Schenck, who came to Long Island in 1650). Hampton, Virginia: Normal School Press and Printing. 1885. Reprinted and re-released by Higginson Book Company (www.higginson.com) in 2017 and also available at the WorldCat Digital Library Catalog. www.searchworldcat.org. Accessed: January 8, 2023.

Salter E, Beekman GC. Old Times in Old Monmouth. Historical Reminiscences of Old Monmouth county, New Jersey. Originally self-published in 1887. Digitized by Forgotten Books in 2018. Accessed via Internet Archive (www.archives.org) on June 7, 2024.

Schenck BR. The Ancestors and Descendants of Rulef Schenck, A Genealogy of the Onondaga County New York Branch of the Schenck Family. From records and notes complied by A.A. Schenck. Detroit, Michigan. 1911. Available via wikitree (www.wikitree.com) site for Christianhus Schenck, aka Pincerna de Nideke (Nydeggan in medieval Dutch). Accessed: January 9, 2023.

Beekman GC. Early Dutch Settlers of Monmouth County, New Jersey. Freehold, NJ: Moreau Printing. 1915. Available via Internet Archive (www.archive.org). Accessed: January 7, 2023.

Sinclair DA and Stakes AL. Hendrickson Genealogy in Monmouth County, New Jersey. Boston: New England Historic and Genealogical Society (www.americanancestors.org). 1936. Available via www.americanancestors.com. Accessed: January 9, 2023.

McConnell M. Hendricksons of New York, New Jersey and Pennsylvania. Dealing with the Background, Family and Descendants of William Hendrickson (Wilm Hendriksz). Microfilm produced by Bell and Howell Labs in Wooster, Ohio. 1972. Available from FamilySearch genealogical website. www.familysearch.org. Accessed: January 8, 2023.

Hoff HB. Two Dutch Families Reinterpreted: Origins of the Hendrickson Family of Monmouth County, New Jersey. New York Genealogical and Biographical Record (NYG&B). Volume 106. New York: New York Genealogical and Biographical Society. 1975. NYG&B issues available via www.familysearch.org. Accessed: January 4, 2023.

Hendricks and Hendrickson Dutch Heritage Association (www.hhdha.org). History of the Hendrickson Family. 2017. Accessed: December 1, 2022.

Morgan

Reminder - Morgan / Hendricson Connection

After members of both families immigrated to North America, the Morgans and Hendricsons paralleled each other in their westward movement through New Jersey, Delaware, West Virginia, Kentucky, the Northwest Territory and Oregon. Through the generations, there were extensive interactions among members of these families and at least six marriages, leading to other Hendricson-Morgan family lines in New Jersey, Illinois, Ohio, Wisconsin and Minnesota. The sixth marriage was pivotal in advancing the story toward the union of Susan and Bill Hendricson. I would not be writing this history if a member of the Morgan family had not made a fateful decision in 1851 that ultimately led to the sixth Morgan-Hendricson marriage.

In the spring of 1851 at age 56, **Drusilla Morgan Price** (1795-1870), was pondering the opportunity to join a wagon train composed of more than 80 Morgan family members that was being organized in Danville, Illinois. Drusilla was in a tough situation. She had been widowed four times overall and twice within the past three years. Her third and fourth deceased husbands both had left her with substantial debts. She was attempting to manage a failing farm that was not capable of supporting the numerous adult sons and daughters, spouses and grandchildren residing with her. The destination of the wagon train was Oregon more than 2,000 miles to the west, where the territorial government was offering land donations of 320 acres as settlement enticement to family units and widows. Other members of the Morgan entourage at her farm were eager to attempt the journey but could not afford it on their own. Wagon train participation criteria required a head of household for each traveling family who would be financially responsible for the initial reservation fee, repairs or extra supplies during the trip and settling up any debts upon arrival in Oregon.

Drusilla Morgan Price, at approximately age 65 in an 1860 Photo taken in Albany, Oregon nine years after leading a band of 13 Morgans to the Willamette Valley from Illinois.

Although prospects in Danville were grim, a five-month journey across the continent, walking the entire way, to an unknown future in far-off Oregon was not an attractive alternative. The deadline was fast approaching for acquiring the covered wagon, oxen, other livestock, equipment, food and supplies that were required in order to join the wagon train. When Drusilla decided that she could not afford the trip to Oregon, her 19-year old daughter, Amanda Morgan, recently jilted by a fiancé and hoping for a new start, launched what must have been an impressive campaign to change her mind. After two days of debate with the fiery Amanda, Drusilla approached the wagon master and paid the holding fee to reserve a spot in the Morgan

wagon train for her family. She was informed she had two months to get organized. Drusilla hired a broker to sell her farm, used the proceeds to prepare for the trip, and headed west. Traveling with Drusilla were her brother Nathan, also a widower, eldest daughter Mary (Polly) with her husband Martin Price, grandson Nimrod with his two children, teenage daughter Amanda, three of Drusilla's other adult children, and a niece and her husband. The Morgan wagon train reached Oregon in the fall of 1851. All members of the Drusilla's group survived the trip.

Soon after arriving in Oregon, Amanda Morgan met a young man, David Rideout, who also came to Oregon seeking a fresh start after failing at several enterprises in Maine, Massachusetts and California. They married in 1852 and their third child, Mary Eleanor (Ella) Morgan Rideout was born in 1856. In 1880, Ella married a young sheriff from Colfax, Washington with the unlikely name of **Omar Pasha (OP) Hendricson** (1854-1913), who was my great-grandfather. OP was named after a Turkish general who gained notoriety during the Crimean War.

Origin and Evolution of Surname

The Morgan surname is of Welsh and Celtic origin. The name evolved from the Old Welsh and Celtic word Morcant, which had meanings related to oceans: of the sea, sea chief, sea captain, and sailor. Use of the surname Morgan has been extremely common throughout the history of Wales. The 1811 census of England and Wales found that more than 25% of Welsh property owners went by Morgan or derivatives (Morgen, Morgane, Morghan, Morghann, Morghyn).

Morgan is one of the oldest Welsh names on record, stretching back to the legends of King Arthur, who, according to Malory's 15th century novel *Le Morte d' Arthur,* was based in Wales near present day Cardiff in the 4th or 5th centuries. In Malory's telling of the Arthurian saga, Arthur was defeated in a battle, and fearing for the safety of his wife, Guinevere, secretly moved her to the safety of a secluded coastal town in Wales. Arthur's youngest son was born in this hide-away and was named Morgan – "he who came from the sea". The name of Glamorganshire (Glamorgan County) in Wales is derived from this tale. The oldest village in Glamorganshire is Caerfyrddin, which dates back to the 2th century, and still exists today. It is mentioned in *Le Morte d' Arthur* as the secluded hide-away and is considered to be the hometown of the earliest Morgan ancestors. The Morgans were members of a tribe that the Romans called *Demetae* (Latin: wealth from sheep). It is generally thought that Arthurian sagas were inspired by the efforts of the Demetae to drive the Romans from Wales. The people of Cornwall in the southwest corner of England have a different Arthurian saga, featuring the sorcerer Merlin, as will be seen later in this family history. *(Vinaver E. The Works of Sir Thomas Malory. Oxford University Press. 1990. Johnson B. Camelot, Court of King Arthur. www.historic-uk.com. The History and Heritage Accommodation. June 21. 2015. Accessed: May 7, 2023)*

Geographic Origin

The individual who is recognized as the first leader of the geographic entity known as Wales was Morgan Mwyn Fawr who lived in the 700s. He was nicknamed Morgan the Generous for his civil treatment of enemy tribes he defeated in battle. The area of Wales where he lived was known as Morganwg and is the modern day Glamorgan County, which includes Cardiff, the

most prominent city in Wales. Virtually all of the pre-immigration Morgan ancestors were born in the village of **Llandaff**, now a district within Cardiff, or a nearby estate known as **Tredegar**.

England, Scotland and Ireland with Wales highlighted in red. Cardiff/Llandaff is at southeastern corner of Wales.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 5/8/2023.

At the time of the Norman Conquest in 1066, the leaders of the now civilized Demetae tribe was Cadivor-Fawr Morgaine (1030-1091) and his wife Elan Llawen (dates unknown). Cadivor-Fawr was a farmer and the Mayor of his village, which unlike other villages, was cooperative with the invading Normans. The Normans rewarded Cadivor-Fawr with a large track of land in Glamorganshire, which they converted into a successful agricultural and coal mining operation.

The evolution of the Cadivor-Fawr Morgaine/Elan Llawen household into the Morgan family is documented in family histories written in 1938, 1950 and 1966. These Morgan histories relied considerably on information available in the *Book of Llandaff* (see page 58). These Morgan histories describe ten marriages between 1081 when Cadivor-Fawr and Elan's son Bleddri was married, through the year 1323 when a Llewelyn Morgaine of Kilsaint, a many generations distant great grandson, married Anghard Morgan, the daughter of the lord (owner) of a country manor known as Tredegar, in the neighboring county of Monmouthshire. Llewelyn and Anghard elected to use Morgan as their surname, perhaps because Anghard was the financial heavyweight in the relationship; her dad owned the estate. The important point for our family genealogy is that from 1323 forward, the line of Morgans that included Hendricson-linked family members that immigrated to North American, was known as the **Tredegar Morgans**. The original Tredegar House, built around 1300, still exists. A village, also known as Tredegar, developed near the estate, comprised of families that leased tracts of land for farming.

Tredegar house in Monmouthshire, Wales was constructed in the 1300s, and expanded in the 16th, 18th and 20th centuries. *Newman J. Buildings of Wales: Gwent and Monmouthshire. London: Penguin Books. 2000.*

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 7/16/2024.

First Appearance of Surname in Public Records

A great-great grandson of Llewelyn and Anghard Morgan by the name of **Jevan Evan Morgan** (1405-1448) was the first family member to formally use the surname Morgan in a marriage

certificate, a property deed, and a will. Jevan married Denise Thomas (1404-1464) in 1429. She was identified as Denise Thomas Morgan on their marriage certificate.

Synopsis of Pre-immigration History

Throughout their pre-immigration history, the Morgans of Tredegar were landed gentry, not nobility, although a few family figures were knighted for deeds in service of the crown, or for being a close friend of the King. In the 300 years from Llewelyn and Anghard's marriage in 1323 to when the first Morgans landed in North America, the family's economic basis was diverse including income from agricultural crops, leasing farm land to tenants, leasing pastures for sheep grazing, leasing forest acreage to clubs for hunting, leasing water front property to tenants for fishing lodges, operating mills on rivers flowing through their lands, and coal mining operations. Many Morgans also had professional jobs: attorneys, architects and politicians, and in particular, sheriffs. In medieval Wales, the sheriff was the tax collector for the county, but also had similar duties as a county sheriff today in the U.S.: investigating crimes and complaints, jailing suspected perpetrators and enforcing regulations.

First Morgan Family Member to Immigrate to North America – Sorting Out the Truth

Triggered by the economic chaos of the English Civil War in the 17th century, members of many Morgan lines in Wales, including the Tredegars, fell into hard times, and looked to the New World for a fresh start. Given the proliferation of similar names among the various Morgan lines, it is understandable that prior family historians, including Harold and Mildred Hendricson, encountered difficulty in sorting out, who did what and when. The Tredegar Morgan immigration story that captured the imaginations of several prior family historians involved the arrival of three Morgan brothers, James, Miles and John, in Boston in 1636 on the ship *Mary.*

The three brothers were among the seven legitimate children of a Welsh attorney, Sir Thomas William Morgan (1571-1649), who used William as his first name, perhaps to distinguish himself from his prominent father, Thomas Henry Morgan (see Morgan lineage table, page 57). William Morgan was the King's Attorney for Wales from 1637 until his death in 1649. In addition to his legal prominence, William was a successful merchant, Parliament Member (PM), active participant in London's high society, and a close confident of King Charles I, who knighted him for his legal work in Wales. However, Sir William is best known for numerous extramarital affairs, well chronicled at the time, which produced at least four illegitimate children.

His extracurricular activities were a basis for a popular Oliver Goldsmith play, *She Stoops to Conquer* featuring the immortal line*, "Ask me no questions, and I'll tell you no lies." (Clarke N. Brothers of the Quill: Oliver Goldsmith in Grub Street. Cambridge MA: Harvard University Press. 2016)* One of these child-producing entanglements involved a liaison with Sybil Wayte, a seamstress and also a housekeeper for a PM colleague of Sir William. When Sir William refused to recognize two of Sybil's children as his offspring and thus deserving of Morgan inheritance, Wayte sued him. In an unusual ruling for that era, the court ruled in her favor! Sir William Morgan was ordered to reach a settlement with Wayte that involved a house, a monthly stipend and recognition of the children's' status as members of the Morgan Tredegar family.

In 1636, Sir William sent his three sons to the Virginia colonies to explore business opportunities that might resurrect the families' financial standing, which had been battered by questionable investments. They departed on the *Mary* with intention to return to England the

following year. The *Mary* was one of a flotilla of five ships heading from Bristol, England to the Virginia colonies with each ship carrying approximately 80 passengers, mostly young married couples seeking a better life. The flotilla encountered a North Atlantic hurricane, which sank two of the ships with extensive loss of life, and damaged a third to the extent that it returned to England. The *Mary* was driven off course and ultimately found its way to the coast of Massachusetts, where it was grounded. The fifth ship, the *Sarah*, continued to Virginia. After clamoring off the *Mary* onto a rocky beach, the Morgan brothers made their way to Boston where James and Miles liked what they saw and decided to make a go of it in New England. The third brother, John, was repelled by religious intolerance in Massachusetts and went to Virginia to pursue his father's goal of North American business development.

James Morgan (1607-1685), who was an attorney, ultimately moved to the area of Groton and New London, Connecticut, where he was instrumental in the development of both communities. He was appointed as the first commissioner of New London and supervised the planning and construction of the city. He played the same roles for Groton, where he also served as mayor, city council member and city attorney for many years. James bought land throughout Connecticut, typically 800-acre parcels, and sold it to developers who desired to create other towns. One of these towns was Wallingford, Connecticut. James served on a committee that established the framework of the original colonial government in Connecticut, known as *The Fundamental Orders of Connecticut*, and was chair of one of the Colonial Assemblies in the formative years of the Colony.

Miles Morgan (1616-1699) relocated to western Massachusetts, where he was instrumental in establishing Springfield and played a key role in the defense of the town during Prince Philips' war, a Native American uprising that led to the deaths of 25% of New England colonists and a higher percentage of the region's Native Peoples. A statue of Miles Morgan stands in the historic district of Springfield. Neither James nor Miles ever returned to England. Their brother John did not either. He married in Virginia and established a Morgan line in the southern colonies that produced notable descendants including Daniel Morgan, the Revolutionary War General, who defeated the British in important battles including Saratoga in New York and Cowpens in North Carolina.

This is quite an illustrious group of Morgan first immigrants, all born in Wales. But, alas, it is, for the most part, **NOT** the Morgan line most directly connected with our Hendricson family. There are undoubtedly many U.S. families who can claim the philandering Sir William Morgan, the three Morgan Brothers of the *Mary*, and the heroic General Daniel Morgan as ancestors. However, Sir William and his sons are not the Morgan Tredegar line that contributed to our family history. Close, but not quite. As indicated in the Morgan lineage (generations 4-8, pages 57-58), the genealogical challenge is the fact that there were two brothers born to Thomas Henry Morgan and Elizabeth Bodenham: Henry William Morgan (1567-1653) and Thomas William Morgan (1571-1649). Both elected to use William as their first name after entering professional life, one in London, and the other in Wales. Thomas William is the illustrious Sir William Morgan. His less well-known brother, Henry William, is the actual link.

The first family member related to the Hendricson-Lienau line to immigrate to North America, and survive (see note below) was **Morgan Wilm Morgan** (1687-1767) who arrived in the

Delaware Colony in 1713. He was born in Llandaff, Glamorganshire to Charles Morgan (1635-1720), Henry William Morgan's grandson, and Susan Powell Morgan (1646-1697). Charles and Susan farmed Tredegar lands and sold produce at farm to market shops in Tredegar village, Llandaff and Cardiff. Their agricultural work was not as glamorous as other Tredegar Morgans, but it was sufficient to ensure that their son Morgan was well educated. He graduated from Cambridge, attained legal training by apprenticeship with a senior London barrister, and also was an ordained clergymen of the Church of England, all by age 26. I do not know why Morgan Morgan elected to immigrate to North America. There are ruminations in prior Morgan histories that he was sent to Delaware as a Crown Council (i.e., attorney representing the royal court) to investigate financial mismanagement in the colony. The story of Morgan Morgan's life in the colonies and his role in the establishment of West Virginia appears in Chapter IV.

In addition to being Morgan Morgan's father, Charles Morgan also was the twin brother of the legendary pirate of the Caribbean **Captain Henry Morgan** (1635-1688). Why Henry turned to piracy is open to speculation. It has been conjectured that the social upheaval of the English Civil War, which occurred when he was a teenager, may have been a catalyst. In spite of his baby-faced appearance and preference for flamboyant apparel, Henry Morgan was ruthless as he prowled the Caribbean for 25 years from his base at Port Royal, Jamaica. Henry was knighted for his disruption of Spanish and Dutch shipping, and for destroying Caribbean seaports that traded with Spain and Holland. His pirating made him wealthy, allowed him to build a huge privateer fleet, and to acquire vast property in Jamaica. Henry retired to life as a sugar plantation owner and politician in Jamaica, eventually serving as governor, one of the few Caribbean pirates who outlived his profession.

This portrait of Captain Henry Morgan was produced in 1681. He believed that his exotic wardrobes, which he wore during naval battles, made him fearful to the staid Dutch and the Catholic Spanish. *Thomas GA. The Pirate King: The Incredible Story of the Real Captain Morgan. New York: Skyhorse Publishing. 2021.*

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 7/20/2024.

=======

Notes on the First Morgan Immigration to North America: Some historians contend that another **Miles Morgan** (1536-1578; born 80 years before the Miles Morgan associated with Springfield, MA), who was a brother of Thomas Henry Morgan, was actually the first Morgan to reach North America. Miles was among a group of investors intent on colonization, which included the privateers and explorers Walter Raleigh, Humphrey Gilbert (Raleigh's half-brother) and Richard Grenville, as well as Henry Knollys, London's leading financier of that era, and Queen Elizabeth herself. This group combined efforts to raise funds and assemble a fleet to explore sites for a colony on the outer banks of North Carolina. Among this impressive group, Miles was the least among equals, more noted for his sibling connection to the respected Thomas Henry Morgan and the Tredegar Morgan estate, than for his accomplishments. Up to this point, Miles was mainly known for his active engagement in London social life, although he

was considered a worthy seaman, and he owned a 110 ton ship, a major plus in the eyes of the other investors.

Gilbert, the senior seaman in the group, led a flotilla of seven ships that set sail in November 1578 from Plymouth to scout for colony sites. Miles Morgan captained his ship, *Red Lion of Newport*, with a crew of 48 men and the investor Knollys who traveled with his own entourage of five militia, in case of *"engagement with hostiles upon landfall."* One of the other ships, the *Ann Ager*, was captained by Raleigh, and Gilbert captained the flagship *Falcon*, contributed by the Queen. Grenville and three of his most experienced captains helmed the other four ships. Early in the voyage, Miles ran afoul of Knollys who felt that Miles had deceived him about the profits to be accrued from the colony. Insult led to insult, culminating with Miles flattening Knollys with a punch to the head. Knollys had his personal militia arrest Miles and chained him to the hull below deck. A crewmen on the *Red Lion* signaled Gilbert's ship about the altercation. Gilbert hustled over in the *Falcon* to stop the dispute, promised Knollys a more substantial cut of any profits, and transferred the irascible investor to the *Falcon.*

Six weeks out, storms enveloped the fleet, damaging several, and causing all of the ships to return to Plymouth except the *Red Lion*. The last flag signal Gilbert received from Miles Morgan on the *Red Lion* indicated that they were pressing ahead. The *Red Lion* was never seen again. For such occurrences, the 16th century default convention was to assign the disappearance to "storm at sea; ship and crew perished". However, historians searching for evidence pertinent to the fabled Roanoke colony, which occurred subsequently, have found items south of Roanoke Island that may be associated with the Miles Morgan expedition. The most telling of the recovered items are several coins that Miles' printed to commemorate the trip with his motto: *Now or Never*.

A current theory is that Miles and shipmates may have indeed reached North Carolina, lost the *Red Lion* in a mishap as they approached shore or at anchorage, and realizing no rescue was forthcoming, attempted assimilation with the Secotan tribe in the area, which may or may not have been successful. Accounts by Raleigh, Grenville and other investors' involved in the unsuccessful efforts to establish the Roanoke Island Colony 12 years later, describe the Secotan's capacity to communicate in English and their familiarity with Europe. As discussed in a subsequent **Notes On** section on pages 204-206, this was not an uncommon phenomenon for early European colonists. It is unknown if the Secotan tribe's English language skills came from interactions with Miles Morgan and his crew, or from interactions with other English speaking fishermen who may have came ashore on the outer banks of North Carolina. (*O'Brien H. Miles Morgan, Intrepid Explorer from Tredegar House. www.walesonline.com.uk. October 15, 2015. Accessed: February 21, 2023. Gabriel-Powell A. Richard Grenville and the Lost Colony of Roanoke. Jefferson, NC: McFarland Co. 2016)*

Historical Sources for the Morgan Family

To supplement research for this book, these sources were used to track the Morgan family.

Churchman CR. Kentucky Descendants of Colonel Morgan Morgan. Louisville, KY: University of Louisville Library Document Service. 1994. Also available via www.familysearch.org.

Morgan A. A History of the Family of Morgan from the Year 1089 to Present Times. Original Printing: 1902. Digitized by Forgotten Books USA Facsimile Publishing. Available via www.AbeBooks.com. Accessed: January 29, 2023.

Morgan CW. Morgan: History of That Branch of the Morgan Family Beginning With James of New London. Original Printing: 1911. Digitized in 2015 by Higginson Books (www.higginsonbooks.com). Accessed: January 28, 2023.

Morgan FE. A History of the Family of Colonel Morgan Morgan, the First White Settler of the State of West Virginia. Washington DC: McClain Printing. 1950 and 1966. Digitized by the University of Wisconsin – Madison Press. Accessed via www.familysearch.org. on January 30, 2023

Morgan F. Genealogy of the Colonel Morgan Morgan Family. Being a Record of Some of the Descendants of David, Zackquill and Morgan, Sons of Morgan Morgan. Parsons, West Virginia: McClain Printing. 1966.

Morgan NH. A History of James Morgan of New London, CT and his Descendants from 1607 to 1869. Hartford, CT. Self-Published. 1869. Digitized and available via Internet Archive. www.achive.org. Accessed: February 3, 2023.

Morgan Family. Dictionary of Welsh Biography. Aberystwyth: National Library of Wales. 2000.

Maris

Reminder - Maris / Hendricson Connection

In 1911, William Firman Hendricson (1883-1948), the oldest son of Ella Morgan Rideout Hendricson and Omar Pasha Hendricson, married Mabel Julia Maris (1887-1981) in Spokane, Washington. The couple moved to Walla Walla shortly after their marriage. William and Mabel had two children: Yvonne Eleanor Hendricson (1913-1993) and Harold Maris Hendricson (1919-1992) who was my father.

Origin and Evolution of Surname

The Maris surname is of **French origin** from the region of Normandy in northern France. The name appears to have evolved from the French words "Mariess" and "Marais", which were used in medieval times to describe a marshy area of land.

First Appearance of Surname in Public Records

In England after the Norman Invasion, the name Maris appeared in the *Domesday Book Census* of 1086 as **Richard de Maris** in Kent, a county in the southeastern region of England. This individual was a tenet farmer on lands of a nobleman, but apparently had some property of his own because his name appears on recordings of deeds in the County Kent ledger of the Domesday. It is known that many of the invading army of approximately 8,000 Norman soldiers that accompanied William the Conqueror (William I) to England in 1066 settled in Kent after the hostilities concluded. In France, the surname Maris first appeared in Normandy in the 1180 population survey known as the *Magni Rotulli Scaccarii Normaniae sub Regibus Angliae (Great Rolls of the Board of Normandy and the Kings of England)*. In this census, four Maris brothers were identified as Normandy landowners: Ivo, Drogo, Gilbert and Roberto de Maris.

=======

Notes on the Domesday Book (11th century title – "Doomsday"): The Domesday Day Book is Great Britain's earliest public record of towns, population, public and private lands, and names of property and business owners. The survey was commissioned in 1086 by William I (William the Conqueror) for purposes of reforming taxation in England after the Norman Conquest. It is the most complete record of pre-industrial medieval society assembled anywhere in the world, and is remarkable in its level of sophistication and detail. *(Domesday Book Census of 1086 (Great Survey; Liber de Wintona). London: National Archives. 1st published 1783; published online in contemporary English 2011. Archives.gov.uk. Accessed: March 9, 2023)*

Notes on the Magni Rotulli (Great Rolls Survey): This document was a French version of the Domesday Survey, but less sophisticated. However, the Great Rolls Surveys were administered on a regular basis from approximately 1150 to 1833, and thus provide considerable information about the evolution of society in the province of Normandy. (*Stapleton T. Magni Rotuli Scaccarii Normaniae sub Regibus Angliae (Great Rolls of the Board of Normandy and the Kings of England) Volumes I and II. London: Society of Antiquaries. 1841)*

=======

It also has been suggested in genealogy investigations of other Maris lines that many individuals in England with a Maris surname were French Huguenots (French Protestants who adhered to a Calvinist or Reformed Christianity orthodoxy) that moved across the English Channel to escape

government persecution and anti-Protestant violence. As we saw in the Chapter II Maris Lineage Table, the backstory of the first confidently identified Maris in England is consistent with the Huguenot theory.

Geographic Origin

The de Maris brothers and other individuals with the surname Maris were born in a village known as **Le Marais-la-Chapelle in the Calvados Department (i.e., county) of Normandy**, which lies on the coast of the English Channel. The most prominent city in this region is Caen. Consistent with the definition of Mariess and Marais, the area has many salt marshes and soft wetlands near the coastline. Members of the Maris family that immigrated to North America in the 17th century lived in England, suggesting that the migration of Normandy residents to England between the 11th and 16th centuries included individuals with the Maris surname.

=======

Notes on French Huguenots: The name derives from the Swiss politician Besancon Hugues who was Catholic and led persecution of Reform Protestants. So, in other words, Hugue-nots were everything that Hugues was not. French Huguenots were Protestants who believed in a strict interpretation of the Bible, had ambiguous perceptions of free will versus predetermination as per the Calvinist dilemma over these concepts, believed that God only saved those that deserved to be saved, opposed art, music and pageantry in religious services, advocated conservative dress and behavior in public (no provocative attire, dancing, singing, gambling, swearing or drinking), and prohibited the naming of children after Catholic saints and images of Christ on a cross. The Saint Bartholomew's Day Massacre in August 1572, triggered by a Protestant Huguenot wedding in Catholic Paris, was directed by the French royal family. The massacre led to a series of attacks on Huguenot leaders and communities throughout France resulting in 15,000 deaths. (*Diefendorf BB. The St. Bartholomew's Day Massacre: A Brief History with Documents. Bedford: St. Martin's Press. 2008)* Surviving Huguenots either converted to Catholicism or fled France, with many immigrating to England. The massacre reinforced Protestant perceptions in England and elsewhere in Europe that the Catholic Church was murderous and treacherous. (*Cottret B. Huguenots in England. Immigration and Settlement. Cambridge & Paris: Cambridge University Press. 1991)*

A depiction of the St. Bartholomew's Day massacre of a Huguenot wedding party in Paris on August 18, 1572. 400 people were killed by a Catholic mob enabled by the anti-Huguenot policies of the Queen of France, the infamous Catherine de' Medici.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons.
www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 7/23/2024.

=======

Synopsis of Pre-immigration History

The first record I found of a Maris family in England was **Richard Dunwall de Maris** (1568-1641) and wife **Agnes Griffin** (1572-1640). Richard, likely born in France, probably was brought to England as a young child by his parents in the aftermath of the Saint Bartholomew's Day Massacre. Little is known about the lives of Richard and Agnes, but considerable information

exists about their grandson, George Edward Maris Jr. (1632 – 1706), and his wife Alicia Wilsmith (1632-1699). George and Alicia lived in Worcestershire (Worcester County) in central England, just south of Birmingham. They practiced the Quaker faith and were shoemakers. As Quakers, George and Alice experienced persistent harassment from local government officials. George was imprisoned for nine months in 1670 and again in 1674 for failure to show proper deference to representatives of the crown (i.e., failure to "bow and doff the hat in tribute") and was jailed for brief periods several times in the following years for "suspicious means of piety and prayer". After the Worcester County Sheriff imposed penalty taxes on George and Alice's cobbler (shoemaker) shop, claiming it doubled as a "house of pagan worship," George and Alice decided that William Penn's Great Experiment in Freedom (see pages 161-162) across the sea in America offered the prospect of a better life consistent with their Quaker ideals.

=======

Notes on Quaker Beliefs and Practice in 17th Century England: Quakerism emerged around 1650 in England among conservative Protestant groups dissatisfied with the Church of England. Led by George Fox (1624-1691) and his wife, Margaret Fell, followers of this movement, originally named Religious Society of Friends, believed it was desirable for individuals to have a personal Christian experience, based on private conversations with God, without the leadership of ordained clergy who told people what to believe, without ritualized religious services and without a designated worship site, in other words, without a church. The term Quakers evolved from George Fox's concept that people should "tremble at the word of the Lord" (i.e., quake), and not at the word of clergy". It was originally a dismissive nickname used by critics of Fox, but it caught on among the Friends Society. Fox, Fell and their followers, which included William Penn, emphasized an individual's unique interaction with the Christian faith, and perceived that their mission was to restore a pure Christian theology, where individuals could focus on emotional and behavioral purity, and shape their own relationship with God, without pomp, ceremony and elaborate cathedrals. (*Ingle L. First Among Friends. George Fox and the Creation of Quakerism. New York & London: Oxford University Press. 1996)* The movement was popular; there were an estimated 60,000 Quakers in England by 1675. Early Quaker practices which continue to this day include: teetotalism, plain dress, refusal to participate in war, no profanity, silent prayer, not using the words church or cathedral to describe worship sites (because prayer can occur anywhere), opposition to slavery and allowing women to speak during prayer services and to lead such services. Substantial numbers of the Maris, Dennis and Goodman families brought their Quaker faith with them to the New World.

=======

First Family Members to Immigrate to North America

In 1683, **George Edward Maris** and **Alice Welsmith Maris** immigrated to Penn's colony in Pennsylvania with their six children from Bromsgrove, Worcester County, England.

Historical Sources for the Evolution of the Maris Family

I relied on the following source to investigate the evolution of the Maris family.

Maris GL and Pinkerton Maris A. The Maris Family in the U.S. A Record of the Descendants of George and Alice Maris, 1683-1885. West Chester, PA: FS Hickman Printing. 1885. Digitized by HathiTrust and available via www.onlinebooks.library.upenn.edu and Amazon Books. Accessed: February 17, 2023.

Dennis

Reminder - Dennis / Hendricson Connection

In 1916, Archibald (Archie) Dennis (1889-1976) and Maude Odessa Goodman (1895-1979) were married in Walla Walla, Washington. Archie and Maude had two children, Lloyd Neal Dennis (1917-1992) and Mildred Marietta Dennis (1919-2019). Mildred married Harold Maris Hendricson in 1946. Mildred and Harold were the parents of Shirley and I. Archie and Maude were our maternal grandparents.

Origin and Evolution of Surname

The Dennis surname is of **French origin** from the Normandy region in northern France. The name appears to have evolved from the French Le Denys, which was used in medieval times to refer to the residents of Denmark (Danes). This suggests that members of the family originally may have relocated to Normandy from Denmark. This would have not been unusual in Normandy, which was ruled for centuries by Vikings beginning with Rollo Normand, Count of Rouen, in the 10th century, or in England during the Danelaw era where Vikings governed much of the island for 200 years. In France and England, the surname name evolved to Denys or Denis by the 12th century, and by the 16th century, Dennis was commonly used. *(Crouch, D. The Normans: History of a Dynasty. London: Hambledon and London. 2002)*

First Appearance of Surname in Public Records

A **Denis of Normand** appears in the 1180 Normandy population survey, Magni Rotulli Scaccarii Normaniae sub Regibus Angliae, with the notation that this individual had been granted roughly 130 acres of property and a residence in the Cornwall region of England by King William I (William the Conqueror). Cornwall comprises the peninsula jutting into the Atlantic Ocean at the southwestern corner of England. The principle Cornwall city is Plymouth.

The Cornwall region of England is highlighted in red. Wales (Morganshire) and Cornwall have competing Arthurian legends, and each claim castles as the theoretical sites of the saga.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/18/2024.

Geographic Origin of Family

No origin site has been identified for the Dennis family in the Normandy region of France to the best of my knowledge. A previous account of Dennis family genealogy suggested that the small medieval village of Saint Denis de Mere in the Calvados Department (county) of Normandy may be the origin site, but research for this book found no evidence to support this assertion.

The first connection to a specific person of pertinence to this family history is a **Thomas Denis** who obtained permits to repair "un-tended family fields and a manor in much decay" in the village of **Lesnewth** in Cornwall in 1325 (language from tax rolls; see *Gilbert. Project Gutenberg E-Book of Cornwall. 2017*). These were the 130 acres awarded to Denis of Normand 145 years earlier, which apparently were not well managed. Over several decades, Thomas revitalized the property for sheep grazing and subsistence farming, and supervised the restoration of the

manor, which served as the home base of the Dennis family of Lesnewth from the 1300's to 1642, when it was acquired by the "Lesnewth Hundred" (i.e., county/parish voting council) and converted into a religious facility. (*Gabriel M. 17th Century Hundred of Lesnewth, Freeholder Elector Lists. Online Parish Clerks Genealogy. www.opc-cornwall.org. August 9, 2013. Accessed April 7, 2023)* A David Dennis, one of the Lesnewth freeholders in the mid-17th century who was allowed to vote on community issues due to property ownership, apparently played a leading role in the decision to sell the property to the local parish.

Lesnewth in Cornwall is the ancestral home of the Dennis family. Even today, 80% of people in Cornwall with a Dennis surname reside in or near Lesnewth. *Gilbert D. The Project Gutenberg E-Book of the Parochial History of Cornwall. Vol 1. 2017. Project Gutenberg. www.gutenberg.org*

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/25/2024.

The Denis/Dennis Manor in Lesnewth, Cornwall.
Image source: Wikidata. www.m.wikidata.org. Accessed: 7/25/2024.

Synopsis of Pre-immigration History

The ancestors of Thomas Denis effectively managed the lands in Lesnewth, earning income from pasture and farming leases, and from rental of the manor as a medieval event center. The Dennis family was described in Lesnewth parish records as "proper upper class groundsmen." *(Gilbert, 2017)* The family was sufficiently successful in business endeavors to pursue property acquisitions on the Cornwall peninsula, including a tract of land in Ashburton, near Plymouth, which they subsequently sold to a real estate syndicate led by Sir Francis Drake.

A side note: *When he was on dry land, and not privateering and exploring, Drake was very much a Chamber of Commerce booster for his hometown of Plymouth. He promoted and often funded what we what would now call downtown (urban) renewal to make Plymouth more competitive with Bristol and Cardiff as a commercial seaport, tourist attraction, and as a place to live. He served as Mayor and on the city council for many years, and represented Plymouth in Parliament. The Ashburton track included a small but picturesque abbey that Drake hoped to develop into a pilgrimage destination because 16th and 17th century religious tourism was a major source of municipal income. Drake's efforts led to quality of life enhancements for Plymouth, but the city never challenged Bristol or Cardiff as a seaport or holiday destination. (Sugden J. Sir Francis Drake. London: Henry Holt & Company. 1991)*

First Family Members to Immigrate to North America

The Denis (now Dennis) family of Lesnewith was evidently caught up in the political, social, religious and economic disarray of the 17th century. A Thomas Dennis of Lesnewth (1580-1653), a great^5 (G-5) grandson of the Thomas Denis who restored the Manor, immigrated to Boston in 1630 with two of sons. Thomas and his sons stayed 18 years in the vicinity of Boston working as stonemasons and carpenters before returning to Cornwall. Based on their glowing reports about America, other Lesnewth Dennis families made the journey across the Atlantic as conditions grew chaotic in Cornwall in the aftermath of the English Civil Wars of 1642-1649. Many Dennis families ultimately made their way to Pennsylvania, likely because they were Quakers, or were attracted to Quaker beliefs. The Genealogical Society of Chester, Pennsylvania tracked early immigration into William Penn's colony, and identified 47 families with the Dennis surname residing in the colony by 1700, roughly 15 years after it was opened for settlement. The fact that so many Cornwall Dennis families came to Pennsylvania is not surprising. Between 1650 and 1850, more than 25% of Cornwall's population immigrated to North America.

These early arrivals established a pipeline for Lesnewth Dennis immigration to Pennsylvania. Several Lesnewth immigrants who are likely candidates for linkage to our North American Dennis family arrived in Philadelphia between 1811 and 1826. As previously described on page 75 in the Dennis lineage table, my research has narrowed the list of Cornwall immigrants who are most likely linked to William Dennis to five candidates, but further exploration awaits discovery of more granular information about these individuals. For now, the pre or post-immigration history of William's parents and grandparents remains cloaked in the fog of the distant past. Unfortunately, none of the U.S. census records during his lifetime indicated the names of his parents. William met Mary Deiterick (1831-1903; also spelled as Dieterich or Deitterick on a few records) in Philadelphia and they married in 1857. William and Mary are the great grandparents of Archie Dennis. The names of Mary's parents are known: Joseph Deiterich (1807-1882) from Reading, PA, and Sarah Salzie Deiterich (1805-1858) from Fishing Creek, PA. Note that Mary changed the spelling of her surname from Deiterich to Deiterick. All of her numerous siblings did the same. Struggles with spelling or was some other reason at play?

=======

Notes on William Penn and the Pennsylvania Colony: William Penn (1644-1718) was an Oxford educated nobleman from a wealthy and politically prominent family, a practitioner and outspoken advocate of the Quaker faith in England, and an ardent pacifist and abolitionist. Penn published many papers in praise of Quaker ideals, arguing for greater personal liberty in religious behavior, and espousing what would now be recognized as the basic tenets of a democratic society. His papers and speeches often lambasted the Church of England and the Crown for denying religious and personal freedom, and questioned the need for a monarchy. For these positions, Penn was arrested and jailed in the Tower of London multiple times, but he was always released after a brief internments due to his family's influence in the royal court.

His father, Sir William Penn Sr., (1621-1670) was an admiral in the English navy, who gained notoriety, both pro and con, during his naval career. He had flexible political views to say the least; he managed to fight for both sides in the English Civil War. Later in his career, Admiral Penn developed the first manual of naval warfare tactics for the English navy that guided engagement strategy for 200 years. In 1681, King Charles II awarded a huge tract of North

America comprising modern day Pennsylvania, Delaware and parts of New York and New Jersey to William Penn Jr. to pay off a debt of 16,000 pounds that the King owed to Penn's father, and also to encourage Penn Jr., his Quaker / democratic ideals and his followers, to leave England, thus ridding the King of a political headache. Penn Jr. obliged by traveling to North America in 1682 to explore his new domain and begin planning a colony based on democratic concepts, which he proposed to name Sylvania, which means "a pleasant forested area" in Latin. The first General Assembly for the new province amended the name by adding "Penn" to Sylvania to honor Penn Sr. and Penn Jr. *(Hull WI. William Penn and the Dutch Quaker Migration to Pennsylvania. Baltimore, MD: Genealogical Publishing Company. 1970)*

A portrait of William Penn Jr. at age 40 when he was in North America creating the Pennsylvania Commonwealth. Overall, Penn spent only five years in North America, electing to manage his colony from England, which proved to be a miscalculation. *Murphy AR. William Penn: A Life. New York: Oxford University Press USA. 2018.*

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 7/28/2024.

The initial charter for the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, known as the *Pennsylvania Frame of Government*, which Penn wrote by himself, reads like a preview of the U.S. Constitution, down to Penn's phrase "all people are equal under God." Indeed, Penn's conceptualization of a society that democratically elects leaders and values personal freedom deeply influenced Thomas Payne, Ben Franklin and Thomas Jefferson who liberally incorporated ideas and almost verbatim phrasing from the *Frame of Government* into Revolutionary Era documents. He was the earliest advocate for unification of the colonies into an independent nation, and also advocated for a Union of European States ruled by democratically elected leaders, which he called the *European Union*. For this proposal, he was once again tossed into the Tower for several months. Upon release, he commented, *"I spend much time here, I should purchase it and make accommodations sensible to my comforts."* Interestingly enough considering his Quaker beliefs, Penn was flamboyant with a lavish lifestyle, excessive spending habits, and unusual, mystical, beliefs. He was profit-oriented and saw himself as business genius; kind of a 17th century Donald Trump with progressive ideas. Although thousands of immigrants were attracted by his vision for the Commonwealth, including the Maris, Dennis and Goodman families, Penn lost money on the enterprise due to inept management. *(Dunn M. The Personality of William Penn. Proceedings of Amer Philosophical Society. 1983; 127(5): 316-321)*

=======

Historical Sources for the Dennis Family

To augment research of this book, I consulted these resources.

McConnell M. Ten Early Pennsylvania Families Who Lived From the Eastern Border to the Western and Gradually United by Marriage. Google Library Project (Rutgers University Dissertation Microfilms). 1975.

Wilson L. From Buryan to Bondi: The Dennis Family of Cornwall and Some Australian Descendants. Amazon: Goodreads.com (https://www.goodreads.com). 2016

Goodman

Reminder - Goodman / Hendricson Connection

In 1916, Maude Odessa Goodman (1895-1979) married Archibald (Archie) Dennis (1889-1978) in Walla Walla, Washington. Maude and Archie had two children, Lloyd Neal Dennis (1917-1992) and Mildred Marietta Dennis (1919-2019). Mildred married Harold Maris Hendricson in 1946. Shirley and I were their children. Maude and Archie were our maternal grandparents. Maude's father, Ira Wiley Goodman (1853-1917) traveled to Oregon with his parents in a wagon train that originated in Missouri. Susan and I still have Ira's chair that was made for him by his father, and which made the journey to Oregon in the family's wagon.

Ira Goodman's chair traveled across the continent with him in a 1860 wagon train.

Origin and Evolution of Surname

The surname Goodman originated in England and Scotland in the medieval period. The name is derived from the Middle English "Gode" (Good) and "Mann" (Man), which combined refer to the head of a household, or master of the household, usually in a broader context of being a manager of an estate or a large parcel of property. In Scotland and throughout the northern counties of England, the term Godemann also referred to a landowner who received or purchased land, not from the crown, but from a member of the non-royal landed gentry class (i.e., wealthy merchants or professionals – attorneys, sheriffs, architects, politicians, etc.). In class-conscious medieval England, Godemann was also a status signal surname, indicating a person with supervisory responsibilities, and thus was at a higher social level than laborers or household employees. By the 15th century, Godemann had evolved to Goodman.

First Appearance of Surname in Public Records

The first Goodman that I could identify who was linked to the family line leading to Maude Goodman was an **Alexander Goodman** (1449 – 1516) and wife **Mary Hughes Goodman (**1461 – 1519). Alexander and Mary lived in a rural area of England known as the West Midlands near the border with Wales. Property deeds indicate that Alexander and Mary owned three plots of land of unknown size and a village market, but little else is known about them.

Geographic Origin of Family

Alexander and Mary lived near or in the village of **Chelmarsh** in the county of Shropshire. The next several generations of Goodman's after Alexander and Mary Goodman continued to live in Chelmarsh, and were involved in agricultural work.

Location of Shropshire in central England, on Wales border.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/27/2024.

Synopsis of Pre-immigration History

By the mid 1600s, this line of the Goodman family had moved to the town of Southill in Bedfordshire, located closer to London. The Goodman family in Southill worked as property managers and groundskeepers at an estate in the area known as Southill Park. Opened in 1597, Southill Park included private and public gardens, public parkland with trails and cabins, a 40-acre lake with public access and woodlands that could be leased for gaming (i.e., hunting). The focal point of the park was a restored manor house from the 14th century, which was used as residence by the park owners and also was leased out for events. Southill Park still exists today and continues many of the same functions. It is now owned and operated by the largest hotel and resort chain in England. (*Historic England. SOUTHILL PARK HOUSE. Southill, Bedfordshire. National Heritage List for England. https://historicengland.org.uk. Accessed February 4, 2023)*

Manor House at 17th century Southill Park.
Image source: Southill House. The Virtual Library. www.virtual-library.culturalservices.net. Accessed: 7/29/2024.

First family members to immigrate to North America

Benjamin Goodman Sr. (1633-1735) was working in an administrative position at Southill Park in the mid-1600s when the chaos of the English Civil War forced the closure of Southill Park, apparently throwing the family into a financial crisis. Benjamin Sr. appears to have bounced around after his departure from Southill Park, both in his professional life and personal life. He had relationships with several women leading to an entourage of 16 children. By 1668, the situation in Southill was sufficiently dire that he packed up his current wife, Anna Webster Goodman (1640–1719), her parents and the youngest 11 of his 16 children, traveled to Bristol, and boarded a ship bound for the Virginia Colony in the Americas. Thus, **Benjamin Goodman Sr.** and **Anna Webster Goodman,** were the first Goodman adults to immigrate to North America.

=======

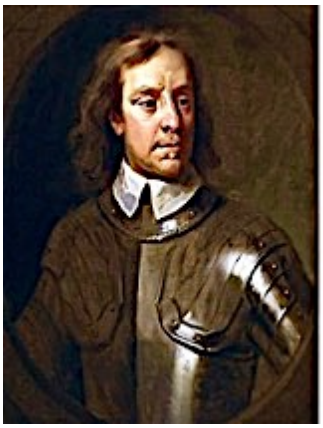
Notes on the English Civil War: The English Civil War of 1642-1649 (there were two phases of the war: 1642–1645, and 1647-1649), an overlapping conflict known as the Wars of the Three Kingdoms (1638-1651) and the ensuing economic fall-out were principle catalysts for the massive migration from England and Wales to North American in the 17th century, which included members of the Morgan, Maris, Dennis and Goodman families. The initial decades in 17th century England (i.e. 1600–1640) were an era marked by extreme economic and social tension (class and culture warfare), political polarization, and religious unrest. A non-royal merchant class was becoming wealthy and competing successfully with nobles in many areas of 17th century business enterprise, which challenged the traditional class pecking order. The crown became heavily reliant on the business sector for funding of any project the King desired to pursue. Concepts of individual autonomy and personal freedom were spreading through the population, which spawned the Quaker movement and other anti-royal societies that questioned the role of a monarchy and the church in an increasingly merchant-led entrepreneurial society.

The King at the time, Charles I, sought to firmly re-instate the divine right of kings and moved toward royal absolutism. He reduced the decision-making authority of Parliament, and then threatening to abolish Parliament completely, the key element in the constitutional monarchy that England slowly had built over the previous 200 years. Charles I also wanted to replace the Church of England (Protestant theology) with the Catholic Church. Parliament, comprised of wealthy businessmen, landowners and Protestant nobles, formed an army in 1642 and sought to depose Charles I.

At play in the conflict were royal absolutism versus a constitutional parliament (i.e., shared governance), national theology – Catholic versus Protestant, and other issues too complex to summarize here (i.e., Irish, Scotch and Welsh sovereignty). Seven years of violent civil war ensued between the Roundheads, the Parliamentarian army (name derived from their bowl haircuts) and the Royalist army, known as the Cavaliers (derived from their flamboyant attire). After dozens of battles, the military outcome was inconclusive, but the nation was devastated: each side experienced more than 150,000 deaths (in a nation of 3.4 million people at the time), and 500 villages and towns were completed destroyed. Farm to market and port to market distribution systems were devastated leading to severe food shortages. Conscription of farmers, loggers and fishermen for military service hindered economic productivity. King Charles I was eventually captured in 1649 after being on the run for much of the war. He was promptly tried and executed by the Roundheads.

Beginning in 1649, Oliver Cromwell, a leading Roundhead and arch Protestant conservative, served as the head (Lord Protector) of a constitutional republic, but in reality, his tenure was a brutal dictatorship. Catholics, the Irish, Quakers and other perceived non-conformists were ruthlessly persecuted. Much violence and social upheaval ensued for another decade, further damaging the economy. Cromwell unexpectedly died in 1658, and within two years, the Royalists rebounded and installed Charles II as king. Charles II introduced reforms to restore a constitutional monarchy where the crown and parliament shared decision authority, and repealed many of Cromwell's puritanical social regulations.

Yet, religious conflict continued for the rest of the century leading to another overturning of the crown in the Glorious Revolution of 1688. However, the events of 1688, which led to the installation of William of Orange and his wife Mary as King and Queen, finally led to development of a meaningful Bill of Rights for citizens, enhancement of the Prime Minister's power and significant expansion of Parliament's authority so that the crown could only make decisions with the approval of Parliament. The English economy finally began to rebound by 1700, but by then, many members of the Morgan, Maris, Dennis and Goodman families had already immigrated to the North American colonies.



Cromwell (left) and Charles I had divergent views on English culture, governance and religion. Cromwell's terrorism in subjugating Ireland contributed to agricultural failure on that Island, ultimately driving millions to North America including the McAnespy and McManus families. In the end, after 30% of the population died in the Civil Wars or fled to North America, neither man was correct about the future of Britain.

Source of images: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 7/30/2024.

Sources on the English Civil Wars:

Ackroyd P. The History of England. Volume III: Civil War. Cambridge: University Press. 2015.

Ashley M. Charles I and Cromwell. London: Methuen Publishing. 1987.

Carleton C. Going to the Wars: The Experience of the British Civil Wars, 1638-1651. London: Routledge. 1994.

Cressy D. Charles I and the People of England. Oxford: Oxford University Press. 2015.

Hunt T. The English Civil War at First Hand. London: Cambridge Press. 2003.

Royle T. Civil War: The Wars of the Three Kingdoms. New York & London: Abacus Books. 2005.

Vallance E. The Glorious Revolution: 1688 - Britain's Fight for Liberty. Boston: Little Brown. 2006.

=======

Historical Sources for the Evolution of the Goodman Family

The following sources were useful in tracing the evolution of the Goodman family.

Roberts CV, Ely WS. Early Friends Families of Upper Bucks County, With Some Accounts of Their Descendants. Philadelphia PA: Genealogical Publishing Co. 1925. Available via www.familysearch.org. Accessed: February 6, 2023.

McConnell M. Ten Early Pennsylvania Families Who Lived From the Eastern Border to the Western and Gradually United by Marriage. Google Library Project (Rutgers University Dissertation Microfilms). 1975.

Lienau

Origin and evolution of surname

The surname Lienau is a habitational name for individuals who lived in medieval German communities with a similar name. The village of Linau has existed since the 12th century in northern Germany. As we saw in Chapter II, Susan's ancestors spelled their surname as Linau until approximately 1775. Given the frequent use of habitational surnames during this period, it could be conjectured that Susan's Lienau line originated in this village. As described below, a nearby town is more directly associated with Susan's ancestors. In 2025, Lienau is a rare surname in Germany; less than 250 people use the name. Lienau is more common in North America; roughly 700 people have the surname.

Geographic Origin of Family

In the search for ancestors of Susan's father, Charles Lienau (1903-1969), virtually every source led to a small town in present-day Germany that is a suburb of Hamburg. This town is **Uetersen** in Pinneberg County in the German state of Schleswig-Holstein near the border with Denmark. Uetersen dates back to the 11th century when King Frederick II made Hamburg, on the Elbe River 50 miles from the Baltic Sea, a major seaport. Uetersen lies on one of the main branches of the Elbe, and its economy benefited during the Middle Ages from river traffic, but that faded away as shipping services were concentrated in Hamburg. In a bit of irony considering the Lienau family history in America, Uetersen and Pinneberg (the main city in the county of the same name) were both sister cities of Rockville, Maryland in the 1950s and 1960s.

Uetersen lies near several major Baltic Sea ports in the far north of Germany. The village is a suburb of Hamburg and has the highest concentration of people with the Lienau surname in Germany.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/29/2024.

There are few Lienau's in Germany currently, and few individuals with that surname appear in the historical record. However, of the Lienau's that I identified over the past 200 years, virtually all of them were born in Uetersen. For example, Johann Jacob Lienau (1798-1884) was one of the most prominent individuals in the history of the major northern German port city of Lubeck, which is 40 miles from Uetersen. Johann Lienau acquired wealth as a grocery store owner and then as a grain wholesaler. He owned a fleet of eight ships that exported grain throughout Europe and Scandinavia. He channeled much of his profits into public works for Lubeck including construction of hospitals, churches, schools and parks. The main street in Lubeck is Lienau Strasse, a major park along the Trave River is named for him, and the area of the city known for galleries, restaurants and theatres is recognized as the Lienau Arts District. Johann Lienau was born in Uetersen. A biography by one of his sons, cited below, mentions the "several branches of the Lienau clan from Uetersen who are all related in one way or the other, and held family days in Uetersen and at Oldesloe Lake." Several other prominent Germans from the 18th and 19th centuries were from Uetersen including Robert Emil Lienau (1838-1920),

Johann's son, a major music producer and publisher in Europe, Martin Michael Lienau (1786-1861), a wine merchant, referred to as the "father of the modern German wine industry" and Detlief Lienau (1818-1887), a well known architect, who moved to New York and became a founder of the American Institute of Architects. *(Lienau RE. Pictures and Figures From My Life. Berlin: Lichterfelde Archive. 1949.)*

The Lienau Arts District in Lubeck along the Trave River in Lubeck.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/29/2024.

First Appearance of Surname in Public Records

The earliest mention of a Lienau in public records that I found referenced a **Provintmeister Barthalome Lienau.** He worked in the 15th century for a Count of Holstein, the northernmost Duchy in the German Federation, which encompassed lands and villages north of Hamburg, including Uetersen. A Provintmeister served as the payroll master and chief employment officer in a German feudal duchy, and sat on the Count's main advisory council.

Synopsis of Pre-immigration history

I used Schleswig-Holstein tax rolls and census records to trace Susan's ancestry back to a **Wilhelm Linau** (1674-1743) and **Gesche Boot Fesefeld Linau** (1678-1749), a married couple from Uetersen. Four generations later, I came across a **Johann Lienau** (1808-1876), also from Uetersen, who led an adventurous life at sea, and who was Susan's Great-Great-Great (G^3) Grandfather. Information gleaned from tax rolls and the Schleswig-Holstein census suggest that Lienau families in the 17th and 18th centuries were economically secure. The family appears to have owned farmland, which passed from generation to generation, and probably were involved in the dairy business. We do not know why Johann Lienau elected to go to sea versus working in the family's agricultural business. Histories of Schleswig-Holstein describe a catastrophic flood, known as the Great Halling Flood (*Gross Hallingflut*) of 1825, that destroyed a coastal island, Halligen, and ravaged the region, destroying villages, causing thousands of deaths, decimating livestock and wiping out dikes and docks on the Elbe. The region was soon after afflicted with a deadly malaria epidemic, attributed to the flood's aftermath: miles of brackish water that served as perfect breeding grounds for malaria mosquitoes. It's not known if the 1825 storm influenced Johann's plans, but he would have been a 17 year old that year, considering career options, and the storm and following epidemic may have obliterated his family's dairy business. *(North Sea Flood. Encyclopedia Britannica Online. www.britannica.com. January 24, 2023. Accessed: May 27, 2024)*

First Family Members to Immigrate to North America

Johann Lienau (1808 – 1876) was the first member of the Uetersen Lienau family to immigrate to the U.S. In the 1830 Schleswig-Holstein census, Johann at age 22 was listed as cadet seaman (apprentice) with residence in Hamburg, Germany's largest port. On the 1840 census, Johann's occupation was Seaman/Harbor Pilot with residence in Neustadt, a suburb of Lubeck,

Germany's second largest port. This suggests that Johann had developed his seaman skills considerably between 1830 and 1840. Ships entering and exiting Lubeck had to navigate the narrow and curving Trave River channel with extensive lock systems. Ship captains turned the helm over to local harbor pilots, such as Johann, for that portion of the journey. In 1847, Johann's name appeared as an occupational immigrant to England with employment listed as seaman. The designation of occupational immigrant means that he had a secured employment with a company operating out of Great Britain. I don't know why Johann immigrated to England, but assume that it was career advancement. *(United Kingdom Merchant Navy Seaman Records, 1835-1941. Database and Images. Findmypast. http://findmypast.com. The National Archives of the UK. Kew, Surrey. 2023. Accessed: May 27, 2024)*

The next time Johann Lienau's name appeared in a public record was in 1854 in Puerto Rico, where he again was listed as an occupational immigrant, now using the name John Lienau. Between 1847 and 1854, John was a seaman for Royal Mail Steam Packet Company that transported mail and travelers between England and the Caribbean with stops in Cuba, Puerto Rico, Jamaica, Panama and Nicaragua. John's home residence was San Juan, Puerto Rico. By 1854, he had risen up the seaman ranks to chief mate, responsible for supervising the other crewmembers. (*United Kingdom Merchant Navy Seaman Records, 1835-1941. 2023)*

During 1854 in San Juan, John changed employers by securing a position as a sailor mate, a drop in rank, on the *Star of the West,* one of the largest steamships in the world at the time, which was owned by Cornelius Vanderbilt. The steamship, depicted below, was nearly 100 yards long (almost a football field), had two masts, a giant paddlewheel mid-ship, and space for 1000 passengers, including 200 in private cabins. The main purpose of the ship, however was to transport mail and packages between New York and the Caribbean. The first time John Lienau set foot in the U.S. was when he disembarked from the *Star* in the harbor of New York City in September 1854 at age 46. Soon after docking, John Lienau appeared at the immigration office in lower Manhattan. The story of John's adventures on the *Star* during a pivotal event in American history is told in Chapter IV.

The *Star of the West* in 1854, one of the largest steamships of the mid-19th century, owned by Cornelius Vanderbilt. *Tucker ST. Blue and Gray Navies: The Civil War Afloat. Annapolis: Naval Institute Press. 2006.*

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 5/13/2023.

Historical Sources for the Lienau Family

The following sources were consulted to trace the Lienau family.

Lienau Genealogy and Family History Information. Surname. Lienau. Profiles at www.geni.com. Accessed: February 11, 2023.

Historical Records for Surname Lienau. www.familysearch.org. Accessed: February 11, 2023.

Girault

Reminder - Girault / Lienau Connection

In 1935, Laura Pearl Girault (1908-1982) married Charles William Lienau (1903-1969) in Hastings-on-the Hudson, New York at the home of her parents, Theodore Stephano Girault (1873-1943) and Bessie Pearl McAnespy Girault (1874-1946). Laura and Charles were Susan's parents, and Theodore and Bessie were her maternal grandparents.

Origin and Evolution of Surname

The surname Girault evolved from the ancient Germanic word Gibeault, which referred to a person with power or authority. By the 16th century, Gibeault evolved into two primary variations: Giroux, commonly seen on the Atlantic (western) side of France, and Girault (sometimes spelled Garault), commonly seen in southern and eastern regions of France. Throughout French history, the Giroux / Girault surnames appear frequently in public records. Today, Girault is among the 50 most common surnames in France.

Geographic origin of family

The Girault surname first appeared in property deeds and court records in the region of France known previously as Languedoc. From 1229-1791, Languedoc existed as a province and was ruled by a Director-Governor appointed by the King. As indicated in the map below, Languedoc included what we now know as the French Riviera. The capital city was Toulouse and the largest city was Marseilles. During the 1600s, the branch of Girault's that are linked to Susan's grandparents and mother migrated north from Languedoc to the area of northeastern France known as the Champagne – Ardennes region. The reason for the northward migration is not known. The primary city in the Ardennes is Reims. By 1750, Susan's Girault line had settled in the small town of **Merfy,** a suburb of Reims.

The Languedoc province is indicated in red. The province existed until the French Revolution in the 1790s. The Girault family was prominent in this province for several centuries. After northward migration, Girault became a common surname in Merfy and throughout the Champagne-Ardennes region, below.

Image source for both maps: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/30/2024.

First Appearance of Surname in Public Records

The earliest reference to a Girault in public records that I could find described a **Philippe Girault** who was an officer during the 1680s in the French Royal Army of King Louis XIV (1638-1715), also known as the Sun King (i.e., Louis the Great). Girault, who was born in Reims and died in Merfy, served as the aid-de-camp to Francois Henri de Montmorency-Bouteville, Grand Marshall of the Royal Army and Duke of Luxemburg, one of the most experienced and successful military commanders of that era. Philippe Girault is often mentioned in Montmorency-Bouteville biographies. *(Chisholm H. Francois Henri de Montmorency-Bouteville, Duke of Luxemburg. In: Encyclopedia Britannica. 11th ed. Cambridge University. 1911. Accessed via www.wikisource.org on February 15, 2023)* Like Philippe Girault, many Giraults were professionals, serving in the military and as judges, attorneys, and mayors of large towns including Reims, Nancy and Strasbourg, and functioning in other administrative roles such as town and province commissioners. Several were members of the French Parliaments, a system of regional law courts responsible for converting royal decrees and tax levy's into law. At the onset of the French Revolution in 1789, the parliamentary Giraults mostly sided with the Royals, which led several of them to the guillotine in the 1790s, and one, an Etienne Girault, fleeing from a mob, took his own life by leaping from a spire of a Catholic Church. *(Etienne Girault, French Politician, 1756-1793. www.fr.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed May 27, 2024)* The earliest Giraults that could confidently be linked to Susan were a **Charles Girault** and wife **Jeanne Barbier Girault** who lived in Merfy in the mid-1700s.

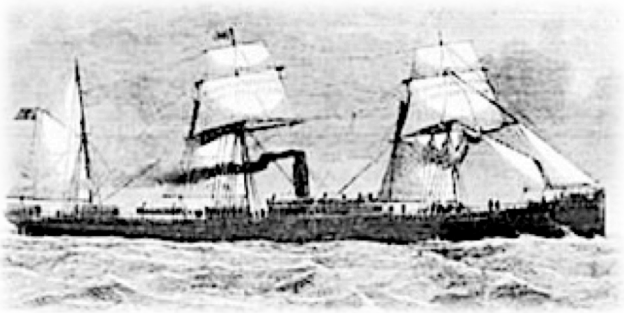
Synopsis of Pre-immigration History

Pierre-Louis Girault (1785-1820) was one of the sons of Charles and Jeanne Barbier Girault. We know little about Pierre-Louis other than that he was born in Merfy, had an illegitimate son named Alexander (1811-1882), who was Susan's great grandfather, and his early demise stemmed from a war injury. Pierre-Louis joined a French Royalist Brigade upon Napoleon Bonaparte's return to France from exile in Elba in 1815. The Royalist Brigade fought during the ensuing 100 Days War (March–July 1815) with the Seventh Coalition Army (Great Britain, Prussia and several states of the German Federation) that formed to oppose Napoleon's return to power. Pierre-Louis suffered crippling injuries at the Battle of Wavre (fought concurrently with the Battle of Waterloo on June 18-19, 1815) that apparently contributed to his early death at the age of 35. Alexander's mother, Mary Eugenia Thomas, was an English citizen and took Alexander to England after the events of 1815. See pages 117-118 in the Girault Lineage Table for details. *(Chandler D. Waterloo, The Hundred Days War. Oxford: Osprey Publishing. 1981)*

Little is known about his childhood, but Alexander Girault thrived in England. He was college educated and had a lucrative career within the British banking system. He married Sara Theodora McGreal (1842-1876) from the Hebrides Islands of Scotland in 1860 in Corum, Turkey, and the couple honeymooned there for nearly six months. Alexander and Sara lived in an upscale neighborhood at 11 Sydney Street in Chelsea, London, which now serves as a luxury boutique hotel, known as the Sydney House Chelsea. They had three children: Emily Alexandrine Girault (1861-1947), Louis Alexander Girault (1863-1933) and **Theodore Stefano Girault** (1874-1943). Theodore was Susan's grandfather. Considering the story that is about to unfold, It is important to note that Alexander Girault was 31 years older than Sara when they were married.

A contemporary photo of the Girault home at 11 Sydney Street in London.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 5/17/2023.

Sara McGreal Girault died in 1876 from unknown causes leaving Alexander, at age 65, with two teenagers and a two year old. Despite his wealth and likely access to childcare services, Alexander elected to place young Theo in an orphanage for pauper children run by the Parish of Saint Pancras in London. For the next 11 years, the child was transferred among several orphanages in England, eventually winding up in 1887 at the Barton Regis Rural Work Home for Delinquent and Pauper Boys near the city of Bristol with an already lengthy record of misbehavior. Not long after being transferred to this rural work farm, Theo, now 13, along with two other teens named Henry Mitchell and George Harvey, were caught during an attempted escape via a stolen donkey and wagon. They were brought before the Board of Governors of the Bristol Emigration Society for orphans and given a choice: stay in England and enter the juvenile penal system, or register as volunteers for the **British Home Child Service (BHCS)**. If they volunteered for BHCS, they were told that the destination would be Canada, where they would be placed on farms as laborers, but provided housing, meals and medical care. Theo, Henry and George all agreed that BHCS was the best option. In September of 1887, the three teens boarded the steamship, *Lake Nepigon*, bound for Canada, along with 10 other teenage boys who also chose the BHCS over juvenile prison.



The Lake Nepigon Steamship was built as a cargo ship, but modified to transport BHCS and other immigrants from England to Canada, and lumber in the other direction.
Image source: Norway Heritage: Hands Across the Sea. www.norwayheritage.com. Accessed: 5/17/2023.

First Family Member to Immigrate to North America

In October 1887, **Theodore Stefano Girault**, Henry and George arrived in Halifax, Nova Scotia and were soon transported to three adjoining farms owned by William Oliver (Will) McAnespy (1858-1917), only 29 years old himself, and his brother and brother-in-law near Portage Vale, New Brunswick. Soon after arrival, Theo undoubtedly took notice of William's 14-year old sister, Bessie Pearl McAnespy, who lived at the farm with Will after her mother apparently

abandoned the family following the death of her husband. I found site visit reports from the New Brunswick Provincial Immigration and Re-Settlement Office, which included assessments by both Will McAnespy and Theo in 1889 when Theo was 15 and two years later when he was 17. Both parties were pleased with the situation. Will indicated that Theo was a bit independent-minded and sometimes uppity, but a great worker, had leadership talents, and he fit in well. Theo observed, *"like it here well better than England,"* when he was 15, and *"it's such a good place to be,"* when he was 17.

Theo worked at the McAnespy farm for 13 years, rising to the position of foreman (manager) for all three farms, and, this is not a surprise, married Bessie in 1901. Bessie is Susan's maternal grandmother. One of Theo's BHCS pals, Henry Mitchell, ultimately joined the Royal Canadian Navy and made it a career. George Harvey moved to Manitoba when he was 19, but I could find no further information about his life. Theo and Bessie's subsequent careers and family are described in Section IV, Post-Immigration History of the Girault family.

=======

Notes on the British Home Child Service (BHCS): In the second half of the 19th century, rural families in England, Ireland and Scotland flocked to urban areas seeking newly emerging industrial jobs, contributing to massive over-crowding in London, Birmingham, Manchester, Liverpool, Edinburgh, Belfast and other cities. Metropolitan areas had inadequate housing and minimal social support services such as hospitals and schools for the population onslaught. Multiple families crowded into hastily constructed and often squalid apartments or lived in abandoned buildings. Factory jobs were readily available but paid poorly, not enough for the basic needs of a family with children. Youngsters were increasingly seen as extra mouths to feed, and were abandoned to orphanages or the streets in shocking numbers.

City leaders were desperate to ease overcrowding in British orphanages and pauper homes, and to combat child homelessness (and associated child labor and sexual abuse). In 1870, a group of 54 British juvenile protection and emigration agencies under the leadership of Annie McPherson, an early advocate of social work as a profession, banded together to create the **British Home Child Service (BHCS).** *(Parker R. Uprooted: Shipment of Poor Children to Canada, 1867-1891. Bristol: Policy Press. 2010)* McPherson conceptualized the BHCS as a resettlement program to reduce child deprivation in Britain and improve children's lives abroad with a fresh start. The purpose of BHCS was to gather, assess and immigrate wards of the state (such as Theo, Henry and George), and other neglected or unwanted children to other nations in the British Empire who were under-populated and seeking immigrants, especially teenagers who could function as farm workers or domestics. There was no guarantee of schooling or adoption for BHCS participants, just room, board and health care in exchange for gainful work.

Between 1870 and 1930, 120,000 children were sent to Canada under the BHCS for placement with rural families who needed extra hands or with urban families who needed support for the elderly, childcare (nannies) or domestic servants. In Canada today, nearly 15% of the overall population is descended from a British Home Child. An 11-year-old British Home Child on Prince Edward Island inspired the *Anne of Green Gables* novels by Lucy Maud Montgomery.

Thousands of BHCS children were relocated to Canada. Ships off-loaded the children in Quebec or Halifax into plywood barracks until they were placed. *Bagnall K. Little Immigrants. The Orphans Who Came to Canada. London: Dundorn Pub. 2001.*

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 5/16/2023.

Unfortunately, McPherson's fresh start resettlement was erratically implemented. Many BHCS children were not treated nearly as well as Theo Girault. Audits found that BHCS children in Canada were traded or sold among families as needs arose or were simply told to leave and fend for themselves. Many were not provided adequate shelter, regular meals or medical care. Beginning around 1900 the Canadian government started to weed out agencies and families who abused the system. Mounting criticism led to the termination of the BHCS in Canada in 1932, although World War II stimulated under the table re-settlements of English orphans with rural Canadian families.

Although Theodore Girault benefitted from his BHCS experience, many other English children did not. Rampant abuse led Canada to eventually close the program. *Boucher E. Empire's Children: Child Emigration. Welfare and the Decline of the British World. 1869-1967. London and Cambridge: Cambridge University Press. 2014.*

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 5/16/2023.

=======

McAnespy

Reminder - McAnespy / Lienau Connection

In 1901, Bessie Pearl McAnespy (1873-1946) married Theodore Stefano Girault (1874-1943) in Portage Vale, New Brunswick. William Oliver McAnespy (1857-1917), a key figure in both of their lives, served a dual role of walking the bride down the aisle (as her older brother) and serving as Theo's best man (as his mentor and father figure). Bessie and Theo Girault had three children: Evelyn Elizabeth Girault (1902-1984), Theodore Alexander Girault (1904-1980), and Laura Pearl Girault (1908-1981). In 1935, Laura married Charles William Lienau (1903-1969). The couple had one daughter, Susan Elizabeth Lienau (1949 -). Thus, Bessie and Theodore Stefano Girault were Susan's grandparents on her mother's side.

Origin and Evolution of Surname

The surname McAnespy is an Anglicized version of the Scottish, Gaelic and Irish Mac An Easpaig, meaning son of a bishop. Prior to the 20th century, the name was sometimes written as Mac Anespy. McAnespy is today a rare surname in Great Britain. Less than 100 people have the name in Ireland, all of whom live in Northern Ireland. Less than 20 each in Scotland and England have the McAnespy surname. The rarity of the name appears to be consistent throughout the past 200 years. Griffith's Primary Valuation of Ireland (a 19th century national tax survey of households, property and business owners) conducted every 10 years starting in 1817 listed from 49 to 64 McAnespy's or Mac Anespy's on each survey. (*Griffith's Valuation – A Mid 19th Century Gem. Irish Genealogy Toolkit. www.irish-genealogy-toolkit.com In: Santry C. The Family Tree Irish Genealogical Guide. www.books.google.co.uk. 2017. Accessed: May 28, 2024)*

Geographic Origin of Family

Given the rarity of the McAnespy surname, it was easy to identify **Loughgall** (in Irish: Loch gCal), a rural community of less than 300 residents in the Northern Ireland parish of **Armagh** as the likely geographic origin of the name. Loughgall sits adjacent to a loch (lake) from which it derives its name. The community was established in the 12th century when a Gaelic clan constructed a crannog (a wood and stone fort in the middle of a lake) in Loughgall Loch. In the search for potential ancestors of the New Brunswick McAnaspy's, virtually all individuals with that name, currently and in the past, were associated with Loughgall or Armagh Parish. Loughgall sits near the border with the Republic of Ireland amidst lakes and rolling hills. In spite of its bucolic setting, it has been the scene of numerous religious and sectarian battles throughout its history, including a bloody shootout in 1987 between the Irish Republican Army and a British Special Forces Unit resulting in many fatalities.

Location of Loughgall in Armagh Parish near the border of Northern Ireland and the Republic of Ireland.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/2/2024.

Historian's rendition of a Loughgall Loch crannog built in the 12th century. Crannogs were common in medieval Ireland and Scotland.
Information and image source: O'Sullivan A. Crannogs: Lake Dwellings of Ireland. Dublin: Irish Treasure Series. 2000.

First Appearance of Surname in Public Records

The surname McAnespy appears in the aforementioned Griffiths Survey throughout the 19th century including **James McAnespy** (1796-1862) and wife **Emily Morton McAnespy** (1795-1844). James and Emily lived in Loughgall and were William Oliver McAnespy's grandparents. The survey indicted that James was a farm laborer and Emily worked as a shopkeeper and domestic (i.e., cook and housekeeper).

Synopsis of Pre-immigration History

As best as can be determined, residents of Loughgall primarily have been sheep grazers and small plot farmers throughout history. Farmers either owned small farm-to-market shops in the village or had contracts to supply produce to designated vendors. The largely absentee English owners of Irish estates took a substantial percentage of the profits from sales of crops and livestock as well as charging lease fees to the tenants.

First Family Members to Immigrate to North America

James and Emily McAnespy, with three of their eventual six children, immigrated to Canada in 1821, settling in New Brunswick. I don't know for sure, but a best guess might lead to the conclusion that James and Emily were part of the Great Irish Wave that immigrated to Canada between 1820 and 1860, triggered by the Irish Potato Famine that reached its peak during 1845 to 1852. Over these seven years, Ireland lost 50% of its population – one million people died of famine and associated diseases, and one million people left for North America, Australia or New Zealand. Even before the peak of the famine, another million people had already immigrated to other nations, hoping to leave behind the massive poverty that engulfed Ireland in the 19th century. *(Elliot BC. Irish Immigrants in the Canadas: A New Approach. McGill: Queen's University Press. 1988)*

Substantially under-populated, the Canadian government actively encouraged and incentivized Northern European, and particularly, Irish relocations in the 19th century. Family units were offered at least partial payment for transatlantic passage, temporary, albeit shabby, housing after landing at a Canadian port-of-entry, assistance in locating tracks of inexpensive farmland to purchase, and transportation to purchased property. Between 1820 and 1860, more than 60% of all immigrants to Canada were Irish, a total of 700,000 people. By the year 1920, 30% of all Canadian residents were born in Ireland, and the percentage was much higher in the eastern provinces of New Brunswick and Nova Scotia.

The journey from Ireland to Canada was arduous. Immigrants crossed the ocean in hastily and crudely constructed cargo ships, primarily designed to haul lumber on the return trip to Great Britain to meet the building and refurbishment demands of the rapidly expanding British navy. Over 75% of the wood used in the 19th century British fleet was from Canadian forests. On board conditions for passengers likely were no better than experienced by the first immigrants to New Amsterdam 200 years earlier. Mortality rates were high, exacerbated by the poor health of many Irish immigrants before they boarded ships in Bristol or Belfast. In the 1840s, nearly 2,000 Irish children annually, whose parents had died during the voyage or soon after, were placed for adoption or entered into a Canadian branch of the British Home Child Service.

Beginning with James and Emily McAnespy in 1821, members of the McAnespy family have operated farms, dairies and other agricultural businesses in New Brunswick to this day, more than 200 years. Signs for McAnespy agricultural businesses are evident as one drives through rural New Brunswick near the Bay of Fundy. However, as described in the McAnespy lineage table on page 128, William Oliver McAnespy chose a different path and moved to Hartford, CT to become a book publisher.

Theodore and Bessie were married in the Portage Vale United Baptist Church in 1901 and are buried in the cemetery to the left of the church.

McManus

Reminder - McManus / Lienau Connection

In 1901, Mary Theresa McManus (1884-1940) married Charles William Lienau Sr. (1876-1940) in Brooklyn, New York. Mary and Charles W. Lienau Sr. had two children: Charles William Lienau Jr. (1903-1969), and Helen Lienau (1908-1987). In 1935, Charles William Lienau Jr. married Laura Pearl Girault in Hastings-on-the-Hudson, New York. The couple had one daughter, Susan Elizabeth Lienau (1949 -). Thus, Mary and Charles William Lienau Sr. were Susan's grandparents on her father's side.

Origin and Evolution of Surname

McManus is an Irish surname, first appearing in the 1500s, derived from the ancient Gaelic Mac Maghnais, McMaghnais or McMaghnuis, which means Son of Magnus. The name McMaghnuis first appeared in Ireland in the 12th century. Turlough Mor O'Conor (appr. 1100-1166) was a leader of the powerful O'Conor clan, based in Connaught (present day Galway) on Ireland's west coast. One of his sons was named Maghnais O'Conor (1123-1181). As a young man, Maghnais gained his father's disfavor for an unknown transgression and broke away from the Galway base. Maghnais and a few supporters established a new Sept (i.e., family line) in an area known as Roscommon in central Ireland. The eldest son of McMaghnais, who went by Turlough McMaghnais, founded the principle town in the Roscommon region, Kilronan, and built a castle and a church, the requisite first constructions of any medieval community. By the 1500s, when surnames started to be used in Ireland, McMaghnais had evolved to McManus, and this surname has been prevalent in Roscommon throughout the ensuing centuries. *(Byrne V. The Hidden Annals: A Thousand Years of the Kingdom of Connaught. Universal Publishers. 2003)*

Geographic Origin of Family

The ancestors of Mary Theresa McManus were traced back to John James and Theresa McManus who lived in the early 1800s in a pastoral village by the name of **Ballyfarnon**, in the Roscommon District.

Ballyfarnon is located in the Roscommon District of Ireland, a few miles from the Kilronan Castle.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/2/2024.

First Appearance of Surname in Public Records

Like many residents of Ballyfarnon, John and Theresa were decidedly not wealthy. John's name appears on several tenant leases in the 1840s, which allowed use of plots of land on a local estate for farming. There is no record that they owned property of their own or owned a home. The couple do not appear to have been involved in the sheep grazing industry as were many others in Roscommon. The 1837 and 1847 Griffiths Irish Census listed John as a farm worker and woodsman, and Theresa as a domestic at the nearby Kilronan Castle. By the 19th century, the castle built by Turlough McMaghnais already had been converted into a rural lodge and venue for weddings and other celebrations. Today, it is a five star hotel, restaurant, spa, and event center with two 18-hole golf courses.

Kilronan Castle in 2023

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/4/2024.

Pre-immigration History and First Family Members to Immigrate to North America

John and Theresa McManus from Ballyfarnon were born around 1810, married in 1837 and passed away in 1863 and 1864 respectively. Their only surviving son, **John James McManus** (1854-1915), arrived in New York as an immigrant in 1865 at age 11. Port of entry records do not indicate the circumstances of his arrival. For example, did John James travel alone or did an adult accompany him? Irish immigration records (i.e., port exit) indicate that a substantial number of Roscommon women and children, incarcerated in female prisons or pauper child reformatories, were relocated to New York in 1865 and subsequent years as part of a nationwide program to reduce overcrowding in the Irish penal system. (*Maxwell-Stewart H. Convict Transportation from Britain and Ireland 1615-1870. History Compass. 8(11): 1221-1242. 2010*) I do not know if John James was involved in this mass relocation, but the dates of his parents' deaths indicate that he may have been left on his own at a young age, not an uncommon experience for a child in mid-19th century Ireland. *(Lancour H. Passenger Lists of Ships Coming to North America, 1607-1825. New York: Bulletin of the New York Public Library. Summer, 1937)*

A **Mary Maria McNellis** (1853-1925) arrived at the port of New York from Belfast on the same day as John James McManus (April 15, 1865; the day of Abraham Lincoln's assassination) at the age of 12 accompanied by two older sisters. Seventeen years later, John James and Mary Maria were married in Brooklyn. The couple had four children, one of whom was **Mary Theresa**

McManus, who married **Charles Lienau Sr.** in 1901 at the age of 17. Thus, John James and Mary Maria were Susan's great grandparents, and Mary McManus was her paternal grandmother.

=======

Notes on the Surname McNellis: The surname McNellis is the Anglicized form of the Gaelic Mac Niallghious, which combines Mac (son of) with a common Gaelic personal name, Niall (modern day: Neal) and with a descriptive adjective, ghuis, that refers to a vigorous or energetic person. Mac Niallghious is thus a complimentary personal name meaning: "son of the Niall, the vigorous one." McNellis, or McNelis was a frequently used surname in medieval Scotland and Ireland. The surname first appeared in public records of the **Island of Bara** in the 11th century, the southernmost island in the Outer Hebrides chain off the northwest coast of Scotland. The name has remained popular in the Hebrides ever since. As evident in the image below, the Hebrides and Northern Ireland are not far apart, especially for two seafaring populations (in 2025, a four hour ferry ride). Throughout history, there has been considerable back and forth travel and inter-marriage between the populations of Ireland and the Hebrides chain.

This map shows the geographic relationship of Hebrides Island chain to Northern Ireland.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/4/2024.

=======

Mary Maria McNellis and her sisters were born in Colonsay on one of the Inner Hebrides Islands. After deciding to immigrate to North America, it is possible that they traveled to Belfast because it was the closest embarkation port. We know Mary Maria's parents, Ralph McNellis and Isabelle Brennan, were born in the Hebrides around 1830, but it is also possible they may have relocated to Ireland with their daughters prior to 1865. I was not able to determine why the McNellis sisters (ages 12, 15 and 16) immigrated to New York without their parents.

Historical Sources for the Lienau, Girault, McAnespy and McManus Families

Not being able to identify any prior published histories for these families, I relied on my own historical research, using the sources identified within the description of the European origin of these four families.

Summary of Pre-Immigration History of the Nine Families

Before moving on to the evolution of these families after immigration to the U.S. and Canada, here is a brief summary of key facts for the Hendricson, Morgan, Maris, Dennis, Goodman, Lienau, Girault, McAnespy and McManus lines addressing ancestral hometown, original surname, first immigrant to North America, and year of arrival and location.

Family	Ancestral Home	Original Surname	1st Immigrant to U.S. or Canada	Arrival Year & Location
Hendricson	Nydeggan, Germany	Schenck van Nydeggan	Hendrick Hendriksz	1663 New Amsterdam
Morgan	Llandaff, Wales	Morcant	Morgan Morgan	1713 Delaware Colony
Maris	Le Marais de Chapelle, France (Normandy)	Mariess or Marais	Richard George Maris and Alice Welsmith Maris	1683 Pennsylvania Colony
Dennis	Lesnewth, Cornwall England	Le Denys	Thomas Dennis	1630 Boston
Goodman	Chelmarsh, Shropshire, England	Godemann	Benjamin Goodman and Johanna Webster Goodman	1674 Virginia
Lienau	Uetersen, Germany (near Hamburg)	Linau or Lienow	Johann (John) Lienau	1854 New York City
Girault	Merfy, near Reims Northeast France	Gibeault	Theodore Girault	1887 New Brunswick, Canada
McAnespy	Loughgall, Northern Ireland	Mac An Easpaig	James and Emily McAnespy	1822 New Brunswick, Canada
McManus	Ballyfarnon, Roscommon Ireland	McMaghnuis	John James McManus	1865 New York City

Agenda For Nine Families Ancestral Tour

The ancestral homes of the nine families, plus a couple of genealogically pertinent side trips, could likely be accomplished during a two-week trip, mostly by car, as illustrated below.

Location / Family	Travel Time / Mode	Distance	Highlights
Uetersen, Germany ***Lienau***	N/A	N/A	• Hike the Elbe River Trail to see where Johann (John) Lienau gained his first boating experience • See numerous buildings with Lienau name in Uetersen • Tour Hamburg shipyards by boat where Lienau was an apprentice
Uetersen to **Lubeck** Germany ***Lienau***	50 minutes by car	42 miles	• Drive Lienau Strasse to Lienau Park alongside Trave River where John Lienau served as a harbor pilot steering cargo ships through a winding channel & locks • Have dinner and tour galleries in Lienau Art District
Lubeck to **Nideggan** Germany ***Hendricson***	5 hours by car (2.5 hrs by train)	270 miles	• Tour Nideggan Castle, museum and abbey • Lunch/dinner at castle gasthaus • Hike the trail to village • Numerous B&Bs in village
Nideggan to **Nijmegan,** Netherlands ***Hendricson***	2 hours by car	110 miles	• Hike Waal River Trail into town along riverside homes similar to what Maarten van Nydeggan Hendriksz tried to enter on his kidnapping mission • Visit Saint Stephens Cathedral where Maarten is buried
Nijmegan Side Trips • Bleijenbeek • Utrecht ***Hendricson***	Bleijenbeek (Blyenbeck today)	25 miles east	• Visit Blyenbeck House, home of the Schenck van Nydeggan / Hendriksz family for 200 years
	Utrecht	50 miles west	• Home of the Hendriksz family for more than 100 years. Lambert, Maarten and Cornelius Hendriksz all lived in Utrecht. • Numerous maritime museums

Nijmegen to **Merfy,** France ***Girault***	5.5 hours by car	270 miles	• Tour Merfy vineyards • Review Girault family records at town hall • Visit nearby Reims and tour Reims Cathedral
Merfy to **Waterloo Station**, Belgium (side trip) ***Girault***	2.5 hours by car	130 miles	• Take Waterloo battlefield tour and visit diorama museum • Tour Battle of Wavre battlefield and museum
Waterloo Station to **Le Marais de Chappelle,** France ***Maris***	4.5 hrs by train	270 miles	• Tour medieval village, convent and vineyards • Boat tour of north Seine River • Visit Caen before boarding Chunnel train to England
Caen to **London** ***Girault***	6 hrs (Chunnel and car)	162 miles	• Stay overnight at boutique hotel at 11 Kensington Street that was Alexander Girault's home • Visit St Pancras Station, the most elegant 19th century train station in Europe, and the nearby parish church where Theo Girault Sr. was first placed in an orphanage
London to **Chelmarsh, Shropshire via Southill Park** ***Goodman***	2.5 hrs by car, plus 3 hrs for visit to Southill Park	90 miles	• Tour Southill Manor or perhaps stay overnight • Hike a 2 – 4 mile Southill trails • Golf at Astbury Golf Lodge in Chelmarsh • Tour Cannock Heritage Museum
Chelmarsh to **Llandaff (Cardiff), Wales** ***Morgan***	1.5 hrs by car	65 miles	• Visit Tredegar House • Tour Llandaff Cathedral in Cardiff • Examine 12th century *Book of Llandaff* in Cathedral that has Morgan history back to 700s
Cardiff to **Lesnewth, Cornwall** with stop in Bristol ***Dennis***	3 hrs by car, plus 3 hrs in Bristol	110 miles	• Visit *SS Great Britain* Museum Ship at Bristol (more immigrants departed Bristol for U.S & Canada than any other European port) • Visit Denis Manor in Lesnewth • Hike to Tintagel Castle & Merlin's Cave on craggy Cornwall coast to soak up Arthurian lore

Bristol to **Ballyfarnon, Kilronan, Ireland** ***McManus***	By air and car: 6 hrs	200 mile flight 90 mile drive	• Overnight at Kilronan Castle Resort • Boat or fish on local Loughs • Tour nearby mining museum
Kilronan to **Loughgall, Ireland** ***McAnespy***	2 hrs by car	90 miles	• Tour Dan Winters House, a museum of rural Irish history, including the 19th century famine • Tour Ardress House, a recreation of a 18th century Irish tenet farm and manor.

Chapter IV – Stories of Family Members in North America

Overview

The Hendricson, Morgan, Maris, Dennis and Goodman families shared common experiences:

(1) immigration to North American in the 17th century fleeing the economically and socially disastrous English Civil War and ensuing religious persecution during the Cromwell era;

(2) additional emigration within the colonies and the fledgling United States in the 17th, 18th and 19th centuries, moving westward to West Virginia, Kentucky, states in the Northwest Territory, and to the Pacific Northwest to escape slave powered agriculture with which they could not compete given the skimpy infrastructure, manpower shortages and Midwestern climate;

(3) desire to live in a non-slave free state with other guaranteed benefits and liberties including opportunity to acquire acreage of fertile lands at no cost, in-perpetuity land ownership, female land ownership, free public education and religious freedom;

(4) all but one family (Maris) reached the West Coast by wagon train; and,

(5) each family finally gained financial stability in Oregon and Washington.

The Lienau, McManus, Girault and McAnespy families immigrated to North America up to 200 years later, in the 19th century, also seeking economic stability and upward social mobility. These families did not seek farming careers, instead gravitating to metropolitan New York for contemporary urban careers in publishing, the music industry and the financial sector.

Chapter IV is comprised of stories of individuals in these families whose experiences capture aspects of the American journey from the 1600s to the mid 20th century. Connections to our ancestors primarily survive through **stories** about unique moments in their lives, what they did, and who they were ... not the dry facts of their existence: birth and death data, places of residence, spouses and children's names, occupations, and so on. All families need stories that are bridges to the past, allowing ancestors to come alive as real people with real problems.

Story Telling

Connections to our ancestors primarily survive through accounts of their adventures, which likely include renditions of events and circumstances passed from grandparents to parents to children orally without tight scrutiny of historical evidence. All families need stories that provide links with the past, allowing ancestors to come alive as real people with real problems. Accordingly, conventions of story telling are embedded into *Who We Are* to create compelling accounts of the experiences of ancestors from the near past to distant centuries shrouded in uncertainties. These conventions include blending what is reliably known (i.e., well documented) about these individuals with reasonable conjecture about what likely happened during impossible to know "fog of history" moments. In some instances, family lore (i.e., handed-down, oral history) is woven into the stories if the lore appears to be consistent with an individuals' established pattern of behavior and known facts about an event. To create relatively brief stories that convey the essence of an ancestor, certain elements of well chronicled occurrences, for example, Washington's Crossing of the Delaware during the Revolutionary War, are boiled down to the bare bones to allow focus on the specific actions of that person within that event. An important element of any person's story, and often what creates vivid memory, is the mythology associated with that individual. Hopefully, I clearly

identified elements of family mythology in *Who We Are*, but confess that I did not totally avoid stories that I have heard all my life about near and distance ancestors. For me, the fun of history is derived from wondering, and then exploring, questions that start with: *did that really happen?* Much of the research for *Who We Are* centered on finding the answer to *did that really happen*? More often than not, the answer was: Yes!

Timeline - North American Stories

The timeline is based on the date of birth of the family member involved in the story that are listed chronologically with one exception.

Birth Date	Story Title	Family Members	Pages
1572	Exploring America	Cornelius Lambert Hendrickson (1572-1651)	189-208
1618	Here There Be Witches	Mary Reeve Webster (1618-1698); mother of Anna Goodman, who was wife of Benjamin Goodman Jr.	209-214
1636	Beaver Pelt Economics	Hendrick Willemz Hendriksz (1636-1707)	215-224
1688	The Morgans Go West	Morgan Morgan (1688-1767), Catherine Morgan (1692-1773) & Zack Morgan (1734-1795)	225-233
1734	Okey and Friends	Okey Hendrickson (1734-1830)	234-257
1749	Dining with Cornwallis	Eleanor Lindley Maris (1749-1783)	258-263
1808	One Foggy Morning	Johann (John) Lienau (1808-1876)	264-279
1824	Oregon or Bust	William Firman Hendricson (1824-1908)	280-310
1873	Bright Lights of the Big City	Theodore Stefano Girault (1873-1943) & Bessie McAnespy Girault (1874-1946)	311-320
1919	Harold & Mildred Go to War	Harold Hendricson (1919-1992) & Mildred Dennis (1919-2019)	321-348
1948	Going to Ballgames	William Hendricson (1948 -)	349-374
1947	Billy	William Carey Janes (1947-1967)	375-417
1948 & 1949	Becoming Who We Are	Susan (1949 -) and William Hendricson (1948 -)	418-446

Europeans Explore America - Cornelius Lambert Hendrickson (1572-1651)

Portrait of Cornelius Lambert Hendrickson created in celebration of his selection for the Netherlands Geographic and Scientific Academy, a forerunner of the Royal Dutch Geographic Society. Many of his maps, terrain sketches and notebooks are on display at the Society Library located at the University of Amsterdam.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: December 17, 2022.

Cornelius Hendrickson was the son of Lambert Barentse Hendriksz (Mooy Lambert), Royal Dutch Navy Admiral, and one of the nation's greatest hero's in the 80 Years War with Spain. Cornelius was the grandfather of Hendrick Willemz Hendriksz (Hendrickson), the first member of our Hendricson family to reside permanently in North America. Cornelius literally grew up on the water, accompanying his father on North Atlantic fishing trips, on naval training exercises in the North Sea and, in particular, a trip to Iceland that peaked his interest in geography. After graduation from Leiden University in 1594 and working in Denmark to chart the numerous tiny islands in the Kattegat Strait, Hendrickson was hired and trained by the Dutch East India Company (DEIC) as a cartographer (mapmaker) and linguist, the later an important skill when exploring new lands with indigenous populations. Early in his career with the DEIC, he participated in exploration and mapping expeditions to the East Coast of Africa, islands in the Indian Ocean and Indonesia. In 1610, Hendrickson was hired as a cartographer for the newly formed Dutch Republic. He would soon be a key participant in two North American exploration and trade expeditions.

A side note: *The Dutch West India Company was created in 1621 to develop Holland's land claims in the western hemisphere, open trade with indigenous peoples in North and South American and hinder Spanish and British trading in the Caribbean.*

=======

Notes on Historical Sources for 17th Century Dutch Exploration in North America: Much of what is known about Cornelius Hendrickson's explorations are based on expedition reports, maps, sketches and logs (diaries) that he submitted to the DEIC and to the Dutch Royal Government, principally, the States General of the Netherlands, which was the legislative branch, roughly equivalent in composition to the U.S. Congress. These documents are maintained in Amsterdam Municipal Archives and/or the Dutch National Archives known as *Archives of the States General*. In Chapter VI: Information Sources, see*: Sainsbury N. Dutch National Archives. Archives of the States General - Calendar of Dutch State Papers, Reports, Notes and Archives; the Colonial Series, 1574-1660.* Historians of the Dutch colonial experience in North America relied on these original sources for their research. A number of historical accounts of early 17th century Dutch exploration in North America are identified in the information sources for this family history (See the Howe, Spijkerman and Weslager citations),

which describe Cornelius Hendrickson's explorations. A detailed account of Hendrickson's voyages was provided in 1848 by Edmund Bailey O'Callaghan, which includes excerpts from the explorer's report to the Dutch States General, as well as legislative reaction to the report. *(O'Callaghan EB. History of New Netherland, or New York Under the Dutch. NY: Appleton & Company; 1848. Available from Internet Archive. www.archive.org. Accessed: January 20, 2023)*

=======

In general, the explorations of Cornelius Hendrickson have not been as well reported as those of Henry Hudson or Adriaen Block, who aggressively self-promoted narratives of their voyages after returning to Europe. However, a recent dissertation and ensuing articles in historical journals have focused more attention on Hendrickson's North American adventures, and the educational activities of his wife, Sennetje Rutgers. *(Parmenter JW. Separate Vessels. The Worlds of the Seventeenth Century Hudson Valley and Other Lands to the South. Binghamton, NY: SUNY Press. 2014)*

Block's Expedition of 1611-1613

On his first North American assignment, Cornelius served as the cartographer on an expedition to expand fur trade with Native Peoples, search for locations of potential trading posts and map unknown lands. The expedition was led by the controversial Adriaen Block (1567-1627), a merchant who was not above freelance privateering when opportunity arose. Block's strengths in the eyes of the Dutch government were his navigation skills and knowledge of North American coastlines. Block had already completed three trips back and forth between Rotterdam and present day New York harbor, which Block named New Netherland in 1609.

A side note: *Despite his pivotal role in the early exploration of New England, Long Island and present day New York Bay, no definitive biography of Adriaen Block was ever written. A chapter in Henry Howe's 1969 book on New England settlement and two online resources provide summaries of Block's maritime career and New World explorations:*

Howe H. Adriaen Block Explores New England. In: Prologue to New England. Port Washington NY: Kennikat Press. 1969. Available via Internet Archive. www.archive.org. Accessed: June 7, 2023.

Rattiner D. An Amazing Journey: How Adriaen Block Discovered Montauk for Europe. History of Eastern Long Island. www.danspapers.com. December 14, 2018. Accessed: June 3, 2023.

Stapler M. 1614 - Adriaen Block. Society of Colonial Wars in the State of Connecticut. www.colonialwarsct.org. 2011. Accessed: June 9, 2023.

Cornelius Hendrickson arrived in New Netherland in April 1611 onboard Block's flagship, the *Tyger,* named in honor of Mooy Lambert's ship at the Battle of Gibraltar. The meticulous Dutch transatlantic voyage documentation noted that the Hendrickson transported a thousand pounds listed as barter material for native negotiation including 100 pairs of bedroom slippers, 50 gentleman's dress hats, 50 bonnets, 50 sketch pads, 50 kettles, 50 hand mirrors, and seven casks of beer. Block's flotilla included three 12-foot skiffs suitable for shallow rivers that remarkably were towed behind *Tyger* across the Atlantic without damage, a cargo ship, *Fortuyn,* for hauling beaver pelts back to Holland owned by Block's second in command, Hendrick Christiaensen, and a third ship, owned by Block, that appears to have played no role in the subsequent explorations. On the way to New Netherland, the *Fortuyn* was anchored in a

cove at Cape Cod, near where the Pilgrims landed nine years later. The *Fortuyn* already had a reputation in Holland and New Netherland as a contraband (smuggling) ship. Block and Christiaensen likely feared that the ship's appearance in New Netherland would raise suspicions about the intent of the expedition. The ship was guarded for two years at Cape Cod by four Dutch sailors and two English soldiers of fortune (presumably included for military expertise) that were supported by four Faroe Island fishermen and trappers. Block had recently recruited the Faroe Islanders from a fish camp on the Nova Scotia coast. This group of ten guarded *Fortuyn* and traded with local natives until Block's group returned for the trip back to Holland.

While waiting for Block and Christiaensen to re-appear, the stay-behind *Fortuyn* crew fished, hunted and interacted extensively with the Wampanoag tribe across the bay on the mainland. These interactions produced two children, and also may account for the ability of Massasoit, chief of the local village of the Wampanoag Nation and other tribesman to greet the Pilgrims in 1620 by speaking English and Dutch and showing them a bible, possibly obtained from the *Fortuyn* stay behinds. This initial interaction stunned and befuddled the new European arrivals. Of course, the presence of Tisquantum (popularly known as Squanto in the Plymouth Pilgrim mythology) within Massasoit's band likely also contributed to their European language capacity. In 1614, Squanto was kidnapped and taken to England, where he remained for several years working as a carriage driver for an English merchant named Thomas Dermer. By the time Squanto returned to Massachusetts with Dermer in 1619, he was said to be "much proficient in the British language, appearance and ways." (*Halsall P. Modern History Sourcebook: Excerpts from William Bradford, History of Plymouth Plantation. www.sourcebooks.fordham.edu. 1998. Accessed: 7/27/2024)*

Adriaen Block made four trips to North America to build trade networks with Native Peoples. In 1615, he commanded three warships and 11 whalers that illegally hunted whales near the Spitsbergen Islands of Norway to the dismay of the Norwegians who had no capacity to stop him. Block repeated the whale piracy for three years until Norway coaxed the English into interceding. The English sent warships to chase off Block in 1618, and he then returned to more conventional privateering. *Stapler, 2011. Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/27/2024.*

By September 1611, Block was ready to commence his intertwined missions of establishing fur trading networks with Native Tribes, buying pelts (with beer and European clothing) for transport to Holland, and geographic exploration. Block's goal was to convince the Dutch States General to grant him an exclusive charter for fur trading with Native tribes for all of the lands that were charted on this mission and subsequently displayed via maps. Hendrickson, with his charting training and experience, was to play a major role in achieving this goal.

Block, Cornelius Hendrickson, Hendrick Christiaensen and 12 seamen devoted 18 months to exploring and mapping what we now know today as Manhattan and the southern shore of Long Island. They verified that Manhattan is indeed an island, at least technically, drew the first

definitive maps of surrounding waterways, and explored the north end of Manhattan and the East River for the first time.

Map of Manhattan and the East River created by Cornelius Hendrickson during the Block Expedition. The red arrows were added later to indicate locations of Native Tribe villages.

Information and image source: Bell B. Another Early 17th Century Map By Cornelius Hendrickson Referencing Siwanoys. In: Historic Pelham. www.historicpelhamblogspot.com. August 13, 2018. Accessed: 6/10/2024.

When exploring Long Island, the *Tyger* was often anchoring off shore for days at a time so Hendrickson could travel inland with guides from one of the 13 Native Tribes on the island, all subsets of the Algonquin Nation. He mapped inlets and small rivers, sketched the terrain and interviewed natives about their lifestyle. At first, he used translators and later in the journey, conducted the conversations himself, given his capacity for picking up languages and dialects. Hendrickson drew portraits of individuals he interviewed, which were received "with great glee" by tribesmen, and compensated them for their time with articles of European clothing including hats and European style bedroom slippers, which were "excessively sought after." He was allowed access to and sketched architectural structures in more than 20 tribal villages, including the interiors of communal great lodges (main meeting halls of villages). While Hendrickson did his cartography and ethnographic investigations, Block and ship's crew hunted and trapped, and approached tribal leaders about fur trading possibilities. After obtaining several trade agreements, and exploring and mapping Manhattan and Long Island, the explorers returned to New Netherland in March 1613. (*Stapler, 2011)*

A map known as the "Figurative Map of Capt. Adriaen Block" drawn in 1614 displays Long Island, the New York harbor and the New England coastline with some degree of accuracy based on Block's 1611-1613 expedition. Historians consider the map to represent the collective efforts of Block, Hendrickson and Christiaensen. *Stapler, 2011.*

Image Source: Digital Collections of the New York Public Libraries. www.digitalcollections.nypl.org. Accessed: 7/21/2024.

During what was planned to be a brief respite to unload furs, the *Tyger* mysteriously caught fire and sank while moored adjacent to the future site of the World Trade Towers in lower Manhattan. There has been conjecture about the source of the fire including sabotage by a competing fur trading company or sabotage by Block's own crew who, several weeks before the fire, had staged a mutiny over inequities in profit sharing from beaver pelt sales. Whatever the cause, a new boat had to be constructed for the mission to continue. Just four months later, the result of this effort was the construction of the *Onrust (Restless)*, which was according to

Block's expedition log: "a small yacht of 45 feet in length, with a beam of 11.5 feet and a 38 foot keel, capable of 8 lasts" (i.e., 16 tons of cargo). The *Onrust* is believed to the first ship, other than small skiffs, built in North America. *(Rittner D. Adriaen Block and the Onrust: Setting the Stage for the Dutch Colonization of North America. 2016. Available via Amazon Prime. www.amazon.com)*

A scale replica of the *Onrust* built for New York State's Quadricentennial (1609-2009) by volunteer craftsman using 17th century boat building equipment and materials. The replica is held together by 4000 handmade wooden nails (trunnels) and iron rivets cast in a 17th century forge. The *Onrust* replica is now located at the Connecticut River Museum in Essex, CT.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/7/2024.

At some point during the spring or summer of 1613, Cornelius' wife Sennetje Rutger and five of their 12 children arrived in New Netherland (re-named New Amsterdam in 1624), which was no more than a crude trading post at the time with a population of less than 100. Sennetje was probably one of the first females to reside at the post and her children were possibly the first youngsters in the fledgling community, although records about ship arrivals and passengers in the formative years of the colony are sketchy as described in the side note below. The remaining seven children of Cornelius and Sonnetje were teenagers ensconced at boarding schools or married adults living independently in Holland. Sennetje and the children resided in one of the first framed houses constructed in the fledgling colony. In the front room of the home, Sennetje conducted a school for her five children, eventually joined by several other children of other early arrivals to New Netherland.

A side note: *In 1821, the state of New York elected to "sell all books, documents and papers of every kind, belonging to the old East and West India Companies, of a date prior to 1700 at public auctions" apparently in a fund raising effort and to rid government file rooms of what was considered to be waste paper. (Sypher FJ. The First Families: News From New Netherland. New Amsterdam History Center. www.newamsterdamhistorycenter.org. February 10, 2016. Accessed: June 8, 2023) As a consequence, knowledge of early arrivals to New Netherland and events in this trading compound have had to be assembled from myriad other sources, producing a fragmentary history of the early years of New Netherland. It is known from Dutch maritime sources that two or three Dutch trading ships arrived annually in the spring and summer from approximately 1611 to 1624. Crews of these ships and unknown numbers of passengers often wintered in New Netherland before returning to Holland in the spring. Most of the travelers on these ships were likely traders and other businessmen who hoped to strike up agreements with local tribes, and then return to Holland. However, as in the case of Sennetje Rutger and her children, some passengers evidently elected to remain in New Netherland each year, slowly building up the non-trader population, and creating the foundation for subsequent*

Dutch colonization. Beginning in 1624 with the arrival of the Eendracht (English: Unity) and Niue Nederland, each laden with an estimated 25-30 families per ship, the Dutch government commenced a dedicated effort to populate the colony in an effort to stave off potential encroachments and land claims by other European nations. (Macy H. 375th Anniversary of the Eendracht and Nieu Nederland. NYG&B Newsletter. 1999; 10(1): 3-5). As an FYI, the intended destination of the Mayflower in 1620 was the mouth of the Hudson River (i.e., New York Bay), which, if achieved, would have certainly brought them into contact with the residents of New Netherland. North Atlantic winds and shoddy navigation led the Mayflower to the vicinity of Cape Cod in present day Massachusetts.

Sennetge's school was likely the second in North America for European children, following a school started in 1609 at the English colony in Jamestown, Virginia. Sennetje had teaching experience in Holland, working as a tutor for wealthy families and also teaching in an elementary school run by the University of Utrecht. Children could attend this school if their parents donated money to the University. Sennetje was admitted as a student to the University of Utrecht during the years she taught at the school, an exceedingly rare accomplishment for a 17th century female. It is not clear if or when she graduated, or if she was the first female Utrecht student as some historians claim. Another female student, Anna Marie van Shurman, was certified as proficient in 14 languages and admitted to Utrecht in 1636 where she attended classes behind a screen so male students could not view her and thus be distracted from lectures. *(Utrecht University Website: Noted Alumni. www.uu.nl. Accessed: May 28, 2024)*

Frustrated by the delay caused by the loss of the *Tygre* and fearing further crew mutiny, Block and Christiaensen were eager to return to Holland with their cargo of pelts and their maps. They wanted to collect the substantial cash reward offered by the Dutch States General for trade agreements with Native Peoples, and most importantly, secure an exclusive charter to monopolize the pelt trading business with North American tribes within the lands depicted by their maps. When Block and Christiaensen eventually returned to Holland, the States General was indeed sufficiently impressed with the maps and agreements to grant a trading charter to Block, with Christiaensen as his principle partner. However, Block never activated the terms of the charter because he elected to return to his privateering career, working for a private Dutch company, Noordsche Compagnie, that was attempting to break-up Norway's control of the North Sea whaling industry.

While in New Netherland awaiting completion of the new boat, Hendrickson received his next assignment, endorsed by both the States General and the DEIC: "traverse and map entirety of the coastline south of New Netherland harbor to the Poutaxat Inlet (i.e., later called Delaware Bay after an English Lord de la Warr who purchased land on both shores of the Bay), find the sources of the Bay and follow the main source until no longer navigable, while searching for ideal locations for construction of stockades (i.e., forts) and trading posts." Upon completion of the task and submission of documentation and a report, Hendrickson was promised by the States General, a "substantial remuneration to be promptly remitted." (*O'Callaghan, 1848)*

Block, Christiaensen and Hendrickson decided to travel up the coast of New England in the *Onrust* to reach Cape Cod where the cargo ship, *Fortuyn*, awaited for the return to Holland. After off-loading, pelts, maps, tribal agreements, supplies and most of the crew to the *Fortuyn*,

Hendrickson would return to New Netherland in the *Onrust* with a skeleton crew, and commence planning for his exploration of the New Jersey coastline and Delaware Bay.

Block decided to attempt a new and potentially faster route to reach Cape Cod. From exploration on a small sloop, Hendrickson had learned that the river east of New Amsterdam led to a body of open water between the north shore of Long Island and the coast of New England, which provided a more direct path to Cape Cod than sailing around the south side of Long Island. Based on this information, the crew of the *Onrust* navigated a treacherous strait of what is now known as the East River separating present day Queens and Manhattan (although vastly narrower in 1613), which had swirling tidal currents. Block named this dangerous passage, Hellegadt (Hell Gate). After being spun around in whirlpools caused by the clashing tides of New Netherland harbor and Long Island Sound, and bouncing off rocks along the shoreline, the crew of the *Onrust* eventually emerged into the open waters of Long Island Sound, the first Europeans to do so. Block, Christiaensen and Hendrickson spent the next six months fur trapping, seeking trading agreements with local tribes, exploring the north side of Long Island and navigating several rivers that flowed into Long Island Sound including what are now known today as the Housatonic and Connecticut Rivers. The crew of the *Onrust* sailed more than 60 miles north on the Connecticut River. *(Varekamp JC. Adriaen Block, the Discovery of Long Island Sound and the New Netherlands Colony. Middletown, CT: Wesleyan University Publication. 2011. Accessed June 2, 2024 via www.savethesound.org)*

A side note: *As Susan and I drive to the Bradley Airport after visiting our grandchildren in Connecticut, we approach Hartford from the south on Interstate 91. Many times, we have driven by a sign along the Connecticut River that reads: Adriaen's Landing, but never stopped to investigate. We will the next time. The marker identifies the estimated spot where Block anchored the Onrust near present–day Hartford to allow Hendrickson and others to explore inland, the first Europeans to reach the area. Today, Adriaen's Landing is also the name of an river front development in Hartford that includes the Connecticut Convention Center, Connecticut Science Center and a retail-residential complex.*

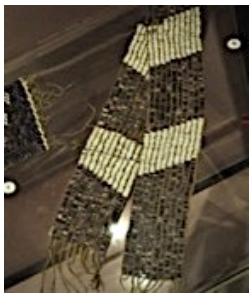
A few days after arrival in the Hartford area, Block, Hendrickson and several crew used a shallow bottomed skiff to reach the area of present-day Enfield, Connecticut where sandbars prevented further progress. In Connecticut as in Long Island, Hendrickson interviewed and sketched Native Peoples, which he described as Siwanoy after hearing tribesmen use this term to refer to other people in villages. In reality, the term is derived from "siwan", which refers to the wampum that Northeastern tribes used as currency for trading and also for recognition of achievements, and "oy", which refers to the artisans who made wampum from clam and oyster shells. Hendrickson wrote Siwanoy on maps of Connecticut, New Jersey and Delaware to indicate Native villages, and other mapmakers subsequently used the term. In actuality, Siwanoy did not refer to a specific tribe or the location of a village. Instead, Siwanoy was a slang word used to describe tribal artisans who designed wampum, with a negative connotation as in "they're Siwanoy; they just sit around and make wampum all day." *(Buckland JH. The First Traders on Wall Street: The Wiechquaeskeck Tribe of Southwestern Connecticut. Westminster: Heritage Books. 2009)*

During the later phase of this coastline exploration, the *Onrust* crew came upon a small island off the coast of Rhode Island that Block admired so much that he named it after himself – Block

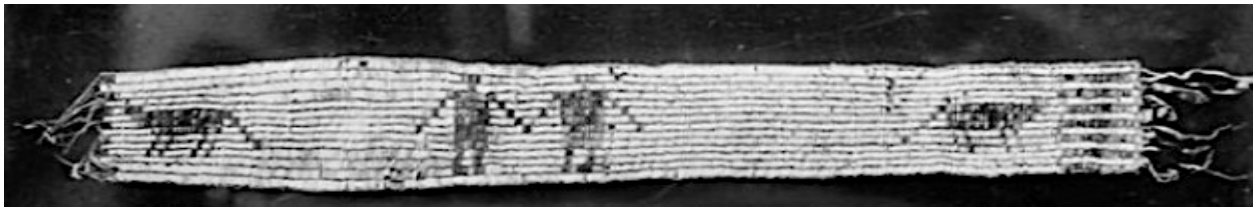
Island. Block is also credited by some historians for the name of Rhode Island when he, or more likely Hendrickson, who maintained the topographical journals, labeled present day Rhode Island as Roodt Eylant (i.e., Red Island)) after noting the red clay shores. English settlers later anglicized Roodt Eylant to Rhode Island. *(Rittner D. 2016)* Finally reaching Cape Cod and the awaiting *Fortuyn*, Block turned the *Onrust* over to Hendrickson who quickly departed for New Netherland to reunite with Sennetje and the children. Block sailed for Holland on Christiansen's ship with his pelts, trade agreements with several Native tribes and geographic sketches that later would be turned into polished maps. Hendrickson created the bulk of the cartography and accompanying notes, and quite likely, Christiaensen also drafted a few. However, Block claimed them as captain of the expedition, and Hendrickson acquiesced, perhaps to make sure he got control of the *Onrust*, or perhaps because of a pre-existing agreement. About a hundred years later, the Royal Dutch Geographic Society re-labeled many of the maps to indicate either Hendrickson or Christiaensen as primary authors. (*O'Callaghan, 1848; Varekamp, 2011)*

=======

Notes on Wampum: Wampum was small cylindrical beads meticulously carved from specific types of oyster and clam shells. Wampum was used for indication of status, recognition of achievement and as decorations to be worn at special events. As clothing accessories, finely carved shells were strung together as necklaces or made into belts worn laterally across the chest. Wampum belts told a story based on the design and color of beads. Gifting of wampum belts commemorated treaties among tribes and with Europeans. Later, European colonists started to mass-produce Wampum to use as currency in trading with Native Peoples, which deflated its value, and led to declining use among Northeastern tribes. *(Dubin LS. North American Indian Jewelry and Adornment: From Prehistory to the Present. New York: Harry N. Abrams Inc. 1999)*



Example of beaded Algonquin wampum belt from the 1700s. Beads were carved from oyster and clamshells selected for color and texture.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 5/9/2024.



Wampum belt presented to William Penn by the Lenape Tribe to signify the Walking Purchase that allowed Penn to acquire a million acres of eastern Pennsylvania for colonization. The term "walking" indicates that the territory was equal to the amount of land that a man could walk in one day in each direction: east to west; south to north. *Image source: Official Website of the Delaware Tribe of Indians.www.delawaretribe.org. The Walking Purchases of 1686 and 1737. Accessed: 5/29/2024.*

Hendrickson's 1614-1616 Expedition

Back in New Netherland in the spring of 1614, Hendrickson decided he needed a "second smaller but still substantial craft with shallow draft and clear observation lines" for the upcoming voyage, and commissioned the same craftsmen who constructed the *Onrust* to build the ship. While the new ship was being assembled, Hendrickson recruited a crew of 22 including 12 seaman, four militia men, "handy with musket" for protection/show of force, and three male and female pairs (i.e., spouses) who served multiple functions as scouts, trackers, translators and Native ways advisors (i.e., 17th century cultural consultants). In two of the pairs, both spouses were mixed race (i.e., Native American-European) and capable of communicating adequately in several prominent tribal languages of the East Coast. The mixed race population was substantial in the early days of New Netherland for the same reasons that the Metis population grew in the Washington and Oregon Territories in the 18th and 19th centuries. The third couple was European, but had lived for a decade among the Mohawks, and had developed facility with Native languages. Their capacity to read and write Dutch allowed the scouts to help Cornelius with map labeling and the trip log. When observing tribal life in Long Island and Connecticut, Hendrickson noted that the political, hunting and warfare leaders were all males, but for day to day village operations, female priests (spiritual guides), healers and elders made the decisions. Accordingly, he believed that female guides and linguists might make village leaders more comfortable and willing to communicate, a theory that was proven correct throughout the journey.

To conduct a shakedown cruise on the *Onrust* with his new crew, Hendrickson explored the area known today as Staten Island, circling and charting it by water and exploring inland on foot with his guides / language specialists. He then moved on to the large Raritan Bay (named for the Raritan sect of the Lenape tribe) that feeds water into New York Bay. Hendrickson mapped the contours of Raritan Bay for the first time, found the source (i.e., Raritan River), and followed it north to the Wachung Hills, the highest point in New Jersey, the first European to reach the area. Along the way, he engaged in his usual interactions, sketching and note taking with Native Peoples, and picked up a 23rd crew member, an unusually tall teenage Raritan boy who was persistent in his request to join Hendrickson. Because of his height, the young man eventually came to be known among the crew as Groot Schop (Big Kick), apparently referencing his height and his tribal name of Pennakick.

The light green area is Raritan Bay, explored to its source in central New Jersey for the first time by Cornelius Hendrickson in 1614. Monmouth County, NJ, south of Raritan Bay, would eventually become home to many descendants of Cornelius Hendrickson and other Hendrickson lines.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/9/2024.

When Hendrickson and the *Onrust* crew, with the addition of Groot Schop, returned to New Netherland in August 1614, the new companion ship was ready to sail. Named the *LJseren*

Varcken (*Iron Hog)* for unknown reasons (perhaps its appearance), the vessel's construction may have suffered from Hendricson's absence. It was squat and ungainly looking, shorter but much wider than the *Onrust*, rode low in the water, but had a "deeply upturned bow with over laying of metal to allow close approaching of shallows and rocky shorelines." The *Onrust, Iron Hog* and six trailing skiffs (three attached to each main ship) departed for the New Jersey coast on the last day of September 1614. The charting expedition made good progress during October. But as the Lenape villages became aware of the little flotilla that frequently stopped to allow crew to come ashore, more and more Natives walked to the shoreline to see the spectacle, especially women, teenagers and young children. The presence of a tall, apparently handsome, Raritan teenager among the crew was duly noted by the villagers and led to "much enthusiasm among the Lenape youth" when he came ashore. Soon villagers started to bring food and other gifts to beach campsites where members of the crew waited for Hendrickson and the guides to return from their dry land exploration. The crew accepted the gifts and exchanged clothing, tobacco and cooking utensils with the Lenape. Often, the food and gift exchanges evolved into social events, lasting deep into the evening. After numerous of these beach parties, Hendrickson's crew was distracted, the ships were overloaded with food, and the expedition's inventory of gifts for potentially less friendly tribes was depleted. Hendrickson decided to put a stop to the celebrations. Via one of his scout teams, he identified an influential Lenape leader, and convinced him to constrain the villages from gift giving, promising a "wonderful demonstration" and onboard tours of the *Iron Pig* when the expedition reached the mouth of Delaware Bay.

With the beachfront social events curtailed, Hendrickson and crew made better progress southward, reaching present day Cape May at the mouth of Delaware Bay in January 1615. A large crowd of Lenapes had gathered for the promised event. The militia men obliged by firing a small cannon mounted on the *Iron Hog* into the ocean several times, shooting their loud and smoky blunderbusses into the air, and lighting flares (gunpowder in tubes). A musket and pistol shooting demonstration also occurred. The noise and smoke from these volleys thrilled the children, but may have unnerved some of the adults who stopped to ponder the implications of these weapons. Village groups were invited to nominate three people for portraits, and Hendrickson obliged by tirelessly sketching the selected individuals throughout the day. In groups of eight, Natives were rowed around the *Onrust* on the skiffs and out to the *Iron Hog*, where they could walk around on deck for a few minutes. Finally, just before nightfall, a final round of cannon fire, flares and blunderbuss volleys lit up the sky. Both ships and the trailing skiffs then sailed away into the mouth of the Bay where they anchored for the night.

The next morning, Hendrickson and his men found that the initial stretch of the Bay was treacherous to navigate, especially for the *Onrust*, which had a much deeper draw than the *Iron Hog*. In his log, Hendrickson noted that:

"The bay within is full of sandbars, shoals and swirly tides in and amongst these bars, and even though there are many kills and channels by which we discovered navigation trails through it, one should not come in the bay with a deep drawn ship, and not come in unless he is familiar with these moving shoals and bars, for it is a dangerous bay." (O'Callaghan, 1848)

Navigation within Delaware Bay, especially at the mouth, is challenging today as it was for Cornelius Hendrickson in 1614.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/29/2024.

Parts of the Delaware Bay shore that Hendrickson encountered likely appeared as it does today: marshland with shallow inlet waterways, and low grasses on slopes leading up to a forest line of box elder, and sycamore.
Image source: Delaware.gov. Beaches and Shorelines. www.dnrec.delaware.gov. Accessed: 7/29/2024.

This image depicts the New Jersey coastline, Delaware Bay and Delaware River explored and mapped during Hendrickson's 1614-1616 expedition. On the journey, Hendrickson and other crew became the first Europeans to enter what is now Pennsylvania. After exploring the Schuylkill River to the present site of Reading, PA, the expedition ended at the Trenton Breakers (arrow), a series of waterfalls in the 1600s at a major bend in the Delaware River.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/2/2024.

This is Cornelius Hendrickson's original map of the Delaware Bay and Delaware River. The map shows the shoals and sand islands that dotted the Bay in the early 1600s. The route of the Delaware River is remarkably accurate. Upon his return to Holland, Hendrickson produced polished versions of this and other maps originally drawn during the 1614 – 1616 exploration. Several are displayed in Dutch Maritime Museums.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 8/4/2024.

In addition to the tricky navigation due to the shallow water and sand bars, the journey northward through the Delaware Bay also was far less social than along the Jersey coast. On the western side of the Bay, Mohawks were the principle tribe, and they only interacted with Hendrickson to request trades for weapons, which he repeatedly declined. On the eastern side of the Bay, the Lenape were less evident, choosing to follow the progress of the ships from the forests, but rarely attempting to interact. Perhaps the firepower show at the mouth of the Bay dampened their enthusiasm, or perhaps Hendrickson and his ships were no longer new news. The expedition had almost reached the neck of the Bay near present-day Pea Patch Island when eight Mohawk warriors emerged from the scrub brush one evening. The Mohawks approached the crew's campsite, where several crewmembers were waiting for Hendrickson to return from an exploration. The Mohawks requested to speak with the four militia who, unusually, happened to be ashore at the same time, likely a protocol breach. The "men with weaponry" were offered an incredible reward if they would accompany the Mohawk band on a raid of a Susquehanna village to retrieve a kidnapped mother and child. The Mohawks then produced a large satchel full of Dutch Florins (historians remain puzzled as to the source of the coinage), which they promised to give to the four militia upon completion of the mission. For unknown reasons, perhaps boredom, desire for adventure, or simply greed, the expedition's military crew gathered up their weapons and abruptly departed with the Mohawks in spite of their shipmates attempts to stop them.

The cannon on the *Iron Hog* was fired twice in succession, a pre-arranged signal for Hendrickson to return to camp, which he did by nightfall. There is debate among historians about Hendrickson's actions after reaching camp, but it was ultimately decided that walking into the high brush and trees in search of the militia men and Mohawks could lead to an ambush. Hendrickson ordered the two ships to cast off and anchor at Pea Patch Island in the middle of the Bay to preempt an attack during the night. After heated conversation between Hendricson and the crew, the decision was made to push ahead without the militia as they "cast their lot, we will endure without their participation". The next morning, Hendrickson and crew continued their voyage, entering the narrower body of water that today is known as the Delaware River.

Meanwhile, the four militia and the eight Mohawks approached the Susquehanna village, probably near present day Christiana, Delaware, where the captives were supposedly held. The 12 men swooped into the village with substantial musket firing, hoping to terrify the inhabitants, only to find the camp largely deserted. Within moments, a large number of Susquehanna men rose up out of the brush and unleashed a torrent of arrows, then rushed in with spears and clubs. Three of the four men from Hendrickson's crew were struck by arrows and wounded, although none fatally. The fourth crewmember, a man named Kleynties, snuck away during in the melee, and headed toward the river. Two of the eight Mohawks were killed, and the others managed to flea, abandoning the wounded militiamen, but not before grabbing their muskets. Afterward, the Susquehanna decided this campsite was unsafe, gathered their belongings and headed north, taking the three wounded Europeans with them.

Kleynties reached the river by the next day, and in a turn of good fortune, he rushed out of the grasses lining the muddy river bank at the exact instant that the *Iron Hog,* with Hendrickson aboard, slowly coasted along the shoreline. Hendrickson's first instinct was to administer the customary lashes for insubordination, but the crew objected and he deferred the punishment "until and upon further consideration when NN port (New Netherland) is reached". Instead, Hendrickson decided that pursuit of the three captive crewmen was now warranted. He organized a pursuit party comprised of himself, four of the guides/linguists, the Raritan teenager, and two of the crew with familiarity with muskets. After directing the crew to take the *Iron Hog* back to Pea Patch Island for safety, the rescue team headed north, pulling a hastily constructed sled loaded with gifts.

Because an entire village of Susquehanna were trekking north with three wounded captives, progress was slow, and it did not take long for Hendrickson's group to identify their trail and catch up. The Susquehanna were well aware of the approaching Europeans and what they wanted. Halting their advance, three Susquehanna envoys were sent to discuss the situation with Hendrickson and his men. Impressed by the language facility of the Europeans, the Raritan lad's inclusion in the group, and also wanting to rid themselves of the three wounded men, the Susquehanna and Hendrickson quickly reached an agreement for release of the crewmembers. The tribe received the entire contents of the sled, which included much sought after bedroom slippers, European breeches (pants), shirts, metal cooking kettles, a sketch book and pencils, and a keg of salt-preserved meat.

A side note: *The journey to intercept the Susquehanna led Hendrickson and colleagues into the land that would ultimately become Pennsylvania. They were the first Europeans to set foot in the geographic region that would evolve into William Penn's Grand Commonwealth 70 years later.*

After the rescue party returned to the shoreline and rendezvoused with the rest of the crew, the little flotilla proceeded east on the Delaware River toward present-day Philadelphia. The wounded men recovered sufficiently to resume normal routine by the time of the return trip. For abandoning their posts, they were punished with 25% reduction in compensation. As the Delaware River narrowed and became considerably shallower, most of the exploration was conducted from the *Iron Hog* with the *Onrust* anchored in the middle of the river and used as a supply station. During this phase of the operation, Hendrickson sailed the *Iron Hog* up the

Schuylkill River through the land that would become Philadelphia to the area of Reading, PA, where he ran into several Susquehanna wearing clothing exchanged to the tribe several weeks previously. During the final months, Hendrickson's crew had limited contact with Native Peoples and concluded their journey when they reached a series of five foot waterfalls in the river near present day Trenton, NJ, about 40 miles east of Philadelphia.

Sensing the fatigue of the crew, Hendrickson decided to immediately commence the return to New Netherland, but a major decision had to be made. In spite of its perceived ugliness, the *Iron Hog* had proven its worth on the final leg of the exploration, navigating the many shallows of the river and facilitating shoreline charting. However, it was slow moving and difficult to maneuver on the open sea, leading Hendrickson to beach the little ship, toss the cannon into the River and load everyone onto the *Onrust* for the journey home. Sticking to the middle of the Bay, traveling the deepest depths available at full sail, and limiting shore time on the New Jersey coast as much as feasible, the *Onrust* reached New Netherland harbor in early August 1616, nearly two years after departure. All 23 crew who departed with Hendrickson in September 1614 returned alive. After off loading most of the crew and briefly reuniting with his family, Hendrickson and a skeleton crew returned Groot Schop to the Wachung Hills and dropped him off with a satchel of clothing and other gifts. After two years with Hendrickson and the crew, the lanky teen was now fluent in Dutch and also had picked up considerable English from the guides. Approximately five years later, Groot Schop, who now used the name Andreas, settled on Staten Island with a group of Raritan tribesman who desired to establish trade relationships with the Dutch. Andreas acted as their translator during negotiations. Although the venture was only mildly successful, Dutch traders eventually hired Andreas for translation and negotiation jobs. Over the next 20 years, Andreas travelled up and down the Hudson, and along the New England and Long Island coastlines on Dutch trading boats. He disappeared from New Netherland ship logs around 1640, and his fate is unknown.

At some point during the 1614-1616 expedition, three teenage sons of Cornelius and Sonnetje traveled to New Netherlands to join their mother and younger siblings. The family, after reuniting, deliberated the pros and cons of remaining in the Americas. Ultimately, it was decided that the Hendrickson's would return to Holland so that Cornelius could file his report to the States General and the DEIC supported by his maps, notebooks and sketches to obtain the promised financial reward for his efforts, and the family could resume a more civilized life in Utrecht.

The States General response to Hendrickson's report was notably tepid. According to O'Callaghan, rather than focusing on potential sites for Dutch fortifications and trading posts in Delaware Bay, Hendrickson's report largely reflected his personal interests, which included wildlife (unique animals, fowl and fish not seen in Europe), trees, plants and vegitation, and Native attire, customs, language and architecture. Perhaps Hendrickson assumed that his maps and cartography notes indicated good sites for military and commercial structures and he did not need extensive narrative to amplify. O'Callaghan observed that the States General was distracted by other political and military events at the time of Hendrickson's report, and they did reward him "rather handsomely" even though his report was tabled and not dealt with for five years. The DEIC also tabled Hendrickson's report for several years before follow-up action was initiated. Ultimately, his exploration of the Delaware Bay region led to the establishment of

a Dutch fort and trading post in 1633 at the confluence of the Schuylkill and Delaware Rivers, and another fortification near present day Philadelphia. *(O'Callaghan, 1848).*

A side note: *Hendrickson's entire report to the States General, dated August 28, 1616, and apparently written while he was at sea traveling back to Holland with his family, appears verbatim in "The Dutch and Swedes on the Delaware 1609-1664" by Christopher Ward. (Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press. 1930; accessed June 2, 2024 via www.archivesfiles.delaware.gov).*

Before the Hendrickson's departed for Holland, Cornelius sold the *Onrust* to another Dutch explorer, Cornelius Jacobsen Mey, who commonly signed his name as "May" after settling in New Netherland to become its first Director. Although May conducted further explorations of the Delaware Bay (Cape May is named after him), he did not use the *Onrust.* The sale of the *Onrust* to May is the last historical record of the ship. Its fate is unknown. *(New York State Library. New Netherland Institute and Research Center. Cornelius Jacobsen Mey, Director of New Netherland. www.nysl.nysed.gov. March, 2011. Accessed: June 25, 2023)*

After his return to Holland, Cornelius accepted an administrative position with the DEIC and never again participated in a charting expedition, although he continued to produce maps for public display based on information provided by others. He and Sonnetje played an important role years later when they took in their grandchildren, Hendrick and Ida Ede Hendriksz, after the death of the children's parents. Cornelius and Sonnetje co-parented their grandchildren for five years until her death, after which Cornelius cared for the children for many more years until literally a few days prior to his death. As described in Chapter II, Cornelius made arrangements prior to his death for continuation of Hendrick's high school and college education, and for Ida Ede's employment.

For historical accuracy, it is important to note that a Dutch sailor by the name Jan Jacobsz Bens and three companions claimed, in a document written in 1620, to have traveled up Delaware Bay to the mouth of the Delaware River in 1611, three years before Cornelius Hendrickson. Bens claimed that they used a yacht known as the *LJseren Varcken* (*Iron Hog*). The one page document was actually an oral testimony transcribed into the notarial archives of the *Gemeentearchief Amsterdam* (Amsterdam Municipal Nautical Archives). Jacobsz Bens worked for a well-established Rotterdam merchant, Hendrick Eelkens, who according to the testimony, allowed Jacobsz Bens to pursue a rumor about the existence of a *"wondrous bay at the south."* Since New Netherland records clearly identify August 1614 as the launch date for Hendrickson's *Iron Hog*, historians have tended to discounted the Jacobsz Bens' testimony, but also noted that it is likely that other Europeans may have entered the bay prior to Hendrickson, although none did any charting or produced maps. After all, Hendrickson's superiors at DEIC knew about the bay and tasked him with exploring it. It is known that Henry Hudson in 1609 anchored his ship, *Halve Maen* (*Half Moon*), at the mouth of Delaware Bay near present day Cape May, and sent one of his subordinates to investigate the bay in a skiff. Based on the subordinate's description of the shallowness of the bay and its numerous sandbars, Hudson concluded that this waterway was not likely the much sought-after passage to the Pacific. Hudson remained at the mouth of the bay only three days before continuing north to his main destination, which was body of water that bears his name, the Hudson River. Hudson's accounts of this journey, including his

brief layover at Cape May, were widely publicized in Europe. Hendrickson almost certainly studied these reports, including Hudson's description of the entrance to Delaware Bay. *(Morgan M. Henry Hudson Visits Delaware Bay In Quest For Route to the Pacific. Delmarva Now Magazine. www.delmarva.now. September 18, 2021. Accessed June 10, 2024)*

=======

Notes on Initial Encounters of European Colonists and Native Americans: Many histories of the exploration of North America by Europeans portray both Native Peoples and European immigrants as experiencing mutual culture shock and inability to communicate when they first encountered each other in the early 1600s. In reality, and as well understood at that time by Cornelius Hendrickson, Adriaen Block and other explorers, Europeans from various nations had been wandering around the eastern seaboard of the U.S. and Canada for decades prior to the establishment of New Netherland. Most of these early arrivals were fishermen. Irish, Bretons from northwest France, Portuguese, and especially Bosque's from the northern region of Spain had fished the Grand Banks adjacent to Nova Scotia and along the upper coast of New England since approximately 1520, nearly 100 years before New Netherland was established. As we will see later, Christopher Columbus learned about North America from these fishermen. By 1520, the Bosque operated a fishing fleet of 200 boats and several thousand men in these waters. *(Axtell J. At the Water's Edge. Trading in the 16th Century. Essays in the Ethnohistory of North America. New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press. 1988)* Bosque fishermen sometimes wintered in coastal camps and routinely interacted with Native Peoples.

Fishermen's tales of abundant wildlife near to shore stimulated trappers and hunters from North Sea nations to make the trip to Canada and New England. As a consequence, by the time Block and Hendrickson started their explorations, the Native Peoples they encountered had picked up elements of European languages, wore articles of European clothing received in trade, gave their children biblical names (Peter, Paul and Elizabeth were popular), integrated mixed race children fathered by Europeans into their villages, and were relatively familiar with European ways. At first meeting, there may have been culture shock, but it was mostly on the European side. Early European settlers were aware of the indigenous peoples of North America before they landed, but had stereotypical views based on staged encounters on the European side of the Atlantic. (*Savor CO. Sixteenth Century North America. The Land and The People As Seen by the Europeans. Berkley: University of California Press. 1971)*

Historians estimate that at least 300 Native Americans, mostly men, were taken back to Europe by early explorers, including Adriaen Block who transported four to six Natives to Holland every time he returned home. Some of the reverse-travelling Natives were lured by stories of European life, others were tricked with promises of lavish gifts, but most were kidnapped and forced into the journey. By the time the Pilgrims waded ashore at Plymouth in 1620, sightings of North American Peoples were common in European cities. Explorers displayed Native "specimens" during meetings with the investors who they hoped to entice to fund their explorations. Native Americans also were exhibited in theatres or circus-like performances for the general public who paid admission to see *"amerikan aboriginals in their fearsome demeanors and natural forest regalia."* Effort was made to incorporate a few female Natives into Dutch or English society, dressing them in European clothing and teaching them domestic skills. A few others, most prominently Matoaka (i.e., Pocahontas) who was married to Virginia

colonist John Rolfe, were brought to England to demonstrate that a female Native could be a suitable bride for a gentleman.

A side note: *Pocahontas was a nickname derived from Matoaka's playful and mischievous nature. Rolfe preferred Pocahontas to Matoaka because it was easier to pronounce.*

After the novelty wore off or the Natives were no longer useful in fund-raising endeavors, the males were forced into slavery or simply abandoned to the streets. Females were often treated better, but many, including Pocahontas and her young son, caught European diseases and died before returning to their homeland. It is estimated that less than 10% of Native Peoples brought to England or Europe ever returned to North America.

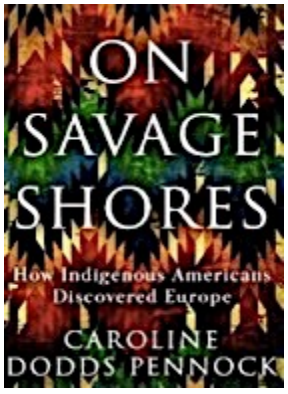
Portrait of Powhatan Princess Matoaka, known in England as Rebecca Rolfe, dressed in English high society fashion. This portrait was used in a 1616 advertising campaign to promote travel to the Virginia colony with the goal of downplaying reports of tribal hostility. In light of this goal, it is odd that the artist depicted the 20-year-old Matoaka as an older women with a stern look. *Stebbins SJ. Pocahontas: Her Life and Legend. National Park Service. U.S. Department of the Interior Publications. 2010.*

Image source: National Portrait Gallery UK. www.npg.org.uk. Accessed: 8/8/2024.

=======

Historian Caroline Pennock of the University of Sheffield estimated that more than 5,000 Native American women, who were wives of early colonists and traders, and their children traveled to England and Northern Europe between 1600 and 1700. These family members were better treated than the indigenous "exhibits" brought across the Atlantic by Block and other explorers. However, more than a few of the spouses and children who survived European diseases were cast out of their homes to fend for themselves, sold into slavery or forced into prostitution after the death of their husbands, or after marriages were dissolved.

A side note: *Beginning with Columbus in the 1490s, thousands of Caribbean and South American Natives were captured in battle or kidnapped by Spanish and Portuguese explorers, pirates and military, and brought to the Mediterranean as labor or sex trade slaves. The Spanish and Portuguese made no pretense of integrating New World natives into Iberian culture.*



***On Savage Shores* describes the willing and unwilling reverse travel from North America to Europe by Native Americans during the early development of Canadian and American colonies.** *Pennock CD. On Savage Shores: How Indigenous Americans Discovered Europe. Washington D.C.: National Geographic Books. 2023.*

There was one other route for Native Americans to reach Northern Europe: as invited emissaries of tribes who wanted to establish or renew trade contracts with England, Holland and France as illustrated below. Occasionally, tribal leaders were allowed to travel to England to petition the Crown concerning contentious issues, and also were treated well.

An article and illustrations in a 1710 London newspaper describing the visit of three Mohawk kings and one Mahican king to London to negotiate the renewal of a beaver pelt and logging agreement. Tribal leaders who participated willingly in trade meetings were wined and dined, provided housing in country villas and promptly returned to their homeland.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 8/9/2024.

=======

Notes on Columbus' Trip to Iceland and Maybe Points West: In August of 1477, Christopher Columbus had completed a commercial voyage to England and Ireland, delivering spices, fabrics and Mediterranean pottery to several ports including Galway on the west coast of Ireland, the final stop. Columbus was intrigued by tales of an abundant land to the west of Iceland that he had heard from Bosque fishing boat captains, and like most educated Europeans, he was aware of Leif Eriksson's journey to Vinland. *(Cohen JM. The Four Voyages of Christopher Columbus: Being His Own Log-Book, Letters and Dispatches with Connective Narrative Drawn From the Life of the Admiral by His Son Hernando Colon and Other Contemporary Historians. New York: Penguin Books. 1969)* Columbus decided to make the 800-mile trip from Galway to Iceland to investigate first hand. Arriving in October, Columbus spent nine months at Ingjladsholl, the site of Leif Eriksson's 10th century village and the main port for the Icelandic fishing fleet in the later half of the 15th century. Columbus questioned fishermen about the fishing beds to the southwest of Iceland, and learned from village elders about Icelander's frequent travels in prior centuries to a forested shoreline to retrieve lumbar that they called Markland (a wooded land; probably Labrador), rather than Vinland, which likely referred to Newfoundland or New Brunswick. (*Johnson K. How Columbus's Winter in Iceland Helped Him Get to America. European Conservative. March 2022*)

As described by his son Ferdinand in a biography, Columbus made two exploratory "ventures to the Southwest, sailing merely more than 100 leagues (roughly 310 miles) beyond Thule" accompanied by Bodvar Jonsson, Ingjladsholl's priest for the local Catholic parish (side note below) and a crew of local sailors. *(Colon F, Keen B, editor and translator. The Life of the Admiral Christopher Columbus by his Son Ferdinand. New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press. 1992).* In the 15th century, European writers often used the word *Thule* (Latin: edge of known world) to describe Iceland and Greenland collectively, although Thule originally was associated only with Greenland during the Viking era of the 9-11th centuries. Iceland and Greenland were linked by an ice sheet for much of the medieval period, which may have led Europeans to perceive them as a single entity. The ice receded in the 15th century, allowing ship travel to resume between the islands. It is unclear if Columbus traveled 100 leagues to the

southwest of Iceland or 100 leagues beyond Greenland. The later would have brought Columbus within 300-500 miles of Labrador, depending on landing site, requiring three to four sailing days, leading to fascinating what ifs in the event the journey continued. Ferdinand Columbus did not shed light on what his father wanted to learn from these journeys, although even at this point in his life, (he was 27 when he visited Iceland), Columbus was already focused on finding a short route to India and China. *(Quinn DB. Columbus and the North: England, Iceland & Ireland. William and Mary Quarterly. 1992; 49(2): 278-297)*

A side note: *Estimates of the speed of 15th century merchant ships indicate that, with favoring winds, a loaded cargo ship on open water averaged four knots (4.4 miles) per hour, or roughly 100 miles per day. For example, Sir Francis Drake routinely noted his daily distance on voyages. He completed one 1100-mile journey with a loaded cargo ship from Plymouth, England to Portugal in ten days. An empty cargo ship, such as the one Columbus sailed to Iceland, could achieve faster speeds, up to 7 knots per hour (7.7 mph), as much as 175 miles per day. This, it is feasible that Columbus and his Icelandic shipmates could have reached Labrador in several days if they had elected to continue. (Casson L. Speed Under Sail of Ancient Ships. Transactions of the American Philosophical Association. 1951; 82(1): 136-148. Accessed June 3, 2024 via www.penelope.uchicago.edu.)*

In addition to explorations with Jonsson, Columbus traveled to the town of Hvalfjardarer to confer with the Bishop of Iceland, Magnus Eyjolfsson, who spoke Italian acquired during his priesthood in Rome. Eyjolfsson had an interest in Markland exploration and reportedly shared logbooks of Icelandic expeditions to the western lands to acquire lumbar. *(Moosmuller OP. (translated by Upton G.) Columbus' Interview With Bishop Magnus in 1477. In: Pre-Columbian Discoverers of America. Chicago: A.C. McClurg Co. 1911. Digitized in 2021 by Heritage History (www.heritage-history.com). Accessed: March 19, 2022)* It should be noted that a few historians have disputed accounts of Columbus' travels to Iceland, contending that he actually sailed to the Faroe or Spitsbergen Islands. This seems unlikely, given Columbus' familiarity with the North Atlantic and North Sea gained during commercial journeys, his famed navigation skills, and the fact that these islands are north of Ireland, not northwest.

This painting in the Ingjladsholl town hall depicts Jonsson orienting Columbus toward Markland (Labrador). Jonsson and Columbus communicated in Latin. Jonsson showed Columbus maps depicting routes to Markland and Vinland (i.e., Newfoundland), which may have led Columbus to conclude that the land mass to the west of Iceland would block sea travel to Asia, which was his ultimate goal.
Image source: Aki Granz, Icelandic artist. 1998. Photographed by K. Johnson. 2022.

A side note: *Iceland converted to Christianity in 1000 and came under the jurisdiction of the Catholic Church, which appointed the first Icelandic Bishop in 1056. (History of the Catholic Church in Iceland. 2019. www.catholica.is. Accessed: March 17, 2022) The Reformation reached Iceland in the 16th century, leading to the demise of Catholic influence on the island and the rise of the Lutheran church, which is now the primary denomination.*

Other Sources for Christopher Columbus' Trip to Iceland

Furstenau SO. Christopher Columbus in Iceland. Icelandic Roots. www.icelandicroots.com. January 5, 2021. Accessed: October 16, 2024.

Gearhart B. Did Columbus and Europe Know about Vinland Before 1492? Medium. www.medium.com. July 5, 2020. Accessed: October 13, 2024.

Ruddock AA. Columbus and Iceland: New Light on An Old Problem. The Geographical Journal. 1970; 136(2): 177-189. www.Jstor.org. Accessed October 11, 2024.

Stefansaon V. Ultima Thule: Further Mysteries of the Artic. New York: MacMillan Company. 1944. Digital version available from Barnes and Noble Nook for the Web. www.nook.barnesandnoble.com. Accessed October 17, 2024.

=======

Here There Be Witches - Mary Molly Reeve Webster (1618-1698); mother of Johanna Anna Webster, wife of Benjamin Goodman Sr.

The Massachusetts witch trials were a sordid chapter in the history of the American colonies, revealing the worst side of religious zeal and the dangerous power of irrational mass hysteria, stoked by articulate fear mongers. Johanna "Anna" Webster (1640-1719) was introduced In the Goodman family lineage table in Chapter II. Anna was the wife of Benjamin Goodman Sr. (1639-1735). Anna's mother was a woman named Mary Molly Reeve who became the catalyst for the witch hysteria that swept the Massachusetts colony in the late 1600s.

A list of several prominent books on the New England witchcraft frenzy appear at the end of Mary Molly Reeve Webster's story.

Mary Molly Reeve (she preferred Molly) was born in Covington, England to poor shopkeepers. At the age of 12, her parents arranged a marriage to 18-year-old William Webster (1612-1688), from an affluent landed family in exchange for a tenet lease on the Webster estate. Molly worked as a domestic at the Webster estate for 12 years, until her marriage was annulled after she bore four children by William, the youngest of which was Anna Webster. The annulment was arranged so William could marry Sarah Waterbury (1618-1655), also from a landed family. Sarah, William, his parents (John and Agnes Webster) and Molly's two oldest children immigrated to Connecticut in 1640 after John Webster was appointed as Governor of the Connecticut Colony. John Webster was a barrister who handled legal affairs and property management for the crown's estates near Nottingham and Leicester. The governorship was apparently a reward for his legal efforts on behalf of the crown. Anna and a sister remained at the Webster estate to be raised by William's grandparents.

After William's departure to Connecticut, Molly was separated from Anna and her other daughter and put out on the street. Two years later, she showed up in Sandwich, England, a seaport town in Kent (southeast England) where she met and married James Skiffe Jr., a ship captain who annually piloted a ship loaded with immigrants to Massachusetts and returned roughly six months later with a cargo of lumber and beaver pelts. James was in town often enough for the couple to have three children. However, in 1652, Molly and James divorced based on infidelity charges filed by James. Indeed, while James was away on his annual voyages, Molly, who by all accounts was quite social and unusually tall with green eyes and auburn hair, had liaisons with several men in Sandwich. After the divorce, Skiffe moved permanently to a coastal community in Massachusetts south of the Plymouth Colony, also named Sandwich, and became a pillar of the community, held governance position and was a successful cooper who made barrels and casks from seasoned wood. Skiffe married and had nine children with his new wife, named Martha, who, ironically, also went by Molly.

After the divorce, Molly Reeve with her three children by Skiffe, wandered back to central England by unknown means, landing in Bedfordshire around 1655, where she met an old suitor (more or less) – William Webster, her first husband, that she married as a literal child bride. It seems that William epitomized the wealthy ner-do-well stereotype. After being divorced by Sarah Waterbury in Connecticut, he was dispatched back to England by his parents to mature under the tutelage of a stern aunt and uncle in Bedfordshire. Molly, willing to let bygones be bygones, soon joined up with William again, and she reconciled with daughter Anna who was

now a teenager. Molly and William remarried and embarked on a tumultuous 33-year relationship. There is no evidence that they had any additional children. Molly and William were evidently both hotheaded, which led to several separations, but they eventually reunited after each spat. Meanwhile, daughter Anna married Benjamin Goodman in 1659, of the formerly wealthy Southill Manor Goodman family discussed in Chapter II. The closing of Southill Manor triggered Anna and Benjamin's immigration to the Virginia Colony in North America.

Molly and William, struggling financially, pleaded with Benjamin Goodman to pay their way across the Atlantic, and he eventually agreed, a significant financial undertaking. In 1668, the Goodman entourage consisting of Ben, Anna, 11 children, Molly and William traversed the Atlantic and landed at Port Royale on the Rappahannock River in Virginia. Dismayed by the crude frontier culture in rural Virginia and horrified by a slave auction they observed near present day Richmond, Molly and William soon departed for New England, which they hoped would provide a more inviting environment.

Molly and William settled in the puritan town of Hadley, Massachusetts, north of present day Springfield on the Connecticut River and remained there for the rest of their lives. As in previous locales, William was indolent, and brought in minimal money with odd jobs. Molly took whatever work she could find in the small community as a seamstress, waitress in a tavern, and housekeeper but the couple often had to relay on food donations from neighbors. Her "red hot temper, hard opinions and feisty nature" soon got Molly into a series of disagreements with members of the community, earning her a reputation of being difficult and unpredictable. Disliked and mistrusted, neighbors began to blame Molly for various odd occurrences such as milk that would not churn, chickens falling down chimneys into the fire, cattle that refused to walk past her house, a tavern patron who became ill after a meal she served, her uncanny ability to cure warts with a secret paste, and having cat scratches on her arms.

In February 1683, the Hadley City Council reported Molly as a "presumed practicer of witchery crafts" to the Northampton Regional Court. After examining a disrobed Molly physically for marks of witchery and then by verbal interrogation, the court decided the evidence was inconclusive, and potentially "could be otherwise explained." Yet, her case was referred to a higher tribunal in Boston. In May 1683, a panel including Governor Simon Bradstreet, the Deputy Governor and nine other administrative officers heard the case against Molly. This panel found that Molly was "likely guilty of spell making and other witchcrafts" and ordered a trial by peers in June. After three days of testimony at the June trial and another disrobed inspection, Molly was found not guilty and released.

Rendition of the June 1683 trial of Molly Reeve on witchcraft charges brought by her Hadley neighbors. Her acquittal led to further harassment and ultimately, violence.
Image source: SlideShare. www.slideshare.net.
Accessed: 5/11/2024.

The verdict was not received well in Hadley and public harassment of Molly increased. Virtually any sickness of sudden onset in the town was attributed to Molly's "black and devious arts." In 1685, a prominent Hadley citizen by the name of Philip Smith, who was the judge of the local court, and also an individual who suffered from gastrointestinal disease for much of his life, suddenly fell ill in the midst of a trial. Smith was confined to bed as he had been many times previously. This time, Smith decided to blame Molly Reeve for his ills, telling friends and his nursemaid that her casting of a "malicious spell" led to his suffering. Smith lapsed into delirium likely due to a spiked fever and cried out that he was in "anguishing pain." His nursemaid claimed that bottles of his medicines disappeared, likely spirited away by the witch Reeve and reported seeing a giant cat in Smith's bed chewing on his leg "as if a morsel from the spit."

During Smith's illness, a gang of Hadley men drug Molly from her house after beating William, intending to hang her, based on the prevailing belief that if a witch's aura is disturbed by pain (i.e., if she is distracted with her own anguish), her spell would be broken or weakened. They tied a noose around her neck and hoisted her off the ground from a limb of a large elm tree across the street from her house. Then they waited for at least four hours although some accounts indicate she hung from the tree over night. When these Puritan men finally considered her sufficiently close to death, or actually dead, they cut her down. Molly was indeed unconscious, but not dead yet. They rolled her body down a hill to a large mound of snow, buried her in it, and then walked away assuming that her body would not be found until a spring thaw. At age 67, Molly was still strong and refused to die. She managed to claw her way out of the mound, and staggered back home to tend to her beaten husband. She did not tell her husband about the attack, and he only found out when a group of teenagers threatened Molly with another hanging as she and William walked to market several days later.

Hadley Puritans attempted to break Molly's evil aura and release Philip Smith from a "cast spell of death" by inflicting great pain, so as to distract her concentration on evil doing. The plan failed and Molly lived to suffer more abuse.
Image source: Smithsonian Learning Lab. Learninglabsi.edu. Accessed: 5/12/2024.

The aura-breaking gambit failed to work. After several days of high fever and probably sepsis, Smith died. Observers of his body reported various odd deformations such as lumps and bulges and claimed that his body bled long after death. Smith's death provoked hysteria among the citizenry. On two occasions shortly after Smith's death, Molly was drug from her house and beaten with sticks, and attempts were made to burn down the tiny house, which failed due to rain and snow fall. Oddly, considering these events, Molly was not referred to court for a new examination of her witchcraft, and Molly pursued no legal action, probably assuming that no good would come of it. William died soon after, but Molly continued to live in Hadley for 13 more years, residing in the same little house, living in poverty. She continued to face verbal abuse, but suffered no more violence.

The events in Hadley caught the attention of Cotton Mather, a Harvard educated Puritan clergyman (minister of Boston's influential Congregationalist Old North Meeting House) and scholar, who began to write and speak in 1687 about the "stupendous spell casting witch Molly Reeve Webster." Mather concluded that Molly was likely responsible for Smith's death and other "dreadful and unexpected deaths and happenings" in Hadley, declaring: "Upon the whole, it appears without question that the witch Reeve had brought a period of torture that ended the life of so good a man." Cotton Mather's writings were catalysts for the arrests of approximately 160 women, men and children, and the trials, torture, and execution of 20 women, one man, several female children and two dogs, for supposed witchery during 1692-1694.

Inspection of a defendant during a Massachusetts witch trial in 1693. Physical deformities, markings, abrasions, bruises and animal claw marks were considered to be indicators of a practitioner of the dark arts.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 5/11/2024.

Beginning with his commentaries on Molly Reeve Webster, Mather's persistent endorsement of witchcraft as the cause of mental illness, disease and accidents was a key factor in stoking the hysteria that gripped Massachusetts in the 1690s. Mather's 1692 book, *"The Wonders of the Invisible World: Tryals of Several Witches Lately Executed in New England"*, provided an unfortunate sense of respectability to the trials. *(Digitized and available from Google Books (www.books.googleusercontent.com). Accessed: May 4, 2023)*

Mather's influential book contained sordid details from the trials of women accused of witchery and later executed by hanging, dunking and stoning. He included a summary of the witch trials and executions during the 1640s in Hartford, and offered a tribute to Mary Reeve Webster, for raising alertness to women who are "susceptible to impurity and unholy thoughts and behaviors." This was the underlying premise for the witch hysteria: male perception that outspoken women, and a few men, were being influenced by the devil and his minions.

In 1982, the Canadian author, Margaret Atwood, published a poem "*Half-Hanged Mary*" that refocused attention on this bleak period in America's colonial history. The poem is organized around each of the many hours that Mary (Molly Reeve) Webster hung from the elm tree.

The poem begins:

7pm
Rumor was loose in the air
hunting for some neck to land on.
I was milking the cow,
the barn door open to the sunset.

I didn't feel the aimed word hit
and go in like a soft bullet.
I didn't feel the smashed flesh
closing over it like water over a thrown stone.

I was hanged for living alone.
For having blue eyes and a sunburned skin,
tattered skirts, few buttons,
a weedy farm in my own name,
and a surefire cure for warts.

Oh yes, and breasts,
and a sweet pear hidden in my body.
Whenever there's talk of demons
these come in handy.

Atwood M. Half-Hanged Mary. Poem Analysis. https://litcharts.com. 2006. Accessed: May 21, 2023.

Atwood took a bit of poetic license in this stanza: Molly did not live alone, and the ragged house was assuredly in her husband's name given Massachusetts property law in the 17th century. However, the poem is an indictment of irrational hysteria and anti-feminism. In 1985, Atwood dedicated the first edition of her novel, *The Handmaid's Tale,* to Mary Reeve Webster:

"*The Handmaid's Tale is dedicated to Mary Reeve Webster because she is an example of a female person wrongly accused. But she is slightly a symbol of hope because they didn't actually manage to kill her. She made it through.*" (*Atwood M. The Handmaidens Tale. New York and Toronto: McClelland and Stewart Houghton Mifflin Harcourt. 1985)*

=======

Notes on Cotton Mather: In addition of his irrational fascination with witches and advocacy for their punishment, Mather was a prolific author of scholarly journal articles, pamphlets and books. He was considered one of the leading men of science in the colonies and advocated systemic, hypothesis-guided exploration of scientific questions (i.e., the scientific method). Mather conducted and published well-respected work on hybridization methods for crops, genetic traits and dominance in plants, and the revolutionary concepts, in the 17th century, of germ theory and vaccination against diseases spread by human contact such as smallpox and measles. The later was an intensely personal issue with Mather after his wife and three children died during a measles epidemic. He was an outspoken advocate for tobacco cessation (pipes, cigars and chaw) and banned smoking in North Church much to the disdain of his congregation. Much of Mather's theory and research on these and other topics was published by the Royal Scientific Society of London, which elected him as a Fellow in 1713, the first colonist to achieve this honor. He also played a key role in the conversion of a small prep school in Saybrook, Connecticut into Yale University in New Haven. Mather never declared himself as an abolitionist (he briefly owned three slaves inherited in an estate dissolution) but had, for that era, open-minded views on the equivalency of all races, employed freed slaves at North Church and castigated Boston leadership for the poor housing available to the Black Freeman population. After a 1724 protest by Black Freeman over segregated and sordid housing, Mather defended

the protest, asking White city commissioners, "would you yourself ever reside within such unhealthy accommodations?" However, Mather's engagement in the persecution of women accused of witchcraft sullied his reputation in the scientific community, blocked his selection as Harvard President, and contributed to intense resistance to his smallpox and measles inoculation plans for the city of Boston, especially among mothers of children. The inoculations were never implemented in his lifetime.

Reverend Cotton Mather, a man of contradictions. He urged the execution of witches, but also advocated a less rigid and less moralistic practice of Puritan faith, which cast him as a progressive within the theological community. He had a strong interest in measures to improve public health, and although not a formally trained physician, published acclaimed medical textbooks that described causes, symptoms and treatments for common health disorders, the first such textbooks written in the colonies. *Silverman K. The Life and Times of Cotton Mather. New York: Welcome Rain Publishers. 2002.*

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Access: 5/12/2024.

=======

Resources that guided exploration of Molly Reeve Webster's story and the witchcraft frenzy:

Baker EW. Storm of Witchcraft: The Salem Witch Trials and the American Experience. New York: Oxford University Press USA. 2015.

Karlesen C. The Devil in the Shape of a Women. Witchcraft in Colonial New England. New York: W.W. Norton & Company. 1998.

Landrigan L. Mary Molly Webster, Witch of Hadley Survives a Hanging. Boston, MA: New England Historical Society (www.newenglandhistoricalsociety.com). April 2017. Accessed: May 21, 2023.

Marshall B. Mary Reeve Webster, Witch of Hadley. Lowell, MA: University of Massachusetts – Lowell Publications. https://faculty.uml.edu//bmarshall/Mary%20Webster.htm. April 2011. Accessed: August 13, 2023.

Mather C. Cotton Mather on Witchcraft. Original: 1696. Reprinted by Dorsett Press, 1991.

Roach ME. The Salem Witch Trials: A Day-By-Day Chronicle of a Community Under Siege. Boulder, CO: Taylor Trade Publishing. 2004.

Roach ME. Six Women of Salem. The Untold Story of the Accused and Their Accusers in the Salem Witch Trials. Boston, MA: De Capo Press. 2013.

Silverman K. The Life and Times of Cotton Mather. New York: Welcome Rain Publishers. 2002.

Smolinski R, Minkema KF. A Cotton Mather Reader. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press. 2022.

Beaver Pelt Economics - Hendrick Willemz Hendriksz (Hendrickson) [1636-1707]

Primary sources of information for the life of Hendrick Willemz Hendrickson included:

Schenck AD. The Rev. William Schenck: His Ancestry and His Descendants. Washington DC: Rufus Darby Publisher. 1843. Re-released by Higginson Book Company (www.higginson.com) in 2015 and also available at WorldCat Digital Library Catalog. www.searchworldcat.org. Accessed: December 2, 2022.

Schenck AD. The Rev. William Schenck: His Ancestry and His Descendants. Washington DC: Rufus Darby Publisher. Updated in 1869 and 1883. Re-released by Higginson Book Company (www.higginson.com) in 2015 and also available at Google Books. (www.books.google.com). Accessed: November 30, 2022.

Sinclair DA and Stakes AL. Hendrickson Genealogy in Monmouth County, New Jersey. Boston: New England Historic and Genealogical Society (www.americanancestors.org). 1936. Available via www.americanancestors.com. Accessed: December 3, 2022.

These sources were supplemented by several books and articles on Dutch New Netherland, the British take-over of the colony, the beaver pelt industry and the transition of Fort Orange from Dutch to English control, which are listed at the end of Hendrick Hendrickson's story.

Hendrick Hendriksz was the grandson of Cornelius Lambert Hendrickson. I could not find a portrait of Hendrick, but a prior history described him as *"tall and robust following more after Mooy Lambert than grandfather Cornelius, who albeit lanky, was slim and refined." (Sinclair and Stakes, 1936)* After Hendrick's parents, Daniel Hendriksz (1604-1640) and Emma van Guilder (1612-1640), died in carriage accident when he was five years old, he and his sister Ida Ede lived with their grandparents (Cornelius and Sennetje Rutger) for 10 years. Shortly before his death, Cornelius arranged for the 15 year old Hendrick to complete high school at an English boarding school to upgrade his English, and also arranged for Hendrick's admission to the University of Glasgow in Scotland. After graduation, Hendrick returned to Holland to attend the University of Leiden Law School where he graduated in 1660. During law school, Hendrick married Gisseltje Alberts (1640-1687). The young couple had a child, but the marriage did not work out, and they divorced in 1662. After law school, Hendrick secured a position with the Dutch West Indies Company (DWIC) in the contract and tariff division. Soon after, he agreed to undertake a three-year assignment in New Netherland to investigate beaver pelt smuggling, which was rampant and a substantial source of lost tariff revenue for the DWIC. Given his recent divorce from Gisseltje, perhaps Hendrick was looking for a change of scenery. His sister, Ida Ede, had already immigrated to New Netherland so there would be at least one friendly face to greet him upon arrival.

On March 24, 1663, Hendrick departed Holland on the *Rooseboom* (Rosetree), which turned out not to be a coincidence, and arrived at New Amsterdam on June 2. *(Tepper M, Fellows-Bailey R. Immigrants to New Netherland. Lists of Passengers 1654-1664. New York Genealogical & Biographical Records. 1974; 94(4): 193-200)* Ida Ede and her new husband, living in Flatbush (preset-day Brooklyn) provided a room for Hendrick in their still under construction home. He lived with them during his first year in the colony, helping with the finishing of the house. This

led to an unfortunate injury for Hendrick. He fell off the roof while hammering shingles and broke his leg. The bone did not set properly, and he walked with a limp for the rest of his life.

Shortly after arrival, Hendrick reported to Peter Stuyvesant, the Director-General of New Netherland to discuss his assignment for the DWIC. Stuyvesant was supportive of the young attorney's plans for detecting smugglers and impressed with his legal training. Stuyvesant asked Hendrickson if he could complete some overdue legal work for the colony and also asked him to join his Council of Nine (that actually had more than 20 members), an advisory group to the Governor representing various constituencies in the colony. Hendrickson agreed to both requests. Stuyvesant had been Director-General of New Netherland since 1647, with its population based in New Amsterdam (lower Manhattan). The entire colony included much of present-day New York, New Jersey, Connecticut and Delaware. Stuyvesant, who previously managed Dutch colonies in the Caribbean for 25 years, was transferred to the floundering colony to restore order after a decade of weak management by the prior Director-General. Stuyvesant did just that, using strong-arm tactics that earned him a tyrant reputation among some colonists who preferred the lax environment of the preceding administration. Thanks to Stuyvesant's efforts, the colony was on solid economic footing in 1663 when Hendrick arrived. The population was expanding with monthly arrivals of new immigrants. (*Cody MW. Peter Stuyvesant: Dutch Leader of New Netherland. New York: Chelsea House. 2013.)* Although a capable administrator, Stuyvesant was also a religious extremist, committed to the supremacy of the Dutch Reformed Church (DRC), with no tolerance for Lutherans, Baptists, Jews and Quakers in particular. Only DRC members were allowed to workshop in public, and he actively sought to prevent organized religious activities by members of other groups.

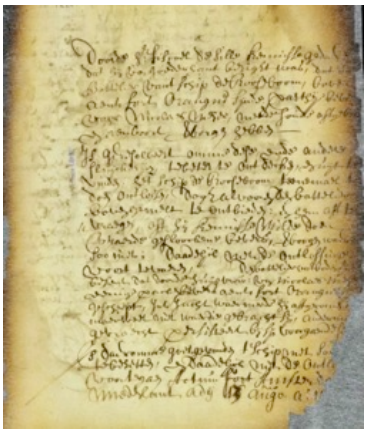
A 1660 portrait of Peter Stuyvesant. He had a 40-year career with the Dutch West India Company managing colonies in the Caribbean, South American and North America and was a veteran of numerous battles with Spanish and British privateers. In 1644, he lost his right leg to a cannonball in a battle to reclaim a Dutch colony on Saint Martin. He used a wooden leg thereafter, adorned with silver nails, earning the nickname: Old Silver Nails. As Director-General of New Netherland, Stuyvesant drove off a Swedish colony in present-day Delaware, claiming the land for Holland, and had constant squabbles with the Governors of Connecticut over boundaries.
Image Source: Media Storehouse. www.mediastorehouse.com. Accessed: 5/17/2023.

New Netherland Colony when Hendrick Hendrickson arrived. The colony is highlighted in brown.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org.
Accessed: 5/18/2023.

Hendrick, who started to use the surname Hendrickson after arrival in New Amsterdam, hired several informants to help investigate the pelt smuggling. Beaver pelts were the most important trade product of the New Netherland colony, driven by European demand for top hats, coats, wraps, sashes, mittens, slippers and boots made from water repellant beaver fur. Between 1640 and 1670, at least 25,000 pelts were shipped annually to Holland and France. Hendrickson soon discovered, as he suspected before he left Holland, that the *Rooseboom's* captain, Pieter Reyersz Van der Beets, and his first mate, under the direction of the ship's owners back in Holland, were key players in the smuggling enterprise.

Like most Dutch transatlantic ships of that era, the *Rooseboom* carried people to the America's on the westward leg, and carried beaver pelts, animal hides for leather products and lumber on the eastward leg back to Europe. After off-loading passengers and their baggage, the *Rooseboom* journeyed up the Hudson River (which the Dutch called the North River in the 1660s) to Fort Orange (near present day Albany), which was the center of the beaver pelt industry in in North America. The pelt industry was controlled by a closely-knit, and heavily inter-married group of Dutch and Mohawk trappers and traders, and a powerful guild, which represented them. At Fort Orange, pelts and hides were loaded under the inspection of a Dutch tariff officer who calculated an exit tax, which was paid by the ship's captain. Back in New Amsterdam, additional pelts acquired in trade with Long Island Algonquin tribes were loaded, inspected and exit taxed. And then the *Rooseboom* sailed east to Europe, or so everyone assumed. However, as Hendrickson's informants (including two *Rooseboom* crew members) reported, the *Rooseboom* made a few stops before clearing North America. Near Montauk, and also along the Connecticut coastline, additional pelts, uninspected and untaxed, were loaded onto the ship. On the other side of the Atlantic, before landing in Amsterdam, the smuggled pelts were off loaded onto small sailboats (i.e., corsairs) to avoid the Dutch port of entry tax.

In the 1660s, there was no way to text, fax or telegraph this information to Dutch authorities so the culprits could be nabbed on the return trip to Europe. Instead, Hendrickson reported the findings of his investigation to Stuyvesant and the Council, and then they waited until the following year, April 1664, when the *Rooseboom* returned to confront the captain and make arrests. Interrogation of Captain Reyersz Van der Beets revealed that ten ship captains and owners were involved in the tax evasion scheme. The order issued by Stuyvesant for New Amsterdam militia to board the Rooseboom to inspect for smuggling appears below.



This document ordered Captain Pieter Reyersz Van der Beets to vacate the *Rooseboom* so militia could inspect the ship for evidence of smuggling. There is no record of what was found, but Reyersz Van der Beets and crewmembers were arrested and shipped back to The Netherlands. The captain was fined an unknown amount of money but soon was appointed captain of another passenger ship. He made at two more round trips to New Amsterdam without incident.

Information and image Source: New Netherlands Council; Dutch Colonial Counsel Minutes: 1638-1665, available from the New York State Archives (www.archives.nysed.gov). Accessed: 5/2/2024.

Hendrickson's report reached the DWIC in September 1664. He recommended tighter cargo monitoring including placing tariff agents on board the ships for the entire round-trip, tagging and numbering each pelt and more exact counting of pelts by independent auditors before departure from the port of New Amsterdam and after arrival in Holland. These recommendations were ultimately enacted, but not by the Dutch. At the same time as Hendrickson's report was carried back to Holland on a returning ship, a British squadron of four frigates, each with 36 cannons, and two smaller sloops carrying 400 soldiers under the command of Richard Nicolls (1624-1672) anchored near the western end of Long Island and sent a surrender demand overland to Peter Stuyvesant. *(Chisholm H. Nicolls, Richard. Encyclopedia Britannica. 11th edition: Vol. 19. Pages 663-664. London: Cambridge University Press. 1911. Available at www.wikisource.com. Accessed: June 26, 2023)*

Nicolls fought in the English Civil War on the royalist side and commanded on-board soldiers (i.e., naval marines) in the Anglo-Dutch Wars. He was hired by a consortium of wealthy English merchants who were concerned that England was falling behind in the race to claim lands and establish trade agreements in North America. Consortium members had the ear of the Duke of York (James) who was the brother of King Charles II, who ascended to the throne after the demise of Oliver Cromwell's Protectorship in 1660. Charles, prone to grandiose promises and actions that rarely worked out, told his brother that he could have all of New Netherland when and if England captured the lands. The when and If statement was the sticking point. England and Holland recently had fought two naval wars to determine supremacy in shipping and access to North America, and the Brits lost both conflicts. The consortium pressured James, (who assumed the throne in 1680) to independently take control of the Dutch colony, which was "minimally defended and there for the taking." James, financially indebted to several consortium members, agreed to hire Nicolls, a freelance military commander, pay the crew and hire 400 mercenary soldiers if the consortium supplied the ships. Funding for leasing of four frigates and two armed sloops was raised, and Nicoll's fleet sailed for North America. The operation was launched without the knowledge of Charles II or other administrators in the Royal Court, and only a few parliament members knew about the venture.

Stuyvesant received Nicoll's capitulation request and conditions on August 28, 1664. Nicoll's terms were lenient – essentially, everything stays the same for New Amsterdam citizens, but the colony name is changed from New Netherland to New York, and I (Nicolls) replace you (Stuyvesant) as Director-General. New Amsterdam residents could keep their land and businesses, would have full rights and liberties as English citizens, would have no British soldiers quartered in their houses, taxes on beaver pelts and other hides would remain the same, religious freedom was guaranteed, all churches could continue to function as usual, all taverns could remain open, Dutch ships could continue to travel between the colony and Europe with no additional taxes, loading and dispensing cargo as before, and administrators and attorneys of the colony could remain as long as they desired or as performance indicated.

With encouragement from his personal attorney, Johannes de Becker, Stuyvesant's initial reaction was to resist even though he could muster 100 soldiers at best and had only a small supply of ammunition. However, the Council of Nine disagreed, arguing that a bombardment from the British ships would destroy the colony they had worked so hard to build. Several Council members leaked the surrender conditions to key merchants in New Amsterdam. On

September 2, 93 merchants led by Stuyvesant's wife and his son approached the Director-General and urged him to accept the British terms. Over de Becker's protests, Stuyvesant finally relented and directed the Council of Nine to work out final details with Nicolls and his staff. Nicolls was thrilled. He had no interest in attacking New Amsterdam and risk destroying a valuable property. In fact, he was due a sizable bonus if New Amsterdam capitulated without conflict. The capitulation treaty was signed on September 6, 1664 and the transition ceremony was held on September 8, 1664 at the fortification wall that Stuyvesant built at the south end of Manhattan, which now marks the beginning of Wall Street.

A depiction by artist Jean Leon Gerome Ferris of the events preceding the surrender of New Amsterdam, reflecting the debate among the colonists before Stuyvesant acquiesced to British terms. Peter Stuyvesant listens to his son on the right and his wife on the left who both encouraged him to avoid armed resistance.

Image Source: The Fall of New Amsterdam. Gettyimages. www.gettyimages.com. Accessed: 5/20/2023.

One task remained for Stuyvesant before he and his wife retired to their 250-acre farm that occupied a large part of what is now Columbia University. The fur trapper guild at Fort Orange (present day Albany, New York) was not happy about the impending transition to British control and had threatened resistance in conjunction with their Mohawk allies. During the surrender negotiations, Nicolls stressed to the Council of Nine that Implementation of the lenient terms of the transition from Dutch to British governance was contingent upon compliance by all Dutch communities including Fort Orange. In spite of these warnings, an incident at a small trading post tested his patience and almost scuttled the negotiations.

On September 4, the Dutch trading post at St. Alms, near present day New Castle, Delaware, fired upon a British detachment sent to investigate the site, eliciting British return fire, resulting in the deaths of a Dutch trader, a Mohawk wife of another trader and a British soldier. An angry Nicolls suspended talks for two days until New Alms was secured and Stuyvesant promised that Fort Orange would respond peacefully. Fort Orange was substantially larger than St. Alms, especially in the fall season when it was crowded with Mohawk and Dutch trappers who returned to the community with their winter and spring catch to fulfill contracts with buyers. In one of his last acts as Director-General, Stuyvesant dispatched Hendrick Hendrickson to Fort Orange to calm fears among the Dutch traders and their Mohawk business partners, and prepare them to peacefully greet one or more ships full of British soldiers who would soon descend upon Fort Orange to raise the Union Jack.

Hendrickson sailed up the Hudson River on September 9, 1664 with Stuyvesant's attorney, Johannes de Decker, two prominent New Amsterdam merchants who traded with Fort Orange and two members of the colonies' militia. Probably nothing in his New Netherland experience prepared Hendrickson for the scene he encountered at Fort Orange, which was called Beverwijck (Beaver District), by its residents in reference to a village with that name behind the fort. The dock and piers in front of the fort were lined with trader's boats and Mohawk canoes as was the shoreline for two miles north and south of the dock. Hendrickson and his companions had to beach their sailboat several miles north of the fort and hike along the

shoreline to reach the front gate of the compound. Once inside, they were immersed in a swarm of European and Mohawk trappers and traders, other merchants, and children running everywhere with mothers and older siblings trying to round them up – in a carnival-like atmosphere with musicians, puppet booths for children, food and drink stalls, displays of weapons, trapping and tanning equipment hawked by vendors, large tables where trappers and buyers negotiated, and a raised platform where wrestlers were cheered on by surrounding crowds. Hudson Valley historians estimate that 3,000 Mohawk and Dutch trappers and traders, their business partners, visitors from New England (early Hudson Valley tourists) and families of the trappers descended on Fort Orange during the fall trading season.

For 9 months a year, Fort Hudson housed 300 people. The community swelled to several thousand in the fall trading season when trappers returned to exchange pelts for commodities.

Image Source: Albany Institute of History and Art. www.albanyinstitute.org. New Netherland Artworks of Len Tantillo. Accessed: 5/22/2023.

Hendrickson's group finally made their way through the throng and reached the main building at the center of the compound know as Beverwijck Hall where Dr. Johannes de la Montagne, the Fort Orange commandant and chair of the Trappers Guild resided and had his business office. Dr. de la Montagne was an interesting character. He was French but received a medical degree from the University of Leiden in 1636. Equal parts healer and entrepreneur, he came to New Amsterdam to open the largest medical practice in the community and also to manage a 400 acre tobacco plantation in Manhattan that encompassed the northern end of present day Central Park and the south end of Harlem. The tobacco enterprise was successful and he became a confident of Peter Stuyvesant who appointed him as commander of Fort Orange and Director of the Trapper Guild. *(Bowers BE. Johannes de la Montaigne. The Old Homestead: History of the Bowers and Allied Families. http://bowershomestead.com/de-la-montagne.html. Accessed: July 14, 2023)*

Much to Hendrickson's surprise, de Decker forcefully urged de la Montagne to resist the British who were likely to sail up the river within the next two weeks. de Decker argued that the trappers' Mohawk allies would rally to the defense and fend off the British, and he contended that because of Fort Orange's isolation, the British would lose interest and focus their attention on New Amsterdam. Of course, de Decker's position ignored the fact that the beaver pelt trade, centered at Fort Orange, was the primary economic engine of the New Netherland colony, and one of the main reasons why the British consortium backing Nicolls wanted the colony.

No living person knows what was said during the remainder of the meeting, but the outcome is known. Attorney de Decker left the meeting an unhappy man. De la Montagne, although disconcerted about the prospects of a British take-over of his pelt trading operation, realized his position was untenable. Bombardment by a 36 gun British frigate would level the compound. He also knew that the Dutch relationship with the Mohawks, a key member of the

Iroquois Six Nation Confederacy, was tenuous, in spite of massive inter-marriage among Dutch traders and Mohawk women, and also among female Mohawk trappers and Dutch merchants. (*Fenton W. The Great Law and the Longhouse. Political History of the Iroquois Confederacy. Norman OK: Univ of Oklahoma Press. 1998)* His spies had informed him that Confederacy leaders had made overtures to British politicians in New England about shifting their alliance away from the Dutch. Indeed the Confederacy and the Mohawks would soon become the main tribal ally of the British in North America, a relationship that would last 125 years. *(Graymont B. The Iroquois in the American Revolution. Syracuse NY: Syracuse University Press. 1972)*

Once de Decker relented, Hendrickson prepared the terms of capitulation and decided to remain at Fort Orange until a British detachment arrived. However, Hendrickson soon learned that de Becker was meeting independently with Mohawk leaders and influential Dutch traders to drum up support for overthrowing de la Montagne. Dr. de la Montaigne was informed and de Becker was placed under house arrest. The fall trading festival was suspended, and all but the most trusted trappers and merchants were sent away. A British frigate with 100 soldiers arrived on the morning of September 24, 1664 under command of Colonel George Cartwright. Hendrickson, de la Montagne and Cartwright reviewed the articles of capitulation and the later two signed the document that afternoon. Dr. de la Montaigne, the handful of Dutch soldiers at the Fort, members of Hendrickson's original travel party and de Decker sailed back to New Amsterdam on the frigate while Cartwright and his soldiers took control of the site. Cartwright asked Hendrickson to stay at Fort Orange to coordinate meetings among the Dutch and Mohawk trappers, their principle buyers, the tax agents and British officers who would manage the Fort. In early December, Hendrickson finally left Fort Orange and sailed back to New Amsterdam (now New York). In New York, the new Governor Nicolls rebuked de Decker for inciting resistance at Fort Orange and banished him from the colony for six years. After the banishment, de Decker could only return to his 160-acre farm on Staten Island and was not allowed to enter the city. de Decker went back to Holland, devoted his time to writing two books criticizing Stuyvesant and de la Montaigne, and then returned to Staten Island in 1671 where he died from unknown causes shortly after arrival. *(Clute JJ. Old Families of Staten Island. New York: Clearfield Printing. 2013. Accessed: June 5, 2024 via www.genealogy.com. Also available at Google Books. www.books.google.com)*

Hendrick Hendrickson resumed his monitoring of beaver pelt smuggling, now working for both the British port authority and the DWIC, which was allowed to continue commerce within the colony with a cut of the revenue for the Crown. Hendrickson also did legal work for Peter Stuyvesant involving real estate transactions, and found time to take a bride, Jane Suitgirt Luitgirt. Hendrick and Jane bought a house in Flatbush on the street where his sister Ida Ede lived. When Hendrick's three-year anti-smuggling assignment concluded in 1666, he was offered a position as the Chief Tax Assessor for a Caribbean Dutch colony. Stuyvesant urged him to accept the job, extolling the virtues of island life, but Hendrick declined the position and resigned from the DWIC. Instead, he and Jane sold their house, and had their belongings shipped to …. surprise, Beverwijck, now renamed as Albany in honor of a royal benefactor in England (a Lord Albany) who was pouring money into the community on the Hudson.

In Albany, Hendrick set up a law practice, which served the Duke of Albany, local citizens, New York merchants, and members of the Mohawk tribe who owned property in Beverwijck in conjunction with their Dutch in-laws. Over the next 20 years, Hendrickson became a prominent citizen, serving on the commissioner's council several times and also serving on community planning committees. Jane Luitgirt was appointed as town librarian in a new facility funded by the Duke of Albany and also was involved in placing abandoned mixed race (Mohawk-Dutch) children with Beverwijck families, including, possibly, their own household. Hendrickson's original will, written in 1677 mentions three "taken in children" in his household. Funds were set aside for Jane's nurturance of these children, but there was no further reference to these children in subsequent editions of the will. All four of Hendrick and Jane's children were born in Albany including William Hendrickson who was Okey Hendrickson's grandfather.

In 1692, shortly after Jane's death, Hendrick and his children, who were now teenagers and young adults, moved to Monmouth County, New Jersey for a brief period during which Hendrick purchased 500 acres of land that he sold three years later for a tidy profit. In 1693, Hendrick moved to adjoining Middlesex County where he purchased 1500 acres in five plots near present day New Brunswick. In his final will, dated 1706, Hendrick allocated four plots to his children and the fifth plot, where he lived, was identified as the family homestead for purchase by whichever child wanted it. Most of the 1500 acres ultimately became the campus of Rutgers University in New Brunswick when a Hendrickson descendant in 1766 sold four of the parcels to the Dutch Reform Church of New Jersey, which established Queens College on the site, named for the 22 year old Queen Charlotte of Great Britain and Ireland. Queens College was renamed Rutgers College in 1825 after Henry Rutgers, a Revolutionary War hero and successful New York businessman, donated substantial money to ensure the college's solvency. Henry Rutgers' great-great-grandfather was the brother of Cornelius Hendrickson's wife, Sennetje Rutgers. Sennetje's brother was a faculty member and provost at Utrecht University in Holland. The seal, motto and charter of Rutgers University were largely based on Utrecht University. *(McCormick RP. Rutgers: A Bicentennial History. New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press and Rahway, NJ: Quinn and Boden Co. 1966. Accessed from Internet Archives (www.archives.org on May 27, 2024)*

Hendrick apparently did not continue his law practice in New Jersey. Instead he opened a sundry store (i.e., a colonial convenience store) that included a tavern and roadhouse that he operated in collaboration with his daughter Francyntje (Francy; 1671-1750) until his death in 1707. Hendrick and Jane's children remained in the New Brunswick area, as did most of their offspring. As a consequence, Hendrickson remains a common family name in central New Jersey in 2025. Hendrick Hendrickson was the first person in our Hendricson line that elected to live permanently in North America. Great grandson Okey Hendrickson (1734-1830) began the westward movement of the family when he relocated his family to Kentucky in 1794.

=======

Notes on Historical Sources for Pelt Smuggling and British Capture of Fort Orange: Much of what is known about Hendrick Hendrickson's interventions to minimize pelt smuggling and his involvement in the negotiations to effect a non-violent transfer of Fort Orange from Dutch to British control are based on reports he submitted to the DWIC and also to the Dutch parliament (States General) in 1664. As with Cornelius Hendrickson's maps and logs, these documents are

maintained in the Amsterdam Municipal Archives, a section of the Dutch National Archives known as *Archives of the States General*, and the *Archives of the Old West Indies Company* at The Hague. Testimonial accounts of the surrender of Fort Orange and transference documents appear in *Gehring CT (translator and editor) Fort Orange Records and Civil Minutes, 1656 – 1678; Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University Press, 2000*. Accounts of pelt smuggling strategies, and efforts to stop it are described in a 2012 dissertation and subsequent publication by Kimberly Todt of Cornell University titled*: Countries Without Borders – Markets With Opportunities. Dutch Trading Networks in Early North America, 1624-1670.* Other information sources that informed the description of pelt trading and the British acquisition of the Dutch colony are listed on page 224.

=======

Notes on the Beaver Pelt Industry: The Mohawk tribe and the smaller Mahican tribe inhabited the Hudson River Valley for thousands of years before Dutch/English explorer Henry Hudson anchored his boat, the *Half Moon*, near present day Albany in 1609, the first European explorer since Giovanni da Verrazzano in 1525 to visit the river. At that time, Europe was in the grip of the Little Ice Age, with year-round cold temperatures and endless rain, stoking demand for warm and water-repellant clothing. Hudson noted that beaver were literally everywhere – "on the river, marshes, shores, grasses, forests." Following Hudson's reports, hundreds of mostly Dutch trappers and traders made their way to the Hudson River over the next 20 years, leading to the establishment of Fort Orange by the New Netherland colony in 1624.

Sensing an economic opportunity, virtually all of the Mohawk clans required Dutch traders to take Mohawk wives as a means to build long-term trading partnerships. These marriage alliances ensured continual flow of much desired European goods into the clan, and at the same time, discouraged Dutch traders from establishing partnerships with other Mohawk clans or other tribes within the Iroquois Confederacy. It is estimated that Mohawks accomplished 80% of the beaver trapping, and a fairly extensive number of these trappers were women. To cement trade alliances, female Mohawk trappers were also encouraged to take husbands among the Dutch traders who lived in Beverwijck or with beaver pelt exporters in New Amsterdam who periodically traveled to Fort Orange. About 20% of the trapping was done by Dutch men, who preferred to do it themselves rather than relying on Mohawk trappers. These independent trappers made agreements to only hunt and trap in designated areas, and often these agreements were sealed with marriage to Mohawk or Mahican women. In addition to business alliances, these marriages also produced a large number of mixed race children, many of whom grew up to become trappers themselves if they largely remained with their tribal clan, or grew up to be traders if they gravitated to their father's side of the relationship.

Beverwijck was substantially impacted by the marriage strategy in that many of the Mohawk-Dutch couples elected to build or buy homes in Beverwijck, and raise their families within that community. Additionally, during the fall trading festival, hundreds of Mohawk and Mahican trappers and traders came to Beverwijck to live with their Dutch relatives. As the festival grew in scope, many clans found it more convenient to purchase homes, working through their Dutch in-laws, for use during the August – October trading season. Several hotels were built in Beverwijck to accommodate vendors, entertainers and merchants from New Amsterdam and Europe. These were likely the first hotels in North America outside of Boston.

The business of beaver pelt trading was not accomplished as often depicted in films. Trappers and buyers did not barter over price. Instead, trappers signed contracts with buyers during the fall trading festival which stipulated the number of pelts and other products, such as deer, fox and wolve hides, to be delivered by the following August – October using a set product to goods exchange rate. For example, ten pelts were typically exchanged for a four foot rifle or a set of European axes; eight pelts were exchanged for a set of metal cooking kettles; six pelts equaled a head to toe set of men's clothing or a high quality six inch knife; four pelts equaled a full length mirror or a European musical instrument, etc. The negotiations that Hendrickson observed when he entered Fort Orange were centered on what exchange items each Mohawk clan wanted for the beaver pelts and other hides they agreed to deliver the following year. Trappers would hunt and collect pelts from November through April when fur was the thickest, women of the clan would scrape and prepare the skins over the summer, and then the trappers and their families would return to Fort Orange in the fall to collect their goods. Traders and export merchants traveled to Fort Orange with a huge inventory of products to be exchanged for the designated numbers of pelts.

=======

In addition to publications cited in the text, the sources below guided exploration of Hendrick Hendrickson's story, the beaver pelt industry and the fall of Dutch New Netherlands.

Buckland JH. The First Traders on Wall Street: The Wiechquaeskeck Tribe of Southwestern Connecticut. Westminster: Heritage Books. 2009.

Gehring CT. New Amsterdam. Colonial Wars of North America, 1512-1763. New York: Routledge. 2015.

Jacobs J. New Netherland: A Dutch Colony in Seventeenth Century America. Leiden: Brill Academic Publishers. 2005.

Lee G, Thorpe F. English Conquest of New Netherland, 1655-1664. The History of North America. Vol. 4, pgs. 117-146. Cambridge: Harvard Press. 1904. Digitized and available from On Demand Books (www.ondemandbooks.com) and Amazon Books. Accessed: March 2, 2023.

Marwick D. Possessing Albany, 1630-1710. The Dutch and English Experiences. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press. 1990.

Matson C. Damned Scoundrels and Libertism of Trade. Freedom and Regulation in Colonial New York's Fur and Grain Trade. The William and Mary Quarterly. 2001; 51: 347-372.

Motley JL. History of the United Netherland. New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers. 1867. Digitized 2018. Available from www.books.google. Accessed: January 19, 2023.

O'Callaghan EB. History of New Netherland, or New York Under the Dutch. NY: Appleton & Company; 1848. Available from Internet Archive. www.archive.org. Accessed: January 20, 2023.

Schmidt B. Innocence Abroad: The Dutch Imagination and The New World; 1570-1670. Cambridge: University Press. 2001.

Weslager CA. Dutch Explorers, Traders and Settlers in the Delaware Valley, 1609-1664. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press. 1961. Digitized and available via The Ohio Digital Library (www.ohdbks.overdrive.com). Accessed: March 11, 2023.

The Morgan's Go West - Morgan (1688-1767), Catherine (1692-1773) and Zack (1734-1795)

The primary informational sources for the history of the Morgan family in Wales and North America appear on pages 154-155. Several books and articles on the Delaware Colony and the establishment of the state of West Virginia are listed at the end of the Morgan family story.

As described in Chapter II, Morgan Wilm Morgan was unusually well educated considering the modest circumstance of his childhood in Wales. No portraits of Morgan appear to exist, but he was described as robust. Records of the Gog Magog Games, an annual sporting festival for students at Cambridge College so named because they occurred in the Gog Magog Hills near the campus, note Morgan's participation in an array of competitions: oars (rowing), swimming, lawn bowling, wrestling, and football, the later a precursor to Rugby played on rural roads that involved kicking and carrying, but not passing, a large ball toward a designated goal, often a gate to a country estate. Morgan also was listed as a participant and winner in several events of the annual Cotswald Olimpick Games, a 17th and 18th century multi-sport festival, originated in 1612 and sponsored for decades by a prominent attorney and businessman, Robert Dover. Dover graduated from Cambridge and likely was also involved in the establishment of the Gog Magog Games, much to the consternation of university administration who deplored the students' enthusiasm for these *"vain and needless"* athletic contests and associated social events, which led to *"intellectual idleness, neglect of studies, and divers other misdemeanors." (Goode A. College Archivist. The Gog Magog Olympics at Cambridge. The Emmanuel College Blog. www.emma.cam.ac.uk. February 9, 2022. Accessed: June 12, 2024)*

The Cotswald Olimpick Games were conducted in central England during Spring Bank Holidays, which gave workers several four-day weekends in April and May each year. For these holidays, lenders, barter markets, horse, sheep and cattle auction houses, and other financial institutions of that era were closed on Friday and Monday to reduce attempts to conduct business. *(Clarke S. Olympus in the Cotswolds: The Cotswold Games and Continuity in Popular Culture, 1612-1800. International Journal of the History of Sport. 1997; 14(2): 40-66)* To host events, two amphitheaters were constructed near the bucolic village of Cotswald and another along a nearby lake. Each venue was surrounded by food and entertainment booths, pop-up taverns, stages for theatrical performances, and large camp sites to house athletes and attendees. Morgan participated in the Games in three different years between 1706 and 1711 and was recognized as an individual champion in field running (probably a type of cross country event; 1706 and 1708), large man wrestling (1708), and with Cambridge teammates, two oars (rowing) events in 1709. Winners of individual events received five pounds, which is approximately $400 in 2023. *(Burns FDA. Heigh for Cotswold! A History of Robert Dover's Olimpick Games: A New and Revised Edition. London: Robert Dover's Games Society, and Harry Righton and Evesham. 1981)* The Cotswold Games continued, almost annually, until 1852 when they were cancelled because of rowdiness within the campsites. The Games were re-activated in 1963 as a summer festival and continue to this day.

A side note: *A Cotswald legend is that William Shakespeare, an acquaintance of Robert Dover, the Games founder, contributed poems to the Annalia Dubrensia, (Annals of Dover) an annual collection of poems written in celebration of the Cotswold Games, and also wrote advertisements for commercial products that appeared in the Games program that was sold to*

spectators. (Williams J. The Curious Mystery of the Cotswold "Olimpick" Games: Did Shakespeare Know Dover, and Does it Matter? Sport in History. 2009; 29(2): 150-170)

Morgan Wilm Morgan was a participant in a premier sporting festival of 18th century England: the Cotswald Games. Up to 30,000 people attended competitions including wrestling, bare knuckle boxing, fencing, weightlifting, hammer and pike throwing, running, rowing and swimming.

This image is a woodcut depicting the Cotswold Games that appeared as the cover of the Annalia Dubrensia. Wikimedia Commons. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 6/11/2024.

Quaker records in Delaware, Morgan's first destination in North America, also noted his participation and accomplishments in swimming and rowing at the Christiana Summer Sport and Gaming Festival including *"third finisher in the Midsummer Eve Race crossing the Delaware"* in 1716, and *"M Morgan six man crew has top spot in 10 league bay race"* in 1717. *(Weiner R, Arnold JR. Delaware: The History of the Delaware Colony, 1638-1776. Heinemann and Raintree Publications. 2004)*

Morgan apparently traveled to Delaware from England in 1713 with an assignment from the Royal Court: investigate financial malfeasance within the administrative offices of the Colony. I could find no record of any report filed by Morgan, therefore, it is unclear if he carried out his assignment or not. It could be that he submitted his findings but like many documents of that era, they were destroyed or lost over the past 300 years. It is known that Morgan quickly settled into the Delaware villages of Christiana, where he built a house, and nearby Wilmington, where he worked. Within a few years, he emerged as a leading citizen. With his new wife, Catherine Garretson (1692-1773), he opened a mercantile store, which included a tailoring shop run by Catherine. Morgan, who apparently had an interest in fashion, contributed to the shop by creating felt hats and beaver adorned topcoats for customers. Catherine also functioned as a clerk and bookkeeper in the store where local citizens could buy household goods and *"elegant, high style clothing"* shipped from Europe or *"made here on premise to your wishes." (Weiner, 2004)*

Morgan functioned as a middleman in the beaver pelt industry, working with the Lenape tribe in New Jersey to arrange sales with European buyers. In 1719, he was appointed as the chief coroner for the Colony, and in 1721 was appointed as a judge on the highest court in Delaware. Additional, he was sufficiently connected to become the personal attorney for Governor and Lieutenant Governor of Pennsylvania, handling real estate transactions, deeds and wills, and also handling commonwealth litigation, mostly foreclosures and boundary disputes. By all accounts, Morgan and Catherine were doing well in their new Delaware home. The Morgans had sufficient wealth to pay the fare for numerous relatives to journey across the Atlantic to North America including Morgan's uncle and family, who were Quakers and settled in Berks

County, Pennsylvania. This sponsored family including Sarah Morgan (1698 – 1770) who was Daniel Boone's mother. *(Faragher JM. Daniel Boone: The Life and Legend of an American Pioneer. New York: Holt. 1992; Spraker HA. A Genealogical History of the Descendants of George and Mary Boone Who Came to America in 1717. Rutland, VT: The Tuttle Company Publishers. 1922. Digitized edition produced in 2018 available from Amazon Book Clubs)*

Morgan and Catherine adopted four children who were orphans of fellow colonists and also a mixed race child of a female Lenape trapper and an English trader. Morgan family histories contend that this child was David Morgan, who would become a famous frontiersman and tutor of George Washington as described in Chapter II. No evidence of this adoption could be found, although descriptions of David in prior Morgan family histories used code words for Native ancestry: "ruddy, inscrutable, severe black hair." If true, David Morgan would have been among thousands of mixed race children who blended into families of early colonists.

It also appears that Morgan and Catherine were engaged with the Wilmington Friends Meeting House for the bulk of their time in Delaware, somewhat surprisingly considered Morgan's Church of England training. Catherine was more engaged on a day-to-day basis, but Morgan was noted in Meeting House records as a frequent benefactor, contributing funds to pay for building expansion and for member travel to regional Quaker meetings. Much of what we know about the Morgans and their activities in Delaware is based on Quaker records from the Wilmington Meeting House, which, as usual, were quite thorough. (*History of Wilmington Friends Meetings. Wilmington Monthly Meeting of the Religious Society of Friends. www.wilmingtondefriendsmeeting.org. Accessed: August 7, 2023)*

In spite of their success, Morgan and Catherine decided in 1730 to leave Delaware. Apparently it was a rather abrupt decision. The mercantile and pelt businesses were hastily sold to Catherine's brother and a family friend respectively, and Morgan resigned his three other jobs (coroner, judge and Pennsylvania Commonwealth legal counsel) on the same day: February 11, 1730. What was the attraction? In 1730, the General Assembly of the Virginia Commonwealth enacted a land parcel act to promote movement of people into the northwestern region of the state now know as West Virginia (WVA). The act handsomely compensated real estate developers for every family unit they attracted to the newly opened "Western Virginia Colony". Family units (defined as husband, wife, and at least three children) who selected an available plot of five to ten acres and improved it for three years were eligible to receive a deed for up to 1000 acres. A real estate development company headed by Alexander Ross and Bryon Grant were awarded a contract by the General Assembly to spearhead the population effort. The contract stipulated that Ross and Grant would receive the 2023 equivalent of 1.5 million dollars if they settled 100 families in the new colony by 1735. Ross and Grant focused their recruitment efforts on English, Dutch and Swedish residents in the Delaware Colony (Reminder: Sweden originally established the Delaware settlement, but Peter Stuyvesant merged it into New Netherland, and then the British took over in 1664). It appears that Ross and Grant were convincing salesmen. Morgan and Catherine were among several Delaware families who decided this opportunity was too good to pass up. Within weeks of resigning his jobs, Morgan and several friends were on their way to the newly opened territory to scout potential acreage. *(Rice O, Brown S. West Virginia: A History (2nd ed.). Lexington: University of Kentucky Press. 1994)*

The map on page 61 in Chapter II indicates the area of land available for settlement in the northeast panhandle of present day West Virginia. Morgan's explorations in the spring of 1730 led him to select a nine-acre parcel on Mill Creek, a rapidly flowing tributary of the Opequon River suitable for a gristmill and navigable all the way to Winchester, Virginia, a major trading center in that era. He soon after submitted his claim to the Ross and Grant WVA Land Development Consortium. Mill Creek runs through the present day community of Bunker Hill, West Virginia (WVA), which Morgan and Catherine founded when they moved with seven of their children to that location in March 1731.

Morgan and Catherine were the first settlers to submit their provisional claim to the Ross and Grant Consortium, and also the first to be approved by the Land Development Office of the Commonwealth of Virginia. This claim is the historical basis for the assertion found in many textbooks that Morgan and Catherine were the first European settlers in West Virginia. However, unrelated to the Virginia Commonwealth program, several families of German-speaking immigrants had settled in an area of West Virginia along the Potomac River in 1717 known as Potomke among local tribes. It was originally renamed New Meckenlinburg by these German settlers. The settlement was not permanent; families came and went, and the small village was unoccupied by Europeans from 1729–1735 until a group of Scottish settlers arrived and stayed. The Scottish families later changed the name of the community to Shepherdstown. Thus, the Morgan settlement that became Bunker Hill technically was not the first West Virginia settlement, but it was the first continuously occupied community in the new territory.

In 1734, after building a cabin, barn, stables, cattle pen and a rudimentary grist mill on the provisional property, which Morgan and Catherine named Rockdale Spring Farm, the Morgans were granted a permanent deed to 1,000 acres adjacent to their original homestead.

This cabin was constructed by Morgan and Catherine Morgan in 1731 in the community of Bunker Hill in Berkeley County, WVA. The cabin was destroyed during a 1756 battle in the French and Indian War, but re-built by Zack Morgan in 1758 using wood from the original structure. The nine-acre Morgan property is a WVA state park with hiking trails, a historical exhibit, and a park alongside Mill Creek with monuments commemorating Morgan family contributions to West Virginia.

Image source: Library of Congress. www.loc.gov. Title: The Morgan Cabin, home of WVA's first known permanent white settler in the Torytown area of Berkeley County. Accessed: 6/18/2023.

Nothing in their background suggests that Morgan and Catherine had the skills to establish and manage a 1000-acre farm on the frontier, but they gave it a go for the next 20 years. As best as can be determined, the farm was a middling success, and did not develop to full potential until Morgan deeded the entire property to son Zackquill (Zack) in 1758. Zack's first action was to purchase additional land adjacent to Rockdale Spring Farm that was more suitable for agriculture. Primarily farming on the more fertile new acreage, Zack expanded crop volume and variety, constructed a better gristmill, purchased two boats to increase produce shipment to Winchester and other markets, and as a result, substantially increased the operation's profitability during the next several decades. Morgan and Catherine continued to live in the re-

built Bunker Hill cabin. Zack built a more elaborate two-story home for his own family at Rockdale Spring Farm.

The blue structure is Zack Morgan's original house built in 1760 after he assumed control of the farm. The brick expansion was added in 1783 after he returned from the Revolutionary War.

Image source: WikiMedia Commons. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. *Accessed: 6/20/2023.*

Although Morgan and Catherine's farming venture produced marginal outcomes, they were successful in other activities. Morgan held a number of magistrate positions in the rapidly developing Western Virginia Territory including serving for ten years on a circulating judge panel that moved from community to community to hear cases. Morgan opened a tavern in Bunker Hill in 1739 and obtained the first liquor license in WVA history. He threw himself into county and territorial politics, winning and losing elections for a variety of positions during the 35 years he lived in Bunker Hill. Although Morgan appears to have had no military training or experience, he managed to create and then get himself appointed the captain of a local militia unit that was established in 1746 and convinced his wife to make uniforms for the corps of 17 men. Catherine stitched the name *Mountain Men* over the breast pocket of each militia shirt and also created several flags for the unit with the words *Mountain Men* stitched under an outline of a mountain. During George Washington's time as an surveyor apprentice for David Morgan (1749-1752), they would often journey to Bunker Hill to finalize maps and re-provision. Several Washington biographies mention his enjoyment of watching Bunker Hill Mountain Men militia during Sunday afternoon marching drills and marksmanship exhibitions, and the *"levity of the following musical promenade where militia would shed arms for fiddle, drum and fife for the enjoyment of all on the green." (Hofstra WR. George Washington and the Virginia Backcountry. Madison, Wis: Madison House Pub. 1998)*

Perhaps inspired by the uniform production, Catherine resumed her tailoring business, working out of a room in the tavern, and she also served on a commission that oversaw the primary school in the village. Foretelling a current trend, Catherine annually made two sets of school uniforms for each child (for warm and cold weather) so no child would be embarrassed about their tattered or grimy attire. Catherine and Morgan were both involved in the establishment of the Christ Episcopal Church near Bunker Hill, considered to be the first church in WVA, a fairly large spiritual leap from Quakerism, but perhaps represented a return to the theological training that Morgan completed in London. One of Morgan and Catherine's sons, Morgan Morgan II, completed Episcopalian training in England, Virginia and Maryland, and returned to become the lead minister of the Bunker Hill congregation, a position he held for over 30 years. In total, Morgan and Catherine had ten children, six of their own including Zackquill (Zack) Morgan (1734-1797) and four adopted, likely including the aforementioned David Morgan (1721-1813). Along with his parents, Zack is considered as the principle founder of WVA.

Zack Morgan (1734-1795)

Zack was the only child of Morgan and Catherine to be born in West Virginia. He was sent east for his "proper upper education." At age 13, Zack arrived at the Academy of Philadelphia, and returned to WVA six years later at age 19. The Academy was re-chartered as the College of Philadelphia in 1754, one year after Zack's departure, and became the University of Pennsylvania in 1791. Benjamin Franklin was the President of the Academy during the last three years of Zack's time at the school. It is not clear if they ever met. Zack and his older brother David both served in the Bunker Hill militia established by his father, which provided the pathway for their participation in several battles during the French and Indian Wars of the 1750s. These military experiences included the ill-fated campaign to capture Fort Duquesne, near present day Pittsburgh, from the French (i.e., Braddock's Defeat) that is described in Chapter II. Five of the 17 Bunker Hill militia who served under Braddock in that campaign were killed and two were captured by Potawatomi tribesmen, allies of the French, and later ransomed for rifles.

Morgan family histories contend that after returning from the Braddock Campaign, Zack had a long relationship with an unnamed mixed race women who traveled with a Miami clan in Ohio and Indiana. Zack met this women on a hunting trip in Ohio when his party sought refuge in her Miami village during a snowstorm. Zack apparently visited this women, whom he described as his common law wife, several times annually for ten years until the relationship dissolved for unknown reasons. These histories contend that this relationship produced two children and lasted until just before Zack married Drusilla Springer (1740-1796) in 1765. I found no evidence of this relationship, but acknowledge that is unlikely that documentation would exist for common law marriages, which were frequent on the frontier.

Unlike Morgan Morgan's wife, Catherine Garretson, I was not able to uncover much information about Drusilla Springer. It is known that Drusilla was originally from New Jersey, moved to WVA with her family as an adolescent, and came from a family with a long line of ministers (one of her nephew's was the family minister for Abraham Lincoln and Mary Todd). Zack and Drusilla's household grew to 13 children including James Morgan, a leading abolitionist and free state proponent for West Virginia who was assassinated for his beliefs by a pro-slavery gang, and the famous frontiersmen Levi Morgan.

While managing the Rockdale Spring Farm, Zack continued to serve in the Bunker Hill militia, and was elected as its captain on multiple occasions. At the onset of the Revolutionary War in 1776, the now 24 member Bunker Hill militia was integrated into a newly constituted 11th Virginia Regiment, comprised of 400 frontiersman who were selected because of their combat experience during the French and Indian War and other conflicts with Native Peoples, and because of their use of rifled rather than smoothbore muskets that allowed accuracy at great distances. Most of the unit's members, including Zack and David, were middle-aged or older men, 40 to 60 years old. This Colonial army regiment was commanded by the then Colonel Daniel Morgan (yes - that guy from the other Morgan family), and the unit was referred to as the Virginia Riflemen. Zack, with 20 years of militia experience, was appointed as a company commander within the regiment. The Riflemen fought in numerous skirmishes and battles against the British during 1776 - 1779, earning notoriety for their deadly long distance

marksmanship. *(Higginbotham D. Daniel Morgan: Revolutionary Rifleman. Chapel Hill, NC: Univ of North Carolina Press. 1961)*

In June 1777, the Riflemen were sent to northern New York as part of an colonial army commanded by Generals Horatio Gates and Benedict Arnold (before his defection to the British) to stop a British invasion from Canada. Near Saratoga, New York, Colonel Daniel Morgan and his Riflemen Regiment were instrumental in defeating the British over the course of an 18-day battle fought in the hilly forests of upstate New York. This terrain particularly suited Zack, David and the other frontiersmen. Taking the lead in the conflict, however, wreaked a heavy toll on the Rifleman: fifty percent of Zack's company were killed or wounded in the battle. Zack miraculously survived several gunshots, one of which clipped off the top of an earlobe and another tore through his hat, but only grazed the top of his head.

Depiction of the Virginia Riflemen, heading to confront the British advance at Saratoga. Zack Morgan was a company commander in the 400-man unit recruited from Western Virginia and Kentucky. *Ketchum RM. Saratoga: Turning Point of America's Revolutionary War. New York: John Macrae/Henry Holt Publishers. 1999.*

Image source: WikiMedia Commons. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. *Accessed: 6/21/2023.*

In his post-action report to Washington and the Continental Congress, Gates wrote: *"too much praise cannot be given to the Virginia Riflemen Regiment commanded by Colonel Morgan."* The British surrender at Saratoga is generally considered to be a turning point in the war, convincing the French and other European governments that the Colonists were actually capable of defeating the British, leading to a dramatic increase in European funding for the war effort and direct French military involvement. (*Mintz MM. The Generals of Saratoga: John Burgoyne and Horatio Gates. New Haven: Yale University Press. 1990)*

This painting by John Trumbull depicts the British surrender at Saratoga. The figure in white buckskin to the right of General Horatio Gates represents Colonel Daniel Morgan, leader of the Virginia Riflemen.

Image source: WikiMedia Commons. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. *Accessed: 6/22/2023.*

After Saratoga, Zack and David Morgan continued to serve with the Riflemen under Colonel Morgan for two more years through dozens of skirmishes in New York, Pennsylvania and New Jersey. In December 1779, the Riflemen Regiment was decommissioned after the British barricaded their Northern Army in a defensive position within New York City, and Colonel Daniel Morgan transferred to the Colonial Army of the South. Zack and ten other surviving members of the 24 Bunker Hill militia returned to the West Virginia Territory to resume their

lives. His brother David elected to re-enlist and followed the newly promoted General Morgan to the South. David did not return to WVA until 1782.

Back in Bunker Hill, Zack was awarded a 1200 acre tract, "of his prudent selection" by the Virginia Commonwealth for his service during the War for Independence. He commenced scouting for suitable tracts in 1781 and soon settled on land adjacent to a picturesque bend in the Monongahela River that comprises present day Morgantown, West Virginia. He filed a claim with the Commonwealth Land Development office in May 1781 and the following September was deeded 1200 acres and purchased an additional 750 acres with his own funds. Part of this acreage would soon grow into the bustling community of Morgantown. Zack and Drusilla opened a boarding house, an "ordinary," (i.e., a tavern) and a necessity store in Morgantown in 1783, believed to be the first commercial enterprises in the community. The building housing the ordinary also was designated as the county courthouse and jail by the Virginia General Assembly until Zack could arrange construction of a facility suitable to serve as the legal and administrative office for the region, which he did three years later. In 1785, Zack presented a proposal to the Virginia General Assembly that called for the municipal incorporation of Morgantown as a city of the Commonwealth. After an endorsement letter from George Washington, Zack's friend since the Braddock Campaign, was read to the Assembly, the proposal was approved unanimously on October 17, 1785. Zack was delegated authority to plan the community, which was named Morgan's Township in the General Assembly's establishment ordinance, but which Zack modified to Morgantown a year later in a follow-up ordinance that was approved by the Assembly. The second ordinance also allowed Zack to sell portions of his acreage in ½ acre units to individuals desiring to settle in Morgantown at *"obtainable pricing by incomers."* In spite of selling these units at charitable prices, he became a wealthy man from this endeavor. George Washington traveled to Morgantown in 1784 and 1785 to help Zack lay out streets within the new city and to plan roads between Morgantown and other towns.

Zack's land transactions during the establishment of Morgantown financed the construction of a three-story home on a substantial tract of land in the bustling new community. Drusilla devoted herself to their brood of children and managed the family's hotel/tavern/store after Zack's health declined. Zack's final will (1793) designated Drusilla as the sole owner of the business and estate upon his death based on *"long history of engagement with the minute details of these entities."* The terms of the will violated Virginia Commonwealth law at that time, which barred women from enterprise or property ownership. In an amended will, Zack named two of his sons, James and Levi, as business and estate co-owners, with Drusilla named as the property manager. Unfortunately, she died a few months later during an influenza outbreak and Zack died on New Year's Day, 1795. James Morgan continued to manage the hotel, tavern and store in Morgantown in addition to his own businesses in Bunker Hill, but had no interest in farming, and began to sell off the family's agricultural property. By 1820, most of the original Morgan farmlands in West Virginia were owned by entities outside of the family.

One of several statues in Morgantown recognizing Zack Morgan's contributions to West Virginia.

Image source: Photograph by Travis Henline, Executive Director of Mainstreet Morgantown. In: Henline T. Zackquill Morgan: Fighter, Frontiersman, Founder of Morgantown. Zackquill One Morgantown (website) www.zackquill.com. November 10, 2016. Accessed: 6/12/2024.

This portrait of Zack Morgan by an unknown artist was produced in 1785 at the time he was lobbying the Virginia General Assembly to establish the municipality that would become Morgantown.

Image source: Forbes HM. Zackquill Morgan. West Virginia Encyclopedia. www.wvencyclopedia.org. November 20, 2023. Accessed: 6/13/2024.

In addition to publications cited in the preceding text and on pages 154-155, the following sources guided exploration of the Morgan's story in Delaware and West Virginia.

Callahan JM. History of the Making of Morgantown. Morgantown, WVA. West Virginia University Press. 1926. Digitized 2017. Available from Google Books. www.books.google.com. Accessed: June 11, 2024.

Core EL. The Monongahela Story. Chapter Nineteen: The Pioneers. A Bicentennial History. Parsons, West Virginia: McClain Printing Company. 1976.

Monroe JA. Colonial Delaware: A History. Delaware Heritage Commission. Wilmington: Delaware Heritage Press. 2003. Available from www.Archivesfiles.delaware.gov. Accessed June 11, 2024.

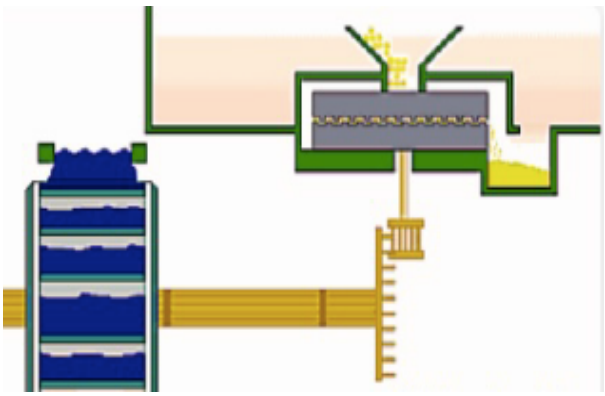
Okey and Friends - Okey Hendrickson (1734-1830)

The primary informational sources for the history of the Hendrickson family in Europe and North America appear on pages 147-149. Several books and articles on Kentucky history are listed at the end of the Okey Hendrickson's story.

Okey, also listed via incorrect spelling on tax rolls, military records and census ledgers as Ouke, Okie or Okay, was Hendrick Hendrickson's great grandson. I could not find a portrait of Okey that was reliably documented. His step-mother, Ida Wyckoff (1710-1784), a diligent diarist like many people in that era, described the teenage Okey as *"gangly and all legs, a head higher than his fellows, with a bright, inviting smile."* Like his father, Daniel Hendrickson, and his grandfather, William Hendrickson, Okey lived the majority of his life in Middlesex County, New Jersey along branches of the Raritan River that Cornelius Hendrickson explored and mapped more than 100 years earlier. Okey had a diverse work career, comprising several occupations, perhaps reflective of his experiences growing up in a household where his father, Daniel Hendrickson (1709-1779) had multiple occupations, and his step-mother, Ida Wyckoff, was often in the public eye, sometimes controversially, advocating for public education in NJ and women's right to own property in their own name. Ida also was an ardent abolitionist, not a popular viewpoint in 18th century New Jersey, a colony which derived considerable income from numerous slave auction houses where Africans, American born Blacks, and Caribbeans were sold as laborers, cooks, domestics, drivers, nannies, breeders and prostitutes. *(Hodges GR. Slavery and Freedom in the Rural North: African Americans in Monmouth County, New Jersey, 1665-1865. Madison, WI: Madison House Publishers. 1997)*

Okey's father started out as a miller, operating a water wheel powered gristmill, which grinds grain, known as grist in Europe and among early colonists, into flour. The mill was located on a section of the Millstone River known locally as Six Mile Run. The mill was originally built by Okey's grandfather (William Hendrickson) in 1690. Okey's father added a second mill down stream and converted a farmhouse into a traveler stop (i.e., an 18th century motel) on Old York Road, a heavily traveled route between New Brunswick and Philadelphia. Okey's industrious dad also purchased a fleet of heavy-duty wagons and operated a freight hauling business, transporting loads from Philadelphia to New Brunswick, which had a dock on the Raritan River where cargo boats could be loaded, and also to Perth Amboy, which had several docks on the lower New York harbor.

Re-creation of the original Six Mile Run Grist Mill, first constructed by William Hendrickson in 1690, and upgraded by Daniel Hendrickson and Okey Hendrickson. The structure was hit by lightning and burned in 1799, and was re-built by descendants of Okey in the early 1800's. The grinding equipment, including a 200 year-old milling stone, still function. The mill is now a historical site in a state park. *Image source: Six Mile Run Historic District. www.visitsomersetnj.org. New Jersey Department of Travel and Tourism. Accessed: 6/29/2023.*



The grain grinding process: river water turns the wheel, which via gear teeth, engages with and turns a circular millstone with a hole in the middle. The milling stone lies on another flat and circular stone known as the base stone. Raw cereal grain (grist) is poured into the millstone hole and filters between the base stone and the turning millstone. The grain is pulverized into flour and pours into a catch container.
Image source: Water Mill Diagram. Ehive. www.ehive.com. Accessed: 6/3/2023.

Okey's father decided to acquire medical training after several of his freight employees (i.e., drivers, loaders, horsemen) broke bones and suffered head injuries in wagon accidents on the rutted and rocky roads of that era, which were especially treacherous when iced-over or snow packed in the winter. He could find no one to manage severe orthopedic injuries, so he decided to learn those skills himself. In 1747, at the age of 38, Daniel Hendrickson began his medical education via the curriculum of that era – an apprenticeship with a veteran physician. *(Slawson RG. Medical Training in the United States Prior to the Civil War. J Evidence-based, Complementary and Alternative Medicine. 2012; 17(1): 11-27)* His apprenticeship activities occurred mostly on Saturday nights, Sundays (the one non-work day of that era), and weekday evenings. After five years of on-the-job training, his mentor declared Okey's father ready for independent practice and he soon after received a diploma in the mail from a physioanatomy and medicine academy in Philadelphia. That academy evolved into the Philadelphia College of Medicine around 1760. Daniel opened a "generalized medical needs" practice in 1752 with offices in Middlesex and Somerset Counties of NJ, which he rotated between, and was referred to as Dr. Hendrickson for the last 25 years of his life.

A self-portrait of Daniel Hendrickson, circa 1750.
Image Source: Monmouth County, New Jersey Historical Association. Freehold, NJ. www.monmouthhistory.org. Accessed: 6/4/2023.

A unique facet of Daniel Hendrickson's medical training was that he frequently brought his two oldest sons, Okey and John Cornelius (1738-1834), with him during apprenticeship activities. This mirrored his approach with the boys for his other endeavors. From a relatively young age, they worked at the mill, loaded and unloaded freight and tended the horses for the hauling business, and pulled regular cleanup shifts at the travel stop. As a teenager, Cornelius (his preferred first name) gravitated toward a medical career while Okey showed more interest in the other family businesses. At age 19, Cornelius went to Philadelphia to apprentice for two

Quaker brothers who were physicians, and after three years, he enrolled in the recently opened Philadelphia College of Medicine. Upon completion of the 18-month anatomy-focused curriculum, Cornelius apprenticed for one additional year with a rural physician in Franklin County (Chambersburg). He then opened his own practice in Somerset County, just north of West Virginia, where he and his wife remained for the rest of their lives. Cornelius was a county doctor and a gentleman farmer for 60 years, working until he was 90.

Back in New Brunswick, as Daniel Hendrickson's medical practice grew, Okey gradually assumed more responsibility for the grist mills, hauling business and, with his step mother, for the travel stop, which now had expanded to three sites along the recently opened Kings Highway (See the subsequent note on the Kings Highway, pages 254-255). When his father decided to delve into county and state politics around 1760 (primarily to improve the quality of New Jersey roads), Okey found himself in full control. However, he must have harbored a lingering desire to follow the path of his father and brother into medicine. In 1768, Okey began his own apprenticeship odyssey toward medical practice. A younger brother, William Hendrickson (1738-1802) largely took over the family hauling business, Okey's wife, May Anne Steeps (1742-1822), handled the book-keeping and accounts for the grist mills, and his stepmother Ida Wyckoff managed the travel stops. Not much has been written about Okey's medical training. I assume, but do not know for certain, that his father had a hand in orchestrating the apprenticeships. It is known that Okey did not spend any time at Philadelphia College of Medicine. By 1774, Okey had opened a medical practice in a back office of the travel stop in Hightown, a village on Old York Road a mile east of New Brunswick.

Reportedly, business was slow on Old York Road. On July 3, 1776, during a momentous week in U.S. history, Okey (i.e., now Dr. Okey Hendrickson), hoping to expand his patient pool with a downtown office, signed a contract to lease a building for his medical practice on the main commercial street of New Brunswick. However, he was never able to complete the move. On the same day, the British army under the command of General William Howe, supported by Generals Henry Clinton and Charles Cornwallis, sailed into New York harbor and landed on Staten Island with nearly 30,000 troops. The Brits soon after crushed George Washington's ill-prepared revolutionary army at the Battle of Brooklyn Heights and several other engagements near New York City. Taking advantage of lethargic British follow-up after victories, the remains of Washington's army managed to escape New York and began a slow retreat through New Jersey toward Philadelphia, skirmishing frequently with British units that trailed the Americans across the state. However, Howe failed to cement the New York victories with a major strike against the tattered Colonials that would have almost certainly ended the war in the fall of 1776. (*McCullough D. 1776. New York: Simon and Schuster. 2005.)*

Caught up in the patriotic fervor as Washington's army retreated through the New Brunswick area, Okey volunteered for service and was assigned to the 3rd Middlesex Militia Regiment as a surgeon and infantry private. *(Stryker WS. Adjutant General, New Jersey Adjutant General's Office. Official Register of the Officers and Men of New Jersey in the Revolutionary War. Trenton, NJ: T. Nicholson and Co. Publishing. 1872. Accessed via the New Jersey State Library www.nystatelib.org on June 26, 2024)* After one week of training, Okey and the 3rd Regiment joined Washington's Continental Army that was attempting to reach and cross the Delaware River into Pennsylvania prior to the onset of winter (when military campaigning stopped in the

18th century). During Washington's retreat toward Pennsylvania, Okey functioned as a battlefield medic, and assisted the army's lead surgeon, the European trained Dr. John Riker, a graduate of Princeton and St. George's London Medical School, with amputations, wound debridement and closures, bone setting, and tooth extractions. Dental disease was rampant within the colonial army. Managing the symptoms and consequences of other diseases and conditions also occupied much of their time according to Riker's extensive diary notations. These afflictions included dehydration, frostbite, syphilis and gastrointestinal disease, a leading cause of death during the New Jersey campaign. *(McLaughlin B. The Most Famous Combat Surgeon of the Revolutionary War. Mountain Man Medical. July 27, 2023. www.Mountainmanmedical.com. Accessed: August 10, 2023)*

At the end of December 1776, with desertions mounting and morale plummeting within the army and within the Continental Congress, Washington decided to attempt a desperation Christmas attack on a combined British and Hessian (i.e., Prussian) garrison stationed on the Jersey side of the Delaware River. This led, of course, to the famed Crossing of the Delaware and subsequent surprise victory at Trenton, a significant morale boosting accomplishment. (*Tucker PT. George Washington's Surprise Attack: A New Look at the Battle that Decided the Fate of America. New York: Skyhorse Publishing. 2014)*

Okey's 3rd Middlesex Regiment was one of three regiments, out of a planned five, that managed to cross the icy river in a snowstorm on Christmas night and routed the Trenton garrison early in the morning of December 26. During the battle, the Colonials suffered only five wounded and no combat fatalities, but one of the wounded was significant. It was future President James Monroe, who took a musket ball to his left shoulder, rupturing an artery. Okey came upon the fallen Monroe and packed the wound with bandages to assuage the profuse flow of blood until Dr. Riker could arrive. Probing the wound in the dark, Riker was able to find and clamp the artery. Okey was tasked with transporting Monroe to a barge reserved for ferrying the wounded back to Pennsylvania. Riker's initial clamp worked itself loose when Monroe was loaded on to the barge. Okey managed to retrieve the clamp in the renewed gush of blood, and recrimp the severed artery. While Riker stayed in Trenton to tend to wounded Hessian officers, Okey directed the re-crossing of the Delaware River for the wounded and also for soldiers suffering frostbite. Many Continental soldiers had no boots or shoes, just cloth wrappings on their feet. In the days following the battle, Okey supervised Monroe's recovery until the future president was removed to a rear unit near Philadelphia. *(Unger HG. The Last Founding Father: James Monroe and a Nation's Call to Greatness. New York: Da Capo Press. 2009)*

Emanuel Leutze's painting of Washington Crossing the Delaware. The victory increased enlistments and bolstered French enthusiasm for the colonists' cause.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 8/10/2023.

Two days later, the General visited the medical tent to speak to the wounded and distribute valor letters, recognizing heroic actions, to Drs. Riker and Hendrickson and the other medical staff. Following the victory at Trenton, Washington wintered his army near Morristown, New Jersey. Okie Hendrickson apparently was not present for periods of time during the 1776-1777 winter camp at Morristown, although payroll and other personnel record keeping were notoriously inaccurate in the colonial military. It was common 18th century protocol for officers, medical personnel and other camp civilians to leave winter encampments for periods of time; this may have occurred in Okie's case. We do know that Riker, Hendrickson and other medical personnel carried out a smallpox inoculation program for the sequestered army and thousands of civilians residing near Morristown in the spring of 1777 to combat a major outbreak of the virus. *(Roos D. How Crude Smallpox Inoculations Helped George Washington Win the War. History. www.history.com. June 20, 2023. Accessed: June 21, 2024)*

Okie was once again with Washington's army full-time in the summer of 1777 when warfare resumed. In June of that year, after much hesitation, Howe and 20,000 British and Prussian troops began a drive toward Philadelphia, the colonial capital and seat of the Continental Congress, hoping to finally end the uprising by capturing the fledgling nation's key city and its political leaders. The Brit's name for this military was the Philadelphia Campaign. *(Harris, MC. The Philadelphia Campaign, 1777. Havertown, PA: Casemate Publishers. 2023)* Washington's army moved out of winter camp and attempted to block the Redcoat's rather slow advance toward Philadelphia. In skirmish after skirmish, and major battles near Brandywine and Germantown, Pennsylvania, Washington's army performed reasonably well, but were eventually pushed back, allowing Howe's army to finally enter Philadelphia at the end of September, 1777. In traditional 18th century European warfare and statescraft, when an enemy nation's capital was ceased, the defeated side capitulated and treaty negotiations ensued to create new governance, geographic boundaries and taxation. To British dismay, members of the Continental Congress fled, and simply set up shop in York, PA as a provisional government. Instead of surrendering, Washington took the remains of his beleaguered army to nearby Valley Forge, PA and hunkered down for a long, harsh winter where he focused on re-training his troops and officers. The resources that Howe expended in capturing Philadelphia severely hampered a parallel British campaign in northern New York, leading to the surrender of an entire British army at Saratoga just nine days after the capture of Philadelphia (see page 229).

Howe's sluggish capture of Philadelphia and the Brits' concurrent defeat at Saratoga convinced the French that proactively supporting the American's cause would be advantageous to their much broader, international, war with Britain. A Franco-American Treaty of Alliance was hammered out in the fall of 1777 and signed in February, 1778. Soon after, a large French fleet appeared off the coast of Long Island, which sent tremors through the British War Ministry. The multi-faceted impact of the Treaty of Alliance, the demoralizing surrender at Saratoga, the improved performance by Washington as a military leader, and his army, as a fighting unit, during 1777, and the presence of the French fleet threatening New York City led British parliament to conclude that victory in the northern colonies was no longer feasible. Britain formed a new North American strategy with three foci: focus military action on the southern colonies, perceived in the UK, accurately, to be less committed to the concept of a new nation, reallocate many British troops to the Caribbean and Mediterranean theaters of the Anglo-

French War, and withdraw Howe's army from Philadelphia into New York City to repel a potential French attack. The British withdrawal to NYC however was to be implemented without General Howe, who, under pressure from the War Ministry, resigned his Commander-in-Chief position due to criticism of his less than proactive efforts to defeat the Colonials. Henry Clinton, not at all sympathetic to the revolutionary cause, was assigned the task of withdrawing back to NYC. *(Hoffman R, Albert PJ. Diplomacy and the Revolution: The Franco-American Alliance of 1778. Charlottesville: University Press of Virginia. 1981)*

A side note: *Prior to and during the American Revolutionary War, William Howe often, and quite publically, expressed his support for American independence, and believed that the various punitive taxations imposed on the colonies were unfair and politically dangerous. In 1774, he stated he would refuse an assignment to fight against the Americans, although he obviously changed his mind on that point. As we will see elsewhere in this family history, Howe was not the only high level British commander during the Revolutionary War who personally supported the American's pursuit of Independence, but served out of duty to the Crown. (Smith D. Whispers Across the Atlantick: General William Howe and the American Revolution, London: Bloomsbury Press. 2017)*

In June of 1778, Clinton reluctantly commenced the withdrawal of approximately 21,000 British troops from Philadelphia. Although committed to implementing the orders of the British War Ministry, Clinton was determined to *"administer one more sound thrashing"* to the Colonials on the 100 mile journey back to New York. He hoped that a resounding victory might stimulate a reconsideration of military strategy in the northern colonies, or if sufficiently decisive – end the war. The temperamental Clinton had been stationed in North America since 1775, serving under Howe's command in Boston, NYC and Philadelphia, and accordingly, was involved in numerous military actions to suppress the Colonials. Over the years, he had proposed many plans to Howe for defeating the rebels, and, in particular, for capturing or killing Washington, that were far more aggressive than Howe's often-reluctant strategies. Howe and the War Ministry ignored or rejected virtually all of Clinton's ideas for quashing the rebellion, and generally considered Clinton to be "difficult". By the time Clinton finally achieved command, he was itching to lure Washington into a direct full force battle, confident that he could smash the Continental Army and finally bring the colonists to their senses. *(O'Shaughnessy AJ. The Men Who Lost America. British Leadership, the American Revolution, and the Fate of the Empire. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press. 2014)*

Washington had his own agenda in the summer of 1778. Through information provided by his sophisticated spy network, which had infiltrated the British high command, Washington was well aware of the British plans to withdraw Clinton's army back to NYC as part of Britain's over-arching plan to de-emphasize the northern colonies in its global war with France. From a purely military perspective, Washington was content to let the Redcoats sequester themselves within NYC with a diminished force, but with an eye to national and international political optics, he also wanted to appear proactive in *"chasing the enemy across New Jersey"* inflicting hit and run damage where feasible, but avoiding a full-on confrontation. *(Chernow R. Washington, A Life. London: Allen Lane Pub. 2010)*

The trudge across New Jersey ensued with Clinton's army camping often, hoping to entice the Colonials into an attack. Washington's 15,000-man army, including Hendrickson and the 3rd Middlesex Regiment, shadowed the Brits and launched small assaults on supply wagons and rear guard units. To entice Washington into a major attack, Clinton divided his army into two sections: most of the combat troops and artillery were in one column, and the second unit was composed of a massive supply train, 1,500 wagons, protected by a small retinue of infantry, literally inviting an attack. Both British columns camped near Monmouth, New Jersey on the night of June 27, 1778. Sensing an opportunity for a low risk attack with high likelihood of an outcome he could claim as a victory, Washington ordered one of his subordinate commanders, Marque de Lafayette, highly enthusiastic but very inexperienced, to attack the rear guard of the supply train the following morning, a Sunday, with 4,000 troops. That attack never reached it's target because de Lafayette urged his men to march too quickly in the morning humidity, and with men and horses exhausted, the column ground to a halt, short of the supply train. Exasperated at Lafayette's bungled attempt and fearing a lost opportunity, Washington next tabbed General Charles Lee to attack the British wagon train with several thousand recently arrived and largely untrained soldiers. Lee's initial attack on the supply column was a chaotic disaster, in part due to his overly cautious approach, which alerted the British to an imminent attack, and in part due to the uncoordinated movement of the raw troops. Factors that he could not fully control also were in play including free-lancing by his unit commanders, and the sudden arrival of a counter-attacking force of 8,000 men, led by General Charles Cornwallis.

When Cornwallis' troops came into view, Lee dithered at first, stunned by the abrupt reversal of fortune. But he eventually regrouped, gathered most of his commanders and conceived a plan for a defensive retreat. The Americans successfully repelled several British counter attacks as they attempted to march toward Washington's main army, but the retreat eventually became disorderly, with some units breaking and running. After receiving word that Lee's attack had been bungled, Washington raced toward the supply train battle site with a small contingent of aides and found Lee trying to restore order. Outraged at the chaos and what he considered a premature retreat, Washington confronted Lee on horseback as hundreds of soldiers watched and sent him to the rear, taking command himself. Although this brief conversation was one of the most famous moments of the Revolutionary War, no one knows exactly what was said, but it is clear that Lee took the reprimand poorly. In later years, both Washington and Lee were evasive about this brief meeting on horseback. *(Ecelberger G. Did Charles Lee Disobey George Washington's Attack Order at Monmouth? Journal of the American Revolution Online. www.allthingsliberty.com. March 7, 2024. Accessed: June 25, 2024)*

A depiction of Washington ordering General Charles Lee off the battlefield for mismanaging the attack on the British supply train on June 28, 1778, the first phase of the Battle of Monmouth.
Image source: Library of Congress. www.loc.org. Accessed: June 24, 2024.

Within an hour, Washington managed to re-assemble the soldiers into several defensive lines that held off attacks by Cornwallis as they retreated back to the main component of the Continental Army, comprised of Lafayette's now rested regiment and several thousand Colonial troops commanded by General Mad Anthony Wayne. Washington efficiently arranged the three components of his army into a strong defensive position on the only high ground, in a generally flat terrain, near a cluster of farmhouses and other buildings, including most prominently, the Courthouse of Monmouth County. *(Bluhm RK. Battle of Monmouth, American Revolution (1778). Britannica. www.britannica.com. June 22, 2024. Accessed: June 25, 2024)*

By 1:30pm, Clinton's main cohort of troops re-joined with those of Cornwallis, bringing his 21,000 soldiers face to face on an open battlefield with Washington's smaller force of 15,000 – just what Clinton wanted! But the situation was not ideal. First and foremost, it was exceedingly hot, humid and hazy. Field reports by British and American military scribes and contemporary newspaper articles all assert that it was nearly 100 degrees with *"monstrous humidity and a gray hazy sky obscuring the sun."* Anyone who has spent a summer in the Mid Atlantic states certainly recognizes that description. A large portion of Clinton's army had already fought a battle in the morning, then quick marched to this position and now were faced with mounting a second assault. Secondly, Washington's army had efficiently reformed from the turmoil of the morning and moved into position much faster than Clinton expected. By the time Cornwallis and Clinton united, the Americans were ready and waiting. This was a day of surprises for Clinton. *(Morrisey, B. Monmouth Courthouse 1778: The Last Great Battle in the North. Oxford, UK: Osprey Publishing. 2004)*

Monmouth Battlefield: view from the British side on June 28th, 1778. To attack the Colonials arrayed at the tree line in the distance, Clinton's infantry marched down a slope to the trees in the middle of the image (did not exist in 1778) crossed a stream and climbed the rising slope toward the Americans' position. Intense musket and cannon fire repelled the attacks.

Image source: Monmouth Battlefield State Park. www.nj.gov. Accessed: June 24, 2024.

In spite of these factors, Clinton, perhaps assuming, or hoping, that the Americans were still disorganized from the morning's events, launched several assaults across the field that were repulsed. Around 3:00pm, Clinton directed his artillery to open fire, which would allow his infantry to rest and hydrate, and perhaps would rattle the Colonial troops who had a history of scattering under bombardment. To his dismay, after both sides fired opening salvos, the American's rolled at least 15 heavy artillery carriages into place atop the highest ridge on the field to supplement another group of cannons on the other side of their line. This new battery had excellent positioning to fire directly into the main British artillery group. The American batteries unleashed a massive barrage of well-aimed ordinance from both positions, firing by many estimates three times the number of rounds as the Brits. Clinton was forced to move much of his artillery out of harm's way, placing the Brit cannons nearly beyond their range to aim accurately, diminishing effectiveness. Clinton's unit commanders, without orders, started

moving their infantrymen backward to get out of the zone of Colonial artillery bombardment, giving the impression to observers on site that the British were retreating. *(Morrisey, 2004)*

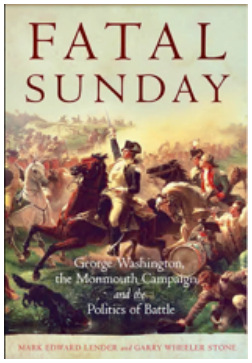
A side note: *The Battle at Monmouth Courthouse was fought near a substantial population center. Many local residents and camp followers (i.e., spouses and families of soldiers, prostitutes, merchants, cooks, water providers, seamstresses, elderly men looking for excitement, and widows of deceased soldiers) came out to observe and assist American soldiers participating in the conflict, an action that led to the mythology of Molly Pitcher. For major 18th century wars, an army of 15,000 soldiers could have as many as 3,000 camp followers who interacted extensively with soldiers as they marched, during evening camps and even amidst battles. Military leaders relied on these followers for food, water, entertainment, repairing uniforms and equipment, medical care, transporting dead and wounded, and baggage hauling. The British Army of the North under Howe and then Clinton also had a substantial number of camp followers including Tory (loyalist) supporters of the Brits, prostitutes, food and clothing vendors and wives of officers and soldiers. It has been estimated that approximately 5,000 British spouses followed their soldier husbands to North America during the Revolutionary War. Most remained in the relative comfort afforded by colonial NYC, but 1,000-2,000 followed the army in its various campaigns against the rebels. Thus, at Monmouth, both sides undoubtedly had camp followers playing support roles during the battle. (Blumenthal W. Women Camp Followers of the American Revolution. Philadelphia: GS McManus Press. 1952. Accessed via WorldCat www.search.worldcat.org on June 23, 2024)*

Clinton at first exhorted his units to return to the front lines, but eventually realized the situation was dire. In contrast to Washington who remained behind the arena of conflict during the British attacks that afternoon, Clinton led from the front and was in the midst of the bombardment, experiencing close calls. The artillery exchange cast a dense smoky layer that hovered near the ground between the two armies on this sultry and windless day. Because of the smoke, coupled with the humidity laden haze, Clinton and his troops likely could not see the Americans at the top of the incline even though they were but a few hundred yards away.

Around 4:30pm, the artillery barrage from both sides ceased. Neither side had an endless supply of ordinance, and the intense heat had disabled so many gunners that cannons could no longer be operated. In the quiet that followed the last cannon report, Clinton sized up his options. Attempt another ground assault with exhausted and rattled troops, or execute a strategic repositioning to separate his army from the Americans? Although furious at the missed chance, Clinton went with the later option, ordering a withdrawal. Because of the haze and smoke, Washington did not at first realize that the Brits were leaving the field. Once he determined what was happening, Washington saw another political optics opportunity: send small units of soldiers to attack the rearguard of Clinton's army with the goal of hurrying the Redcoats' flight from the field. Washington's commando-like attacks on the withdrawing British columns inflicted considerable damage, and sped up the pace of withdrawal, thus enhancing the perception of a British retreat. That night, both sides camped less than a mile from each other. Sometime after midnight, the Brits quietly marched away toward awaiting ships at Sandy Hook on the Jersey coast that ferried Clinton and his army to Manhattan. Although a point of considerable debate among Revolutionary War historians, it appears that Washington was most likely aware of the British departure, or at least anticipated it would occur. He probably had

already decided not to press his luck by giving chase; his military and political goals had already been achieved.

The Redcoat army evacuated to a defensive position within NYC where they remained until October 1781. More than 10,000 of the 20,000 British troops sequestered in New York were diverted to the southern colonies or to other sites internationally in the broader Anglo-French war of 1778-1783. An excellent book by Lender and Stone, *Bloody Sunday: George Washington, the Monmouth Campaign and the Politics of Battle (Norman, OK: University of Oklahoma Press. 2016. Volume 54 of the Campaigns and Commanders Series)* summarizes the political and military ramifications of the battle that had an inconclusive outcome at nightfall, but which came to be perceived as an important American victory in the weeks afterward. The events of that day also changed the public's perception of George Washington's as a military leader, and politicians in the U.S. and Europe began to see him as having sufficient gravitas and charisma to be a potential civilian head of a new North American nation.



Lender and Stone describe how politics influenced military strategy at Monmouth and how the notions of victory and defeat ultimately were assigned to combatants in a battle with a murky conclusion.
Lender and Stone, 2016.

A side note: *Colonel Daniel Morgan and his Rifleman Regiment, including Zack and David Morgan, were a component of Washington's army chasing Clinton across New Jersey, and were present near the Monmouth battlefield on June 28th. However, the Riflemen were never called into action that day due to a bungled set of orders issued by a rattled General Charles Lee shortly before his failed attack on the British supply train. Dr. Okay Hendrickson likely provided medical care for Morgan Riflemen during the New Jersey Campaign, but it is not known if he ever encountered Zack or David Morgan. (Bellamy R. Morgan's Riflemen at the Battle of Monmouth. Friends of Monmouth Battlefield. www.Friendsofmonmouthbattlefield.org. 2003. Accessed: June 24, 2024). A member of a third key family chronicled in this history, Private fourth class George Maris of the 6th Pennsylvania Regiment, (se page 70) was on the front lines during this battle, and was severely wounded when his musket exploded, losing an eyeball. It is also not known if Okey Hendrickson attended to the wounded infantryman during or after the conflict.*

=======

Notes on the Battle of Monmouth and the Molly Pitcher Legend: From Washington's action reports to Congress for June 28, 1778, it is known that Dr. Okey Hendrickson served as a field medic, helping wounded and otherwise impaired soldiers on the battlefield that afternoon (the 3rd Middlesex Regiment remained with Washington's main army and did not participate in the morning raids led by Lafayette and Lee). With other surgeons, Okey moved to a rear area following the conclusion of action to attend to the wounded. Monmouth was a notable

engagement for many reasons, including the fact that Washington's Continental Army held the field for the first time in an open battle against a full force British army comprised of well-trained English and Prussian regulars. However, in the centuries since the two armies clashed on that stifling hot Sunday, the battle came to be at least as well known as the inspiration for the Molly Pitcher legend (*Griffith WR. Molly Pitcher and the Battle of Monmouth. American Battlefield Trust. www.battlefields.org. November 16, 2011. Accessed: June 7, 2023)* In the course of his duties that day, it is possible that Okey may have crossed paths with the soon to be famous Molly Pitcher. I could locate no evidence of this, but given Molly's activities that day in support of the artillery brigades, and the need for medical support of the cannoneers who were all-important to the outcome of the engagement, it seems logical to assume that Hendrickson, Riker and other medics probably focused their attention on the artillery units during the Sunday afternoon cannon duel. It was essential to keep the men on their feet and firing away at Clinton's army below.

Washington's field notes for the June 28th engagement provided general comments on movements of the medical corps at Monmouth, suggesting they were sent *"where needed most,"* provided estimates of fatalities and *"the quantities of men treated after-action"* and offered observations about the impact of the weather on his men, noting that they *"were beat out with heat and fatigue"* by the end of the day, a factor in his decision not to chase Clinton. Washington also reported that his own horse had died due the *"intolerable heat of the day." (Fitzpatrick JC. Writings of George Washington in the Revolutionary War From Original Manuscript Sources (39 volumes). Vol 7: General George Washington Recounts the Battle of Monmouth Court House. Washington DC: U.S. Government Printing Office. 1931-1944. Curated by HathiTrust (www.hathitrust.org). Accessed at New Jersey State Library. www.njstatelib.org on June 26, 2024)*

A side note*: Washington was dedicated to the task of preserving his communications, both personal and professional, throughout his life, and in particular during the Revolutionary War. In May, 1781, Washington formed a unit of "scribes, clerks and librarians" headed by Colonel Richard Varick to retrieve, organize, label and copy all of his letters to politicians, civil officials and other military personnel (including enemy officers and British subjects), field action summaries after clashes with the British, proposals, budgets and letters sent to the Continental Congress, military orders and plans, and the agenda of War Council Meetings (i.e., meetings with field commanders). Over four years (1781-1785), working from an office in Poughkeepsie, New York, Varick and his team assembled 44 bound volumes, each with more than a thousand pages, of Washington's war-related documents from 1775 to 1785. The Varick Papers are a heavily accessed collection at the Library of Congress, serving as perhaps "THE" fundamental research source for Revolutionary historians because they are able to extract dense, first hand, detail from this collection. For example, Washington's interactions with Molly Pitcher during and after the Battle of Monmouth are described within the section labeled: Civil Officials and Private Citizens. (Library of Congress. www.loc.org. Collection: George Washington Papers. Series 3, Varick Transcripts, 1775-1785)*

Now to the **Legend of Molly Pitcher** (1754-1832), which intersects with my own history at Dickinson College in Carlisle, PA., with U.S. cinematic history, and possibly, as speculated, with Okey Hendrickson's Revolutionary War experiences. Although denied by the creators of the

popular 1978 comedy, *Animal House,* Dickinson alumni from the 1960s and 1970s remain convinced that the film's signature set-piece, the chaotic Halloween parade, is based on the infamous 1969 Carlisle Pennsylvania Halloween Night Parade that was discontinued as a night event due to unruly behavior of college students. In the 1960s, Dickinson fraternity and sorority members created numerous floats for the parade and also served as marshals, either driving or walking beside college-created and town-created floats, and in-between high school bands to keep them from running into each other. For Dickinson students in that era, Float Night began with a pre-parade ritual, much despised by the Carlisle Police Department, which consisted of several hundred Dickinsonians ingesting beer poured from blue glass pitchers (which Pitcher supposedly used at Monmouth) in Molly's honor at the fraternity quadrangle, followed by a noisy and disorderly march to her gravesite (she was a long-time Carlisle resident), where boisterous toasts were delivered to Molly's memory, and various other topics that emerged spontaneously. Her connection to Halloween remains obtuse and the origins of this pre-parade event are likewise murky. The Molly Pitcher gravesite is spectacular as shown below, and thus probably struck some long-ago Dickinson student as a reasonable site for Halloween and parade-related toasts. Current Dickinsonians can quaff locally brewed Molly Pitcher-branded ales including the Cannonball Kolsch and the Howitzer at the nearby Molly Pitcher Brewing Company. In my day, it was Yuengling, Piels and Rolling Rock. After the pre-parade chugs and toasts under Molly's stern gaze, it was off to man the floats on the main street of Carlisle, followed by the traditional Greeks versus Fringe campus wide water balloon fight, which spilled, literally, on to the streets of Carlisle and inevitably concluded with arrests, and embarrassment for collge administration. After the 1969 parade, Dickinson College President Dr. Howard "Bud" Rubendall proclaimed that the college was *"little more than an asylum for the depraved"*, and devoted much of the remaining seven years of his tenure to installing institutional culture reforms, including withdrawal of the college's participation in the Carlisle Halloween parade. (*Newell D. The Dickinson Student After 200 Years. 49(5): 8. October 1972. www.archives.dickinson.edu. Accessed: 8/19/2024)*

Molly Pitcher's gravesite dominates the Old Carlisle Graveyard a few blocks from the Dickinson campus. After her Revolutionary War heroics, Molly lived for 50 years in Carlisle, and was known for her profanity laced stories of her war experiences.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 6/29/2024.

A side note: *The writers and producers of Animal House, Chris Miller, Harold Ramis, and Ivan Reitman, contended at the time of the film's release that it was based on their collective collegiate experiences at Dartmouth College (Miller), Washington University (Ramis) and McMaster University (Reitman). However, they eventually allowed that well-known antics at other colleges may have played a role in shaping the script. References to Dickinson in the*

dialogue, the climatic Halloween Parade, Bud Rubendall's "depraved" statement (repeated nearly verbatim by Dean Wormer in the director's cut of the film), and Dickinson ROTC events that were eerily identical to those portrayed in the film, have made decades of alumni suspicious, although the College Board of Trustees almost certainly desire to bury the Animal House rumors, which divert attention from the college's long-standing tradition of high academic standards and highly selective admission criterion. In 2024, Dickinson was ranked # 46 out of 229 highly selective national liberal arts colleges and # 36 for best undergraduate educational experience / teaching. (U.S. News and World Report 2024 Best Colleges Report. www.usnews.com. Accessed: August 19, 2024)

Molly was born in Trenton, New Jersey as Mary Ludwig, but she acquired the nickname of Molly in childhood. She moved to Carlisle after she married William Hays in 1777, so her name at the time of the Monmouth battle was Molly Hays. William was a native of Carlisle, and had been active in protests against British taxation before the War for Independence. Soon after their marriage, William joined the 4th Pennsylvania Artillery Brigade, which was formed in Carlisle. Like many childless wives of Colonial soldiers, Mary became a camp follower. Mary spent the winter of 1777-78 at the Valley Forge winter camp with William, and joined a Women's Camp Brigade led by Martha Washington that washed soldiers' clothes and helped the medical staff with sick soldiers. During the army's training at Valley Forge and throughout the ensuing New Jersey Campaign of 1778, Molly formed a battalion of women that transported water to quench the thirst of artillerymen and also swabbed cannon muzzles. By the time Molly arrived at the Monmouth camp the evening prior to the June 28th engagement, she had gained battlefield experience during preceding skirmishes with Clinton's army. (*Bohrer ML. Glory, Passion and Principle: The Story of Eight Remarkable Women at the Core of the American Revolution. New York: Simon and Schuster 2007)*

Washington's reports in the *Varick Transcripts* indicate he was aware of Molly and her water conveying colleagues by the time of the fight at Monmouth. During the battle on that intensely hot afternoon, Molly and other women raced back and forth between a bubbling spring that fed a small stream and the front lines carrying water in large blue glass pitchers and buckets. When a group of soldiers needed water, they would wave a kerchief and yell, *"Molly – Pitcher,"* and thus the legendary name was born. When the artillery fight dominated the battlefield, Molly concentrated her efforts on the position of William's 4th Pennsylvania Brigade, which was part of the artillery group occupying a high ridge overlooking the battlefield.

Sensing that their efforts were carrying the day, William and colleagues loaded and fired furiously, but at a price – the heat and humidity dropped many gunners to the ground from heatstroke (dehydration), including William. Some versions of the Molly Pitcher legend, and paintings of the scene, imply that William Hays died at Molly's feet, but this was inaccurate. He recovered from exhaustion and dehydration and continued service with Washington's army. With William and other men out of action, Molly apparently did drop her pitcher, and stepped up to help her husband's gun team. In the diary of a soldier on the battlefield that day (Joseph Plumb Martin) a women is described hoisting the sponge rod to clean cannon barrels of residue from previous firings. Near the conclusion of the artillery duel, Plumb Martin describes how this women tossed cannon balls down the barrel and rammed them down with the other end of the sponge rod. *(Martin JK. Ordinary Courage: The Revolutionary War Adventures of Private Joseph*

Plumb Martin. New York: Wiley-Blackwell Publishing. 1993) The Plumb Martin diary has served as a principle resource for many Revolutionary War historians and is considered one of the most accurate representations of the lives and battle experiences of Colonial soldiers.

A painting of a rather well dressed Molly Hays in action at the Battle of Monmouth. The apparently dead figure at her feet is supposedly her husband, William Hays, who, in reality, survived the battle.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: June 29, 2024.

At some point during the battle, a British cannonball flew between her legs and tore away a substantial part of her skirt and petticoat, but she continued with her duties. According to legend, and substantiated in his after-action report in the *Varick Transcripts,* Washington asked Molly about her shredded clothing shortly after the battle, to which she replied: *"I suppose it could have been worse. A little higher and the ball would have carried away more than my petty coat."* The next day, Washington decorated Molly and her water carrying colleagues in front of a large number of troops. Molly was presented with a gold coin of unknown denomination and a scroll proclaiming her as a non-commissioned officer of the Continental Army at the rank of Sergeant. From that point on, Sergeant Molly became her nickname. During the ceremony, Washington again asked about the tattered dress, and Molly remarked: *"I felt but a cooling breeze beneath, welcome on such a miserable day."* She apparently had a way with words.

Of course, with any legend, there are doubters and controversy. Because other camp following women served in similar capacities as Molly Hay at Monmouth and other engagements, some historians have questioned whether or not the Molly Pitcher story reflects the collective efforts of several women. For example, Joseph Plum Martin did not specifically name the cannon-ramming female in his diary, and Washington's after-action notes refer to a Molly Pitcher, not to Molly Hay. *(Teipe EJ. Will The Real Molly Pitcher Please Stand up? Prologue. 1999; 31(2). Accessed via Internet Archive www.archive.com on June 24, 2024)* However, given that William Hay was a known entity and Molly was with the 4th Pennsylvania Artillery unit during the final hours of the battle, it seems likely that her actions are, at least in part, based in fact. Molly and William returned to Carlisle after the war. William died in 1789 and Molly soon after married John McCauley, and thus she was buried in the Old Carlisle Graveyard as Molly McCauley.

=======

After Monmouth, Okey administered minor medical aid to Washington on several occasions during the remainder of the New Jersey campaign, including treatment of lingering knee pain that afflicted the general throughout the war (likely arthritis) and his famously ill fitting ivory dentures, for which Okey had no answer except to order several sets of dentures in different configurations hoping that one would fit comfortably; they did not.

Washington and other Continental Army senior staff made New Brunswick their command post for several weeks after the battle, in part to attend the court marshal of General Charles Lee who was accused of disobeying orders during the botched attack on the British rear guard, and perhaps the larger social intelligence error of writing ill-tempered letters to Washington, and to other military men and politicians, complaining about Washington's lack of competence. Dr. Okey Hendrickson and George Washington by now were well acquainted, and Washington accepted Okey's offer of lodging at his Hightown home on the outskirts of New Brunswick. During dinners, Okey and May Anne encouraged Washington to conduct the trial at the Hendrickson's travel lodge, one of the larger buildings in the area. However, the mayor of New Brunswick, owner of the largest tavern (White Horse Tavern, which still stands), prevailed in the competition for the trial site. After an acrimonious month long trial, Lee was suspended from the army for one year, but never returned to duty after further alienating members of the Continental Congress with a stream of vindictive letters. *(Papas P. Renegade Revolutionary: The Life of General Charles Lee. New York: NYU Press. 2014)*

With the British hunkered down within New York City, the conflict in New Jersey essentially ceased. Okey Hendrickson was discharged from his three-year term of service in July 1779 and returned to his multiple business interests including his medical practice, which he operated out of its original site on Old York Road. With endorsements and letters of recognition from General Washington, Dr. Riker and other Continental Army notables adorning the office walls, Dr. Okey's medical clientele increased, and he strove to revitalize the gristmill and hauling enterprises. One of the travel lodges now had a tavern, modeled after the White Horse, and business improved as people returned to the area with the decline in hostilities.

In August of 1781, Washington planned a fake attack on New York City to disguise the movement of the bulk of his troops to Virginia to entrap the British Southern Army at Yorktown. Washington created a bogus set of battle orders and allowed them to be stolen by a known Tory spy. Roughly 4,000 troops were quite visibly marched into Monmouth County, New Jersey and positioned near the shoreline, easily discernable by British ships in New York harbor. A large camp, suitable for 10,000 troops was set up with rows and rows of tents, weapon stockpiles, large bread ovens, and big campfires at night. During the initial days of the camp setup, Washington and his entourage rode over to New Brunswick to visit Okey Hendrickson. The objective of the visit was two-fold: first to ask Okey to divert most of his freight wagons to make fake deliveries to the Monmouth encampment, and second, to request Okey to re-enlist for six months to serve as a camp medic. Even without combat, medical services would be needed for several thousand soldiers, and Washington could not be certain that the British would not probe camp strength with raids, or even shell the camp from the harbor. *(Stewart LS. Deception and the Battle of Yorktown. U.S. Army Intelligence Center of Excellence. Fort Huachuca, AZ. October 18, 2022. www.army.mil.>USAICoE. Accessed: July 22, 2023)*

Okey agreed to both requests, and then he and Washington toured the Hendrickson's newest gristmill on a branch of the Raritan, which gave Okey, ever on the outlook for business opportunity, an opening to talk Washington into a contract to deliver Hendrickson-milled flour to the camp bakery, as well as spirits from his tavern to the officer's mess tent. Accounts vary as to how long Washington remained with the Hendrickson's before returning to his headquarters – probably three or four nights. The bogus camp remained in place until the end of September,

1781 when the British command in New York finally discerned that Washington and his army, along with Lafayette's French troops, were bearing down on Cornwallis who was holed up in Yorktown, Virginia at the end of a skinny indefensible peninsula.

Washington visited Okey and Mary Anne again in the fall of 1783 while on his way to a Continental Congress meeting in Princeton, New Jersey. On this trip, Washington was making a show of traveling along the King's Highway, which passed through New Brunswick, to encourage colonial governments to invest more money into road maintenance. He spent several evenings at the Hendrickson house and conducting meetings with aides in town, again at the White Horse Tavern, mostly working on a speech he was scheduled to present to the Congress, and a proposal for more spending on the Kings Highway, which was tabled and not addressed by the Congress.

After the war, Okey and his family settled into a routine for several years, maintaining a relatively affluent and seemingly comfortable life. Around 1790, Okey grew restless with his varied businesses in New Jersey, and according to previous Hendrickson family histories, became a fervent opponent of a religious movement sweeping the colonies known as the Second Great Awakening. *(Mathews DG. The Second Great Awakening as an Organizing Process, 1780-1830. American Quarterly. Baltimore MD: The Johns Hopkins University Press. 1969; 21(1): 23-43)* This period of religious revival essentially pitted individuals who believed in the traditional doctrines, rituals, sermons and hymns associated with the major denominations in Colonial America, against a new wave of intensely evangelical believers who advocated a personal approach to religion, similar to Quaker beliefs, with appeals for incorporating spirituality into daily life, strict morality, high levels of piety, increased freedom for women, and a more proactive role for ministers.

Supporters of the "Awakened Faith" (or "New Faith") argued for a theatrical (i.e., performance) model of preaching in contrast to the traditional passive model where ministers read bible passages verbatim, selected hymns and led prayers. It was argued that awakened ministers, and their followers, should be aggressively evangelical, seeking to inspire morality through fiery hell and brimstone rhetoric, and preaching damnation for those perceived to be sinners, with particular focus on alcoholism and slave ownership. It was also argued that congregations could be organized outside of the main denominations, and could meet outdoors, in tents, or in member's homes, a threat to established church infrastructure. This threat was not taken lightly; Catholic and Protestant church establishment harshly criticized the Awakened Faith movement and sought legal injunctions to close Tent Revivals. *(Kidd T. The Great Awakening: Roots of Evangelical Christianity in Colonial America. New Haven: Yale University Press. 2007)*

The Awakened Faith movement was strong in New Jersey and New York leading to generational divisiveness in society. Traditionalists tended to be older and male and new faith followers tended to be younger and female. Additionally, Awakened Faith followers were urged by their ministers to actively seek out non-church goers and bring them into the fold, leading to a wave of unsolicited *"knocks on front doors"* throughout New Jersey to recruit new members to the awakened flock. *(McLoughlin WG. Revivals, Awakenings and Reform: An Essay on Religion and Social Change on America, 1607-1977. Chicago, ILL: University of Chicago Press)*

A fiery minister leads an outdoor New Faith meeting during the 2nd Great Awakening. The movement's objectives were to make spirituality meaningful in daily life, debunk formal church ritual, expand personal freedom, and eradicate alcoholism and slavery.
Image source: Religious Camp Meeting. Smithsonian Institute. www.si.edu. Accessed: June 22, 2024.

Nothing in the historical record suggests that Okey or Mary Anne were particularly religious and no record of church membership was found, which was unusual in that era, especially for prominent citizens of an affluent community like New Brunswick. I uncovered no evidence that they were slave owners, but slave ownership was so casual and socially entrenched that it cannot be ruled out that a deeper historical dig might produce records of slave holdings by the Hendricksons. Perhaps Okey and his wife were too aggressively pursued to join a New Faith congregation, or were caught up in theological debates within their family or with friends. We don't know why, but it is apparent that Okey was sufficiently troubled by the Great Awakening to ponder leaving New Jersey.

In August 1790, Okey, traveling with one of his sons, Daniel Elbridge Hendrickson (1768-1863), met up with his brother Cornelius in Somerset, PA, and the party journeyed to Kentucky to meet with a land agent who had been recommended to them – Daniel Boone (1734-1820). Boone, a long-time Kentucky frontiersman, was already famous in the eastern colonies for his explorations leading to European settlement of Kentucky and parts of West Virginia, the opening of the Cumberland Trail across the Appalachian Mountains and his adventures with Native tribes and Anglo frontier bandits. *(Lofaro M. Daniel Boone: An American Life. Lexington KY: University Press of Kentucky. 2012)*

Boone turned to surveying and real estate later in life to pay off large debts that he owed to investors and land speculators. Boone was a notoriously inept businessman who had been swindled in a number of too good to be true property acquisitions and had lost thousands of dollars on dubious commercial ventures including a ginseng root farm, making and selling maple sugar, and a race track with an adjoining *"continental-style casino for games of wit and cunning."* Gaming casinos were declared illegal by the newly formed legislature when Kentucky achieved statehood, which sank that business venture. Boone and his wife, Rebecca Bryan (1739-1813), then opened a clothing store in the rural community of Marysville, Kentucky, along the Ohio River. Although Marysville was one of the larger communities in the region, it had only 500 residents. The store attempted to sell high-end European fashion from London and Paris, which Rebecca ordered at considerable cost. Surprisingly, Daniel and Rebecca were able to attract a substantial investment to underwrite this venture. Not surprisingly, high-end fashion was a low priority for rural Kentucky residents, and that business also failed, leaving Daniel and Rebecca with even more debt. Next, the Boone's turned to horse breeding. To finance this business, the Boone's sold most of their property and scoured Kentucky, Virginia and North Carolina to purchase a stable of thoroughbreds. Boone corralled the costly herd near a tavern he owned in Maysville, but failed to post a guard one evening, leading to the inevitable

– the entire herd of 20 high priced horses were let out of the pen and likely were quickly swept up by local tribesmen or Anglo bandits.

A side note: *Although the traditional characterization of Boone's faulty business acumen is largely accurate, recent studies of Boone's entrepreneurial endeavors argue that he and Rebecca were no more or less successful than the majority of business owners on the hardscrabble frontier. They had a couple of enterprises, including their Marysville tavern, which provided reliable sources of income, allowing them to survive their many ill-fated entrepreneurial projects. (Hammon N, Harris J. Daniel Boone the Businessman: Revising the Myth of Failure. Register of the Kentucky Historical Society. 2014; 112(1): 5–50)*

Additionally, Daniel and Rebecca were both the subjects of popular paperback novels that were best sellers in the eastern colonies and in England, but they failed to secure literary representation, and received no income from these numerous publications.

One of two portraits of Daniel Boone created by James Longacre in 1791 when Boone was 56, shortly after he helped Okey Hendrickson locate property in Kentucky. The portrait was drawn in Richmond, Virginia during Boone's term as a representative of Kentucky (then a county within the State of Virginia) in the Virginia General Assembly. Exactly the same age and both Revolutionary War veterans, Boone and Hendrickson became close friends in the later years of their lives. The portrait is included in the National Portrait Gallery of Famous Americans in Washington D.C. *Belue TF. Draper's Life of Daniel Boone, Updated. Mechanicsburg, PA: Stackpole Books. 1994.*

Image source: Internet Archive. www.archive.org. Accessed: 6/20/2024

An avid letter writer, Rebecca Bryan Boone shared stories of frontier life with friends in her native North Carolina, some of which made it into regional newspapers. A newspaper in Richmond invited Rebecca to submit stories for publication, which she did, and these articles were picked up by other East Coast papers. Eastern writers, eager to tap into public demand for frontier novels, produced 11 books based on these stories, telling embellished accounts of Rebecca's adventures in "Kentuck". The books were popular, but Rebecca received no compensation for her stories.

Citation and image source: Bohlen M. Rebecca Bryan Boone Remembered. Wilkesboro, NC: Wilkes Journal Patriot. January 3, 2023. www.JournalPatriot.com. Accessed: 8/29/2023.

Boone proved to be a diligent real estate agent for Okey Hendrickson. After two months of searching available properties, the group identified an eight-acre parcel on the Cabin Creek in what would eventually become Lewis County after Kentucky statehood was conferred. The site was near the Ohio River and the border with the Ohio Territory. First time settlers in Kentucky, then a single county of Virginia, were allowed eight acres without cost if they built an entry road and a living structure within three years of the first claim. Boone indicated that Cabin

Creek had good flow year-round for a gristmill and that the land was fertile and tillable with few rocks, all of which turned out to be true. Collecting his fee from Okey, Boone headed off to Frankfort, the territorial capital, to file Okey's claim, and Cornelius caught an Ohio River Ferry, which took him east toward his home in PA. Okey and Daniel rowed and floated a six oar skiff, donated by Boone, to Maysville, KY, about 60 miles away, to order supplies for a rudimentary house, which they constructed by Christmas 1790 with the assistance of local craftsmen recommended by Boone. It was the first house built in Lewis County, Kentucky. After hiring one of the locals to stay in the house and supervise construction of the access road, Okey and Daniel made their way home to New Brunswick, arriving during a January snowstorm.

Location of Lewis County, in red, within the state of Kentucky. In 1790, Okey Hendrickson was the first settler in Lewis County and permanently moved his family to a farm along Cabin Creek in the county in 1794, when he was 60 years old. *Talley W. Oke "Okey" Hendricson: Patriot and Pioneer of Popular Flat. The Lewis County Herald. www.Lewiscountyherald.com. April 30, 2002. Accessed: May 1, 2023.*

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 5/9/2023.

Between 1790 and 1794, Okey journeyed on his own or with son Daniel to Cabin Creek several times to check on progress and start improvements on additional property that Boone identified for them. Supported by endorsement letters from George Washington, Okey convinced the territorial governor to cede him 350 acres in 1791 in recognition of his Revolutionary War service, and 1500 acres in 1794 for starting three businesses in Cabin Creek (a print shop / post office, a sundry store and a blacksmith) and luring several other families to the area. Even though he had owned land in Kentucky for barely a year, Okey was appointed by the Governor in 1791 to represent the region of Kentucky that included Cabin Creek in the Virginia General Assembly. Daniel Boone was appointed representative for the central region of Kentucky. Hendrickson and Boone traveled to Richmond together for the start of the Virginia General Assembly on October 1, 1791 and roomed together in a boarding house during the session. Both argued in front of the Assembly in support of a statehood bill for Kentucky that failed by one vote in 1791, but passed in the spring 1792 Assembly session.

After closing his medical practice, the travel lodges and the tavern, Okey, Mary Ann and four of their younger children departed New Jersey in the summer of 1794 for frontier life in Cabin Creek. The gristmills and freight hauling businesses were taken over by two adult sons who elected to remain in New Jersey. Although Okey and Mary Ann had a large tract of land in Kentucky, there is no evidence that they actively farmed this property. They allowed Boone and others to use the land for guided hunting excursions, and allowed logging to occur in a forested section of the acreage. In 1797, they also traded a section of creek front property for an

adjoining wooded parcel, described as *"many hundreds of hardwood oak forests"* in a local Maysville newspaper, which they leased for hunting excursions to Boone and other local guides.

Okey apparently did not resume his medical practice and instead devoted himself to county and state politics. He was elected Lewis County Commissioner three times, held a statewide position as the Roadwork and Ferry Commissioner for nine years and also secured Justice of the Peace positions in Lewis and two adjacent counties. He was granted a liquor license in 1808 and opened two taverns, one in Cabin Creek and another in the village of Poplar Flat a few miles away, where Okey and Mary Ann purchased additional property, built a second house, and gradually made it their primary residence.

Okey lobbied hard with the state legislature and the Governor to make Poplar Flat the seat of Lewis County, offering in various proposals from 25 to 50 acres of his own land to build a county courthouse, other governance offices and a county park. These proposals were rejected by the legislature in favor of larger communities. In his Roadwork and Ferry Commissioner role, Okey often chaired statewide transportation committees appointed by the legislature. He served on several of these committees with Levi Morgan. Hendrickson, Morgan and several County Commissioners once went on a shoreline inspection tour of the Ohio River near present-day Cincinnati looking for a site to build a ferry system across the river. The site selection tour concluded with a hunting trip in southern Ohio, led by Morgan. When Morgan offered all of the Commissioners half price registration for one of his future Hunting Safaris, all accepted the offer, but it does not appear that Okey ever participated. Prior Hendricson family histories noted that Okey was not an outdoorsman, and disliked hunting and fishing.

Levi Morgan and Okie appear to have had a contentious professional relationship, often finding themselves on opposing sides of transportation and land development issues. Morgan typically opposed infrastructure development projects, preferring that "Kentuck" retain its frontier ethos, and stated in newspaper articles that the fledgling state should focus on tourism (the source of his livelihood), trade networks with Native Peoples and small, independent farming. Okey advocated development of highways, building bridges over creeks and rivers, (he particularly favored all weather covered bridges, which were common in his native New Jersey) expansion of the logging industry, and creation of towns on the Ohio River with docks to transport wood to rapidly expanding eastern cities. Based on public statements printed in newspapers, both men were uncomfortable with slavery and did not own slaves, but were resigned to the expansion of the institution in Kentucky.

A side note: *Okey and Levi's beliefs about the inevitable spread of slavery and slave-powered, plantation style, agriculture in Kentucky were accurate. The territory was ultimately admitted into the Union in 1792 with an economy and a social culture heavily dominated by the state's planter class slave owners who raised tobacco, hemp and livestock on large estates, primarily located in the Bluegrass Region of north central Kentucky. Plantation owners imported too many slaves from Virginia and North Carolina as new agricultural operations were rapidly established in the 1780s and 1790s. As a consequence, Louisville became a major market for auctioning off excess slaves and a departure point for ships transporting sold slaves to the Deep South. The slave trade industry was a substantial catalyst in the development of Louisville. However, by the time of the pre-Civil War Antebellum Period (roughly 1840-1860), the state's*

population had divided into two camps: slavery supporters in the Bluegrass Region, and Unionists and abolitionists in other areas of the state that were largely populated by free workforce, small plot farmers who were decidedly less affluent. During the Civil War, Kentucky was a border state, along with Delaware, Maryland, Missouri and West Virginia (see map below), with a declared policy of neutrality. Kentucky never formally joined the Confederacy, even though several Bluegrass counties formed a shadow Confederate government based in Bowling Green. The shadow government and a contingent of Kentucky militia loyal to the Confederacy were expelled from the state by Union troops in 1862, and played no meaningful role in the state thereafter. (Klotter JC, Thompson-Friend C. A New History of Kentucky (2nd ed) Lexington, KY: University Press of Kentucky. 2019)

This map depicts regions of Kentucky in the 18th century. Slave plantations primarily existed in the Bluegrass region.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/20/2024.

The Border States during the Civil War: Missouri, Kentucky, West Virginia (after 1863), Maryland and Delaware. Each state allowed slavery, but most of the population did not want to see the Union dissolved.
Information and Image source: The National Park Service. The Border States. www.nps.gov. Accessed: 8/21/2024.

Okey and Levi were linked by several Hendrickson – Morgan marriages, and thus were in each other's company from time to time. During one interaction widely reported in local newspapers, Hendrickson and Morgan, their spouses, several children and even a few grandchildren attended a wedding on a celebration barge floating down the Ohio River on a hot summer evening in 1807. Marriages, anniversary's and other celebrations on decorated riverboats were popular on the Ohio River in the 18th century. At one point during the steamy evening, Morgan decided that everyone should cool off with a swim, starting with the young grandchildren who were probably getting restless as the party wore on, and perhaps getting on his nerves. Levi grabbed one of Okey's grandchildren, and carried her to the edge of the barge. Okey rushed over to wrest the child from Levi's grasp, and in the tussle, toppled all three of them into the water. Others jumped in to rescue the floundering threesome while the barge pilot struggled to slow the downriver float. With some degree of struggle, all of the soaking wedding guests were hauled back on the barge with Okey and Levi bellowing at each other until their respective spouses finally *"drug the dripping belligerents to opposite ends of the craft."* (*Poplar Flat Trader*; *July 15, 1807 In: Churchman CR. Kentucky Descendants of Colonel Morgan Morgan. Louisville, KY: University of Louisville Library Document Service. 1994*).

A side note: *By the time little communities on the frontier, such as Cabin Creek and Poplar Flat, reached a population mass of 100 or so, virtually all had recruited a printer and equipment to publish at least a weekly newspaper, primarily devoted to business advertising: announcements of crops coming in, logging or tilling tracts for sale, dates of guided hunting expeditions, slave auctions, cargo barge and ferry schedules, equipment for sale, mail arrival and "goings on" including new settlers in the area and social events. The first business that Okey started in Cabin Creek was a printer/postal shop, which was typical for frontier communities. These print/post shops were also distribution centers for the monthly editions of eastern newspapers that were shipped to frontier towns and avidly consumed by the population. A popular Sunday afternoon activity was newspaper reading, in which a literate family member, often a child/adolescent, read the news aloud to a gathering of family members, with breaks for discussion of events. (Copeland DA. Colonial American Newspapers: Character and Content. Newark, NJ: University of Delaware Press. 1997. Accessed June 27, 2024 via The Printing Museum www.printingmuseum.org.)*

Both of the Hendrickson brothers who moved west, Cornelius and Okey, lived to the age of 96. Although Cornelius Hendrickson was a full-time country doctor until he was 90 years old, Okey's quality of life appears to have declined during his final 20 years. His pal Daniel Boone, perpetually pursued by debt collectors, including Okey himself (see below), grew discontented with Kentucky and moved his family to Missouri in the early 1800s. He only returned periodically to try to settle debts that were not forgiven. Mary Anne lived to the age of 80 but died many years before Okey, and most of their children married (including two Hendrickson – Morgan marriages) and moved their families to Indiana or Illinois. Only son Daniel remained and he was occupied with several businesses of his own and a very large family. Exhibiting signs of what we would now call dementia, Okey moved to an isolated cabin at the back of his property that Boone had built years before as an overnighter for his hunting tours. Daniel routinely checked on his dad and brought him food. On a visit in December 1830, Daniel found Okey lying dead in the fireplace. He had apparently tumbled out of his rocking chair into the fire and burned to death. Okey's burial site is unknown, but he is remembered in Kentucky as one of the leading pioneers of that state. For our Hendricson family line, Okey started the westward migration that ultimately led to the family's residence in Walla Walla, Washington. Few people in that era could say that they were friends with both George Washington and Daniel Boone.

One final Okey Hendrickson – Daniel Boone story, which appears in two of the preceding family histories, and which I heard my father, Harold Hendricson, tell on several occasions. I cannot verify the accuracy of this event, but the circumstances and reactions of the participants seem to fit what is known about both men. Boone was perpetually in debt to others. Based on his reputation, cheerful demeanor and perpetual optimism, people were endlessly willing to loan him money for business schemes, where Boone promised a great return on their investment. Most of these investments did not pan out as intended and he struggled to pay back his investors. A couple of years before Boone left Kentucky, Okey loaned $500 to his friend and dedicated a shoreline tract on Cabin Creek to start an 18th century equivalent of a dude ranch for eastern tourists. Several years went by, the ranch was never developed, and Boone never mentioned returning the money. Soon after, Boone departed the state, in part to avoid a

particularly angry New York investor who convinced a local sheriff to issue an arrest warrant for Boone with a sizable bounty attached.

Years later, on one of his settle-up visits to Kentucky, Boone dropped by to visit Okey and Mary Anne. Inviting the Hendrickson's outside, Boone proudly displayed a wagon full of dead squirrels and other larger animals including a badger. *"There you go,"* said Boone, *"dinners for 500 days; we're square up now."* Okey, pleased to see his friend again, but less impressed with the settlement offer, reached into the wagon, grabbed a dead squirrel by the tail, spun around and clubbed Boone in the head with the rodent, knocking the aging frontiersman to the ground (he was at least 75 years old at the time, as was Okey). Standing over Boone, Okey wagged the squirrel in his face and retorted, *"these dray* (i.e., colonial term for a bunch of squirrels) *won't never be greenbanks, so we won't be squared, until you get up and help me and May Anne cook that badger for a proper dinner."* According to the legend, the old friends proceeded to have a fine meal, regaling each other with stories, before Boone said good-bye to the Hendrickson's for the final time.

=======

Notes on the Kings Highway: King Charles II of England desired to improve transportation among the American colonies and improve intra-colony commerce. He ordered the colonial governors to collaborate with his engineers on construction of a "*wide and well graded highway to run continuously between the southernmost and northernmost reaches of the colonies."* Construction began in 1650 in southern Maine, and 85 years later, in 1735, the highway reached Charleston, South Carolina. The crown initially paid for highway development, but as decades passed, much of the construction and maintenance costs were transferred to roadway users via turnpike fees, and to colonial governments via increased highway maintenance taxes. These imposed usage and upkeep assessments became part of the ever-increasing package of colonial grievances about unfair taxations.

The Kings Highway was designed to pass through 20 commercial centers in the colonies to expand north-south commerce, encourage people to travel between colonies, and promote re-location from more populated northern colonies to under populated southern colonies. Much of present-day U.S. Route 1, which begins in Maine and ends in Key West, Florida, traverses the original Kings Highway. Citation and image source: *Kristen B. The Oldest Road in America, the King's Highway, Passes Right Through New Jersey. www.onlyinyourstate.com. April 27, 2023. Accessed: 8/3/2023.*

Although originally well constructed using cutting edge 17th century highway technology, many colonies neglected maintenance. Colonial and British troop movement on the highway caused considerable damage during the Revolutionary War. As President, Washington encouraged states to budget roadway repairs with mixed results. New Jersey, Pennsylvania, New York and Massachusetts periodically funded highway maintenance, but not enough to consistently maintain the roads, and the southern colonies largely ignored road maintenance.

The King's Highway roadbed was constructed along the 1,300-mile course in four phases. A 12-foot wide roadbed was scraped into the ground with hoes to a depth of 4 feet below the surface. Slaves in both northern and southern states did the construction work. Next, large flat stones were laid as the bedrock. Then a layer of mixed dirt, sand and pebbles was poured over the stones and tromped down by slaves walking back and forth on it. Finally a layer of pea gravel was poured as the top layer. The roadway was slightly crested to encourage water drainage. Around 1800, several states began to cover deteriorated sections of the King's Highway with a wood plank roadbed. This worked adequately until freight wagons and stagecoaches with iron-rimmed wheels destroyed much of the plank roads. After the Civil War, concrete mixing became more sophisticated and petroleum based asphalt was demonstrated for the first time in the U.S. in 1870 by a Belgium chemist who installed ten yards of asphalt pavement in Newark, New Jersey. Pennsylvania Avenue in front of the White House became the first fully asphalt-paved street in 1871. Plank roads largely disappeared by 1890, replaced by asphalt, concrete or crushed stone roadways.

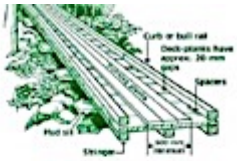


Diagram of a plank road

When the original stone roadbed fell into disrepair, long stretches of the King's Highway were covered with wood planking between 1800 and 1860, that was largely destroyed during the Civil War.
Image source: U.S. Department of Agriculture. U.S. Forest Service. www.fs.usda.gov. Accessed: 6/19/2024.

=======

In addition to publications cited in the preceding text and on pages 145-147, the sources below were consulted to explore Okey's experiences in the Revolutionary War and life in Kentucky.

Harlow LE. Religion, Race, and the Making of the Confederate Kentucky, 1830-1880, New York: Cambridge University Press. 2014.

Ketchum R. The Winter Soldiers: The Battles for Trenton and Princeton. Princeton, NJ: Owl Books. 1998.

Klotter JC. Genealogies of Kentucky Families: From the Register of the Kentucky Historical Society (Volume 1). Baltimore, MD: Genealogical Publishing Co. pages 48-76. 1981.

Dining With Cornwallis - Eleanor Lindley Maris (1749-1783) and George Maris (1743-1782)

The primary information source for the history of the Maris family in North America is: *Maris GL and Pinkerton Maris A. The Maris Family in the U.S. A Record of the Descendants of George and Alice Maris, 1683-1885. West Chester, PA: FS Hickman Printing. 1885*. This book was digitized by HathiTrust in 2013 and is available from several sites including the University of Pennsylvania Online Library (www.onlinebooks.library.upenn.edu) and Amazon Books. Several books and articles on the Quaker experience in North Carolina and the Revolutionary War in that state are listed at the end of George and Eleanor's story.

George and Eleanor (Ellie) were devout Quakers who both suffered considerably during the Revolutionary War as described in Chapter II. George was discharged from the Continental Army after losing an eye during a skirmish with the British in June 1778 and returned home to Chester, PA. He found that Ellie and their children were still suffering the effects of the British ransack of their home. Without their horses, wagon and farm tools stolen by the marauding British, and slowly recovering from her facial injuries incurred when she attempted to fend off the Redcoats, Ellie was struggling to provide for her children, relying on food and clothing contributions by the Chester Friends Meeting House. Shortly after reuniting in July 1778, George and Ellie decided to pack up what remained of their belongings and move to Orange County, North Carolina (site of present day Chapel Hill) where George's parents (John Maris Sr. and Kathryn Bound Heiden) had periodically resided, and were instrumental in establishing several Friends Meeting Houses. George's father had owned a successful blacksmith shop in a village known as Carrboro (adjacent to Chapel Hill), which he sold when he and Kathryn decided to reside permanently in Chester PA. To assist his son and daughter-in-law, John Maris re-purchased the blacksmith business and deeded it over to George.

For the initial 18 months in Carrboro, all was well with George, Ellie and their children, with the exception discussed in the following paragraph, as the family settled into their new community. George expanded the business to include silversmith work and Ellie became active in the local Friends Meeting House, helping to set up a new Quaker settlement in an area known at that time as South Alamance. In February 1780, finding that his monocular eyesight was not sufficient for high quality silversmith work, George hired a black freeman, born in England, only known as Jonas, to function as his silversmith. The community was heavily Quaker and accepting of Jonas who had high-level expertise, and was in constant demand. However, there were substantial numbers of Tories (colonists who were British supporters, opposed to the Revolution and supportive of slavery) in the county who were not accepting. Three Tory attempts to torch George's blacksmith building finally succeeded in destroying the structure. Jonas was injured when attempting to douse the blaze and nearly captured by the Tory gang. Not surprisingly, Jonas elected to leave NC for Canada via a Revolutionary War era Underground Railroad (a string of safe houses reached by clandestine night travel) primarily operated by Quaker groups. This early version of the Underground Railroad laid the groundwork for a more sophisticated operation in the 19th century. *(Carey B, Plank G. Quakers and Abolition. Urbana, Illinois: University of Illinois Press. 2011)*

Although Ellie's initial time in Carrboro was generally pleasant, one notable event led to anguish. As described in Chapter II, Ellie's brother was the notorious British loyalist and Tory militia leader James Lindley. (*Bamberg R. Captain James L. Lindley. www.ncpedia.org/biography/lindley-James. 2013. Accessed: June 19, 2023*) In 1779, shortly after Ellie and George arrived in Carrboro, James Lindley was captured during a battle with a Continental Army brigade near Laurens, South Carolina, tried, and sentenced to be hanged, along with his teenage son, William, who was apprehended with him. To discourage other colonial families from considering the Tory path, the Continental Army commander in the South, General Nathaniel Greene, ordered Lindley's wife, Mary Cox, to be rounded up and transported to Laurens to observe the execution of her husband and son. Hearing of her sister-in-law's impending extraction, Ellie traveled to Mary's home in Reaburn Creek, South Carolina (a 150 mile round trip) to see her and offer comfort. However, when Ellie arrived, Mary Lindley refused to see her, sending a message via a servant that Ellie and George's abolitionist beliefs and her other brother Thomas Lindley (a Continental Army officer who commanded a regiment from Ellie's hometown of Chester, PA) were to blame for family's troubles. After Mary rejected several appeals to speak, Ellie headed back to Carrboro. As described in Chapter II, Mary's son William was exempted from execution, and General Daniel Morgan (yes – that Daniel Morgan once again, from the semi-related Morgan branch) put a stop to the plan to bring Mary Lindley to the execution. Mary Lindley and several of her younger children moved to North Carolina after her husband's death, living 20 miles from Ellie and George, but continued to refuse their requests to meet.

Routes of the 18th and 19th century Underground Railroad by which runaway slaves escaped to anti-slavery states, Canada, and the Caribbean. Quakers were involved in early versions of this system. The frequent movements of John Maris (1709-1792), an outspoken abolitionist, between NC and PA suggest that he was involved in the network.

Foner E. Gateway to Freedom: The Hidden History of the Underground Railroad. New York: W.W. Norton and Company. 2015.

Image source: The Canadian Encyclopedia. www.thecanadianencyclopedia.org. Accessed: 6/16/2024.

Unsettled by Tory harassment in Carrboro, George and Ellie moved to the nearby village of Hillsborough, NC, also with a strong Quaker presence, and opened another blacksmith shop. Apparently dedicated to his convictions, George hired two brothers of Caribbean descent who were former domestic workers at a nearby plantation, and freed in the disposition of the landowner's will. Several weeks later, a group of local Tory militia rode past George and Ellie's home several times and sprayed it with gunfire on each pass. Two of George and Ellie's children were wounded in the attack. At the same time, another band of Tories dragged the Caribbean brothers from the backroom of the blacksmith shop where they lived, intent on hanging them, but a group of Quakers and the town constable intervened. After an altercation, one of the Tories was dragged from his horse and incarcerated and the others escaped, leaving the

brothers unharmed. Following this incident, George and Ellie pleaded with community leaders to provide better protection and commence a search for the Tories. The mayor refused, fearing reprisals and likely because some of the Tories were village residents. Instead, the mayor encouraged the Maris family to leave town, taking the Caribbean brothers with them.

In October 1780, the Maris family moved yet again, this time to an isolated community in a hilly section of North Carolina between Greensboro and Durham where Ellie had previously helped to create a Friends Meeting House. An original resident of the area and leader of the Quakers, Simon Dixon, took in the Maris family, and converted a barn into a residence for the new arrivals. Once again, George opened a blacksmith shop, but without the Caribbean brothers who apparently decided that North Carolina was not an optimal residence. Ellie continued to engage in Friends outreach efforts, helping develop Meeting groups in nearby villages. Seemingly, this hilltop village provided George and Ellie with the environment they sought.

However, in March 1781, the quiet community and the lives of George and Ellie were disrupted once again by the Revolutionary War. On March 15, 1781, British troops under the command of General Charles Cornwallis (1738-1805) won a costly victory against the Colonials at the Battle of Guilford Courthouse, near Greensboro. Although the Redcoats technically won the day, 30% of their forces were killed or captured and 25% were wounded. Over 50% of the British officer corps were killed. *(Babbits LE, Howard JB. Long, Obstinate, and Bloody: The Battle of Guilford Courthouse. Chapel Hill NC: University of North Carolina Press. 2009)*

Location of the 1781 Battle of Guilford Courthouse in north central North Carolina, near the village of Snow Camp.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 6/28/2024.

After barely managing to repulse the Colonial attack, Cornwallis decided to declare victory while he still had the opportunity, and quickly repositioned his army before the Colonials re-grouped and attacked again. In the hasty departure from the field, Cornwallis swung his horse around and ran smack into tree branch, knocking him to the ground, likely separating his shoulder. Collecting himself, Cornwallis recognized that he and his army needed an isolated location for recuperation and to wait for reinforcements. His scouts recommended a hilltop Quaker village accessible only by one winding road, which could be easily defended. During the British march to their recuperation site, a late winter snowstorm swept through the area dropping a foot of snow on the village and the single road into town. By the time Cornwallis, his aching shoulder and the remains of his tattered British army trudged up the hill and into the village, nobody was in a good mood. Cornwallis immediately directed his troops to evict all residents from their homes so his troops could have shelter, slaughter cattle to provision his hungry army, and tear apart wagons and furniture for firewood, which must have been eerily familiar for Ellie, who survived the same ransacking in Chester, PA. Surveying the scene, Cornwallis described the Quaker village as *"our egregious little Snow Camp."* The term Snow Camp stuck after the Redcoats departure, and the community was eventually incorporated by the state of North Carolina as Snow Camp.

Simon Dixon was evicted from his house, the largest in town, so Cornwallis and his surviving officers could use it for their residence. George, Ellie and their children were evicted from the reconstituted barn so it could be used as an infirmary and quarters for troops. All others in the village soon found themselves on the street in the midst of the blizzard. The Snow Camp residents were herded to the Friends Meeting House and restricted to the vicinity of the building, under the watch of guards. The Meeting House was only large enough to shelter a few families. Everyone else huddled under blankets and canvas attached to the Meeting House walls. Several days of intense cold followed the snowstorm, contributing to a pneumonia-like illness in several elders and a child. Appeals to Redcoat troops for canopies that could be made into tents were ignored. Finally, Simon Dixon was able to arrange an audience with General Cornwallis. To demonstrate British cordiality, Dixon was allowed to invite four Snow Camp residents to accompany him to the meeting. Dixon selected Ellie Maris, known for her articulate communication, one of the elderly Snow Camp residents with pneumonia, and two of Ellie's children for effect. One of the children was Aaron Samuel Maris, who, as an adult, was the first Maris to begin the westward trek across the continent.

Friends Meeting House at Snow Camp, NC. During the British occupation, residents were evicted from their homes, and restricted to the Meeting House and other crude structures.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org.
Accessed: 6/28/2024.

After a sumptuous meal served by two junior British officers, Dixon, Ellie and the others were ushered in to see the General. Dixon outlined their complaints and requested survival materials such as tents, blankets, lanterns, barrels of fresh water, secluded latrines for males and females, care in the infirmary for ill residents and access to their homes to retrieve clothing, which Cornwallis agreed to provide, although home entry and latrine use would be under guard. After directing one of his aides to take the sick elderly resident to the infirmary, Cornwallis, surprisingly, launched into a lengthy and animated discussion of the cultural and historical wonders of his hoped for next assignment – India. Sensing the children were getting antsy, he ordered more food and a dessert for them and sent them away to the kitchen.

Apparently lonely, or at least in need of non-military discussion, Cornwallis resumed the conversation with Dixon and Ellie by lamenting the devastating loss of his wife, Jemima, in 1779, which *"sent him far adrift and is the reason I am here I suppose."* This led Ellie to ask how he (Cornwallis) could abide the *"devastation wreaked upon villages such as ours and the despondency of all therein,"* given his own grief. Cornwallis responded: *"I see it as my duty to achieve the military goals set for me, nothing else. It is my assignment and I pursue it until directed to desist*", although quickly adding that he found *"this particular conflict to be muddled and afflicts me with torturous tensions."* Switching to less personal topics, Cornwallis peppered the villagers with questions about life in the Americas, and during the discussion revealed his distaste for the British attempts to excessively tax the colonies, and to militarily suppress the revolt. As a Parliament member (PM) during 1765-1775, Cornwallis was one of five PMs to vote

against all taxation bills aimed at the colonies, and proposed bills to implement gradual independence for the colonies over a transitional period. To the amazement of his guests, Cornwallis rifled through a satchel and pulled out a PM-sponsored assent bill that called for institution of nationhood for the American Colonies by 1800. An assent bill was a proposed parliamentary act for debate, amendment and approval in both houses, followed by submission for royal endorsement. He read parts of it aloud to Dixon and Ellie, showed them his signature on the sponsor line, complained about PM colleagues who failed to support the bill, and told them that the document was background material for a book he was writing during winter encampments. *(Saberton I. The Cornwallis Papers. The Campaigns of 1780 and 1781 in the Southern Theatre of the American Revolution. London: The Naval and Military Press. 2010)*

Ultimately, the conversation got around to the merits of Quakerism, which Cornwallis viewed skeptically, blaming the Friends Movement for social unrest in England, and which Dixon and Ellie defended with vigor, which startled Cornwallis. Ellie described the elevated sense of purpose she experienced as a Quaker women and praised the expanded role in public discourse for women in Friends Societies. Ellie's comments struck a note with the General, leading him to discuss Jemima's desire to be *"more in the public sphere, and less stored away in the home."* Finally, the conversation found its way the inevitable dissection of slavery. Cornwallis agreed with Ellie and Dixon that slavery was deplorable, but disagreed on the timetable for abolition, saying *"the despicable practice is the only way to power agriculture until contraptions (machines) are built to take the place of man's muscles."* Ellie and Dixon argued for immediate abolition, but struggled to answer the General's questions about how that could be implemented. Cornwallis became a vocal abolition proponent later in his government career.

As the evening drew to a close, Cornwallis gathered the children and showed them a collection of sabers and pistols, which probably horrified Ellie and Dixon, and escorted the Snow Camp group to the door, informing them that he intended to depart in two weeks, and hoped that *"his disagreeable time in the Americas will end soon."* A summary of the Snow Camp meeting by Cornwallis appears in Ian Saberton's publication of the general's war correspondence (see preceding citation) and is described in other accounts of his activities during the Colonial War listed on page 261. Using these materials as sources, two Snow Camp residents and brothers, James and Bobby Wilson, wrote a play depicting the British stay at Snow Camp, with focus on the Cornwallis audience with Dixon and Ellie. The play title, *Sword of Peace*, refers to the Quaker's dedication to resolving disputes peacefully. The play is presented annually at the Snow Camp Summer Theatre and other summer stock theatres in the Carolinas.

Charles Cornwallis commanded British armies in the northern and southern theatres of the American Revolutionary War, winning notable victories, but also suffering defeats, including the disastrous sequestering of his army at Yorktown. In spite of his mixed military record, Cornwallis received high-level assignments after the colonial war, including tenures as the Governor-General of India and Ireland. *Image source: The American Revolution. www.ouramericanrevolution.org. Accessed: 6/9/2024.*

Even though he received no reinforcements, Cornwallis and the remnants of his army departed Snow Camp two weeks later and began a disastrous campaign north into Virginia. His goals were to attract Tory militia to replenish his army, build up a new military unit out of the thousands of escaped slaves who fled to British camps, and meet up with another British army marching south from New York and draw Washington's Continental Army of the North into a final, decisive battle. The plan to attract Tory militia failed, the British army stationed in New York decided not to venture south, and a series of questionable tactical decisions by British high command led Cornwallis to station his army at Yorktown, Virginia. Cornwallis's hopes for a British infantry division composed of freed slaves who agreed to enlist in the Redcoat army also failed to materialize. (*Carpenter S. Southern Gambit: Cornwallis and the British March to Yorktown. Norman, OK: University of Oklahoma Press. 2019*)

George and Ellie Maris both died during the winter of 1782-1783. While building an addition to their house in Snow Camp in the fall of 1782, George shredded his hand with a saw, which became infected. After lingering several weeks with a high fever, he died on Christmas Eve at the age of 39. Ellie died at age 34 several days after childbirth in January 1783. We do not know the complications that led to her demise, although the child survived. The Snow Camp community took in George and Ellie's seven children and raised them, in a collective enterprise, over the next 15 years. All of the children grew to adulthood, married and raised children. Some of the siblings remained in North Carolina, while others returned to Pennsylvania. Aaron Samuel Maris, the sibling linked to the Hendricson-Lienau line (see Maris generations 7-11 on pages 70-73), moved his family west and settled in Indiana.

In addition to publications cited in this section, these sources were used to explore the lives of George and Ellie Maris, North Carolina Quakerism, and the Snow Camp occupation.

Buchanan J. The Road to Guilford Courthouse. The American Revolution in the Carolinas. New York: John Wiley and Sons. 1971. Reprinted for Google Goodreads – 2021.

Dixon S. Recollections of Cornwallis' Encampment. Carrboro NC: Orange County Printing. 1781. Available at: www.ncpedia.org/biography/dixon-simon. Accessed: June 30, 2023.

Gust FO. "Dixon, Simon, 1728-1791. (2nd ed.)." In: Powell WS. Dictionary of North Carolina Biography. Chapel Hill, NC: The University of North Carolina Press. 2021.

Teague BT. Cane Creek, Mother of Meetings. Greensboro NC: North Carolina Friends Historical Society. Annals of the 1994 North Carolina Yearly Meeting of Friends. 1995.

Whitaker W. Centennial History of Alamance County Historical Association. Burlington NC: Alamance County Historical Association. 1974.

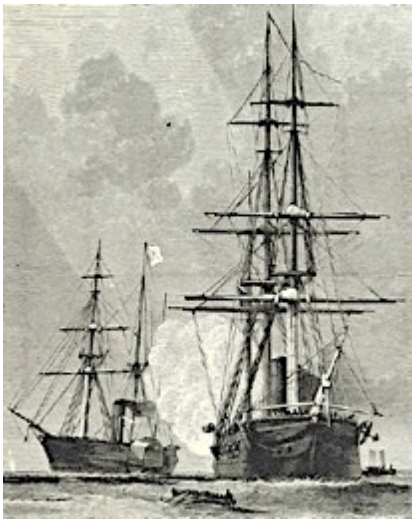
Wickwire F, Wickwire M. Cornwallis: The American Adventure. Boston: Houghton Mifflin. 1970.

One Foggy Morning - Johann (John) Lienau Sr. (1808-1876)

More than any other recent ancestor, I had to dig deep into many online genealogical data bases, as well as employment records, point-of-entry immigration records, and data gleaned from census reports, newspaper articles and obituaries to piece together the details of John Lienau's life. Consequently, blanks remain to be filled-in, and I relied upon "reasonable speculation" to discuss possible motives or incentives for decisions made as he progressed in his chosen career.

John Lienau had a nearly 50 year career at sea beginning in his native Germany where he rose to the position of harbor pilot at one of the largest North Sea seaports, which was followed by seven years working for the Royal Mail Steam Packet Company after he immigrated to England. By the 1850s, this company was the largest shipping line in the world and as the name implies, delivered mail, travelers, and household items worldwide, but with a particular focus on Latin America. By 1854 John had risen to the position of Chief Mate on a Royal Mail ship, the *Trent,* with a Southampton, England to Nicaragua route and intermediate stops in Barbados, Cuba, Puerto Rico, and Jamaica. This position carried supervisory and training responsibilities for the non-officer crew of the *Trent*, and he was a member of the Captain's Council that dealt with administrative issues. With a residence in San Juan, Puerto Rico, a new wife, the mysterious Ella, Ellen or Eslen Lienau (see the Notes on Ellen on pages 276-277), and a young son, John had ambition to immigrate to the U.S. The impending transfer of the *Trent* to Turkey to serve as a troop transport during the Crimean War may have had a role in this decision. *(United Kingdom Merchant Navy Seaman Records, 1835-1941. Database and Images. Findmypast. http://findmypast.com. The National Archives of the UK. Kew, Surrey. 2023)*

In March 1854, John resigned his crew position with The Royal Mail Steam Packet Company and the *Trent*, walked across the street into the San Juan office of the U.S. Mail Steamship Company, and accepted an advertised position. He was promptly assigned to the flagship of the company's 17-vessel fleet, the *Star of the West*, one of the world's largest steamships in the 1850s, previously described in Chapter III. The *Star* just happened to anchored in the San Juan harbor on the day John signed his U.S. Mail contract. A week later, John was in the Caribbean on the *Star* heading for Panama, and then a return trip to New York.



***HMS Trent*, left, was the nautical home of John Lienau Sr. for seven years. The ship was in the Royal Mail Packet Steam Company fleet until the Crimean War, when it was re-fitted as a troop transport. Lienau departed the ship in 1854 and joined a steamer company delivering U.S. mail in the Caribbean. In November 1861 after the start of the Civil War, the *Trent*, back in the Caribbean, was boarded by Union soldiers from the *San Jacinto*, right, to remove Confederate envoys to England. This led to a standoff between the Lincoln administration and English Parliament known as the Trent Affair.**

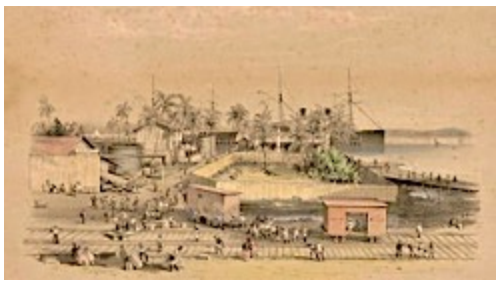
Carroll F. American Civil War and British Intervention: Threat of Anglo-American Conflict. Canadian Journal of History. 2012; 47(1). Accessed: June 1, 2024.

Image: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 6/6/2024.

However, instead of a promotion or lateral transfer, John accepted a basic seaman (i.e., deck hand) position at the bottom of the crew hierarchy. He was 46 in 1854 and the vast majority of deckhands were teens or early 20s with a few older seamen busted down for various transgressions. The route of the *Star of the West* was probably the main attraction for John: New York to Panama with stops in Charleston, Havana, New Orleans, San Juan, Caracas, Venezuela and Nicaragua. John initially registered with the U.S. Immigration Service and rented an apartment in Brooklyn in September 1854 at the conclusion of his first cruise on the *Star*. *(New York Passenger List, 1820-1891. Database of Port of Entry Logs. FamilySearch. https://FamilySearch.org. Citing NARA Microfilm Publication M237. Washington D.C. National Archives and Records Administration. Accessed February 24, 2023)* Soon after, Ella and son John Jr. arrived in New York and joined John Sr. at his Brooklyn residence. The family remained permanently in the New York area thereafter, residing at several different rentals until purchasing an upscale brownstone in 1868 located at 192 Concord Street in Brooklyn. A contemporary image of that location appears below.

192 Concord Street (red door) in 2019. It is a 3300 sq. foot condo located between Park Avenue and Flatbush Avenue, 15 blocks from the Brooklyn Bridge. The original building at this site was constructed in 1865, purchased by John Lienau in 1868, extensively re-modeled in 1915, and periodically updated over ensuing decades.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 6/30/2024.

U.S. Mail Steamship Company had a similar mission as the Royal Mall Steam Packet Company: transport mail, packages, newspapers and passengers between New York and Panama. The influx of two million people into California during the Gold Rush and the large number that remained in the state afterward stimulated demand for mail service that was further enhanced by the rapidly expanding population in Oregon. To meet this need, the U.S. Mail Steamship Company delivered mail and parcels to Panama for off-loading to a mail-processing center built by William Henry Aspinwall, who also constructed the Trans-Panama Railroad that opened in 1852. Mail destined for California and Oregon was sorted in the center, sent to the Pacific side of Panama by train and loaded onto steamships of the Pacific Mail Service Company for delivery at West Coast destinations. These ships picked up Pacific Coast mail destined for eastern cities, which in turn, was loaded onto the *Star of the West* for return to New York. The *Star* made 7-8 round-trips annually, also carrying passengers in each direction. For individuals who could afford the 800 bedding compartments or the 200 staterooms, the *Star* provided a comfortable alternative to the wagon train for reaching California and Oregon.



The Aspinwal Mail Center in Panama employed 300 people who sorted and distributed mail for the U.S. West Coast and Central American nations.
Obituary: William Aspinwall. New York Times. January 19, 1875. www.nytimes.com/archives. Accessed: July 20, 2023.

Image: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 6/17/2023.

John served on the *Star of the West* for seven years, apparently working diligently and was rewarded with incremental promotions from deckhand to Seaman First Class, Clerk (managing passengers and cargo), Paymaster (ship's finances, payroll and supply purchasing), Chief Mate, Pilot and by 1861, on his final voyage on the *Star*, he was Second Mate (second officer to the Captain). In 1860, the U.S. War Department, anticipating the advent of the Civil War, leased the *Star* from the U.S. Mail Steamship Service for $1,250 a day for use as a troop and supply transport. The *Star's* first mission for the War Department was important: transporting 200 Union soldiers and two months of provisions to Fort Sumter in the harbor of Charleston, South Carolina. The Fort and its 75 soldiers and officers, plus a substantial cohort of family members and pro-Union laborers, had been informally besieged since December 20, 1860 when South Carolina seceded from the Union, and had not been re-supplied since October. Buying food and other supplies from local markets was no longer a reliable option as the governor of the new Confederate state of South Carolina slowly clamped down on access to provisions for the Union garrison, even though he allowed Sumter commanding officers Major Richard Anderson and Captain Abner Doubleday (yes – THAT Abner Doubleday; more about him later) to exchange mail and telegrams with the Union army commanders in Washington D.C.

On December 26, 1860, a supply ship with provisions and 60 soldiers was turned away near the harbor entrance by three guard steamers loaded with South Carolina militia from Fort Moultrie on the north side of the Bay. After this failure, the War Department, more as a point of national hubris and pride, given the recent secession of South Carolina, than pure necessity, was determined to re-provision and expand the Fort Sumter garrison. However, Anderson had informed the War Department several times that he had sufficient supplies to hold out for 4-5 months, and did not need a large influx of additional soldiers to house and feed within the largely unfinished shell of Fort Sumter. Anderson was a former slave owner from Kentucky who was openly sympathetic to the southern cause in spite of his devotion to defending the Union, a dilemma that exacted a deep emotional toll on the career army officer. He was convinced that the newly formed and novice Confederate government was simply saber rattling and would not attack Sumter. His second-in-command, Doubleday, held a total opposite view, and was itching to take pre-emptive action against the South Carolinians, who were vile traitors from his perspective. *(Larson E. The Demon of Unrest. New York: Random House. 2024)*

A portrait of Robert Anderson, commander of the Union garrison at Fort Sumter in 1860-1861. Anderson was reluctant to take any action that might rile the South Carolina militia, knowing full well the fort was not defensible. He received no clear military orders or political guidance from the outgoing President, James Buchanan, who was desperate to avoid the inevitable start of the Civil War on his watch, or from the new Lincoln administration, which was equally inept and passive in March and April of 1861.
Image source: Library of Congress. www.loc.gov. Accessed: 7/10/2024.

The Captain of the *Star* was John McGowan, at age 52, one year younger than Lienau, with 30 years experience at the helm of sail and steamships, including numerous stops in Charleston

Harbor. Prior to taking command of the *Star*, McGowen was an officer and boat captain in the U.S. Revenue Marine Service, a forerunner of the Coast Guard, with combat experience in the Mexican-American War of the 1840s and many years chasing pirates and contraband (black market) ships along the Florida coastline. *(Captain John McGowan, USRMS, Elizabeth City, New Jersey. New York Times Obituaries. January 18, 1891. www.nytimes.com/archives. Accessed: September 3, 2023)* John Lienau was second-in-command as Second Mate and Andrew Brewer, younger but also with considerable experience, was the Lead Pilot. Lienau's role on this voyage was diverse including serving as Relief Pilot (presumably during bathroom breaks, meals and rest periods), Flag Officer in charge of signaling, Bursar and Crew Chief. It is important to note that ship's officers and crew were unarmed civilians working as contractors for the War Department.

A side note: *The New York Times printed two front page headline articles on January 14, 1861 in the morning and evening editions that included detailed descriptions of the Star's journey to Fort Sumter, peppered with commentary from the civilian crew and the army officers on board. The morning edition also printed Captain McGowen's trip report verbatim. The evening article presented a lengthy synopsis of the entire journey with focus on the action within Charleston Harbor, amplified with quotes from Captain McGowan. My description of the events of January 9, 1861, from the perspective of the ship's crew, is drawn from these first hand reports published in the NY Times. The citations for these articles and other sources, not cited in the following text, are listed on page 279.*

The *Star* departed its New York dock at night on January 5, 1861, stopping shortly thereafter at Governor's Island in the harbor to pick up 200 soldiers fresh out of training, their rifles and munitions, three young Union officers (Lts. Charles Wood, William Webb and Charles Thomas), a surgeon, PGS Ten Broeck, and provisions including food, bedding, medical supplies and baseballs, bats, gloves and bases – more about this later. Lt. Wood was the commanding officer for this 200-man unit, although he played a minimal role in the events that were about to unfold. Lienau supervised the onboarding process, which occurred prior to dawn on January 6. Heading south, the *Star* reached the mouth of Charleston Harbor at 1:30am on January 9, 1861. Based on his past experiences in the harbor, McGowan could tell that daybreak would be hazy with limited visibility. Charleston Harbor in 1861 had a notoriously treacherous entrance due to shallow depth and swirling sandbars. Typically, lanterns were hung on buoys to mark the safe entry channel and the rampart torches on Fort Sumter were lit all night to guide ships. But on this night, there were no guiding channel lights, the harbor lighthouses were dark, navigational buoys had been removed and Fort Sumter could not be seen. Using look-outs on both sides of the ship and depth soundings, Brewer slowly guided the *Star* through the sand bars and into the mouth of the Bay until the ship coasted to a stop at 4:00am, still unable to see the night torches of Fort Sumter. All lights on the *Star* were doused to avoid attracting attention from South Carolina militia stationed at the mouth of the Bay, and the soldiers and their officers were sent below deck. *The Star* was flying a standard U.S. maritime flag, typically used by commercial vessels in this era.

A side note: *A brief comment about harbor size is appropriate to help understand the events on the morning of January 9, 1861. Susan and I have driven the Charleston Harbor shoreline by car and also taken a boat tour of the Bay to Fort Sumter, which is on a tiny island roughly a half-*

mile from the north and south shorelines. An important take-away: the harbor is not wide near the mouth where the fort is located. A ship the size of the Star of the West, suddenly emerging from the morning fog would look immense from either shore. Maneuvering the ship, especially turning it around, inside the Bay must have been challenging for McGowan and his pilot.

Around 4:30am, for reasons that are murky, oversized versions of the 33 star Union military garrison flags were hoisted up flagpoles at the bow and stern of the *Star.* It is unclear who gave the order but it would have been Lienau's responsibility as Signal Officer, although it seems unlikely that he would not have first consulted McGowan. Another steamship, further into the harbor, dimly became visible in the pre-dawn haze, suddenly fired red rockets (i.e., flares) into air and lit numerous deck torches. This steamer was most likely a harbor guard ship manned by South Carolina militia posted near the sand bars to detect the arrival of incoming ships, but historians still debate the accuracy of this assumption *(Larsen, 2024)*. The flares and illumination from the preceding ship roused ten cadets on night duty in a shoreline battery, with several cannon, at the South Carolina Military Academy (now the Citadel) located on the southern lip of the harbor entrance. The young cadets scurried to the wall overlooking the Bay to observe the commotion. The flares continued from the lead ship for several minutes, and then, trailing by less than a half mile, the outline of the *Star* began to emerge out of the haze. The cadets were astounded at the sight of a giant paddlewheeler flying very large and easily discernable Union military flags.

The 33 star military garrison flag of the United States flown by the *Star of the West* on January 9, 1861.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/1/2024.

The cadet squad was led by 21-year old senior George Edward Haynesworth, who ran up a small incline to a barracks where the cadet's faculty supervisor, a Major P.F. Stevens, was sleeping (it was 4:30am after all). After rousing Stevens from his slumber, the cadet told him a Union warship was entering the harbor. Stephens, probably still groggy from his abrupt awakening, went outside to take a look. Even through the haze, he could see that the *Star* was a merchant ship without any visible deck guns, but it was indeed, flying Union military flags, which was puzzling. After berating Haynesworth for confusing a warship with a merchant paddlewheeler, Stevens ruminated about the possible reasons for the ship's appearance in the harbor, concluding that it might be in distress or possibly even lost. He added, *"probably we should warn the ship before the boys on the north shore decide to fire on it,"* referring to the militia on the opposite side of the harbor. That was all Cadet Haynesworth needed to hear. He ran back to his squad and told them to unstraddle the largest cannon (i.e., remove a covering tarp) and prepare to fire warning shots in front of the steamship's bow. Haynesworth did not wait for Major Stephens to make his way down the hill to the battery to supervise the cadets' actions. Around 4:45am, at literally point blank range, Haynesworth lit the fuse on a 12-pound cannon leveled nearly parallel to the ground and sent the first ball roaring toward the *Star*.

(Baker G. Cadets in Gray. The Story of the Cadets of the South Carolina Military Academy and the Cadet Rangers in the Civil War. Lexington South Carolina: Palmetto Books. 1989)

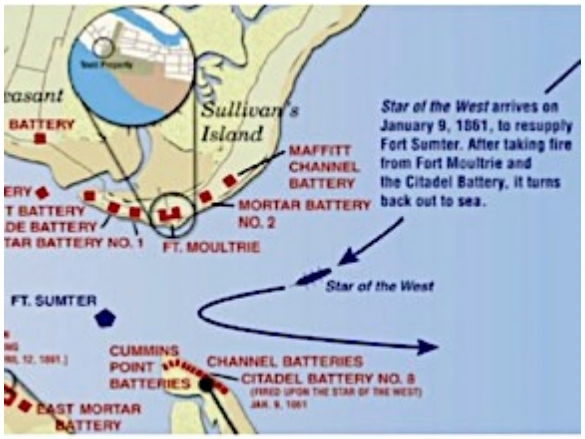
A depiction of Haynesworth and cadets firing "first shots of the Civil War" on January 9, 1861. This image first appeared in *Harpers Weekly* and was reprinted in Southern newspapers with wildly inaccurate accounts of the incident.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 7/2/2024.

Instead of plunking into the bay ahead of the steamship, the first ball clipped the front mast at about 15 feet above deck level, knocking off a tall ladder, which crashed through the pilot-house roof, barely missing Brewer. The second ball flew past the pilothouse window so close that McGowan and Lienau both swore they could see creases in the ordinance. The third shot was like a low line drive in baseball (i.e., a daisy cutter), that apparently skipped several times on the water, fortunately slowing its rotation, and thudded sharply against the hull, knocking some the ship's external paneling loose, springing a small leak, and profoundly alarming the soldiers in the hold. So much for military student marksmanship! The soldiers in the hull of the *Star* clamored to the staircases, demanded to be allowed topside, and banged their rifle butts on the hatch door and hull.

McGowan realized that the appearance of 200 armed Union soldiers on the deck would enflame the situation. Lienau was dispatched to calm down the troops below deck and settle the young officers, a task that he apparently accomplished, although Lt. Wood was allowed to stay above deck, and observed the shelling. The cannon fire from the south bank alerted the shoreline batteries at Fort Moultrie on Sullivan Island to the north of Fort Sumter. Accounts vary, including McGowan's own action report, but anywhere from nine to 23 shots were fired by state militia from nine pounders at Moultrie. Again, good fortune held for the *Star* and her crew. The militia, who actually were trying to hit the *Star*, managed to misfire on most of their shots, but some damage was sustained. From McGowan's post-action report: *"One shot passed just clear of the pilot-house, another ball passed between the smokestack and walking beams of the engine (the long arms that connected the engine to the paddlewheel), another struck the ship just abaft of the fore-rigging and stove in the planking, while another shot came within an ace of carrying away our rudder. Still another shot came bounding across the water at its surface and struck us about two feet above the water line, just below where our man was taking depth soundings." (Larsen, 2024)* Lt. Wood reported that one ball clipped the front mast, sending shards of wood raining down on the deck, rattling the soldiers even more, and another shot thudded off the hull, leaving a dent, but no significant damage.

Even though the batteries north and south of the Star were observed by Lt. Wood to be *"firing wildly with little calculation of aim,"* McGowan decided that an attempt to land at Fort Sumter would surely throw the *Star* into greater danger as a stationary target parked along the island's pier, and he also was perplexed by the lack of communication from Sumter. While under fire, he ordered the ship's flags to be raised and lowered several times to attract Sumter's attention,

but received no response. After concurrence from Lienau, McGowan ordered Brewer to navigate out of the harbor as *"expeditiously as required"*. This decision was reinforced soon after when the bow spotter identified two small steamships launched from Fort Moultrie, each pulling skiffs loaded with soldiers. Fortunately, the little steamers were just as slow as the *Star*, and floundered in the choppy water. McGowan directed Lienau to signal Sumter that the landing was aborted. Anderson and Doubleday, who had no idea that the *Star* had been dispatched to Charleston with reinforcements, watched the shelling of the steamer from the island fort's ramparts. However, Anderson feared that returning fire on the South Carolina militia would be perceived as a hostile move and might evolve into an attack on the fort itself, much to Doubleday's consternation. The garrison at Sumter failed to do any signaling back to the *Star* because the fort's flags were tangled in a snarled ball around the base of the flagpole much like tangled necklaces and could not be extracted for communication with the ship. (*Moore F. The Rebellion Record: Diary of American Events, with Documents, Narratives and Illustrative Incidents. The Firing on the Star of the West and Captain McGowan's Report. In: January 26, 1861 Harper's Weekly. New York: GP Putnam. 1861*)

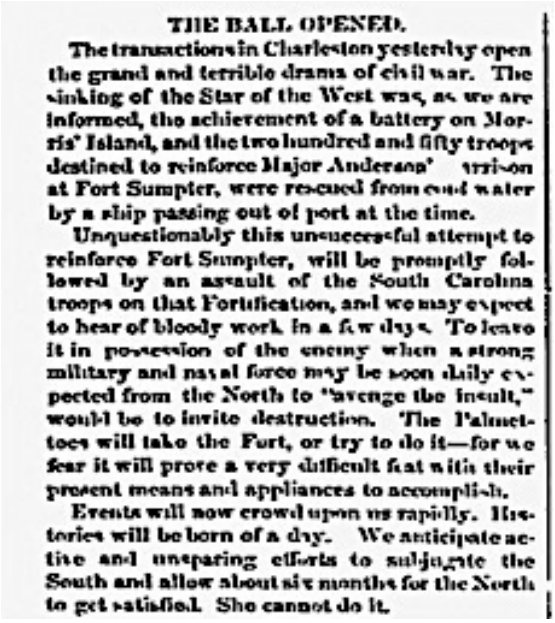


Entrance to Charleston Bay showing Fort Sumter, South Carolina Military Academy batteries and Fort Moultrie. The depiction of the *Star's* journey is not accurate. Captain McGowan's log, testimony to a War Department Board, and accounts by South Carolina militia indicate the *Star* proceeded into the Bay to a point equal to Fort Sumter on the north before swinging around and moving out to sea, chased by steamers with Moultrie militia.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 6/30/2024

An aerial view of Fort Sumter. Note the sand bars. The long pier is a 20th century addition.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 6/30/2024.

By 7:30am, Brewer had navigated the shoals north of Fort Sumter albeit with a few concerning scrapes of the paddlewheel, and the *Star* was out to sea. Both militia steamers gave up the chase after a swell flipped one of the skiffs, tossing soldiers into the bay. By the time the soldiers were hauled back into the boat, it was evident that the *Star* had passed through the sandbars, and further pursuit was pointless. Once clear of the harbor, Lienau let the troops and officers up on deck, and McGowan explained the events of the past three hours. The trip north to New York was uneventful, with the *Star* tying up to its dock on January 13, 1861.

In South Carolina and across the south, newspaper headlines announced that a *"brazen Yankee violation of sovereign and independent territory"* had been repulsed, lauding the role of the military academy cadets in *"firing the bold first shots for our independence"*. The majority of the newspaper accounts of the incident were distorted as illustrated by a January 10, 1861 article in a Charleston newspaper paper, displayed below, claiming that the *Star of the West* had been sunk, but the crew and soldiers were rescued by a passing ship.



THE BALL OPENED.

The transactions in Charleston yesterday open the grand and terrible drama of civil war. The sinking of the Star of the West was, as we are informed, the achievement of a battery on Morris' Island, and the two hundred and fifty troops destined to reinforce Major Anderson' [illegible] on at Fort Sumpter, were rescued from cold water by a ship passing out of port at the time.

Unquestionably this unsuccessful attempt to reinforce Fort Sumpter, will be promptly followed by an assault of the South Carolina troops on that Fortification, and we may expect to hear of bloody work in a few days. To leave it in possession of the enemy when a strong military and naval force may be soon daily expected from the North to "avenge the insult," would be to invite destruction. The Palmettoes will take the Fort, or try to do it—for we fear it will prove a very difficult feat with their present means and appliances to accomplish.

Events will now crowd upon us rapidly. Histories will be born of a day. We anticipate active and preparing efforts to subjugate the South and allow about six months for the North to get satisfied. She cannot do it.

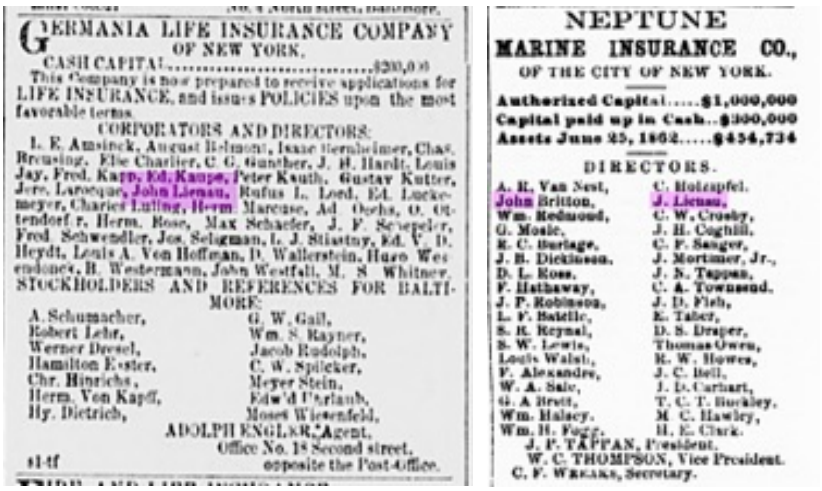
Southern newspapers promoted the concept that Northern armies would soon invade and subjugate the South even before most of the eventual confederate states had succeeded.

Crawford G. Account of the Firing onto the Star of the West. Charleston, SC: The Charleston Courier. January 10, 1861.

Image source: Newspapers.com. www.newspapers.com. Accessed: July 17, 2023.

Six more southern states succeeded by February 1st sparked by the Fort Sumter incident and other perceived Northern insults. In New York, McGowen's accounts of the incident in the *NY Times* enflamed animosity toward the *"traitorous Carolinians and slavers"* and sparked several large public demonstrations calling for reprisal. Lienau, Brewer and McGowan appeared together on January 18, 1861 at a hearing commissioned by the NYC Steamship Association. McGowan did most of the talking and praised Brewer for skillful navigation under treacherous circumstances, and Lienau for calm management of the tension below deck.

John Lienau lived in NYC for the rest of his life. He listed Steamship Captain and Steamship Master (the later suggests ship ownership) on NYC and federal census reports, evidence that he continued to advance in his profession. He was a member of the New York German Club and was an officer in an organization comprised of New York based steamship captains. He also entered the insurance industry in the 1860's, serving as a director of companies that sold life insurance and, befitting his career, marine insurance. For the Germania Life Insurance Company, which targeted the German-American community in NYC, Lienau was one of 21 original investors who met at Delmonico's restaurant in the early 1860s to each pledge $10,000 ($240,00 today) toward the $200,000 capitalization required by NYC for company formation.
(Guardian's History: Guardian Life Insurance Company of America (formerly: Germania Life Insurance of New York). www.guardianlife.com. Accessed: June 19, 2023)



GERMANIA LIFE INSURANCE COMPANY
OF NEW YORK.
CASH CAPITAL.....$300,000
This Company is now prepared to receive applications for LIFE INSURANCE, and issues POLICIES upon the most favorable terms.
CORPORATORS AND DIRECTORS:
L. E. Amsinck, August Belmont, Isaac Bernheimer, Chas. Brensing, Elie Charlier, C. G. Gunther, J. H. Hardt, Louis Jay, Fred. Kapp, Ed. Kappe, Peter Keuth, Gustav Kutter, Jere. Lacroque, John Lienau, Rufus L. Lord, Ed. Luckemeyer, Charles Luling, Herm. Marcuse, Ad. Ochs, O. Ottendorf, r. Herm. Rose, Max Schaefer, J. F. Scrapeler, Fred. Schwendler, Jos. Seligman, L. J. Stiastny, Ed. V. D. Heydt, Louis A. Von Hoffman, D. Wallerstein, Hugo Wesendonck, B. Westermann, John Westfall, M. S. Whitney.
STOCKHOLDERS AND REFERENCES FOR BALTIMORE:
A. Schumacher, Robert Lehr, Werner Diesel, Hamilton Easter, Chr. Hinrichs, Herm. Von Kapff, Hy. Dietrich, G. W. Gail, Wm. S. Rayner, Jacob Rudolph, C. W. Spilcker, Meyer Stein, Edw'd Parlaub, Moses Wiesenfeld.
ADOLPH ENGLER, Agent,
Office No. 18 Second street,
opposite the Post-Office.
s1-tf

NEPTUNE
MARINE INSURANCE CO.,
OF THE CITY OF NEW YORK.
Authorized Capital.....$1,000,000
Capital paid up in Cash..$300,000
Assets June 25, 1862.....$454,734
DIRECTORS.
A. R. Van Nest, John Britton, Wm. Redmond, G. Mosle, R. C. Burlage, J. B. Dickinson, D. L. Ross, F. Hathaway, J. P. Robinson, L. F. Bataille, S. H. Reynal, S. W. Lewis, Louis Walsh, V. Alexandre, W. A. Sale, G. A Brett, Wm. Halsey, Wm. H. Fogg, C. Holzapfel, J. Lienau, C. W. Crosby, J. H. Coghill, C. P. Sanger, J. Mortimer, Jr., J. N. Tappan, C. A. Townsend, J. D. Fish, E. Taber, D. S. Draper, Thomas Owen, R. W. Howes, J. C. Bell, J. D. Carhart, T. C. T. Buckley, M. C. Hawley, H. E. Clark.
J. P. TAPPAN, President.
W. C. THOMPSON, Vice President.
C. F. WEEKS, Secretary.

John Lienau served on boards for New York Insurance Companies.
Image source: Baltimore American & Commercial Advertiser. U.S. Newspaper Collections at Library of Congress. www.LOC.gov/united-states-newspapers. Accessed: 6/16/2023.

A NYC death certificate indicates that John suffered a fatal apoplexy event (i.e., stroke) in 1876. One of several mysteries surrounding John Lienau's life is how did he acquire a substantial financial portfolio that allowed him to invest large sums of money in these life insurance companies? A career at sea as a crewmember, then as now, is rarely associated with accumulation of wealth. A related question is what happened to John's apparent wealth. His son and grandson seemingly lived in austere circumstances in the following decades.

Aftermath of the *Star's* Voyage to Fort Sumter

Fort Sumter: After *the Star of the West* incident, the South Carolina militia seized all federal (Union) property in Charleston, and repeatedly made demands for evacuation of Union troops from Fort Sumter, which were rejected by the lame duck outgoing U.S. President James Buchanan, and after March 15, 1861 by the newly inaugurated President, Abraham Lincoln. In March, the Confederate States of America (CSA) sent its first appointed general, PGT Beauregard, to Charleston to begin siege operations. After Lincoln threatened to reinforce the little fort by force if necessary and then sent a poorly organized fleet of six small ships to attempt a far-fetched evacuation mission that never occurred, Beauregard issued a final evacuation demand, which Anderson reluctantly refused. The South Carolina Militia launched an artillery barrage on April 12, 1861, effectively starting the Civil War. Although the CSA bombardment from four different positions north and south of Fort Sumter did little meaningful damage to the compound, Anderson and Doubleday surrendered the next day when a fire broke out near a storage area where munitions were housed.

The only casualties occurred during the surrender ceremony when a cannon exploded in the midst of a 100-gun salute, requested by Anderson and approved by Beauregard (who were close friends), to commemorate the lowering of the Union flag. On the 47th firing, a soldier by the name of Daniel Hough, apparently misloaded a firing cartridge into his cannon, which exploded when he lit the fuse, tearing off both of his arms and killing him instantly. Flames from the blast ignited other firing cartridges lying on the ground nearby, leading to a secondary explosion that injured six other Union soldiers, one of whom died several days later in a Charleston hospital. The cannon salute was halted after Hough's accident, so that Confederate and Union soldiers could jointly build a casket, construct a cross and dig a grave for Hough in the rocky soil of the Sumter parade grounds. Then soldiers from both sides stood at attention

while three more cannon blasts were fired as his wooden casket was lowered into the ground. And, thus, the Civil War commenced. The South Carolina militia facilitated the evacuation of Anderson's garrison on Sunday, April 14, 1861 by sending two small sloops, the *Catawba and the Isabel*, to transport officers, soldiers, a few remaining family members and a small number of laborers to three Union ships waiting outside the harbor sandbars. *(Swanberg WA. First Blood: The Story of Fort Sumter. New York: Charles Scribner Books. 1957. Accessed via Google Books. www.books.google.com on June 7, 2023)*

Daniel Hough was the first of approximately 360,00 Union fatalities during the Civil War. Like Pvt. Hough, 67% died from non-combat causes including accidents. *(National Park Service. The Civil War – Facts. www.nps.gov. October 27, 2021. Accessed July 15, 2024)* The first confederate fatality was a 23-year old CSA chaplain by the name of Noble Leslie Devotie who drowned late at night on February 12, 1861 when he fell off a gangway to a boat he was boarding at Fort Morgan, Alabama. Devotie was a graduate of the University of Alabama, where he was instrumental in founding a fraternity, Sigma Alpha Epsilon (SAE), my fraternity at Dickinson, and the only fraternity founded in the Antebellum South (i.e., before the Civil War). Prior to joining the Confederate army as a chaplain, Devotie was an ordained Baptist minister, and led a large congregation in Selma, Alabama. According to SAE lore and a boisterous drinking song penned in his honor, Noble was not immune to the appeal of liquor, and possibly was under the influence on the night of his dockside missteps. *(Myhre EL. The History of Sigma Alpha Epsilon: Part One, 1856-1865. Pullman, WA: Washington State University Press. 2007)* Devotie was the first of approximately 260,00 Confederate fatalities during the Civil War, and similar to Union mortality, 2/3s of these deaths occurred in non-combat situations. *(National Park Service, 2021)*

A depiction of the Fort Sumter bombardment on April 12-13, 1861. The majority of the 3400 CSA projectiles over shot the fort, in part because gun crews of the South Carolina militia were fixated on knocking down the American flag hoisted on a tall flagstaff, an aiming challenge beyond their capacity.

Doubleday A. Reminiscences of Forts Sumter & Moultrie in 1860-61. Charleston, SC: Nautical & Aviation Pub. 1998. Reprinted from 1884 original.

Image source: Internet Archive. www.archive.org. Accessed: 6/17/2023.

***Star of the West**:* McGowan, Brewer and Lienau never served again on the *Star* after the Fort Sumter voyage. The Union Army continued to use the *Star* as a troop transport. Shortly after the surrender of Fort Sumter, Confederate forces captured the *Star* in Matagorda Bay, Texas after the ship picked up Union troops from a garrison stationed at Indianola, Texas. *(Holmes JDL. The End of the Star. Texas State Historical Association. www.tshaonline.org. Accessed: June 15, 2023)* The Confederates changed the name of the ship to the *CSS St. Philip*, and used it as a medical ship and training center for Confederate seamen. In 1862, the *St. Philip* was moved up the Mississippi River to serve as a supply and medical ship supporting Confederate troops besieged at Vicksburg. To foil a Union naval assault on Vicksburg in April 1863, the *St. Philip* was sunk broadside in the Tallahatchie River where its great size completely blocked the river and

prevented the attack. The *Star/St. Philip* remained in the river for years. Local residents scavenged wood, pipes, furniture, and machinery from the carcass until what was left of the vessel was towed into the main body of the Mississippi River and burned in 1871. *(Scharf JT. History of the Confederate States Navy: From its Organization to the Surrender of the Last Vessel. Fairfax, VA: The Fairfax Press. 1977)*

John McGowen: Captain John McGowen served in the Civil War as a captain of a "Mosquito Fleet" of small Union ships blockading the entrance to Chesapeake Bay. After the war, he returned to the U.S. Revenue Marine Service and was instrumental in creating ocean rescue units at ten-mile intervals along the entire New Jersey coastline.

Abner Doubleday: Doubleday rose to the rank of General during the Civil War, and was considered to be one of the most effective commanders in the Union army. His brigade played a pivotal role in the Union victory at Gettysburg. After the war he was a successful businessman with focus on modernizing transportation. One of his major entrepreneurial accomplishments was establishing the cable car system in San Francisco. However, he may be most remembered today for his association with the game of baseball. *(Barthel T. Abner Doubleday: A Civil War Biography. Jefferson, NC: McFarland and Company. 2010)*

General Abner Doubleday at age 55. Although an effective military leader and forward looking businessman, he is probably best known for his largely mythical association with the early development of baseball.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 6/19/2023.

Doubleday enjoyed watching and occasionally playing the emerging game of baseball, and was famous within the Union army for purchasing, out of his own pocket, balls, bats, bases and gloves for his soldiers so they could learn and play the game at idle times in camp, including at Fort Sumter, where soldiers played "ball" on the parade ground endlessly, and held contests where they tried to knock the ball over the fort's 50 foot walls into Charleston Bay. *(Swanberg, 1957)* However, as he freely announced throughout his military and business careers, Doubleday had nothing to do with the advent of the game. His close association with baseball probably evolves from the fact that he went to high school in Cooperstown, New York (home of the present day Baseball Hall of Fame), and he played an early version of the game in high school and also at West Point. Spurred by Union and Confederate soldiers coming home from the Civil War with experiences playing the game in camp, baseball popularity grew rapidly after the war. *(Kirsch GB. Baseball in Blue and Gray: The National Pastime During the Civil War. Princeton NJ: Princeton University Books. 2002)*

By 1870, there were over 60 organized teams in New York City, and 40 in Philadelphia. Growth of the game in other Northeastern and Midwestern cities soon followed, and a few cities in the south also hosted leagues. In the 1870s, investors saw an opportunity for a moneymaking

national league with paid attendance that also (perhaps more importantly) provided an opportunity for betting on game outcomes. They looked for a well-known and respected figure to be the face of the new game. Doubleday fit the role perfectly. As part of marketing efforts, a mythology was created surrounding the origins of the game with Doubleday as a central figure.

In actuality, the game primarily evolved from the popular English game of rounders, which immigrants brought to North America. Rounders has been played in England for centuries. *(Block D. Baseball Before We Knew It: A Search for the Roots of the Game. Lincoln, Neb: University of Nebraska Press. 2006)* Sir Francis Drake was a rounders devotee, and was in the midst of a tournament in Plymouth when the Spanish Armada was first sighted. When his aides excitedly informed him of the Armada, he told them to settle down, noting *"No point spoiling a good match just because the bloody Spanish finally arrived. I'll have ample time to dispatch them after last pitch."* (*Johnson B. The Spanish Armada. Historic UK. The History and Heritage Accommodation Guide. www.historic-uk.com. June 2016. Accessed: July 17, 2023)* Rounders involved a batter, a bowler who threw underhand as in softball, five fielders and three bases in the original form, later expanded to four bases. Until the start of the 19th century, players took turns batting, attempted to hit the pitch and round the bases before a fielder could hit the batter with the ball. Reaching the final base without being pegged by the ball was a run. After six rounds of at-bats, the player with the most runs was the victor. Rounders evolved into a team competition with various numbers of players per team by approximately 1800.

The traditional English game of rounders was informally known as base-ball, or ball as far back as the 1500s. Brought to North America by immigrants, rounders was slowly molded into the game we now recognize as American baseball. The illustration at the left appeared in the children's book, *A Little Pretty Pocket-Book* (1744) by John Newberry.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 6/18/2023.

Between 1835 and 1865 in the U.S., there was constant tinkering with the rounders format, rules, equipment and playing field. Therefore, it is difficult to pinpoint a single person as the creator of American baseball. It certainly was not Abner Doubleday although his manufactured origin story helped to spread awareness of the game. By the end of the Civil War, a reasonably well-accepted set of guidelines for the game, known as the New York Rules, began to be used in leagues across the country. An individual named Alexander Cartwright who was a Manhattan bank clerk and a fireman is credited with the final version of the New York Rules. Cartwright built the first ball field with bleachers and organized the first touring professional team, the New York Knickerbockers, where players received a share of the gate receipts from crowds.

New York Knickerbockers team of the 1860s. Alexander Cartwright, the manager, is in the middle with a stovepipe hat.

Morris P. But Didn't We Have Fun? A History of Baseball's Pioneer Era, 1843-1870. New York: Ivan Dee Books. 2008.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 7/13/2024.

George Edward Haynesworth: There is no record of whether or not George, who preferred his nickname "Tuck", was reprimanded for his impetuous decision to fire on the *Star of the West*. Considering the notoriety that the incident brought to the South Carolina Military Academy – probably not. After graduation in June 1861, newly commissioned Lt. Tuck Haynesworth served in a coastal artillery unit in South Carolina for the duration of the Civil War, occasionally firing on Union blockade or supply ships that cruised too close to shore. In addition to firing what many consider the "first shot" of the war, Tuck also likely fired one of the last shots. In May 1865, more than a month after Lee's surrender, Union General William Tecumseh Sherman's army marched into South Carolina to disarm rogue CSA units. When Sherman's cavalry reached Haynesworth's coastal battery, Tuck ordered his men to fire on the approaching Union horsemen, claiming later that he was unaware of the ceasefire. His men did fire, but only managed to excite the horses and anger the Union cavalry who took Tuck into custody for six weeks before releasing him. After the war, Haynesworth graduated from law school and practiced near Charleston, taking on more pro bono cases than his budget could tolerate. He was one of the few attorneys in the Palmetto State willing to represent Black freemen during Reconstruction, which earned him the antipathy of many in the community. To help with finances he also worked as a magistrate in a petty crimes court. In December 1887, while hearing a case involving a property dispute between two families with longstanding grievances, a gunfight broke out in the courtroom and Haynesworth was killed by a stray bullet at the age of 46. *(Obituary: George E. Haynesworth. January 12, 1888. The Calhoun Times. Calhoun-Gordon County Obituaries Project. Digital Library of Georgia (www.dlg.usg.edu). Georgia Public Library Service. University System of Georgia. Accessed September 21, 2023)*

GE "Tuck" Haynesworth in 1863, two years after "Firing the Shot that Ignited the War for Southern Independence" per a Charleston, South Carolina newspaper.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 7/16/2024.

=======

Notes on the *Star of the West's* Supply Mission to Fort Sumter: And now for the rest of the story! Under pressure from the Secretary of War, outgoing President James Buchanan, alas a Dickinson College graduate, and widely considered the worst U.S. president of the 19th century, decided on December 28, 1860 to send the *Brooklyn*, the second largest U.S. warship, to

Charleston Bay to re-supply Fort Sumter. Two days later, fearing that a warship would inflame the already tense political situation in Charleston and receiving advisement that the *Brooklyn* was too large to enter the shallow bay, Buchanan changed his mind and ordered the Secretary of War to find a suitable civilian ship for the mission. The search led to the *Star*, which was directed to make a secret trip to Charleston, including loading supplies and soldiers at night and running without an American flag when entering Charleston harbor. After the *Star* launched in darkness on January 5 in a futile effort to avoid detection by New York city newspapers and Confederate spies, Buchanan changed his mind again, reaching the conclusion that the unarmed *Star* might be in danger, or, more likely, the action would enflame South Carolinian passions, leading to an assault on Fort Sumter. This was the last thing Buchanan wanted - he was desperate to get out of office before the war began. He directed the War Department to dispatch the *Brooklyn* to catch up to the already departed *Star*, and order Captain McGowan to turn back. As we know, the *Brooklyn* was not able to overtake the *Star*. The *Brooklyn* reached the Charleston on the afternoon of January 9th after the *Star* had already exited the harbor and was on its way back to New York. The big warship followed the *Star* home. (*Chatelain NP. Repurposing Captured Vessels. Star of the West. Emerging Civil War. www.emergingcivilwar.com. October 20, 2022. Accessed: September 20, 2023)*

In spite of the efforts of the Union Secretary of War and the President to keep the *Star's* mission a secret, the South Carolina Governor, South Carolinian militia commanders and several large newspapers in Southern states including the *Charleston Mercury* were well aware that a steamship loaded with troops and supplies was headed south from New York harbor almost from the moment the ship hoisted anchor. Reporters of the *New York Tribune* assigned to monitor comings and goings in the harbor filed an article about the *Star* departing under the *"cloak of darkness amid a fog of mystery, likely to convey troops to Sumter"* that was published in the morning edition on January 6, 1861, and soon, by the new technological marvel of the telegram, this report was relayed to newspapers in South Carolina. Additionally, Buchanan's cabinet and support staff were riddled with Southern sympathizers, many of whom attended meetings where the re-supply mission was discussed. Various political and military leaders in Charleston received telegrams from these sympathizers prior to the *Star's* departure that conveyed details about the mission. Oddly, the War Department decided to communicate with Anderson about the mission by sending him a letter via registered mail, which finally reached him several days after the *Star* had arrived and departed. *(Larsen, 2024)*

A side note: *The lead-up to the Civil War in the late 1850s and the ensuing four-year struggle was the first event in U.S. history, and basically in world history with the exception of sporadic reports during the Crimean War (1853-1856), where the public received almost instantaneous reports on political and military events via the magic of telegraphy. Large crowds in the North and South gathered at telegraphy stations, where readers shouted telegram text, or, somewhat slower but still "same day", the decrypted text was re-typed and posted on bulletin boards. Newspapers in major cities generally could report relatively detailed accounts of war events within a day of a battle or an important meeting. In the 1860s, major cities were heavily strung with telegraph wires swaying from pole to pole, and major telegraph trunk lines were hung in the countryside between cities. During the war, the Union army made much more effective use of the technology for planning and battlefield coordination than the CSA because of the*

northern states' huge investment in telegraph lines and the building of hundreds of connection and decoding stations. The CSA had a much smaller telegraph network in 1861 and made little effort to expand the system, or use what existed for military operations. The Star of the West was not recalled because telegraph communication was not used land to sea or between ships at sea until the 1890s. (Hochfelder D. The Telegraph in America, 1832-1920. Baltimore, MD: The Johns Hopkins University Press. 2012)

Lingering Questions

Historians do not agree on the question of why the ship navigating through Charleston Bay ahead of the *Star,* suddenly fired flares and illuminated deck torches. In the immediate decades after the Civil War, the prevailing contention was that the ship was Cuban, flying a Spanish flag, and aimed to alert the shore batteries to the presence of the *Star of the West* out of Spain's sympathy for the Confederate cause. If true, how the Cuban ship determined, in dense fog, that the *Star* was a U.S. vessel remains an unknown. As an alternative theory, some 20th century historians contended that the lead ship, in spite of the dense fog, discerned that a large vessel was fast closing on them and simply wanted to alert the *Star* to its position to avoid a fog bound collision, a frequent occurrence in that era, not an unreasonable scenario. As described in the preceding narrative of John Lienau's adventures in Charleston Bay, a currently prevailing theory is that the *Star* was detected by one or more harbor guard ships (probably smallish steamboats, but often not described as such) manned by South Carolina militia as the big paddlewheeler slowly groped its way through the sandbars. This theory is consistent with the fact that political and military leaders in Charleston knew that the *Star* was on its way to Fort Sumter.

The question of who ordered the raising of the U.S. military garrison flags on the *Star*, in contradiction of the War Department directive, also has been debated. In spite of the fact that McGowen took responsibility in his voyage report and during hearings, some historians believe that he was covering for Lienau, or possibly lower level crewmembers that independently decided to hoist these flags. CSA participants in the incident reported that the aft Stars and Stripes flag was the biggest flag they had ever seen, *"trailing for several yards out into the steamer's wake." (Crawford SW. The Genesis of the Civil War: The Story of Sumter, 1860-61. London: Forgotten Books. 2018. Originally published in 1887 by Charles L. Webster Publishing in New York City, a company owned and managed by Mark Twain. Accessed from the Library of Congress www.loc.gov on July 12, 2024)*

=======

Notes on the Mysterious Ella (Ellen or Eslen) Lienau: In spite of all the genealogical research tools available today, a key person in the family lineage simply remains a mystery. I know Ella Lienau existed and know rudimentary facts about her life, but efforts to fill out her story have not been productive. The surname Lienau is the subject of only a few family histories. One of these sites suggested that Ella may have been born in Germany and travelled with John Lienau from Germany to England, and then to the Caribbean, and finally to the U.S. as a girl friend and/or co-worker. *(Lienau R. Pictures and Figures From My Life. Berlin: Lichterfelde Archive. 1949. Digitized 2019 by Internet Archive. Accessed from Internet Archive on April 11, 2023)* The Royal Mail Steam Packet Company employed females on transatlantic ships as cabin maids, kitchen labor and laundry workers, as did the U.S. Mail Steamship Mail Packet Company, so that theory is plausible. However, the fact that Ella lived in Havana while John lived in San Juan until

1854 casts doubt on the nautical girl friend/co-worker theory. As discussed in Chapter II, a recent genealogical effort by an Irish family historian indicates that Ella's surname was Dodd, and she was born in Ireland in 1811, but migrated to England either alone or with her family in the 1830s. How Ella made her way to Cuba is unknown; perhaps she did work for a steamship company in some capacity. Port of entry records for her arrival in the U.S. in the 1850s indicate her occupation as "workman," a common term for manual labor in that era, which supports her employment as a ship laborer of some type. It is conceivable that John may have met Ella while on shore leave in Havana during his Caribbean years with the British and U.S. Mail Services.

=======

In addition to publications cited in this section, the sources below were consulted to explore the life of John Lienau, his nautical career, the attempt to re-supply Fort Sumter, and the evolution of baseball in North America.

Beharry S. The Prehistories of Baseball. Jefferson, NC: McFarland and Company. 2016.

Filby PN, Meyer MK. Arrival Records of 500,000 Passengers Who Came to the United States and Canada 1638 – 1899. (Volume 2; NYC arrivals). Detroit: Gale Research Co. 1981.

Johnson LH. Fort Sumter and Confederate Diplomacy. Journal of Southern History. 1960; 26: 441-477.

Lancour H. Passenger Lists of Ships Coming to North America, 1607-1825. New York: Bulletin of the New York Public Library. Summer, 1937. Retrieved via www.discovery.nypl.org. Accessed: March 4, 2023.

New York Times. Captain McGowen's Report; Steamship Star of the West. New York Newspaper Archives. www.newspaper.archives.com. January 14, 1861.

New York Times. Return of the Star of the West; Her Attempt to Enter Charleston Harbor, Damage Incurred, etc. New York Newspaper Archives. www.newspaper.archives.com. January 14, 1861.

Nichol S. MacQueen's Legacy: Ships and Crews of the Royal Steam Mail Line. Brimscombe Port, UK and Charleston SC: Tempus Publishing. 2001.

Oregon or Bust - William Firman Hendricson (1823-1908)

William Firman Hendricson, great grandson of Okey Hendrickson, was known as Firm or WF by friends, coworkers and family. He is notable for a variety of reasons. He was the person who formally changed the family surname from Hendrickson to Hendricson when he wrote "Hendricson without K" on the sign-up form for a wagon train journey to Oregon in 1845 and on documents he filed with the Oregon Provisional Government between 1845 and 1850 to submit claims for land parcels. The spelling change was made official on subsequent voter registration cards, U.S. census forms, birth certificates for his children and his death certificate. WF crossed the plains from the Midwest to the West Coast four times between 1845 and 1852, which must be some type of record. He was the first of the Midwestern Hendricson's, across a multitude of families that were offspring of Okey Hendricson and his many children and grandchildren to make an employment and social class jump from itinerant farm laborer to successful farm and business owner. WF established himself as a prominent citizen in Albany, Oregon, firmly planting the Hendricson family in the Pacific Northwest and created a degree of inherited wealth for his children. Like his ancestors, Cornelius, Hendrick and Okey, WF had an adventurous early life including a stint as a 49er in California striving to strike it rich in the gold rush, several ocean journeys from the Pacific to Atlantic sides of the continent and many overland trips by wagon train to the West Coast. Perhaps most impressively, WF overcame the early deaths of both parents, which left him to fend for himself from age 11 onward, with virtually no formal education.

WF is also unique in that he is the first ancestor among the nine families to leave a record of his life largely in his own words. Around the year 1900, WF and many other early settlers in the Willamette Valley of Oregon were interviewed about their lives before and after their wagon train journeys to the West by a particularly active genealogical society based in Portland, Oregon. Reports published by this society in the pre World War I era captured the stories of these pioneers in considerable detail, providing readers with unique perspectives on the wagon train life and the early years of settlement in the Willamette Valley. The annual publication of this genealogical group was titled *Portrait and Bibliographical Record of the Willamette Valley Early Settlers Beginning in 1844*. It was printed in Chicago by the Chapman Publishing House yearly from 1904 through 1913, and provided detailed information on the lives of pre-Civil War emigrants to the Oregon Territory including WF Hendricson, enriched by first person descriptions of events. WF was also interviewed and contributed historical documents (diaries, letters, bills of sale) for the 1885 publication, *History of the Willamette Valley and Personal Reminiscences of Its Early Pioneers* by Henry Lang. A book by Weldon W. Rau titled, *Surviving The Oregon Trail – 1852. As Told by Mary Ann and Willis Boatman and Augmented With Accounts by Other Overland Travelers,* provided information on the daily routine and challenges faced by wagon train participants with anecdotes provided by WF Hendricson. The monograph, *Abner Hackleman's 1845 Trip to Oregon* by Glenn Harrison (*2013; Columbia Gorge Interpretive Museum Publications*) provided details of WF's first trip to Oregon and anecdotes about his role and experiences during that caravan. *Pioneer Stories of Linn County, Oregon* by Lloyd Haskins (*1984; Early Pioneer Press*) also provided accounts of WF's roles on subsequent wagon train journeys. The following story of WF's life and his extensive wagon train experience is largely drawn from these sources, supplemented by preceding Hendricson family histories listed on

pages 147-149, sources cited in the following text, and a number of general Oregon Trail and Oregon Territory resources indicated at the conclusion of WF's story.

William Firman Hendricson was described by others on wagon trains as a man of medium height and very trim as befit a man who from age 11 worked as a laborer, and a man who made four trips from the Midwest to the West Coast, largely by walking. However, despite his many adventures and success in later life, I was not able to locate a picture of WF that I could verify with 100% confidence. A photo that is "most likely" his wife Sarah at age 35 appears later in WF's story.

WF was born in Poplar Flat, Kentucky in December 1823. His parents, John F. Hendrickson (1794-1824) and Nancy Wilson Hendrickson (1798-1834) moved 150 miles north to Ohio while Nancy was pregnant with WF, seeking better farm employment opportunities. After WF's dad was killed in a grain silo accident on New Year's Day 1834, Nancy, WF and two siblings lived part-time with her parents in Highland, Ohio, 50 miles from Cincinnati, and also spent time in Popular Flat with WF's paternal grandparents, Daniel and Sarah Herbert Hendrickson. Nancy's movement back and forth between Ohio and Kentucky continued for ten years until she died from unknown causes in a hotel room during one of these trips in the little community of Chillicothe, Ohio. She was just 36 years old.

At age 11, WF found himself stranded in unfamiliar surroundings, suddenly in charge of two younger sisters and with a deceased mother. Remarkably, he communicated with the local sheriff about the circumstances of his mother's death, arranged for coroner services, and made arrangements to have his mother's remains transported to his grandparent's house in Highland, paying for the transport wagon with the small amount of money remaining in his mother's purse. Taking pity, the hotel proprietor allowed WF and his sisters to stay in the hotel and fed them until the church pastor in Chillicothe could drive WF and his siblings to Highland in his carriage. Upon reaching Highland, WF found his mother's parents to be understandable distraught, and soon after found himself without adult guardians when his grandparents decided they could only care for the two younger children. His grandparents assigned WF to a neighboring farmer who promised "board, bunk and bath" for the young lad if he did his work. Daniel Hendrickson back in Kentucky was either never contacted about taking in young WF, or also decided that he could not handle the responsibility.

After being cast out by his Ohio grandparents, WF began a ten year journey into adulthood that carried him from place to place in Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Wisconsin, Michigan and Iowa where he landed a series of jobs on the low end of the employment hierarchy, working according to his own words, as a *"muck boy brooming out barns and slopping out horse stalls, stable boy tending pigs, cattle, mules and horses, laborer repairing barn roofs, corrals and fences, field hand picking crops, a plowman tilling fields behind a mule, and crewing an ore hauler in Lake Superior (Upper Peninsula of Michigan), making more money in a month than I made for six months on farms."* Finally, in Iowa at the age of 21, WF reached top hand status on a small farm specializing in corn and pigs, and was charged with *"teaching three callow boys how to do a full day's worth of work,"* coming full circle so to speak.

WF was rarely enrolled in a school at any point in his life and claimed to have learned reading, writing and calculating from other farm hands and shipmates older than him as he moved from

job to job seeking higher pay. However, he did make an effort to attend church wherever he landed, which is how he met his future wife, Sarah Agnes Jackson (1828-1891) at a church in Pleasant Grove, Iowa in 1844. Although just 16 years old, Sarah was the church organist, played guitar and sang in the choir. WF, who also enjoyed singing, joined the choir, and struck up a relationship with Sarah. She was the daughter of a local wheat farmer, Onias Augustus Jackson (1802-1862). He was born in South Carolina and after moving as a teenager with his parents to Indiana, he married Daraxa Laughlin in 1827. The couple had two daughters, Alcestis and Sarah, and relocated to Iowa in 1840, seeking better fortune after numerous years of poor harvests in Indiana. However, Onias also struggled in Iowa to make ends meet with too little land to produce sufficient volume for meaningful profit and too many agricultural competitors. As a consequence, he often worked as a hired hand at other farms to bring in extra money. Sarah's father met WF during one of these extra jobs and took a liking to the serious and motivated young man, who was courting his daughter.

A side note: *The historic record is unclear about the nature and ultimate fate of Onias and Daraxa's marriage. Daraxa did not participate in Sarah's and her father's eventual relocation to Oregon via wagon train – the story of which is told in the following pages. It is not known if Daraxa and her husband "lived apart," which was not unusual in an era where divorce was frowned upon, were legally separated or were officially divorced. Daraxa lived a long life, well into her 90s, and mostly resided in Rush County, Indiana until her death in 1896.*

The big news in Iowa and other Midwestern states in 1844 was the opening of the Oregon Territory to settlement, and the successful arrival of the first wagon trains of settlers into that territory, attracted by an abundance of fertile land in a temperate climate, especially near the Pacific Coast in the Willamette Valley. As previously described in the Notes on the Oregon Land Donation Act of 1850, the U.S. congress would eventually approve substantial free land donations to Oregon emigrants if they met stipulations for developing the property and permanently settling on it. During the 1840s, there was plenty of land for the taking in Oregon for white settlers if they could survive a cross continent journey, find desirable land free of Native Americans (or drive them off with bribes, threats or violence), stake a claim, build a shelter and keep other emigrants from poaching the land. In 1843 and 1844, six wagon trains each comprised of 150-200 wagons and nearly 1,000 people had traversed the 2,000-mile route, soon to be known as the Oregon Trail, to the Pacific Northwest. For WF, and thousands of other Midwestern farm workers and their families, this seemed like the opportunity of a lifetime.

As a Christmas 1844 gift to himself, WF ordered a copy of *Emigrants' Guide to Oregon and California – A Guide for the Westward Traveler. (1st ed.; Hastings L. St. Louis, MO: Charless Printers. 1843; reprinted in 1994 by Applewood Books)* This was one of many such handbooks for prospective travelers to the West Coast that provided recommendations for food, clothing and equipment, wagon design criteria, and tips for surviving the trip. Inspired by the guide, WF attended a "Western Settler Symposia" in January 1845 at a Des Moines hotel. The symposium was sponsored by Dr. Abner Hackleman, a physician and already a veteran leader of Oregon Trail trips. *(Harrison G. Abner Hackleman's 1845 Trip to Oregon. Columbia Gorge Interpretive Museum Publications. www.columbiagorge.com. 2013. Accessed: March 5, 2023)* Hackleman and his New London Emigrating Company (named for his Connecticut-born parents), were

recruiting a new caravan to depart in 1845. Hackelman used stunning hand painted lantern-slides (cutting edge 1840s media) depicting the majestic Rocky Mountains, the Columbia River Basin, and the lush Willamette Valley, supported by a 20-piece orchestra, which enraptured the audience who marveled at the scenery and the projection technology.

WF came away from the Hackleman Symposium convinced that Oregon was his future, and a way to end his itinerant existence. On the final day of the symposia, he placed a $20 deposit and signed a pledge sheet indicating he would do his utmost to join the 1845 Hackleman "Oregon or Bust" caravan that was scheduled to head west from Saint Joseph on the Missouri River 50 miles north of present-day Kansas City. St. Joe was the most prominent departure point for settler caravans (as they were called then) heading west to California, Utah or Oregon.

Stereographic lantern-slide projection, often called Magic Lanterns, captivated 1840s and 1850s audiences. In major cities, audiences viewed illuminated stories, accompanied by music and narrators. Hackleman's presentation likely was a new experience for WF and other audience members.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 3/3/2023.

Now engaged to Sarah, WF next had the task of convincing his finance that their future was in Oregon, and not in dry, dusty Iowa with its bitterly cold winters. Sarah, perhaps with teenage enthusiasm, readily agreed before WF could finish his *"well rehearsed Oregon argument"* as did her father Onias, who loaned WF $50 for journey provisions. When WF returned, hopefully in 1846 with a property claim in hand, he and Sarah would marry, join another wagon train and start their life together as they traveled across the continent to their new home in Oregon. Sarah's father hoped to join them in Oregon by 1850. WF soon after talked an older farm hand, Thomas Morgan (1795-1886; yet another Morgan, but not a relative), into travelling with him to share the expenses of outfitting a canopied wagon, and buying oxen to pull the wagon. Thomas Morgan was born in Wales (of course!) and grew up in Sussex, England, coming to the U.S. at the age of 13 with an older brother. Thomas married as a teenager, but his young wife perished in a boating accident on the Ohio River. After that tragedy, Thomas drifted from one farm job to another but for much longer than WF, 25 years. At age 50, he was ready to turn his life around. In March 1845, WF and Thomas traveled in their tarp covered wagon with four oxen to Saint Joseph, Missouri to meet up with Hackleman and the other Oregon or Bust caravan members. When WF and Thomas reached St. Joe, they found the town teaming with people, wagons, oxen, mules and horses, and they could not locate the Hackleman caravan. Finally, they received a tip that the Hackleman group had set-up camp south of town.

Photograph of Thomas Morgan, taken in 1866 at age 71. He was WF Hendricson's wagon mate on the 1845 Hackelman Caravan to Oregon. Both itinerant farm laborers hoped to build a better life in Oregon.
Image source: Wojick, DM. The Brazen Overlanders of 1845. Portland, OR: Heritage Books Inc. 1992.

When WF and Thomas Morgan reached St. Joseph, they found dozens of forming up Settler Caravans, which made streets impassable as shown in this image of main street St. Joe. The town also was crowded with families in single wagons hoping to find a Caravan to join.
Palmquist P, Kalbourn T. Pioneer Photographers from the Mississippi to the Continental Divide: 1839-1865. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press. 2005.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 3/7/2023.

When WF and Thomas approached the Hackleman camp and drove their wagon under a large banner announcing the New London Emigrating Company, they saw an odd sight. Dozens of people were walking in a large circle around the central camp where the wagons were parked and horses, mules, cattle and oxen idly grazed. Some wanderers were carrying small children. WF recognized Hackleman, approached and inquired: *"what are these people doing?"* The response: *"what you'll be doing tomorrow, practicing endless, boring walking."* Hackleman explained that one of the lessons learned from previous caravans was that most of the travelers, even though they led hard lives on farms, in mines, logging and other lines of outdoor labor, were not fit to walk 15 miles a day, day after day, which was his daily goal for the journey. He explained that if a would-be traveler could not walk his one mile loop around the wagons 15 times for three straight days, carrying children if necessary (children had to walk the same miles as adults), he would bar them from the caravan and return their deposits. Everyone in a family had to pass the test, young and elderly.

A side note: *As will be discussed in the **Notes on Wagon Train** at the end of the WF Hendricson story, wagons were not for hauling people. Instead, they were for hauling food, water kegs, cooking utensils, medical and hygiene supplies, clothing, bedding, barrels for bathing and washing clothes, lanterns, wagon repair tools, spare wagon parts including axle trees, yokes, connecting poles, ropes, harnesses and wheel rims, axes, shovels, saws, wrenches and hammers, weapons, ammunition, and entertainment, such as books, bibles, decks of cards, checker and chess boards, fiddles and slate boards for the children.*

The Hackleman camp outside St. Joseph. The image was captured in 1845 by Thomas Martin Easterly, a St. Louis photographer, who documented life in the 19th century midwest with metal Daguerreotypes.
Information and image source: *Kilgo DA. Likeness and Landscape: Thomas M. Easterly and the Art of Daguerreotype. St. Louis: Missouri Historical Society Press. 1994.*

On April 16, 1845, the Oregon or Bust Caravan consisting of 39 covered wagons, and one large camp provision wagon, under Hackleman's control (a Conestoga Wagon eight feet longer than the typical settler wagon), crossed the Missouri River at a shallow point suitable for fording. After all wagons rolled up on the uncivilized side of the Missouri, Hackelman's group commenced an anticipated five-month journey to Oregon. Hackleman's wagon train consisted of 303 people. There were 38 family units comprised of 256 adults and children. The train also included 47 men traveling single. The single men included WF, Thomas and Hackleman's six-man command team including himself as Wagon Master, and five multi-purpose scouts, hunters, herders and rule-enforcers.

A Conestoga wagon was much larger than a settler wagon. It was called the provision wagon, camp wagon or captain's wagon depending on the Wagon Master's preferences. The Conestoga hauled replacement equipment, extra food, medical supplies, weapons, and commodities for trade with Native tribes.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 3/7/2023.

Two animal herds accompanied the wagon train. One herd included 150 oxen, mules and horses to serve as replacements for animals that perished along the trail. The second herd included 100 head of cattle for use in Oregon, or as a potential food source if hunting was unproductive. The herds were tended by four riders, often supported by Native horsemen hired for this task along the trail. The herders and several herd dogs kept the livestock about a hundred yards to the side and behind the train to reduce dust and kicked manure.

Before departure, Hackleman dismissed two families who were unprepared, and two days after the Missouri crossing, a third family, with five young children, dropped out and headed back, the parents apparently concluding that they were not cut out for five months on foot, herding a gaggle of children.

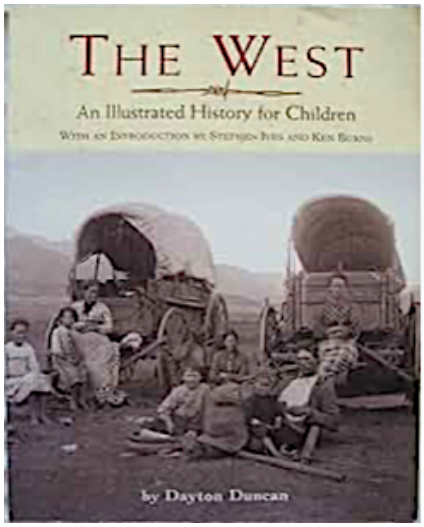
Donna Montgomery has compiled a list of the members of the New London Emigrating Company. This list is by head of household and the number in each family.

Allison, Nelson 1	Gallaher, William C. 10	Moist, Joseph 1
Baber, Grandville 2	Gore, William B.	Morgan, Edward Sr. 10
Kelknap, William 1	Griffith, Elisha N.8	Morgan, Thomas 1
Booster, Daniel 1	Hackleman 1	Morris, James M. 3
Bottan, John 1	Hale, Milton 3	Osborn, Josiah 6
Bozorth, Squire 11	Hawks, William 1	Rinearson, Jacob Sr. 1
Bradley, John 1	Henderson, William 1	Rinearson, Peter 1
Buck, William W. 4	Hendricson, William F. 1	Ritchie, John 1
Birkhart, Cariolanus D.* 1	Herbert, Joshua, 7	Rogers, Alex 1
Case (Chase), William 1	Hibbert, William 1	Rogers, Andrew 1
Chamness, Israel 5 or 4	Holland, Alamanzer 1	Scott, John 1
Cleveland, John 1	Holland, Francis S. 1	Short, Amos M. 12
Clock, James 5	Holland, John W. 3	Smeed, Hiram N. 1
Comfort, Edwin B. 2	Holland, Joshua 1	Staff, Nicholas 1
Cornelius, Absalom 12	Holiday, J. B. 1	Striethoff, John Y. 10
Cornelius, George 3	Huber, Noah F. 1	Summers, Tom 4
Cornelius, Isaac 3	Johnson, Hezekiah 9	Switzler, John 9
Courtney, Isaac 3	Kees, Elmore 1	Tallentine, Thomas 1
Courtney, John B. 9	Kees, Morgan 2	Umphlet, Stanley 4
Crow, Eli C. 1	Kendall, Jehial 1	Wallings, Agustus 1
Cutler, Benjamin 1	Kendall, Thomas S. 4	Walter, Elias 1
Davis, Joseph 7	Knox, James 9	Wheeler, Isaac Newton 1
Earl, John 3	Laberson, Timothy Jr. 8	Wheeler, Jacob 1
Earl, Margaret 7	McCoy, John 5	Wheeler, James 1
Eikenbury, Samuel 1	McCoy, William 1	Williams, Charles Austin 5
Evans, Dr. Alexander 7	McCullock, George 1	Williams, Naomi 3
Findley, James Alex 1	Martin, Charles G. 1	Williamson, Henry 1
Findley, Joseph S.1	Mealey, James 3	Wilson, General Anthony 6
Findley, William 1	Mealey, Dr. Washington B. 5	Woodcock, Williston D. 5
Fisher, Ezra 6	Meldrum, John 7	**303 people**
Force, George W. 2	Moist, James 1	**(2 & 3:381-514)**

*Donation Land Claim records, his obituary, and *History of the Burkhart Family of Linn County, Oregon*, show Coriolanus "Crill" D. Buirkhart as arriving in Oregon Territory in 1846.

The travel roster for the 1845 Hackleman Caravan. WF Hendricson is listed in the middle column and Thomas Morgan in the right-hand column. Notice that the train included a large family of Morgans.

Image source: *Wojick, DM. The Brazen Overlanders of 1845. Portland: Heritage Books Inc. 1992.*



The photograph above depicts the John Switzler family on Hackleman's wagon train, probably in Wyoming based on the mountains in the background and the browned faces, indicative of months under the sun. This photo by an unknown photographer is one of the first ever taken of a family on the Oregon Trail, and appears in many books, articles and internet sites on the early wagon trains to Oregon, including *The West: An Illustrated History for Children* (*Duncan D. Boston: Little Brown and Co. 1996; available on Amazon)*. A few families like the Switzler's could afford to outfit and travel with two wagons. Many Oregon-bound family units were multi-generational as appears to be the case with this family.

The Oregon Trail was first travelled in the 1830s by scouts including Kit Carson, Hugh Glass, Moses Black Harris and Jim Bridger who led hunters, missionaries and developers to the West Coast. The wagon train that brought WF Hendricson and Thomas Morgan to Oregon followed this trail.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 3/9/2023.

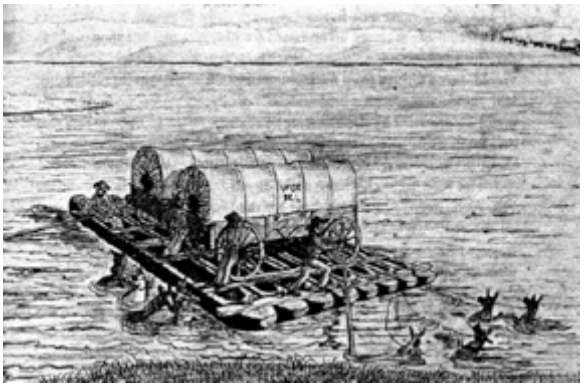
WF and Thomas arrived at the Hackleman termination campsite near present-day Portland on September 23, 1845, about five months after departure. Along the way 11 travellers lost their lives (11/303; 3.6%), much lower than the average ten percent mortality rate along the Oregon Trail during the early years of westward emigration. During the first month, while still in the Kansas prairie, an entire family of six was afflicted with a gastrointestinal disease, probably dysentery. Their wagon was separated by one mile from the rest of the group and they were not allowed to enter night camp (e.g., when wagons were circled) to minimize chances of disease spread. Ultimately, the mother and two children died of the disorder. After their burial near the trail, the father and surviving children eventually recovered, rejoined the main train and reached Oregon. When crossing the long dusty plains of Nebraska during the second month of the trip, two elderly travelers passed away in their sleep at night of unknown causes, and were buried the next morning. The train soon departed, with Hackleman telling the assembled travelers that, *"lingering here will benefit no one presently, and will only endanger us to poor weather later in our crossing. We must gather ourselves and move ahead."* (*Wojick, 1992)*

During July in Wyoming, one of the single men rode away one evening and did not return, violating Hackleman's rule of no lone riders away from the train at any time. WF and Thomas joined search parties the next day, but no sign of their travel companion was found by sundown. Anxious to continue forward movement, Hackleman selected a panel of three older men, including Thomas Morgan, to decide what to do with the man's oxen, wagon and possessions. The panel voted to assign the wagon and oxen to a large family of eight struggling with an undersized wagon pulled by scrawny horses, and the man's possessions were added to Hackelman's camp provision wagon for doling out to needy travelers during the later stages of the trail. Five of the deaths occurred near the end of the journey. As was the norm for wagon trains before 1850, the Hackleman train attempted to travel the final 100 miles on the Columbia River via crudely constructed rafts. The river float started at a sweeping bend in the river marked by a striking rock formation known as Pulpit Rock near the present day town of The Dalles. Just past the Pulpit Rock entry point, the raft fleet entered the picturesque but dangerous Columbia Gorge known for gusty winds, swirling eddies and unpredictable rapids. During a windy and rainy passage through the gorge on a day with particularly choppy current, three rafts flipped, throwing wagons, supplies, and travelers into the river and two other rafts crashed into each other, damaging wagons, but miraculously did not sink. Three children and two adults could not be rescued and were swept away. Oregon Trail historians estimated that nearly 200 overland travelers drown on the Columbia stretch of the trail before it was

abandoned in the 1850s. *(Unruh JD. The Plains Across: The Overland Emigrants and the Trans-Mississippi West: 1840-1860. Urbana: University of Illinois Press. 1993)*

Pulpit Rock near the first Christian mission established in Oregon was at the entry point for wagon trains attempting to float the Columbia River to Oregon City.

Image source: Columbia Gorge Discovery Center Photo Archive. Accessed via Oregon Digital www.oregondigital.org on 3/9/2023.



WF's 1845 wagon train crossed numerous rivers on the trail. Most could be forded at shallow crossings, but a few, such as the Columbia River, had to be traversed by rafts. River floats and crossings were treacherous, a principle cause of mortality and loss of wagons.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 3/7/2023.

When Mt. Hood came into view, travelers knew they were close to trail's end. Trains stopped for a day of thanksgiving and bathing in the river.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 3/4/2023.

As was typical with wagon trains crossing to Oregon, WF and Thomas often saw small bands of Natives on horseback. These bands were primarily Sioux, Kiowa and Pawnee, and largely were content to parallel the train a mile or so away as it crawled across the plains. With increasing frequency as the trip progressed, several tribesmen would approach the wagon train during evening camp and offer to trade commodities. The tribes typically offered food (mule deer, elk and bison meat), blankets, and services (hunting, guiding, assistance with river crossing, cattle herding) to the travelers. Deals were almost always struck so the tribal traders would not ride away displeased, and frankly, the trains often needed assistance. There was only one instance where there was tension between the travelers and Natives during WF's 1845 crossing. Hackleman periodically sent out small hunting parties, to augment the food in the provision

wagon, led by one of his scouts and comprised of several male travelers handy with rifles. WF reported that he never was invited on a hunt trip, but Thomas Morgan often participated.

In western Nebraska, a hunt party from the Hackleman train came upon a pack of pronghorn deer in a ravine. Dismounted and creeping forward in the high grass, the group reached the lip of the ravine, and stood to fire. To their astonishment, a half dozen well armed natives, likely Sioux, rose from the grass even closer to the pronghorns, and turned to face the startled wagon train men. After a few tense moments, Hackleman's men backed away to their horses, and carefully made their way back to camp. That evening, two elderly tribal members approached the camp, and made it clear they wanted to meet with the Wagon Master. After the meeting, Hackleman gathered the men in the camp and told them, *"no more hunting until we clear over the North Platte. The Sioux will bring us game if we tell them that we are hungry, but this is their range and we are to stay clear."*

Arriving at the trail termination camp known as Oregon City along the Willamette River a few miles from present-day Portland, WF was surprised to see that it was teaming with *"many dozens and dozens of families and so many single men, probably husbands with family back east."* All of these people were from Hackleman's prior caravans and those of a competing wagon train organizer, Lindsay Applegate. In his interviews, WF estimated to the Genealogical Society that *"there surely was a town's worth of people there – maybe a thousand."* The families had set up tents or lean-to's attached to their wagons for shelter, and were still looking for property that met their needs a year after arrival. Many were discouraged, and not happy to see more arrivals, also searching for land. WF soon learned that scouting for available land was time-consuming, he would have many competitors, and that there was a hodge-podge of largely informal and conflicting rules governing how tracts of property were to be surveyed and claimed. He was especially warned to be alert for unscrupulous land agents, many of them British, seeking to be paid upfront by settlers to find property, or seeking to sell acreage for which they falsely claimed to have a deed.

At this point, WF and Thomas divided up. WF was intent on exploring the Willamette Valley to the south of camp, while Thomas Morgan sought land closer to the Columbia River. Early in October 1845, Thomas left the camp with a wagon he purchased from an 1844 traveler and headed north. We do not know if WF and Thomas ever saw each other again. We do know that Thomas Morgan eventually settled in Portland, married again, had several children, became a businessman instead of a farmer, operating a hardware store / lumber yard, and passed away in 1886 at the age of 91 after finding the success in Oregon that eluded him in the midwest.

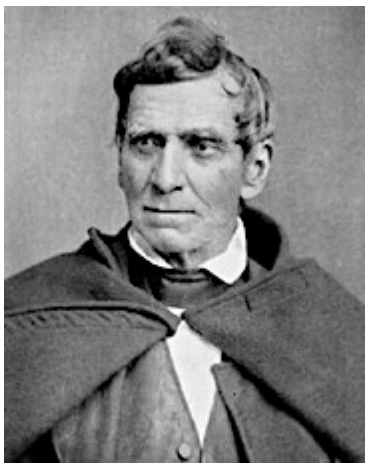
WF soon deduced that many of the White settlers struggled with the task of searching for land because they attempted to explore by themselves with no knowledge of the region, or were led by land agents who also were dimly aware of the region's geography. To the pragmatic Hendricson, this was foolhardy. He avoided the land agents prowling Oregon City and instead approached a nearby Chinookan camp to hire scouts (WF had read about the tribe in accounts of Lewis and Clark's journey to the region). By Christmas, 1845, with the assistance of two Chinookan tribesmen (brothers) who served as his guides and enforcers, in situations of conflict with other *"land grubbers like me"*, WF had identified a 500-acre parcel of land. The land was located on a branch of the Willamette River, which his guides called the Santiam River, 25 miles

from present day Salem, Oregon. He documented his survey of the Santiam land and riverbank with his own detailed notes and sketches. Then he hired an experienced Metis surveyor (see pages 82-84) to verify his calculations and prepare an independent survey. On January 3, 1846, WF submitted a land claim with both surveys attached at the provisional government office in Oregon City, and provided the $25 claim holding fee, which emptied his pockets.

A side note: *The Oregon Provisional Government was created in 1843 by three early settlers who were elected to commissioner positions at a meeting of roughly 150 White males in Oregon City. Many Oregon city residents were excluded from the 1843 Oregon Governance Meeting: at least 50 White women residing in the encampment, nearly 100 Metis trappers and traders who were long-time residents of the area, approximately 60 British settlers who had lived in the area since the 1830s, and a dozen families of Pacific Islanders who somehow had made their way to the area. The two stated goals of the Provisional Government were to establish procedures for wresting land away from the control of Native Peoples who lived on the Pacific side of Oregon including the Kalapuyan, Chinookan and Molallan peoples, and initiating a political campaign, with paid lobbyists in Washington DC, to agitate for Oregon to be designated as a U.S. territory, which occurred in 1846, and admitted to the Union as a state, which occurred in 1859. (Johansen DO. Empire of the Columbia. A History of the Pacific Northwest (2nd ed.) New York: Harper Collins. 1967)*

However, the Oregon Provisional Government actually devoted much of their energies during 1844 to 1847 to evicting British settlers from Oregon. The British citizens were mostly former trappers that had turned to real estate acquisition. The British were trying to obtain tribal support for a British Oregon Province, and were buying tracts of land directly from these tribes. At this time, the U.S. and Britain were engaged in a sabre rattling diplomatic feud over the lands comprising modern day British Columbia, Washington and Oregon. This dispute would not be finally settled until 1847 when the U.S. obtained rights to present-day Washington and Oregon. After the treaty, most of the Oregon Brits moved north to British Columbia but some applied for U.S. citizenship. *(Johansen, 1967)*

With his land search completed and paper work submitted, WF turned his attention to returning to Iowa and to his finance, Sarah. Hackleman had announced that he was departing for a return trip to St. Joe in March 1846. WF and 30 other "Husbands of the Midwest" plus two disgruntled families and several Hackleman employees, signed up for the reverse trip back to Missouri. However, a serious glitch changed those plans. Dr. Abner Hackleman died of typhoid fever before the journey commenced. Upon hearing the news, the ever-resourceful Hendricson hustled over to the office of Hackleman's primary competitor, Lindsay Applegate (1808-1892), who was also planning a return trip for men traveling single and a group of his employees. *(Allen C. The Applegates. Portland, OR: Oregon Historical Society; Oregon History Project. www.oregonhistoryproject.org. 2003)* WF found that Applegate's office was a large and well-furnished Chinookan lodge that he rented from the tribe. Applegate agreed to take on Hendricson but for a $30 fee due in one month, *"because of the lateness of his application and the accommodations that will need to be made."* WF did not have the money but quickly rounded up several camp jobs, including doing surveying for other prospective settlers, and generated the funds by Applegate's deadline.



After loss of a son and other travelers when attempting to raft his 1843 wagon train down the Columbia to Oregon City, Lindsay Applegate scouted and established a safer route. Known as the Applegate Trail, the new route approached the Willamette Valley from the south. After Oregon achieved statehood, Applegate served in the legislature for many years and was Tribal Agent representing the Klamath and Modoc Peoples in negotiations with Oregon and U.S. government. He had the prevailing biases of the era, but ran afoul of the governor for arguing vigorously on behalf of tribal interests. *(Allen, 2003)*

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 3/12/2023.

Like Hackleman, Lindsay Applegate had already led several trains to Oregon from Missouri, and made return trips to the Midwest to form new caravans. On the second journey in 1843, his train experienced a calamitous raft accident on the Columbia River. Applegate's nine-year son and another youngster were swept way and drowned, along with a man who tried to rescue them. In Applegate's own words: *"Whirlpools looking like deep basins in the river, the lapping, splashing, and rolling of waves ... presently there was a wall of anguish, a shriek, and a scene of confusion in our boat that no language can describe. The boat we were watching disappeared before our eyes, and we saw men and our dear boys struggling in the water. Elisha and Warren [Applegate's son] were drowned. We resolved if we remained in this country, to find a better way for others who might wish to emigrate." (Applegate L. Notes and Reminiscences of Laying Out the Old Emigrant Road into Southern Oregon in the Year 1846. Oregon Historical Quarterly. 1921; 22: 12-34.* www.ohs.org. Accessed: April 2, 2023*)*

Unbeknownst to WF and other travelers that signed-up for the return journey to the East, Applegate intended to use an alternate route through southern Oregon and Nevada. Applegate, his brother Jesse and 13 of his employees had scouted the route during the winter of 1845-46. Applegate concluded the trail was viable in spite of encountering hostility from the Paiute tribe, leading to deaths of two Applegate men in a skirmish, and enduring a snowstorm that trapped the entourage in a cave for a week with almost no food. The Applegate Route, as it originally was known, also allowed travelers to take a brief side trip to view the magnificent Crater Lake and to see the entirety of the Willamette Valley as they trekked through it from south to north. By 1850, Applegate's southern approach became the most travelled route to Oregon City. Ironically, it came to be known as the Barlow Road, after a subsequent wagon master, Samuel Barlow, found a couple of short alternative paths in central Oregon that reduced travel time by two days and also bypassed a few miles of tribal lands.

Despite a tense exchange with WF and the other travelers, all men, on the day before departure when Applegate informed the group that he planned to use a newly discovered route, all of the returning Midwesterners showed up the next morning, wagons loaded and oxen or mules hitched, ready to depart. Applegate's group of 38 men (30 travelers and eight employees) proceeded without incident along the new route during March 1846 until they reached the area of Klamath Lake in southern Oregon where a large band of Paiute tribesmen appeared one evening and camped several hundred yards away. Even with guards posted,

Paiute braves after nightfall managed to sneak into a makeshift corral and grab four horses. As the horses were being led away, one of the guards (a traveler, not a crew member) caught sight of movement in the dark, and fired off a round from his pistol to alert Applegate's group. Others in the wagon train ran toward the sound of the gunshot, further unnerving the guard who, apparently confusing onrushers for tribesman, fired another shot, striking and seriously wounding Applegate's most trusted scout in the left shoulder. At the sound of the second gunshot, additional gunfire occurred, leading to one traveler, standing next to WF, losing part of an ear. The incident greatly frayed nerves among the whole group. *(Applegate L. Oregon Historical Quarterly. 1921; 22: 12-34. www.ohs.org. Accessed: April 2, 2023)*

After sending his scouts out to make sure the Paiute band had departed the area, Applegate turned his attention to the badly injured scout, Moses Black Harris, who was one of the very few Black frontiersman, and one of the most famous explorers and guides of the 1820s and 1830s. In his time, Moses Harris was as well known as Mountain Men Jedediah Smith, Jim Fitzpatrick, John Coulter, Hugh Glass, and Jim Bridger. *(Utley RM. After Lewis and Clark: Mountain Men and the Path to the Pacific. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press. 2004)* In 1836, Harris guided the wagon train led by the missionary Marcus Whitman to the vicinity of Walla Walla, Washington. In 1837, he was instrumental in building Fort Laramie in Wyoming, one of the most famous of the trading posts and later a military base. In 1838, he guided a wagon train led by August Sutter (of the 49er gold rush at Sutter's Mill fame) to California, and in 1844 was the chief guide for the largest wagon train ever to cross the continent to Oregon, comprised of 450 wagons and 1400 pioneers. With WF and another traveler holding Moses down, Applegate extracted the round from his shoulder and sewed up the wound as best as he could with twine.

An image of Moses Black Harris by the Western artist Alfred Jacob Miller. Moses was born a slave in South Carolina and freed as a teenager. He made his way west in the 1820s, learned Native dialects, and lived with a Shoshone band for ten years. He turned to scouting and guiding White settlers to California, Oregon and Washington. Moses Black Harris was one of organizers of the Mountain Men Rendezvous that occurred annually from 1824 to 1843 on the Green River in Wyoming.

Image source: Nemec B. Black Pioneers and Settlers: Moses Black Harris. Portland: Oregon Historical Society; Oregon History Project. www.oregonhistoryproject.org. 2019. Accessed: 3/17/2023.

It was WF's first experience with the damage inflicted by gunfire and it left him shaken. *"But for a few feet, it could have been me felled by a shot"* he said in a genealogical interview. WF also described the recriminations that followed the incident with Applegate's employees demanding banishment of the traveler who wounded Moses Harris. To calm the hostility, Applegate placed the blame on himself for not posting his own experienced men as guards and Moses expressed no anger toward the shooter, saying it *"was just bum luck that he got shot."* Yet tensions within the wagon train population remained high. The Paiutes continued to follow for several days,

further adding to the stress level with WF remembering, *"not one in our bunch got hardly an hour's sleep until we crossed over from that piece of land."*

When the wagon train rejoined the main Oregon Trail at Fort Hall in Idaho, Applegate left Moses Harris to recuperate and assigned the most outraged employee to stay behind and look after Moses at the trading post until the next westbound wagon train arrived. This move alleviated the atmosphere of animosity within the travel party, although the evening social hour around the campfire was far less entertaining without Moses telling stories about his exploring and tracking exploits over the past 30 years. The tallest tale, hotly debated by western historians, was Moses' account of his journey to the Yellowstone area with Daniel Boone in 1812, who was 78 years old that year. According to Moses, he and Boone met up with Mountain Man John Coulter, the first European to see the Teton Range and the sulpheric hot springs of the Yellowstone region. Most historians now believe that this journey likely did occur, although some of the details may have been embellished by Harris and other western storytellers. *(Belue TF. Daniel Boone's Yellowstone Hunt. True West Magazine. March 31, 2022. www.truewestmagazine.com. Accessed: April 4, 2023)* Moses Harris would have had a substantial role in the film, *The Revenant,* if the story of Hugh Glass's 250 mile trek through the wilderness to reach Fort Kiowa, South Dakota, after being attacked by Arikara warriors and mauled by a bear, had been depicted accurately. Harris led a rescue party sent out by the fur trading company that employed Glass. Harris soon found the mountain man as he was trudging the final few miles toward the fort. Harris then traveled with Glass on his search for John Fitzgerald, a trapper who left him to die after the bear attack and stole his rifle. *(Coleman JT. Here Lies Hugh Glass. A Mountain Man, A Bear, and the Rise of the American Nation. New York: Hill and Wang Books. 2012)*

WF especially lamented the departure of Moses Harris; he was learning the basics of the Shoshoni language from the Mountain Man, which was a base language understood well enough by other tribes to allow communication. Moses was also mentoring him in tribal social and communication norms, especially how to interpret Native behavior when they were in the presence of Europeans (i.e., 19th century emotional intelligence).

A side note: *Moses Harris recovered but only after an infection in his left arm and shoulder left him impaired on that side for the rest of his life. In spite of this limitation, Moses found success locating property for settlers in Oregon and Washington. Eventually he was able to purchase his own land near Vancouver, Washington where he lived with his Metis wife. In 1855 at the age of 76, Moses reluctantly accepted "just one more" job for Applegate, which involved guiding a wagon train largely populated by eastern investors back to Missouri. A cholera outbreak during the final days of the return journey took his life less than 50 miles from St. Joseph, Missouri.*

To compensate for the loss of two men, Applegate assigned WF to manage the provision wagon and one other traveler with good rifle skills to serve as a hunter. One of the roles of the provision manager was to negotiate with tribal bands that approached the train seeking to trade. To accommodate the trading and avoid irritating the tribesman, Applegate had scrounged through Oregon City and a nearby Metis camp before they departed to stock the provision wagon with hand mirrors, hair brushes, combs, metal kettles, hammers, wood saws, old pistols, tins of tobacco, pipes, footwear, coats with buttons and other desired items.

Applegate handled the trading until the train reached Nebraska with WF assisting and then WF took the lead as the train progressed toward St. Joseph. In his genealogy interviews, WF shared how much he enjoyed the bartering role, describing several lengthy trade meetings running late into the night with Sioux elders, who enjoyed haggling with settlers as a form of entertainment. In one notable negotiation that WF considered a win for the wagon train, he swapping a set of kitchen kettles, a box of discarded hats and two used-up oxen in exchange for a Sioux led bison hunting trip that yielded meat for the entire wagon train for weeks.

WF reached St. Joe, Missouri in early August 1846 and was home in Pleasant Grove, Iowa by the end of the month, anticipating marriage to Sarah and preparation to return to Oregon the following spring. However, those plans did not play out. During WF's 17-month absence, Onias Jackson and Sarah struggled. Two years of lean crops led to a bank foreclosure on his small farm for mortgage payment failure. Onias was now unhappily working on the farm as an employee for a trustee named by the bank, trying to pay down the note with meager monthly earnings. Sarah was waiting tables in a roadhouse on the trail to Des Moines to bring in extra cash. Remembering his prior employment on cargo ships hauling iron ore across the Great Lakes, and sizing up the Jackson's situation as hopeless, WF proposed that he, Onias and Sarah leave Iowa and head for Northern Michigan (i.e., the Upper Peninsula) where an iron ore mining company was aggressively recruiting employees at unheard of high salaries. Initially flabbergasted, Sarah and her father came around after WF reviewed the financial advantages of defaulting on the loan, simply walking away, and heading north to Michigan.

Six weeks later the threesome were in Marquette, Michigan. WF landed a crew position on a iron ore freighter shipping between Marquette and a steel mill in Sault Ste. Marie in Ontario, Canada. Likely assisted by WFs persuasiveness, Onias found himself in a desk job in the mining company office and Sarah obtained work in a boarding house/restaurant. The three rented a house on a hill with a view of Lake Superior, and spent the next two years making money with a goal to raise enough funds for Sarah and WF to get married. With success in Michigan, planning for Oregon took a backseat to their life in Marquette. In the summer of 1847, more than a year after he departed Oregon City, WF received word from the newly installed Territory of Oregon that his 1845 claim was invalid due to non-activity, which ended further contemplation of a move to Oregon. In the spring of 1848, WF and the Jacksons returned to Rush, Indiana where Sarah was born so that WF and Sarah could marry in the same church where her parents exchanged their vows. At that point, it looked like Marquette, Michigan would become their permanent home and talk focused on whether to buy an older home or build a new one, with room for father-in-law Onias. However ... one Sunday morning in the fall of 1848, WF picked up the Marquette newspaper on the front porch, opened it and read headlines about a Gold Rush in California. WF and Sarah's lives were about to change once again.

I would like to have been a fly on the wall when WF introduced the idea to Sarah and her father of yet another trip to the West Coast, this time to the gold fields of California. Even though they collectively had three steady incomes, were planning to build a home, and apparently enjoyed living in Marquette, WF's argument in favor of a try at striking it rich ultimately won over his wife and father-in-law. In early March 1849, WF said good-bye to his now pregnant wife, and soon was on the trail west, a member of a wagon train comprised of 170 men with approximately 50 ox drawn wagons. The Wagon Master was Peter Burnett, who, the year

before, had scouted and established a trail from Fort Hall, Idaho to the southernmost of the two California gold rush fields near Sutter's Mill where the first nuggets were discovered.

Splitting from the Oregon Trail at Fort Hall, Idaho, WF's wagon train followed a route that passed the Great Salt Lake, traveled through bleak northern Nevada and crossed mountains near Lake Tahoe to reach the gold fields.

This may highlights the two main gold fields in California at the peak of the Gold Rush. Burnett's 49er wagon train headed for a camp on the American River in the middle of the Sierra Nevada gold fields. Nearly 300,000 people arrived in California in 1849 by wagon train and steamship from Asia, Latin America, Europe and the U.S. In WF's only letter home during his time in California, he commented on the *"masses of people and languages, and the squalor of the mining camps and thrown-up towns full of places to squander nuggets."*

Image source for both maps: *Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 3/10/2023.*

In his remembrances, WF made only a few comments about his Forty Niner (49er) venture. He suggested that his time panning was limited to a few months (he arrived in the gold fields near Coloma, about 30 miles from Sacramento, in July, 1849) observing, *"more steady money was made providing than panning."* In spite of that comment, it appears that WF had early luck in his stream panning and decided to cash out. We know that WF traveled to San Francisco in November of 1849 to open an account and make a deposit at the one and only bank in California in 1849, the Naglee Bank and Repository. Subsequent to that deposit, WF never again appeared to be financially challenged for the remainder of his life. We can only conjecture about his apparent profits from a few months of gold mining, but they must have been reasonably substantial.

A side note: *In contrast to the popular perception of 49ers' fruitless panning efforts that led to financial ruin, the majority of gold rush participants made money on the venture, and 5-10% accumulated generational wealth. Overall, the panhandlers profits from sale of gold nuggets infused at least 40 billion dollars (in 2023 value) into the U.S. economy, trading nuggets for hard*

currency, and thereby injecting extensive amounts of newly minted coinage and paper dollars into people's pockets, solidifying the U.S. dollar as the predominate currency, and helping to create a cash economy to replace the outdated barter system (Hine RV, Faragher JM. The American West: A New Interpretive History. New Haven: Yale University Press. 2000). However, the Gold Rush era had devastating effect on California's indigenous Native Americans, who were aggressively forced off their ancestral lands, leading to widespread poverty, attendant disease and malnutrition, and severe population decline. (Madley B. An American Genocide: The United States and the California Indian Catastrophe, 1846-1873. New Haven: Yale University Press. 2016)

49ers working a slew along the American River, searching for gold nuggets. Living conditions in makeshift mining camps with bars, brothels, taverns, jails and flophouse inns were as WF described in a letter to Sarah – squalid. It's not surprising that the prim WF quickly disengaged from this environment.
Image source: ScienceSource. www.sciencesource.com. Accessed: 3/14/2023.

After completing his banking, WF returned to Sacramento and took a job as a traveling sales clerk for Samuel Brannan Mercantile, selling mining equipment, tents, cots, boots and blankets in camps along the American River, where more than 100,000 people huddled in flap cities (i.e., tents), largely unprepared for the winter weather. Consistent with WF's cryptic observation about providing versus panning, Sam Brannon was the first millionaire to emerge from the Gold Rush, using profits from his supply stores to buy huge amounts of real estate in California, which he lost in a divorce settlement following various nefarious business and political actions. *(Bagley W. Scoundrel's Tale: The Samuel Brannon Papers. Spokane WA: Arthur H. Clark Publishing and Utah State University Press. 1999)* While in Sacramento working for Brannon, WF received a letter from Sarah, mailed three months earlier, indicating that Onias had lost his job with the Marquette iron ore company. They had moved back to their hometown in Rush County, Indiana, where both were having a hard time finding work. The letter may have pushed up WF's departure timeline, although it seems like he was already planning to leave California.

In April 1850, WF purchased a ticket for a San Francisco to New York passage via steamship connecting by mule caravan through the Panama Isthmus to the Atlantic side. The total cost was $450. He departed San Francisco on the *SS Oregon*, one of 17 steam paddle wheelers owned by the Pacific Mail Company, simultaneously a collaborator and a competitor with the U.S. Mail Steamship Company where John Lienau worked for many years. WF arrived in Panama 16 days after departure, spent a night in Panama City on the Pacific side, and on the next day commenced the pack trip with mules to the Caribbean side (the Aspinwall railroad was not built until 1852). With no other transport options that were considered safe or reliable, most 49ers carried their nuggets with them on their return trip home. Not surprisingly, the Panama jungle crossing was infamous for banditry. It has been estimated that least three billion dollars (2023 valuation) of gold and currency were stolen during this hazardous trek in the peak gold rush years. *(Brands WH. The Age of Gold: The California Gold Rush and the New American Dream.*

New York: Anchor Books. 2002) WF apparently passed through Panama without an attack on his mule train and boarded the *SS Falcon* steamship on the Caribbean coast at the port of Colon on the Chagres River where the Aspinwal Mailing Processing Center was located (see page 263). We know that WF transported his gold with him on the homebound trip because he reported in his interviews that his first action in New York after clearing the ship was to walk to the Bank of New York, now operating as BNY Mellon, where he cashed in virtually all of his gold.

Back in New York in early June 1850, the enterprising Hendricson purchased a freight wagon, went to the busy docks, and shortly after picked up a cargo shipment to transport to Cleveland. At this point in time, the New York harbor was receiving vastly more European, Caribbean and South American shipments than the poorly organized and under resourced teamster industry could handle. It was common practice to use independent teamsters to haul freight under a "paid when delivered" system. Hendricson unloaded his wagon at a Lake Erie dock, collected his fee, and shortly arrived back in Rush, Indiana to re-unite with Sarah, his infant daughter Leona and his father-in-law. He found them at a boarding house for farm workers where Onias was functioning as the property manager and Sarah was a housekeeper. It's likely that the reunion was not particularly cheerful in spite of WFs good fortune in California. At some point shortly after arrival, WF unveiled his latest scheme, which once again involved Oregon.

While WF was traveling home from California, Congress passed the Oregon Land Donation Act of 1850 that provided settling families (i.e., husbands and wives) with up to 640 acres of donated (i.e., free) land to entice settlement. *(Robbins WG. Oregon Donation Land Law. Oregon Encyclopedia. Project of the Oregon Historical Society. 2021. www.oregonencyclopedia.org. Accessed: April 7, 2023)* WF later referenced the *"storm that brewed in Rush"* after he proposed an almost immediate departure for Oregon City to avoid missing out on good land. Sarah, understandably upset at being left behind twice while WF trekked west, only agreed to the venture if she accompanied WF this time, but she did not want to take her infant daughter until she was older. Sarah also was not comfortable living 2,000 miles from her father. Ultimately, a compromise was reached. Sarah and WF would travel to Oregon in 1850, acquire property and get settled, and then WF, by steamship and the Panama isthmus, would return to pick up Onias and Leona and travel with them to Oregon in 1852. Onias and Leona would move in with Onias's sister in a nearby town until WF returned. This elaborate plan was feasible because the Pacific Steamship Company now operated passenger paddle wheelers up to the Columbia River to accommodate the rapidly growing population. We do not know why Sarah and WF did not elect to travel to Oregon by steamship, which was much faster and more comfortable. This decision is especially perplexing as it appears that Sarah may have recognized that she was pregnant with their second child even before the wagon train began its journey.

On August 15, 1850, a late starting date for an Oregon Trail journey, WF and Sarah departed in a wagon train led by Wagon Master Seth Leweling from Council Bluffs, Iowa on his second trip to the West Coast. There were 42 wagons and approximately 160 adults and children in the train, mostly from Iowa and Illinois. WF would later comment that this train was less organized than others he experienced, and barely averaged ten miles a day for the first month, not a sufficient pace to cross the mountain passes in Wyoming and Idaho before snow season set in. Two faster moving trains passed Leweling's caravan during September, and three wagons in his group, apparently annoyed at the slow pace, pulled out of line and joined one of the speedier

trains. A week later, three families in the Leweling train dropped out and headed back to Council Bluffs after a series of accidents with their wagons, which slowed the entire group considerably (i.e., all wagons waited while damaged wagons were repaired). Soon after WF and Sarah witnessed the spectacle of a 300 wagon "go-back caravan" with over a thousand people plodding east, the victim of poor food resourcing and a very dry year that provided inadequate grazing for the hundreds of animals in that train. The go-back wagon train apparently made an impression on Leweling. He quickened the train's pace to the normal 15 miles a day.

Wagon accidents were common and a principle source of slow pace. Wagon train historians estimate that 20% of all wagons were forced to abandon the trip, and became "go-backs."

Image source: Slideshare. www.slideshare.net Accessed: 3/9/2023.

Leweling at first was standoffish around WF, perhaps intimidated (I'm guessing here) by WF's considerable wagon train experience, and his knowledge of "Indian Ways". But, as the journey proceeded, Leweling increasingly turned to WF for route and general trip management advise and by Wyoming had asked WF to take the lead for trading negotiations with Native Peoples.

After a dry and cold, but not snowy, traverse of the Oregon Trail, Sarah and WF reached Oregon City by means of the southern Applegate (now Barrows) Route in mid December. During the journey, they managed to isolate themselves from a cholera outbreak that took 11 lives, the bulk of two families. Three other travelers died from accidents (falls and a shooting during a hunting excursion), and an elder person, traveling with her daughter and son-in-law died from unknown causes. The fatigue and mental exhaustion of the seemingly endless trudge across the continent is evident in diary entries by the deceased woman's daughter:

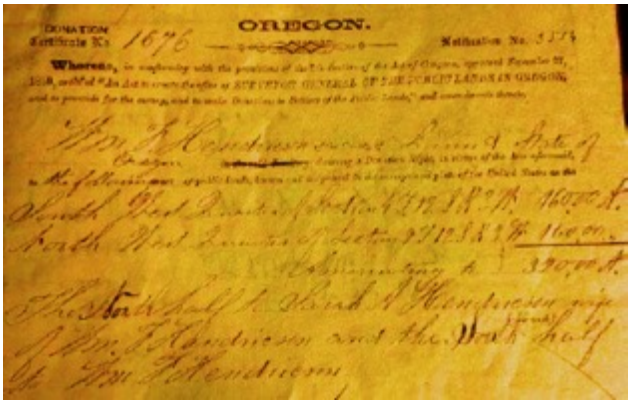
"Sunday, October 29 – Mother taken worse yesterday morning, lingered through the day and died about 9am this morning. We are now about 30 miles below Salmon Falls on the north side of Snake River.

Monday, October 30 – Mother buried about 10 o'clock this morning under stones about 200 yards above the crossing of the river. After crossing, we traveled eight miles to a spring to refresh the stock."

Source: *Flora SF. Emigrants to Oregon: Words of Oregon Trail Travelers. Chapter 6: The Diary of Eliza Richey. www.oregonpioneers.com. 2009.*

Sarah and WF lost of two of their four oxen on the trip, but fortunately had purchased two other animals in Council Bluffs to bring along in the wagon train's supplemental herd. On the positive side there were two births near the end of the trail and both infants survived, which must have been comforting to Sarah who by the final stretch of the Trail was at least six months pregnant. After settling in the termination camp adjacent to Oregon City, which WF noted was looking more like an actual town, they immediately commenced their search for acreage. Without the aid of the Chinookan brothers who helped in 1845 (they had been run off by the

territorial militia like most of the other Natives in the region), WF and Sarah scouted on their own, and in February 1851 filed a claim for two adjacent 320 acre tracts, per the stipulations of the 1850 Land Donation Act, located six miles southwest of an emerging village in the middle of the Willamette Valley called New Albany.


OREGON.

It is hard to read due to aging, but this is the original Oregon land donation contract signed by William and Sarah Hendricson, granting each of them adjoining 320 acre land parcels in 1851. With this document, Sarah became the first Hendricson woman to own property.
Image source: Family History Notebook of Mildred and Harold Hendricson. 1984.

The tracts were located adjacent to a small river named after the Calapooia tribe (also spelled Kalapuya) that historically resided in the area. The Calapooia River is an 80-mile tributary of the Willamette River. The Hendricson's acquired 60 yards of direct riverfront access. Unlike many other rivers in Oregon, the Calapooia name remains to this day. There were two ponds on the land fed by snowmelt run off and underground springs. Mildred and Harold Hendricson, in their genealogical notebook, indicated that the homestead is located just south of the Albany/Corvallis KOA campground on Oregon State Highway 34. *(Palmer T. Field Guide to Oregon Rivers. Corvallis: Oregon State University Press. 2014)* Sarah gave birth to her second child, Lavinia, in March 1851 on this property. Lavinia was the first Hendricson born in the Pacific Northwest. After Lavinia, five subsequent children, including Omar Pasha Hendricson, who would extend our Hendricson family line, were born at this farm.

Although the land in WF's mind was not nearly as fertile as his lost 1845 claim on the Santiam, (he wrote many letters to the territory governor protesting the "jumped land") the new tract turned out to be a solid choice. He and Sarah would live on this rural property for nearly 40 years, engaging in farming with diverse, almost year-round crop rotation, stock raising and breeding, gradually expanding the farm to more than 2,500 acres with a main house, two smaller homes for children and grandchildren, a crew house for employees, and three barns. Within the next year, Sarah and WF had acquired neighbors on each side of their property and others directly across the trail leading to New Albany.

In May of 1851, WF fulfilled his pledge to return to Rush, Indiana to pick up daughter Leona, and his father-in-law. WF made it back to Rush in August of that year via Pacific and Atlantic steamships, the Panama Isthmus crossing and yet another freight hauling gig, this time to Chicago. WF continued his freight hauling locally in Indiana until the 1852 spring travel season arrived. Meanwhile back in Oregon, Sarah, who appears to have been a confident and capable young woman, and new daughter Lavinia lived alone on their farm, but with assistance from a nanny and a 60 year old man named Newton Henton hired by WF to supervise labor crews. Working together, Newton and Sarah supervising land clearing and tilling, fall seeding of grain crops, and construction of the first barn. Sarah also involved herself in the formation of a new

Methodist Episcopal Church in New Albany, which would become a cornerstone of Hendricson family life for decades, and, was a founding member of the Apollo Club, a musician's group that eventually evolved into the Albany Philharmonic Society in the 1880s.

In March 1852, WF, Onias, Leona, and a new travel partner, Onias' recently widowed sister, arrived in Council Bluffs to await the departure of a wagon train that they had arranged to join. Once again, it is not clear why the quicker, safer and more comfortable steamship option was not selected. During his genealogical interviews, WF apparently was not asked about his preference for overland travel versus steamships, and did not offer any observations about mode of transportation. Since his 49er days, WF appears to have been on solid financial ground, and almost certainly could have afforded cabin space on a steamship. Yellow Fever, a life-threatening virus transmitted by mosquitoes, was rampant in the Caribbean in the 1850s, causing thousands of deaths annually. It's possible that avoidance of Yellow Fever may have been a consideration for WF's westward trips, especially for the third journey with a pregnant wife, and the final trip with his young daughter and two older travel companions. For whatever reason, overland travel was selected for WF's final wagon train trip to Oregon.

The four-person Hendricson-Jackson group, supported on this crossing with two covered wagons, joined a train headed by Wagon Master Jacob Jones at Council Bluffs, Iowa. They crossed the Missouri River on March 23, 1852. The Jones train was comprised of 49 families and 38 wagons plus the usual herd of replacement livestock, oxen and mules. Forty-two of the families were relatives of Jacob Jones and all were affiliated with a third generation Great Awakening Revivalist Congregation (see page 249) intent on establishing a less doctrinaire spiritual community in Oregon. Jacob Jones was the congregation's spiritual leader.

A side note: *There were three phases, or generations, of the Great Awakening Movement in North America. Okey Hendricson experienced the first generation in the late 18th century in New Jersey. A second generation emerged around 1820, stimulated by urbanization and perceived de-personalization of human existence in cities. The third generation in the 1850s focused on social justice (slavery abolition and better relationship with Native Peoples) and enhancing Christian behavior among men. For example, the YMCA movement was started during the third generation of the Great Awakening. (Kidd, 2007)*

The other seven families on this trip represented a mixed bag of travelers, unique in that four of the adults within the group (WF, two men and a women) had previously completed the Oregon Trail. As WF and his family soon learned, the New Awakening families planned to implement their non-traditional religious experience during the crossing to Oregon, with nightly revival gatherings. Additionally, Jacob Jones had never led a group across the Oregon Trail before. His Wagon Master experience consisted of guiding the 42 Jones families from Milwaukee to Council Bluffs, a pedestrian journey over established roads. As evidence of his inexperience, Jacob failed to outfit a provision wagon for the convoy, which decidedly hampered the journey.

Similar to Wagon Master Seth Leweling in 1850, Jacob Jones initially was not receptive to suggestions from Hendricson or the three other experienced Oregon Trail travelers. Instead of plodding along like Leweling's group, Jones set a rapid pace, aiming for 20 miles a day (versus the conventional 15 miles), rousing the travelers at 3:30am in order to be on the road by 5:00 am, and not stopping until 5:00 or 6:00pm. Within a month, three Wisconsin families peeled off

at the first of several trading posts that had recently popped up on the Nebraska plains, saying that they were fatigued and would latch-on to a subsequent train. Shortly after the first peel-off, three families, consisting of 19 people, self-assessed that cholera was running amuck within their group, and per expectation, isolated themselves a mile behind the main train. Nine deaths occurred and the survivors in these families turned around and headed back to Council Bluffs. The appearance of Cholera ignited panic within the train's population, leading to agitation to stop and determine whether to continue. At this point, two more families made that decision for themselves, deciding that Milwaukee looked pretty good after all and opted to go-back east.

The train was halfway across Nebraska at this point, pragmatically at a point of no return, and had lost eight families already. Wagon Master Jones, apparently in a bit of panic himself, finally held a meeting with WF and other experienced Oregon Trailers to assess the situation. The experienced travelers all recommended pushing ahead, telling Jones that fatalities will occur but the train had to maintain a forward schedule, no matter what tragedy befell them. They also recommended a more reasonable pace. Jones followed this advice, changing the morning rouse to 4:30am and making night camp no later than 4:00pm. Like Leweling, he also turned more and more to WF for guidance and once again assigned him to be the point person for tribal communication and negotiations, although without a store of tradable goods for bartering. To prepare for trading meetings, WF had to scrounge utensils, clothing, tools and tobacco from the wagon train population, and bought many items at a trading post.

Sketch of an Oregon Trail trading post by western artist William Henry Jackson. Posts that sold food, tools, weapons, tobacco and clothing appeared during the peak of the Oregon and California emigration, catering to White settlers and Native Americans. Most of the posts were owned by eastern investors, who later sold them to the military.
Image source: Slideshare. www.slideshare.net Accessed: 3/25/2023.

Tribal interactions were more difficult on this journey than on prior trips. Instead of requesting trading sessions, tribal spokespersons often approached WF with complaints, usually related to overgrazing by the wagon train's livestock, which in the drought conditions of the 1850s, reduced grass and other vegetation available to animals. Tribes also complained about over-hunting by wagon trains, depleting the mule deer, bison and elk herds, and they complained that the clattering noise of hundreds of iron-rimmed wheels and the ever present dust cloud frightened away smaller game animals including antelope, badgers and foxes. In 1852, tribal complaints were usually not accompanied by demands or threats, that would come later, but WF spent considerable time soothing the frayed nerves of tribal leaders, who were starting to recognize the implications of the endless stream of wagon trains crossing their territories.

WF's main annoyance on this journey, shared by his non-Wisconsin travel partners, was the nightly spiritual revival meetings led by Wagon Master Jones himself, a devotee of the fire and brimstone, hell and damnation style of preaching. Rather than relaxing, reading and getting to

bed early, the majority of the travelers spent the evening *"hollering, bellowing, stomping and singing"* deep into the night, which made the herd restless, elicited noise complaints from tribal spokesman, and contributed to a sleepy-eyed, laconic start to the next day. Eventually, the seven non-Wisconsin families separated their wagons from the main circle in the evenings, which cut down the noise enough so that they could converse within their own group, although getting to sleep at an early hour remained problematic. However, by the time the train reached the mountains of Wyoming, the fatigue of the journey had ground down the Wisconsinites to such an extent that they hit the hay almost immediately after supper.

On a positive side, WF learned that his father-in-law was a dedicated artist. Onias had a sketchpad in his hands at all times and a pencil stuck behind his ear, even when walking or herding livestock. WF reported that Onias *"rendered countless sketches, often doodling whilst walking"*. During the evenings, he brought out a set of colored pencils as well as fine point charcoal tipped artist pens to produce a large collection of landscapes and other scenes of trail life. After reaching the Willamette Valley, he donated his notepads to libraries established by Willamette Valley communities in the 1850s. None of his illustrations appear to have made it into surviving collections of Oregon Trail memorabilia (see side note on page 303). William Henry Jackson, the western photographer and artist, produced dozens of Oregon Trail paintings between 1880-1900. In his autobiography, Jackson reported that he based his paintings on original sketches drawn by wagon train travelers because he did not personally witness any of the Oregon Trail caravans, which ceased in the 1870s. (*Jackson WH. Time Exposure: The Autobiography of William Henry Jackson (3rd edition; original 1933). St. Louis, MO: Patrice Press. 1994*). Several of WH Jackson's Oregon Trail paintings appear below. They depict scenery that Onias likely witnessed first hand and probably sketched himself. *Source for the three Jackson images below: Wyoming Tales and Trails. www.wyomingtalesnandtrals.com. The Oregon Trail. Accessed: March 26, 2023.*

Illustration of the evening wagon formation, which was two half circles rather than the closed loop depicted in films. Jackson sketched this picture in western Nebraska at a rest stop known as Independence Rock. Experienced Wagon Masters stopped their trains here for three days to facilitate socializing with travelers in other trains, wagon repair, resting animals and the important ritual of carving your name into the rock formation.

Titled *Three Island Crossing of the Snake River, Idaho*, this Jackson picture depicts one of the most challenging river crossings on the Oregon Trail.

Titled *Approaching the Blue Mountains of East Oregon*, this Jackson painting depicts one of the more pleasurable mountain range crossings on the way to the Willamette Valley.

The Jacob Jones train entered the south end of the Willamette Valley in September 1852, and the Hendricson-Jackson wagons peeled off from the others on September 19 when the train passed three miles east of WF and Sarah's land on the Calapooia. After a massive amount of cross – continent travel between 1845 and 1852, WF never again left the Pacific Northwest. WF and Sarah became wealthy from their agricultural endeavors, and they engaged in many social and educational organizations in Linn County, where Albany is located, and also in nearby Corvallis. In 1865, the Hendricson's donated an unknown amount of money to support the expansion of Corvallis College, which evolved into Oregon State University (OSU) by the 1880s. They made annual contributions to the school's endowment fund, and hosted fund-raising events at their Calapooia farm. The Hendricson's donations may have been substantial as WF was appointed by the Governor to the commission that selected the first OSU President, William A. Finley, and later served on other commissions pertinent to the university. *(Landis L. Oregon State University. Oregon Encyclopedia. Project of the Oregon Historical Society. 2020. www.oregonencyclopedia.org. Accessed: April 11, 2023)*

A side note: *Onias Jackson elected to return to Rush, Indiana in 1862. I could find no information about the catalyst for his trip back east or his mode of transportation. I conjecture that he may have desired to see his other daughter, Alcestis, again, or possibly re-connect with Daraxa. Onias died shortly after returning to Indiana.*

I believe that this is a photo of Sarah Jackson Hendricson with her fifth of six children, Frank, taken in 1863. I am not 100% certain, but the photo was taken in an Albany, Oregon studio and the photo was found in a collection of photos in an album of Sarah's older son, Omar Pasha Hendricson.

The Hendricson's annually paid $10,000-11,000 in property taxes in the 1880s and 1890s, almost 20 times higher than the average property tax paid by other residents (average: $580) listed on the Linn County tax rolls in that period. The 2024 valuation of $11,000 is approximately $330,000. *(Phillips J. 1882 - 1892 Linn County, Oregon Tax Papers. Report by WG*

Obenauer, County Tax Assessor. Linn County Oregon Genealogy Trails. Genealogy Trails History Group. 2022. www.genealogytrails.com. Accessed: April 14, 2023)

Review of Linn County tax rolls from 1882-1892 and the Oregon census reports indicate that the Hendricson's owned multiple rural properties in addition to the Calapooia homestead, owned residential tracts within Albany and also owned residential and commercial property in Corvallis and Portland. With business partner Terry Conn, WF was a major economic force in Albany and Corvallis over the final 30 years of his life. WF owned outright or co-owned with Conn a variety of businesses during 1880 - 1908 including a grocery store, a crockery and dishware store, a steam powered sawmill, and a freight hauling enterprise, which also sold, leased and repaired farm equipment. WF's son Omar apparently managed the grocery store for a few years before transitioning to farm equipment sales. I could find no information as to the disposition of these businesses after WF passed away in 1908. In his will, only dispersal of residential or farm property in Albany, Corvallis and Portland to family members and several friends is mentioned.

Later in life, WF joined various clubs and civic organizations. For example, he was an active member of the Albany Mascot Gun Club, where he played an administrative role and frequently participated in shooting competitions that were reported in a local newspaper. *(Albany States Right Democrat. Mascot Gun Club's Monthly Shoot. August 14, 1891. Accessed from MyHeritage. www.Myheritage.com on April 13, 2023)* He apparently was an avid hunter. A December 11, 1885 article in the *Albany States Rights Democrat* reported that WF had *"bagged 140 fowl on a recent hunting excursion including goose, mallard, duck, teal, snipe, kildee, and yellow hammers, plus one skunk." (Albany States Right Democrat. William Hendricson Hunting Trip. December 11, 1885. Accessed from MyHeritage. www.Myheritage.com on April 13, 2023)* WF also became a member of the City of Albany Band in 1900 (*Albany Daily Democrat. A New City Band Has Been Organized. October 12, 1900. Accessed from MyHeritage. www.Myheritage.com on April 15, 2023)* WF was a deacon in his church, held trustee positions in local banks, and was Chairman of the Western Oregon Republican Party Coordinating Committee for ten years.

In 1888, with Sarah struggling with cancer, WF leased the Calapooia farm to several tenants in a profit-sharing partnership and purchased an in-town home at 490 Broadalbin Street in Albany so Sarah could be closer to her doctors and home care nurses. After Sarah's death in 1892, WF re-married in 1894 to Mary Fronk who traveled to the West Coast in a wagon train at age 14. Mary's parents acquired considerable wealth in the neophyte Pacific Coast hospitality industry, ultimately owning a chain of hotels in Los Angeles, San Francisco, Portland and Seattle.

WF and Sarah Hendricson's in-town home at the corner of 6th and Broadalbin Streets in Albany.
Image source: The photograph was taken by Harold Hendricson in 1980.

WF was a supporter of Theodore Roosevelt, particularly admiring Roosevelt's push for a national park system. WF sent Vice President and then President Roosevelt numerous invitations to visit Oregon, which finally paid-off. On May 22, 1903, WF Hendricson and three other Republican officials had a ten-minute audience with Roosevelt in his train car lounge when the President stopped in Portland in the midst of a 25 state railroad tour.

Teddy Roosevelt in Portland in 1903 on a western tour to promote national parks. WF and Republican party officials met Roosevelt in his lounge car after the President's speech advocating a congressional bill to designate Crater Lake and Mt. Hood as national parks. *Information and image source: Haneckow D. On This Day in Stumptown History, President Teddy Roosevelt is in Town. May 22, 2012. Stumptown Blogger. www.stumptownblogger.com. Accessed: 4/16/2023.*

A side note: *Many wagon train travelers, especially women, wrote trip diaries to record their experiences and observations of life on the Oregon Trail. Many of these diaries have been preserved in various collections housed in Oregon museums and libraries, and also by genealogical societies. The publication, Across the Plains, Mountains and Deserts: A Bibliography of the Oregon-California Trail (2014), edited by William Bagley, a historian for the National Park Service, describes 4500 documents produced by wagon train travelers. These documents include diaries, maps, legal documents, short stories, and artwork. The Bagley bibliography lists a diary written by Sarah A. Jackson Hendricson, but the indicated website is inactive. Perhaps future family historians can locate Sarah's account of her Oregon journey, as well as examples of Onias Jackson's artwork.*

=======

Notes on Wagon Trains: Primarily due to motion pictures and television shows in the 1950s and 60s, most notably the popular series *Wagon Train* starring Ward Bond, a number of myths about wagon train structure and travel procedure have endured. These notes address three of these myths. Principle sources of information for this myth busting were: *Unruh JD, 1993 (Cited previously) and Pingenot BE. The Great Wagon Expedition of 1850. Southwestern History Quarterly. 1994; 98: 183-225.*

Ward Bond, left on horse, starred in the TV series *Wagon Train*, based on his prior show, *Wagon Master,* one of the first westerns made for network television, and which focused on a Mormon wagon train. Both series were hits, but included inaccuracies about the wagon train experience, such as families riding in their wagons, the single-file line-up of wagons and the frequency of Native American hostility.
Image source: The Movie Data Base. www.themoviedb.org. Accessed: 4/21/2023.

Travel formation. In paintings, films and on TV, wagon trains have been depicted as traveling in a long single-file column of several hundred wagons, winding through hills and valleys. The

early caravans proceeded in this manner, but this formation posed many problems. Communication between sections of a long, single-file train of wagons was challenging. One or more wagons at the end of the train could experience breakdowns or accidents, and it would take considerable time for the Wagon Master to even become aware of the situation. Long single file columns also required hiring additional trail riders (assistants to the Wagon Master) to ride up and down the column to identify problems, and convey messages back to the leader, driving up personnel costs. Early caravans found that rounding a long single-file column into an encirclement camp at night was difficult to accomplish in an orderly and time-efficient manner. An immense amount of dust and debris was kicked up by a wagon train, the bulk of which enveloped the wagons and walkers at the back of the column, making an already dreadful experience even worse. A long single-file column was easy prey, particularly the rear section, in the instance of an attack by a band of tribesman or Anglo bandits. It was virtually impossible to quickly move into any type of defensive position.

By 1850, It was determined that wagon trains composed of 40-50 wagons were optimal for communication and management versus giant trains with hundreds of wagons and more than 1,000 travelers. Except when traversing narrow mountain passes, the basic wagon train configuration evolved into a side-by-side, multiple column formation as shown below. Each column or compartment of eight to ten wagons and roughly 40-50 people, elected a Captain to serve as the leader of their group. The Wagon Master and his assistants met nightly with the Captains to resolve problems, assess and manage resources, and plan the upcoming days in the journey. Dust was reduced, and wagons in each column could rotate front to back, allowing a couple of days every week in front of the dust, rocks and manure being thrown backward as the train progressed. Five or six side-by-side columns (essentially a moving box formation) provided a stronger defensive posture. With each column moving their own wagons into a small circle in the evening, this task was accomplished more efficiently so human walkers and wagon pullers (mules, oxen and occasionally horses) could have more time to rest.

A side note: *The wagons were circled at night to sequester livestock and prevent them from wandering off. Protection from tribal attack was a consideration, but not the primary reason for the circling the wagons.*

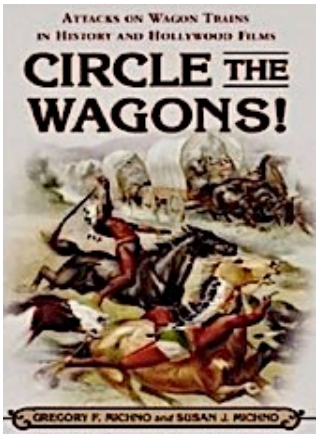
Image source: Equine Heritage Institute.
www.equinineheritageinstitute.com. Accessed: 4/24/2023.

Attack by Native Tribes. Western emigration historian John Unruh reported 362 deaths among wagon train travelers due to violence by Native Peoples on the Oregon Trail from 1843

(crossing of first major Oregon-bound wagon train) to 1868, the final year before trans-continental travel by locomotive was possible. He also documented a roughly similar number of Native deaths from these encounters. For context, the overall number of wagon train deaths during this timeframe has been calculated in several studies as 25,000 to 30,000. The number of emigrants who traveled overland to Oregon, or to California (using the Oregon Trail for 2/3s of their journey) was approximately 400,000, for a trip fatality rate of 7%. The annual trip mortality, from all causes, from 1843 to 1850 was 10%, but declined to 5% after 1850 as travel protocols were better established, river crossing techniques were improved and personal hygiene regulations were more aggressively enforced. Less than one-tenth of one percent of Oregon Trail mortality was due to violent confrontations with Native Peoples.

The main causes of emigrant death were bacterial infections of the gastrointestinal tract, primarily Cholera and Typhoid Fever, caused by poor personal sanitation and ensuing bacterial infection of food and water, drowning's, injuries from handling livestock, wagon accidents including tip-overs from wind gusts, children falling beneath wagon wheels, hunting accidents, dehydration, snakebites, and malnourishment. Virtually every wagon train also had occurrences of people wandering off who were never seen again and presumed dead. Outside of Cholera and other gastrointestinal diseases that often wiped out an entire family within a couple of weeks, the majority of deaths occurred among the elderly and children.

In *Circle the Wagons!*, Greg and Susan Michno explored violent interactions between Native Peoples and wagon train travelers and other western emigration myths. They found that hostile confrontations between wagon train travelers and Native tribesmen almost never occurred as depicted in the classic Hollywood movie scene of whooping warriors racing around circled wagons firing arrows or rifles from gymnastic positions on horseback. Most migratory tribal bands were small and had only a few young warriors who were far too valuable to lose in a futile attack on a well-armed wagon train. Wagon Master's typically required each wagon to have at least two rifles and/or shotguns, vastly more firepower than Native tribes.



Greg and Susan Michno explored the mythology of Native American attacks on wagon trains, and examined other false narratives about western emigration. For example, they found evidence of just 31 tribal attacks on wagon trains between 1843 and 1868. During this period, 1,700 wagon trains journeyed from the Midwest to Oregon, Utah or California. However, several attacks resulting in high mortality among settlers and tribesmen were extensively reported in the eastern press, feeding a perception of tribal hostility.
Michno GF, Michno SJ. Circle the Wagons! Attacks on Wagon Trains in History and in Hollywood Films. Chicago: McFarland Press. 2008.

Unruh estimated that the majority of pioneer fatalities associated with tribal encounters occurred away from the wagon train during hunting excursions when travelers and Natives surprised each other while traversing the same grounds. In panic or confusion, guns were fired, spears were thrown, knives flashed and there were deaths on both sides.

Tribal-traveler violence increased in the 1860s when a substantial cohort of hunters starting using wagon trains as a means to reach bison herds. Perceived over-hunting of bison triggered tribal reprisal, often in the form of ambushes set for hunters or night assaults on specific wagons know to include hunters. Unruh reported that many of the 362 wagon train deaths attributable to Native Peoples occurred after 1860. By that time, the plains tribes, especially the Comanche's and their Kiowa allies, realized that *"white man was never to leave our lands."* While their parents in the 1840s and 1850s tolerated the White travelers and used them as trading partners, the new generation of 1860s tribal leaders was less accepting, led by the Kiowa War Chief, Big Bow, who advocated tribal cooperation and preemptive action. Violence boiled over when locomotives started barreling through ancestral hunting and grazing lands after 1868. When a large component of the post Civil War Union army moved across the Missouri into Western territories in 1869, organized resistance intensified.

The Kiowa were the most likely to act aggressively against wagon trains after 1860. These Kiowa were photographed at a Kansas trading post in 1861. Upper right is Big Bow (1833-1900), a Kiowa Nation War Chief who pushed for aggressive resistance. Less well known to the Anglo world than other tribal leaders, Big Bow exerted influence in tribes from Texas to the Dakotas.
Information and image source: Anderson AH. Big Bow. Handbook of Texas Online. Tx. State Historical Assoc. www.tshaonline.org. 2010. Accessed: 8/17/2023.

Traveler Preparation. Another myth about wagon trains is that travelers experienced a high death rate because they were poorly prepared for the arduous journey. In reality, the main problem was inexperienced Wagon Masters. The requirements imposed by experienced Wagon Masters (i.e., employed by a travel company or by the Oregon Territory to lead caravans) ensured that pre-trip planning was methodical for professionally led groups. Unfortunately, many of the Wagon Masters were not experienced. WF Hendricson's numerous journeys demonstrate the diversity in train leadership. Hackleman and Applegate each had made multiple round trips. Seth Leweling had only one previous trip under his belt and Jonas Jones of Wisconsin had none. Wagon train groups were often led by inexperienced Wagon Masters who were selected by travelers based on status: a church congregation leader such as Jonas Jones, an older family patriarch, which was the case in Drusilla and Amanda Morgan's trip to Oregon, or a prominent person. The wagon train that transported Ira Wiley Goodman's family was led by the mayor of the town where the family lived, who was a banker by trade.

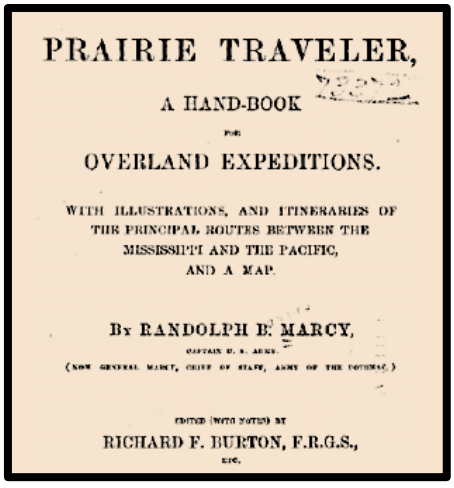
When done thoroughly, accumulation of required supplies and acquisition of a covered wagon that met specifications cost $1,000 - $2,000 in the 1850s ($38,000 - $76,000 in 2024 valuation). Since most of the westward traveling families were not wealthy, it often took several years to pull together that level of funding. The wagons were packed with supplies intended to get the family through a five-month journey. A family of six was expected to depart with 2500 pounds of food, water, cooking utensils and equipment (shovels, hammers, saws, wrenches, files, augers, carving knives, wagon replacement parts, buckets of spare nails, bolts, nuts, and hinges, weapons and ammunition). Food supplies represented 50% of the weight: 500 pounds of flour,

200 pounds of lard, 200 pounds of bacon, 200 pounds of beans, 100 pounds of coffee and 50 pounds of salt. Travelers used these ingredients to prepare morning and evening meals in iron skillets and kettles, with the menu heavy on biscuits and flapjacks, occasionally enhanced with bacon. Meat was obtained from cattle in the wagon train's herd and from hunting expeditions.

In well-managed caravans, wagons were inspected by the Wagon Master or his trail riders when they arrived in the departure camp for sturdiness, state of repair and capacity to haul an initial load of 2500 pounds. In the U.S., the evolution of scales for weighing large objects, such as wagons, was accelerated by the desire of experienced Wagon Masters to weigh wagons prior to departure. St. Joseph and Independence Missouri were two of the first cities outside of New York to have large commercial scales.

By 1850, sanitation and personal hygiene were recognized as essential for the maintenance of health during the journey. To minimize Cholera and Typhoid Fever outbreaks, most Wagon Masters instituted requirements for each traveler to have a personal hygiene bag that included towels and wash cloths, multiple tooth brushes, one pound of baking powder (for tooth brushing and treating wounds) a roll of binding tape (bandage), one pound of bathing soap, three pounds of lye soap for washing clothes including undergarments at least weekly, and 25 rolls of toilet paper (a relatively new invention in North America). Regulations for placing latrine areas one hundred feet downhill from the wagons were instituted after 1850.

When professional Wagon Masters were not on the trail, they often toured cities in the East and Midwest to conduct seminars about the Oregon Trail, similar to the Hackleman symposium that WF Hendricson attended in Des Moines. At these meetings and by mail order, prospective travelers could purchase a wide variety of guidebooks on travel by wagon train. Some Wagon Masters required their travelers to purchase a designated travel manual. Professional Wagon Masters, employed by travel companies promoting Oregon emigration or by the Oregon Territory, were paid a 2024 equivalent salary of $150,000 annually for the Western journey, a return trip, orientation symposia, and managing the departure camp along the Missouri River. Other Wagon Masters such as Seth Leweling and Jonas Jones essentially received tips from travelers, much like a 2024 tour guide might be tipped at the end of a trip.


PRAIRIE TRAVELER,

A HAND-BOOK

FOR

OVERLAND EXPEDITIONS.

WITH ILLUSTRATIONS, AND ITINERARIES OF THE PRINCIPAL ROUTES BETWEEN THE MISSISSIPPI AND THE PACIFIC, AND A MAP.

By RANDOLPH B. MARCY,

CAPTAIN U. S. ARMY.

(NOW GENERAL MARCY, CHIEF OF STAFF, ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.)

EDITED (WITH NOTES) BY

RICHARD F. BURTON, F.R.G.S.,

ETC.

The *Prairie Traveler* was one of the most popular wagon train guidebooks. It was updated annually with new recommendations and insights. Europeans were fascinated with the Oregon Trail and the concept of wagon train travel. Several editions of Marcy's handbook were printed in London. German and French translations were printed in Frankfurt and Paris.

Information and image source: Marcy RB. The Prairie Traveler. London: Trubner and Company. 1859. Restored and reprinted by Perigee Books in 1994 as a paperback. Available from Thriftbooks.

=======

In addition to publications cited in WF's story and the family histories on pages 147-149, the following sources provided information about life on the Oregon Trail, and the early history of the Oregon Territory.

Carey CH. General History of Oregon Prior to 1861. Portland Oregon: Metropolitan Press. 1936. Re-released by Binford and Mort Publishers (Hillsboro, Oregon) in 1971. Now available from Exodus Books (www.exodusbooks.com) and accessed on February 15, 2023.

Flora S. Emigrants to Oregon in 1852. Oregon Territory and its Pioneers. www.oregonpioneers.com. 2019. Accessed: February 17, 2023. [Excellent website for information on many aspects of the Oregon trail experience, documentation of WF's wagon train journeys and the history of the Oregon Territory.]

Fuller GW. A History of the Pacific Northwest (2nd ed.). New York: Alfred A. Knopf. 1931. Re-released by Creative Media Partners, LLC (www.supportcreativemedia.io) in 2018 and also available via Google Books (www.books.google.com). Accessed: February 18, 2013.

Hunsacker JB. Seeing the Elephant: Voices From the Oregon Trail. Lubbock, Tx: Texas Tech University Press. 2003 (1st ed.). Subsequent editions available from Internet Archives. www.archives.org. Accessed: February 22, 2023.

Jackson JC. Children of the Fur Trade: Forgotten Metis of the Pacific Northwest. Corvallis: Oregon State University Press. 2007.

Lang HO. History of the Willamette Valley and Personal Reminiscences of Its Early Pioneers. Portland, Oregon. Geo. H. Himes, Book and Job Printer. 1885. Uploaded to Internet Archive (www.archive.org) on July 11, 2008. Accessed: February 20, 2023.

Lyman WD. Lyman's History of Old Walla Walla County. Chicago: SJ Clarke Publishers. 1918. Re-released as an ebook by Project Gutenberg Digital Library (www.gutenberg.org) in 2014. Accessed: February 19, 2023. Hardcover available from Higginson Books (www.higginson.com).

Rau WW. Surviving The Oregon Trail – 1852. As Told by Mary Ann and Willis Boatman and Augmented With Accounts by Other Overland Travelers. Corvallis, OR: Oregon State University, Oregon Trail Historical Museum and Collection. 1894. Reprinted by Washington State University Press (www.wsupress.wsu.edu) in 2001 and available from Internet Archive (www.archive.org). Accessed: February 18, 2023.

Willamette Valley Historical Society; Heritage Center. www.williametteheritage.org. Portrait and Biographical Record of the Willamette Valley, Oregon. Chicago: Chapman Publications. 1903. Digital copy available from Library of Congress. www.loc.org. Control Number: 10023243. Accessed: February 17, 2023.

Bright Lights of the Big City - Theodore Stefano Girault (1873-1943) and Bessie McAnespy Girault (1874-1946)

Chapters II and III described the journey of Theodore Stefano Girault from turned-out street urchin bounced among orphanages in 19th century London, to a teenager on the cusp of being tossed into the British penal system for theft and attempted escape from a reform school, and finally, to a participant in a child labor program (British Home Child Service; BHCS) working on an isolated farm in rural Canada. Fourteen years later, Theodore (Theo) was a well-respected foreman (manager) of three farms and a new husband, married to the sister of the man who procured his labor from the BHCS. Quite a journey; but there is more of the story.

To explore Theo and Bessie's life together, I primarily relied on Susan's recollections of family history, a large trove of Girault family photographs dating back to the 1890s, many of which were annotated on the back side with names and event descriptions, two Girault genealogical websites, BHCS immigration records (www.Britishhomechildren.weebly.com), census reports, newspaper articles, wedding announcements, diaries and obituaries. A synopsis of Theo's life at www.surname.rootschat.com, derived largely from BHCS data, was also helpful.

After Theodore and new bride Bessie McAnespy were wed in 1901 near the farm in Portage Vale, New Brunswick where they met 14 years earlier, the newlyweds left rural life behind and headed for the, even then, bright lights of New York City (NYC). Without any qualifications other than eagerness to learn, Theo quickly landed a job with the investment-banking firm Edward B. Smith, a Philadelphia-based financial services company, which had just opened their first office in NYC. With on-the-job training, Theo became an order clerk for stock, bond and other investment transactions working with a brand-new telegraphic system for communicating orders to the New York Stock Exchange (NYSE). As best as I could tell from company employee rosters and U.S. census reports, Theo worked his way up to supervising a room full of telegraphic exchange clerks by 1910, and by 1920, he was functioning as a stock broker and doing financial advising for clients of Edward B. Smith.

Theodore, left, and the best men for his wedding ceremony with Bessie. The young man at the top right is Theo's comrade-in-arms from the Barton Regis Rural Work Farm in England, Henry Mitchell. As 13 year olds, Theo and Henry were shipped to Canada on the same boat as part of the British Home Child Service. Henry Mitchell had a long career in the Royal Canadian Navy.
Image source: Girault family photo.

By the Roaring 20s, the Edward B. Smith Company was one of the two largest investment firms in New York. The company was originally founded during the Gilded Age of the 1880s to take advantage of two new phenomenon in America: (1) a substantial number of people had discretionary money they could afford to invest in wealth building ventures, and (2) fast growing cities and the initial vestiges of suburbia needed funding for infrastructure: for

example, asphalt roads, bridges, schools, hospitals, electrification, sewers, and government buildings. Consequently, the financial underwriting industry and the bond market boomed, especially, the new municipal bond strategy.

After purchasing a seat on the New York Stock Exchange (NYSE) in 1898, Edward B. Smith expanded rapidly and hired a substantial number of employees, mostly young and eager like Theo Girault. Smith's biggest competitor when Theo was hired in 1901 was the Charles Barney Company, also started in Philadelphia, which was more of a financial center than New York until 1900. Charles Barney was the son-in-law and one time protégé of the financier Jay Cooke, who sold treasury bonds to finance the Union cause during the Civil War. A series of investment misadventures and miscalculations caused Jay Cook to declare bankruptcy in 1873, triggered a severe market sell-off and an ensuing recession. Charles Barney saw an opportunity to take advantage of depressed prices (i.e., buy low and sell high) and started his own firm in 1873, which gradually grew until he had the resources to buy a NYSE seat, also in 1898. Shifting primary operations to New York, the Charles Barney Company experienced steady success for the next 30 years until the Great Stock Market Crash of 1929. *(Smith Barney Inc. Company History. Funding Universe: Company Profiles. 2021. www.fundinguniverse.com/companies-histories/. Accessed: March 13, 2023)*

In the aftermath of the 1929 meltdown, 75% of the investment firms based in New York dramatically scaled back operations or folded. By 1931, the Smith and Barney Companies were the two most vibrant firms still functioning, thanks to conservative lending and investment practices in the 1920s. Both companies benefitted from the financial sector chaos. They absorbed clients and picked-up quality employees from failed competitors. So, what did Smith and Barney do? They merged into what was known for decades as Smith Barney Investments. Smith, where Theo worked, focused on underwriting and investment banking, while the Barney arm of the new corporation focused on brokered stocks and bonds. *(Smith Barney: The Early Years. Ten Decades of Continuity and Change. Smith Barney Forum. May-June 1973. In: International Directory of Company Histories. Vol. 15. St. James, MO: St. James Press. 1996)*

And how did these developments impact Theo Girault? Theo was working his way up the corporate ladder within Edward B. Smith and had reached mid-management by the time of the 1929 crash. When the Smith and Barney merged, it seems that Theo was one of the big winners, promoted upward to one of the new firm's 27 general partner positions. The almost immediate good fortune of the newly integrated Smith Barney was also Theo's good fortune. Theo and Bessie moved out of NYC to the affluent suburb of Hastings on the Hudson, where they purchased a substantial house. Their daughter, Laura, married Charles Lienau in 1935 on the terrace of their house. A photo on page 121 shows the Girault home.

Bessie was also industrious. Despite having three children between 1902 and 1908, Bessie was employed until 1920, and perhaps beyond, as a telephone switchboard operator. Like Theo, she rose to a managerial role. The 1920 U.S. Census indicates that a nanny, Abigail Maerten, resided in the Girault household, which may explain Bessie's capacity to work outside the home.

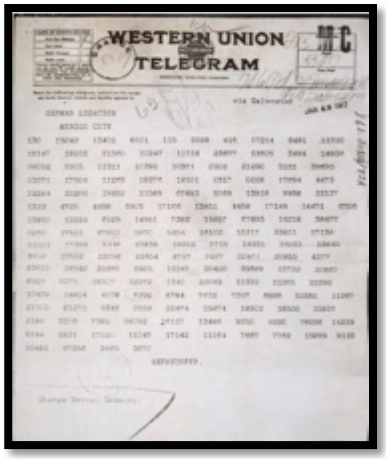
Bessie Girault worked as a telephone operator from 1901 - 1920, rising to supervisor. Switchboard operator was one of the few non-factory jobs available to women prior to WWI. Competition was fierce for these positions. Candidates were assessed for communication skills because they talked to callers and recipients during the process of placing a call, and were tested for their ability to remember up to 500 connection plugs.
Image source: Telecommunications History Group. www.telcomhistory.org. Accessed: 4/29/2023.

Unlike many recent immigrants to the U.S., Theo and Bessie were eager to demonstrate their patriotism prior to and during World War I (WWI); 1914-1918. For example, as early as 1914, Theo and Bessie's names appeared on planning committees for the Progressive Preparedness Society (PPS), a component of the controversial American Defense Society (ADS; see Notes on this organization on pages 316-317). The PPS believed that American involvement in the European war was inevitable, *"and therefore… we better be prepared."* From the start of the Great European War, the PPS ardently supported the British-French-Russian side of the conflict. *(Franz M. Preparedness Revisited: Civilian Societies and the Campaign for American Defense, 1914-1920. Journal of the Gilded Age and Progressive Era. 2018; 17(4): 663-676)*

However, throughout the nation as a whole, there was deep division within the largely immigrant U.S. population concerning who to support among the WWI combatants. Nearly 70% of all families residing in the U.S. in 1915 had immigrated during the past 60 years from other countries. The huge population of Irish immigrants was disdainful of Great Britain. German support for Irish rebels in the 1916 Rebellion against the British led many Irish-Americans to look favorably upon Germany. The substantial population of German immigrants tended to be affluent and politically influential, and either favored their motherland or argued for neutrality. Members of the huge Italian immigration wave that started around 1900 supported the German-Austrian axis, which was the position of the Italian government although that nation managed to avoid combat roles. The increasing number of Asian immigrants to the West Coast had deep antipathy toward Russia because of the 1905 Russo-Japanese War and thus tended to favor the German-Austrian side. There was powerful opposition to U.S. entry into the conflict among rural Whites and their congressional representatives due to a strong Nativist (i.e., isolationist) orientation among this segment of the population. Woodrow Wilson ran for re-election in 1916 and won using the slogan *"He Kept Us Out of the War"*, which likely reflected the nation's prevailing beliefs at that time. *(Leary WM. Woodrow Wilson, Irish Americans and the Election of 1916. The Journal of American History. 1967; 54(1): 57-72)*

Several events turned most of the population against Germany-Austria between November 1916 and April 1917: German U-boats increasingly attacked U.S. shipping in the North Atlantic and sank dozens of cargo ships, with extensive loss of life (the U.S. was supplying munitions and food to Britain to break the German blockade); German use of mustard gas, beginning in 1916, was considered barbaric; German bombing of cities from airplanes, also seen as an atrocity, was widely publicized in the U.S. newspapers and shown in newsreels before motion pictures, stirring up public outrage; the nations' White supremacist population was particularly alarmed

by Germany's use of African soldiers even though the majority of these conscripted soldiers fought the British in the Middle East, North Africa and East Africa and not in Europe (see Notes on pages 317-318); public outrage over the German campaign of espionage and sabotage in the U.S. was galvanized by newspaper coverage of deadly munitions depot bombings in California and New York; and finally, the Zimmermann Affair became the ultimate tipping point. A coded cable message sent by German Foreign Minister Arthur Zimmermann in January 1917 to the German Ambassador to Mexico was intercepted and decoded by the forerunner of the British Secret Service, and sent to the U.S. State Department. From this telegram, it was learned and massively publicized in the U.S. that Germany was encouraging Mexico to invade Texas, New Mexico and Arizona to divert U.S. military resources from Europe. If the Alliance won the war, Mexico was promised control of lands in these states. Although Mexico had no intention or capacity to act on this proposal, the intercepted cable enraged Congress and the general public, which increased pressure on Wilson to drop his neutral stance. The first book of the famed historian, Barbara Tuchman, describes the origins, transmission, discovery, decoding and ramifications of the Zimmermann Telegram. (*Tuchman B. The Zimmermann Telegram. New York: Ballantine Books. 1958*)



The Zimmermann Telegram, comprised of 171 sets of numbers, was intercepted and deciphered by cryptographers in Britain's famous *Room 40 intelligence Unit* that decrypted 15,000 German communications during WWI. Room 40 was the predecessor to the British Secret Service.

Andrew C. Her Majesty's Secret Service: The Making of the British Intelligence Community. New York: Viking Press. 1986.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 4/30/2023.

By the time President Wilson sent a war declaration to Congress on April 2, 1917, much of the U.S. population had been stirred into a patriotic, anti-German fervor, a huge shift from just the year before. Draft Board and 1920 census records indicate that Theo attempted to enlist three times, once with each service branch, army, navy and marines, but was rejected because of astigmatism, and his age. Not deterred, he joined a Civilian Shore Patrol Brigade. These volunteer civilian groups in the NYC area were formed in 1916 by the American Defense Society (ADS) in loose coordination with the newly established U.S. Coast Guard (until 1915, the U.S. Water Life Saving Service) and the bomb squad of the NYC Police Department, although neither agency was enthusiastic about this ADS-supported activity. *(Blum H. Dark Invasion. 1915 – Germany's Secret War and the Hunt for the First Terrorist Cell in America. New York: Crown Publishing Group / Harper Brothers Inc. 2014)* The principle catalyst for civilian patrolling was a saboteur attack in New York harbor where a small band of German agents blew up a vast munitions depot on Black Tom Island near the Statue of Liberty, killing seven people, and destroying unknown billions of dollars of ammunition and weapons intended for shipment to the Russian army (see Notes on Black Tom Island Explosion on pages 319-320). The civilian

patrols watched New York Harbor and the Long Island shoreline to detect attempts to smuggle saboteurs ashore from German U-boats. Although NYC units patrolled nightly for two years, they never encountered a U-boat or a saboteur. *(Jaffe SH. New York at War. Four Centuries of Combat, Fear and Intrigue in Gotham. New York: Basic Books. 2012)* The Germans did attempt to off load spies and paramilitary personnel along the coasts of New England, North Carolina, Florida, California, Oregon and Washington with minimal success.

Bess was a participant in a Victory Garden Program to home grow vegetables in playgrounds, parks, church courtyards and on rooftop raised gardens so that farm produce could be directed to the war effort. Bess joined a Women's War Workers (WWW) organization (also known as the Women's Land Army) to produce blankets, caps, socks and gloves for soldiers, and led a WWW campaign to get every housewife in her neighborhood to sign a pledge card from the U.S. National War Gardens Commission stating that she would: *"carry out the instructions of the U.S. War Effort Food Administrator in the conduct of my household to can food for future use, grow vegetables in the backyard or other convenient space, limit consumption of meat to three times a week for all family members, reduce as much as possible the use of fats and wheat in meal preparation., and above all, bolster the morale of their families at home and loved ones overseas." (Schumm L. America's Patriotic Victory Gardens. History. www.history.com. September 1, 2018. Accessed: April 17, 2023)* Bess also was involved in Boots for Troops rallies where people came to hear patriotic speeches, war updates and patriotic music from the NYC Fire Department Band, and donated boots, gloves, sweaters and knit caps for soldiers. One such Program at Ebbets Field in Brooklyn (home of the Brooklyn Dodgers) drew 35,000 people. Bess Girault was listed as a donations coordinator on the agenda.

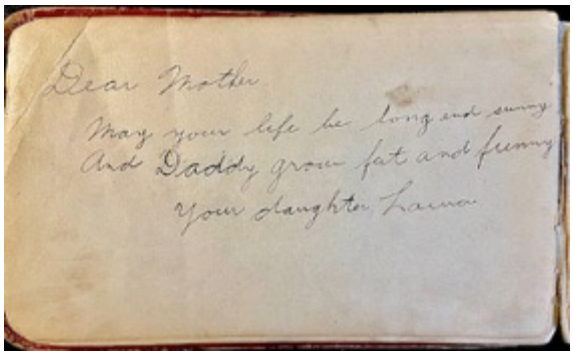
The Victory Garden Program during WWI was wildly popular, at least partially due to the most aggressive advertising campaign ever attempted by the federal government to that point in U.S. history.

Gowdy-Wygant. Cultivating Victory: The Women's Land Army and the Victory Garden Movement in Britain and the U.S. Pittsburgh: University of Pittsburgh Press. 2013.

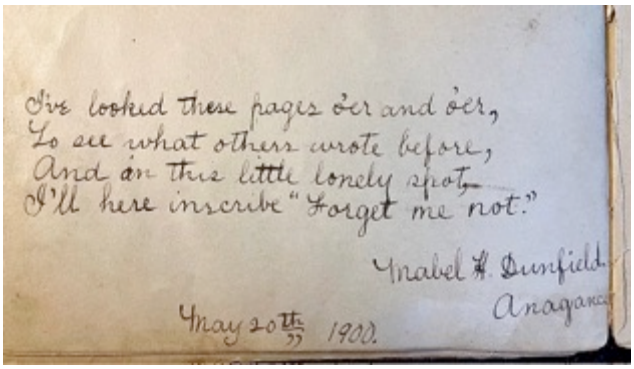
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 4/29/2023.

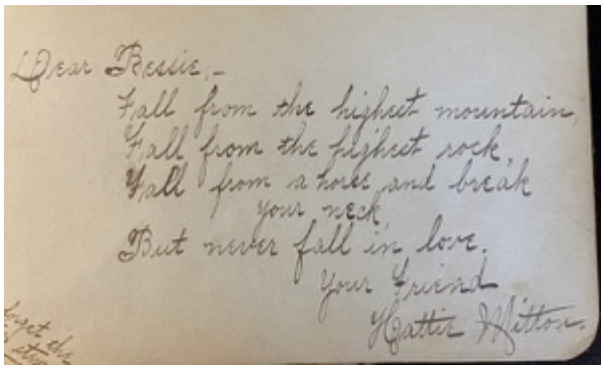
I know little about the personal lives of Theo and Bessie. From photographs, it's evident that they returned often to New Brunswick for summer vacations, and their children, Theo Jr., Evelyn and Laura, grew up in a large home in Brooklyn that had a substantial backyard, with trees and what appears to be a vegetable garden. Theo Jr. followed his mother into the telephone industry, and enjoyed a long and successful career with Bell Telephone. Evelyn followed her dad into the financial services industry, working in Wall Street investment firms for decades. I met Theo Jr. (see page 125) on several occasions, beginning with our wedding; he walked Susan down the aisle. In his 70s, Theo Jr. was energetic, cheerful, humorous and friendly; just fun to be around. From what I have learned about Theo Sr., it's not hard to imagine that father and son had similar dispositions. Bessie was evidently fond of collecting

autographs throughout her life. Susan found several of Bessie's autograph books among the Girault's extensive photo collection; examples appear below.



Face page of one of Bessie's autograph books, and an entry by her daughter, Laura in 1917: " Dear Mother, may your life be long and sunny, and Daddy, grow fat and funny. Your daughter Laura."





Two autograph book entries written in 1900 when Bessie still lived in New Brunswick. The entry on the right is presumably some type of joke among friends.

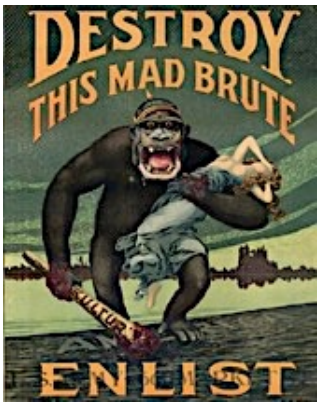
Theodore Stefano Girault had a truly remarkable rags to riches life – basically the epitome of the American Dream that drew 19th century immigrants to the U.S.A. But, mysteries remain to be explored. There must be more to the story of Theo's abandonment by his affluent father, but no details were uncovered. He apparently had no contact with his older brother and sister although he was in the British child welfare system for 11 years before being sent to Canada and spent 13 years in the British Home Child Service. His sister, Emily Alexandrine Girault (1860-1947), claimed that she was prevented from contacting Theo, but it does not seem like it would have been difficult to locate him prior to or even after his BHCS relocation to Canada. It is not known why Alexandrine or her older brother, both relatively affluent in their own right, did not strive to locate and contact Theo. We also have no idea of what, if any, schooling he received during his journey through the English orphanage system. Interestingly, without any knowledge of his father's or grandfather's involvement in the financial industry, Theo also elected to pursue the financial sector for his career. Theo passed away on March 17, 1943 at their home in Hastings on the Hudson. Bessie remained at this residence until her death in 1946. Theo and Bessie are buried in the same plot in the Portage Vale Baptist Cemetery, near the New Brunswick farm where they first met in 1887.

=======

Notes on African and African-American Soldier's Participation in World War I: In keeping with the times, WWI messaging campaigns by the U.S. government to the public played on racial fears. An intense propaganda campaign was implemented to build support for U.S. engagement in the European conflict based on Germany's conscription of 80,000 equatorial Africans for combat roles in the conflict. Posters, film newsreels and press releases printed in newspapers proclaimed that this action violated rules of decency and war etiquette. However, the French army included more than 100,000 Black and mixed race French citizens, as did the British army. More than 700,000 Black Americans registered to enlist, 300,000 were selected, 120,000 were sent to Europe and 40,000 experienced frontline combat with 800 deaths and 3,000 wounded.

Conscripts from Rwanda, Tanzania and Mozambique fought for Germany in WWI, primarily in the forgotten second front (Middle East, North Africa, East Africa) where colonial powers Britain and Germany fought to expand territory. 50,000 soldiers died in the conflict. *Strachen H. The First World War in Africa. New York: Oxford Univ. Press. 2004.*

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 4/19/2023.



A 1917 U.S. Army recruitment poster. Note the less than subtle "Cultur" on the ape's club. Many commentators suggested that this poster was based on the King Kong legend. However, the screenplay for the original King Kong movie was not written until 1932. More likely, the movie drew concepts from posters like this created by Harry Ryles Hopps, a noted commercial artist, and titled: Destroy This Mad Brute.

Information and image source: Rudnick A. Humor and Horror: Printed Propaganda During WWI. New York: The Metropolitan Museum of Art Bulletin. December 28, 2017. From the Series: WWI and the Visual Arts. www.metmuseum.org. Accessed: 12/12/2023.

During combat missions, Black American units were paired with French units, because American commander General John J. Pershing refused to integrate them into White brigades. *(Maloney W. WWI African American Soldiers Battle More than Enemy Forces. Library of Congress Blogs: Timeless Stories from the Library of Congress. www.blog.loc.org. February 23, 2018. Accessed: April 7, 2023)* Black soldiers were treated the same as other soldiers within the French commands, which were racially diverse. After the ceasefire, when U.S. troops were pulled back from front lines and gathered in French and Belgium communities for re-deployment, Black American soldiers were well received by the citizenry, who did not distinguish between White and Black troops when lavishing praise on victorious soldiers. Black American soldiers found that they could walk and eat where they wanted, attend movies with other people, and shop where they wanted. Shopkeepers were just as happy to take their money as that of the White soldiers. When Black American soldiers returned to the U.S., many expected that their participation in the War would change perceptions. However, the Black American soldiers were wrong. The 1919 Red Summer of White Supremacist racial terrorism was, in part, triggered by

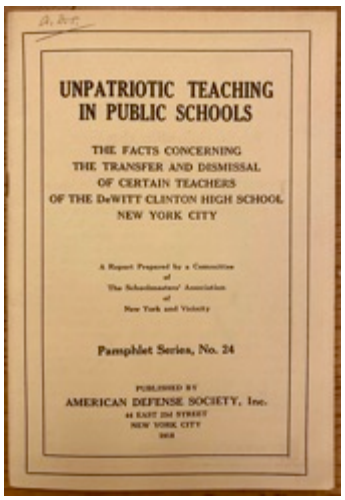
the supposed superior attitude of returning Black soldiers. Several triggering events in the Red Summer were attacks on uniformed Black soldiers who entered restaurants, bars and hotels in White areas of cities. *(Goldenberg R. African American Troops Fought to Fight in World War I. History Website of the U.S. Department of Defense. www.defense.org. February 1, 2018. Accessed: April 20, 2023)*

=======

Notes of the American Defense Society (ADS): The ADS was formed in 1915 to advocate for U.S. intervention into WWI on the side of the British, French and Russians. The first ADS Director was Teddy Roosevelt. *(Handbook of the American Defense Society: Serve at the Front or Serve at Home. New York: ADS National Headquarters. 1918. Available via Internet Archive. www.internetarchive. Accessed: April 16, 2023)* At first, the ADS focused on raising public awareness of German lobbyists (influencers), spies, and saboteurs, urging private citizens to watch for and report suspicious activity to the police or the military. The ADS also organized supply-raising campaigns for the allies fighting the German-Austrian axis. After the Black Tom Island explosion, the ADS organized civilian patrols to look for German agents and after war was declared in 1917, veered into overt political activism. The ADS pressured Congress to promptly send a *"full-strength overwhelming force"* to Europe and campaigned aggressively for enactment of strenuous sedition laws that would allow arrest and internment of enemy (i.e., German and Austrian) aliens and sympathizers. The ADS particularly focused on identifying teachers who supposedly spread anti-American ideas in classrooms and encouraged students and parents to report educators who were not sufficiently patriotic. Across the nation, but particularly in NYC, teachers were accused of seditious activity, reputations were ruined, many were fired and numerous others resigned. *(Mann M. The Home Room Front. The ADS and the Battle for Teacher Loyalty During WWI. New York Historical Society Museum and Library. June 2, 2023. www.nyhistory.org. Accessed: November 7, 2023)* By the end of war, the ADS was advocating for the abolition of the German language and German culture in the U.S. and had aligned itself with other nationalistic organizations in a 100 percent Americanism movement that was strongly anti-immigrant and laced with overt racism toward people of color. The influence of the ADS faded during the Great Depression of the 1930s. There is no indication that the Theo and Bess were involved in any ADS-supported activity other than patrolling shorelines and homeland support for the war effort.

The ADS was initially organized to support the British, French and Russian allies in WWI and protect the home front by increasing public awareness of German agents. However, the ADS veered into unsavory activities that threatened the civil liberties of citizens with German heritage and others who were deemed insufficiently anti-German, or otherwise Un-American. *Franz, 2018.*

Image source: New York State Museum / New York State Education. www.nysm.nysed.gov. War At Home. Accessed: 5/13/2023.



An example of ADS attacks on public school teachers for unpatriotic instruction or pro-German mentoring of students. Even expressions of neutrality were considered seditious.
Mann, 2023.

Image source: New York State Historical Society. www.nyhistory.org. Accessed: 5/13/2023.

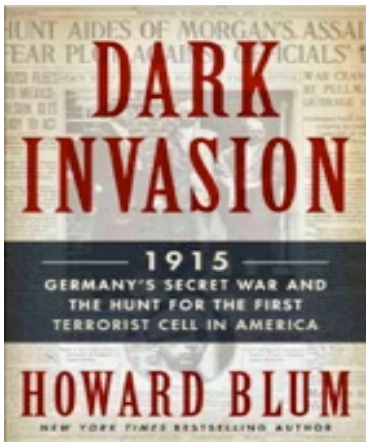
=======

Notes on the Black Tom Island Munitions Explosion: Black Tom Island was located in New York harbor near Liberty Island where the Statue of Liberty stands. The island was constructed from landfill from NYC and New Jersey trash dumps that was poured around a large rock said to resemble a black tomcat. The man-made island was connected to the mainland by railroad tracks on a causeway. In the early 1900s, a mile long warehouse and train depot were constructed on the island. During WWI, munition company's stored vast amounts of weapons, small arms ammunition, artillery shells, TNT and detonators in the Black Tom warehouse for distribution to Britain, France and Russia. On July 16, 1916, two million tons of ammunition and 250,000 pounds of TNT and detonators in train boxcars and barges at Black Tom were waiting for loading onto ships for transport to Russia. Shortly after midnight on the 16th, two German saboteurs reached the island by rowboat and a third walked on to the fundamentally unguarded island via the train causeway The trio set fires in at least four boxcars loaded with tons of TNT, and placed several bombs with timing fuses on ammunition-laden barges and near the doors of warehouses. The saboteurs (Michael Kristoff, Kurt Jahnke and possibly Lothar Witzke – involvement not firmly established) then climbed back into the boat and rowed away. At 2:15am, a gigantic explosion rocked the NYC region, decimated Black Tom island, badly damaged the Statue of Liberty and blew out a million windows in Manhattan including all of the stained glass windows in St. Patrick's Cathedral. The explosion was felt as far away as Rhode Island and Maryland, and is considered the largest explosion ever to occur in North America, equaling the simultaneous detonation of several atomic bombs. *(Witcover J. Sabotage at Black Tom: Imperial Germany's Secret War in America, 1914-1917. Chapel Hill, NC: Algonquin Books of Chapel Hill. 1989)*

A disorganized manhunt ensued that was alternately led by the Interstate Commerce Commission, the Directorate of Naval Intelligence, and a member of the NYC Police Department Bomb Squad named Tom Tunney. No centralized national intelligence agency existed in 1916, and the nation had no sabotage and terrorism laws or established punishment guidelines. Eventually, a network of German agents, directed by a debonair Manhattan socialite with connections to the German Foreign Office, were linked to the explosion. The three purported saboteurs were finally identified by 1920. Kristoff's participation was well established and he was jailed. Due to shoddy police work and legal bungling, he was not convicted and released.

He was imprisoned shortly afterward for unrelated crimes, and died of tuberculosis in 1928 shortly after prison discharge. Jahnke was implicated by Kristoff, yet was never apprehended. He returned to Germany and served as a Nazi intelligence agent in WWII, but was captured and executed in 1945 by the Russians. *(Witcover, 1989)* Witzke was eventually apprehended and admitted involvement in other sabotage activities in the U.S. including a munitions depot explosion at Mare Island, California; however his direct participation in the Black Tom bombing was never established. Instead, he was convicted as a participant in the yearlong planning that preceded the attack and sentenced to death, only to be pardoned and released in 1923 after he heroically prevented a prison boiler explosion, saving many lives. Witzke returned to Germany where he eventually became a German parliament member after WWII. Howard Blum's novel, *Dark Invasion*, describes the German espionage and sabotage network in the U.S. during WWI, and the haphazard, although sometimes successful, efforts to thwart this secret war.

Bradley Cooper is scheduled to star as Police Inspector Tom Tunney in a future movie about the Black Tom Explosion based on Blum's book.



The clean up of the Black Tom terminal took a year, and afterward, much of the landfill-based island literally sank into the harbor. The remains of the island were converted into an extension of the Liberty Island National Park in the 1920s. *Blum, 2014.*
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 5/17/2023.

=======

Harold and Mildred Go To War

Harold Hendricson (1919-1992) and Mildred Dennis (1919-2019) were casual friends who had started to date in Walla Walla before World War II disrupted their relationship. They did not see each other from spring 1942 until spring 1946, yet managed to sustain a relationship during their extended wartime separation, although the connection by correspondence was bumpy and, ironically, came to an abrupt halt during their one and only wartime phone conversation in the summer of 1945. This phone call triggering a relationship hiatus after both returned to civilian life. They eventually resolved their differences and married in November 1946.

A primary mechanism for their wartime communication was a postal innovation known as V-Mail, short for Victory Mail. It was implemented by the U.S. Postal Service (USPS) to provide a mail service to and from U.S. soldiers stationed overseas. The official name for the service was: Army Micro Photographic Mail Service. The V-Mail goal was to reduce the physical bulk of the millions of letters being sent to soldiers, airmen and sailors, and thereby save space on cargo planes and ships for valuable war materials. Based on data collected in the early months of 1942 and the British experience fighting Germany and Japan in 1940-1941, the USPS determined that approximately 600,000 letters would be mailed by servicemen or their significant others PER DAY when U.S. forces were fully deployed in Europe and the Pacific. One day's worth of letters on traditional stationary sent by regular-sized stamped envelopes would fill 150 mailbags, each weighing roughly 70 pounds for a total weight of more than 10,000 pounds (five tons). The USPS estimated that the same 600,000 letters distributed via the V-mail process would require only four small mailbags, weighing 40 pounds each. Instead of a mail loading process requiring a substantial crew of men and forklifts to lift heavy pallets of mail onto trucks for delivery to distribution sites, with V-Mail, one man and a jeep could handle the entire process. These estimates and predictions by the USPS proved to be accurate during the course of the war. However, the system had one major glitch as we will see shortly.

=======

Notes on V-Mail During WWII: The USPS copied an existing British system created for soldiers and sailors stationed in the Middle East in the 1930s that transmitted microfilm images of letters written on proscribed small stationary. In June 1942, the USPS unveiled a one-page standardized V-Mail stationary form, with a fold-over flap to create an envelope, which was seven by nine inches. An aggressive nationwide campaign was implemented to encourage spouses, families and friends, and soldiers overseas, to use these forms. A letter written on V-Mail stationary was first examined by mail censors, who could block delivery or blackout sections. Once approved, the V-Mail was then photographed to create a microfilm negative. Military postal centers overseas (i.e., APOs - Army/Air Force Post Offices or FPOs (Fleet Post Offices for Navy personnel) and V-Mail centers in the U.S. received the microfilm spools, which each contained roughly 2000 letters. At the V-Mail centers, dozens of civilians or members of the Women's Army Corp (WACs) printed the negatives that were then sorted by location and distributed to designated APOs and FPOs overseas and hometown post offices in the U.S.. The resulting V-Mail print was 4 ¼ by 5 ¼ inches, representing 55% of the original stationary.

This is a V-Mail, dated December 24, 1943, written by Lt. Harold Hendricson, based in Sicily, to Private Mildred Hendricson, stationed in Eagle Pass, Texas. Mildred received the V-Mail 17 days after it was sent.

Image source: Photograph from family collection.

WACs review letters written by U.S. Army soldiers to verify that legibility and formatting would allow microfilm photography, and to check for censorable information. Reviewers were provided a lengthy list of forbidden topics. Red flagged letters were further checked by a second tier of reviewers.

Image source: Digital Collections of the National WWII Museum. www.ww2online.org. V-Mail Operations in the Field at APO 929. Accessed: August 22, 2024.

From spring 1942 to fall 1945, more than one billion V-Mails were sent. Roughly 60% were from the U.S. to servicemen overseas and the other 40% were mailed in the reverse direction. In spite of calls to patriotism and extensive advertisement of the V-Mail system, these one billion pieces of V-Mail represented only 20% of the total mail between servicemen and significant others in the States. Approximately 70% of letters and other small parcels were sent by regular mail through the USPS, and about 10% were delivered to recipients via other means – most typically, through the postal system of other friendly or neutral nations and by servicemen traveling to war zones or back home who often carried bags of letters to distribute upon arrival. One of the primary barriers to V-Mail usage was the widespread impression that they were difficult to read, either because the writer's cursive was tiny in order to cram in extra information, and/or the microfilm photography was flawed. The USPS collaborated with several companies to manufacture and market V-Mail reading glasses (i.e., magnifiers) but this effort failed to entice additional users. My experience in attempting to read Harold's V-Mail communications verified the readability issue.

An example of a V-Mail poster encouraging use of the system. In spite of arguments that V-Mail was faster and less likely to be intercepted by enemy agents, the U.S. civilian public and soldiers found the format challenging to use. As the war progressed, most of the V-Mails were sent by servicemen overseas, who often had no other option, while family and friends at home primarily relied on regular USPS mail delivery to overseas APOs and FPOs.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 8/23/2024.

Sources for USPS V-Mail System:

Guise K. Mail Call: V-Mail. The National WWII Museum. www.nationalww2museum.org. December 7, 2019. Accessed: August 22, 2024.

Smithsonian National Postal Museum. www.postalmuseum.si.edu. The Art of Cards and Letters: V-Mail. Accessed: August 22, 2024.

=======

Mildred Hendricson saved 41 V-Mail and regular USPS letters that Harold Hendricson wrote to her between 1942 and 1945 when he served in combat zones in North Africa, Sicily, and Italy. Thirty-two of the letters were V-Mails and nine were sent by regular USPS mail. Harold wrote several of the USPS letters when he was hospitalized recovering from wounds. Only one letter from Mildred to Harold survives, which is not surprising since he was almost continuously in front line combat zones. Harold also sent at least two letters (one V-Mail and one USPS) to Mildred's parents, Archie and Maude Dennis, and based on comments in his letters to Mildred, also sent V-Mails to his parents, Mabel Hendricson and William F. Hendricson, but these communications no longer exist.

Based on the content of the letters (i.e., references to discussions not included in surviving letters), it appears that some correspondence is missing, but I have the sense that these 41 letters represent the majority of Harold's communication to Mildred during WWII. Because all but one letter is from Harold to Mildred, reading them is similar to hearing only one side of a telephone conversation, or being able to read only one person's contributions to a long string of text messages among several people. Yet, certain themes are evident because Harold's comments tended to be triggered by statements or inquiries made by Mildred in her letters.

One recurrent theme is the amount of text, considering the limited V-Mail format, they devoted to coy flittering with each other, or probing for indications of commitment. Harold and Mildred were in their early 20s during the war and were obviously curious about each other's interactions with members of the opposite sex. Based on Harold's responses to Mildred's letters, and her letters to her parents, which are excerpted in the next section, it's apparent that there was considerable socializing at her stateside stations and travel in mixed gender groups to cities for shopping, dining, dancing and shows. He often countered with descriptions of dances, dinners, and USO shows that he attended in the company of WACs as well as social events attended by young women from the local community. All of this banter about social

activity was communicated in a light-hearted manner, but the underlying intent seems clear – do we have a future or not? The question was not addressed head-on until they finally talked by phone in August of 1945.

Another theme was Mildred's frequent expressions of discontent, or discomfort, about her relatively undemanding stateside assignments that provided ample opportunity for sight seeing and entertainment, and Harold's attempts to re-assure her that the WACs were doing their part by freeing up more men to serve in combat roles. I'm not sure that is what she wanted to hear, but that was his recurrent response. He did write in one V-Mail that *"there is plenty of sight seeing going on over here in down times"* and in another letter commented that *"we just requested more and better cameras to photo all the amazing things we see almost everyday."*

A third theme is the downward spiral of Harold's estimation of surviving the war, which he often discussed openly in the letters (surprisingly, this got through the censors), and the de-humanizing effects of incessant violence, also discussed in blunt detail. Harold's V-Mails near the end of the war included reflections about his capacity to re-join society considering all the death and mayhem he had experienced, and statements that he was considering volunteering for Pacific duty as the European war wound down. Harold was evidently deeply conflicted about his plans after discharge, as was Mildred. As discussed later in this section, Mildred applied for at least two positions that would have led to a career in the regular Army, with a multi-year commitment, rather than post-war demobilization.

Excerpts from 17 of the 41 WWII Letters Harold Sent to Mildred, 1942 to 1945
Clarifying comments appear after some of the letter excerpts.

Fall, 1942 (not dated) Possibly written in Ireland where Harold's 1st Army Division was training for the North Africa invasion. USPS regular mail. Three excerpts from a four-page letter.

*"I imagine the city of **Kalama** is quite a place. Perhaps the place where the new blushing schoolmarm marries the son of the leading lawyer or rancher. I have been thinking that marriage is quite an up to date proposition"* **Comment:** Mildred Dennis was high school teacher in the small town of Kalama in western Washington at the time of this letter.

*"It's going to be quite a satisfaction to find out if one is really a man. But enough about that. Perhaps you are wondering what is going to happen to us. All I have been informed at present, as of 1500 today, is that mail is to be sent to an address of **APO** 3340, Postmaster New York, N.Y. By reading between the lines, you can ferret out my meaning."* **Comment:** APO 3340 was well known during WWII to be North Africa. Servicemen were not allowed to discuss geographic locations, but APOs were used as indicators. Oddly, censors did not blackout such remarks.

"To make your civilian life, with all of its shortages and rations bearable, I will get you a fine shawl from the finest shop in Cairo, or perhaps some intricate African necklace. For my self, I am going to get a bottle of the finest champagne the Deutchers haven't yet consumed."

May 14, 1943. North Africa. V-Mail

*"Well at last I again get time to write. Sorry for the long delay, however, have been quite busy. I am now in the hospital, having **had an accident**. I lasted through the last push that brought us thru to a victory here in Africa. I was lucky and my injury this time was light as was the first one. I hope my luck does not run out and let me down in the next theatre.*"

Comment: Soldiers were told not to discuss the type, location or severity of their wounds and injuries, and directed to not to use phrases such as "was wounded, was shot, or was burned" in their letters. Harold was wounded at least twice in North Africa, both leading to hospitalizations, and also suffered a mysterious accident on one of his first days in North Africa, or perhaps during training in Ireland, which was severe enough that he was evacuated to England for a week, and then promptly returned to his unit.

June 3, 1943. North Africa. USPS letter

"Please excuse my penmanship because I am writing this from the top of the hospital building where I have been taken for a sun bath, and the wind up here is quite strong, causing the papers and my self to shake around. Shortly before dinner today, my first sergeant came to see me. My outfit was moving positions and passed quite near to the city in which I am confined. He brought me what little of my equipment that was not burned (Harold's tank had taken a direct hit from German artillery, and exploded; he jumped to safety but suffered burns and wounds from flying debris). *Also, the sergeant managed to bring some of the souvenirs I had collected, which the later days of the campaign produced profusely* (i.e., German and Italian pistols, binoculars, gloves and sunglasses). *I was glad to hear how my company had mostly survived the last four days of fighting after I was injured, and luckily the bulk of the resistance had crumbled that day. My company's casualties were exceedingly low. It is hard you know, when you realize that in your hands lay the lives of many, many men; men who live and love and want to go home again, to see them killed or mangled, and perhaps know that you in part were responsible."*

June 6, 1943. North Africa. USPS letter

"I am getting quite a kick out of a French girl that is running around on the roof of a villa not far away. She is wearing a halter-top in order to get a suntan I suppose. Accidently I picked her up in my field glasses as I looked out to sea to view all the ships, and she saw me looking. Every time I looked her way, she stamped her feet, yelled something in French that I could not understand, and waved at me in that age-old gesture of thumb to nose. I am just ornery enough to keep making her angry."

June 15, 1943. North Africa. V-Mail

"Now that Africa is a zone of containment (i.e., a ceasefire is in place after the German surrender)*, I hope to get a chance to see some sights and take pictures after being at the front line the entire time I have been over here. Perhaps I can now erase a few of those pictures from my mind that give me nightmares and awaken me at night by my shaking. A few bottles of cognac, plenty of sunshine and good food for a change will help."*

August 28, 1943. Sicily. V-Mail

"Some of the WACs who are stationed nearby appeared in our neck of the woods a short time ago. They are more G.I. than our soldiers; very by-the-book. I am supposed to meet a WAC 2nd Lt. next week and go to a dance and dinner with her set up by USO for men and women officers. Hope to get the women officers' slant on fighting a war."

September 12, 1943. Salerno, Italy. V-Mail

"My letters in the near future will probably be far apart out of necessity. I only hope that I don't lose the capacity to write altogether. I don't feel as lucky as I used to, but am glad that I had a

chance to do a small bit in bringing this war to an end in a short time. I imagine that a lot of amazing news will appear in the U.S.A. in a few days that will make everyone happy. Well, gal – keep having a good time in the army. You should send me a snapshot so I could appreciate what a U.S. WAC looks like. Pardon the scribbling, but I am minus my fourth finger."

A side note: *Although this V-Mail was dated September 12, 1943, it was written previously. The amazing news that Harold mentioned was the allied invasion of the boot of Italy south of Naples, the first allied incursion onto Nazi-controlled mainland Europe, which occurred on September 3 and 9, 1943 in two separate landings. An invasion force of British and Canadian troops invaded the toe of Italy on September 3. Hendricson and thousands of other Americans in the Fifth Army landed at Salerno, south of Naples, on September 9. After these landings, which were initially successful,* ***the fascist Italian government****, that had recently deposed and arrested Benito Mussolini, surrendered to the Allies. However, several days later, Nazi paratroopers freed Mussolini from confinement and installed him as the leader of a new fascist Italian government, based in Northern Italy, aligned with Nazi Germany. Harold's participation in the Salerno landing may account for his ambiguous comment about a missing finger, likely an attempt at humor in reference to a hand injury. British, Canadian, and American troops faced stiff German opposition after the invasion, and the campaign ground to a halt far south of their target, Rome, in the fall of 1943 with heavy casualties. (Holland J. The Savage Storm: The Battle for Italy 1943. London: Transworld Publishing. 2023)* **Comment:** In *Savage Storm,* Holland explains the chaotic political maneuvering in Italy during WWII. Various pro fascist groups contended for power while underground anti-fascist resistance groups tried to aid the Allies and topple the fascist leadership, hoping to restore a democratic government not aligned with Germany.

This map depicts the Allies invasion routes in September, 1943. The plan evolved from complex political negotiations among the British, French, Soviets, Italian resistance and Americans. Churchill and Stalin were adamant about opening a second front to divert German resources from Russia and Northern Europe. American leaders Marshall and Eisenhower were skeptical, accurately, that an Italian invasion would weaken the Nazi and feared that a brutal campaign through Italy would produce few strategic victories, but would result in extensive U.S. casualties, again – quite accurate.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 8/20/2024

December 15, 1943. Unknown location in Italy. USPS Mail. Three excerpts from a four-page letter.

"Today I received your letter with the pictures. You look swell to me and I sure enjoyed the letter. I imagine Eagle Pass, Texas is quite a dreary place as far as the gay life is concerned. Eagle Pass sounds like some of these small Italian villages, only no ancient Roman ruins. I wish I was able to take pictures of my present battle steed (i.e., his tank) *and its crew. I have a very sentimental attachment for this one because I feel if I lose it, I shall not get another. Several, unfortunately, were, ah ... disposed of in recent weeks! Every member of my crew is over six feet. It's really an ace crew, all with a lot of battle experience. Had one of them in a position*

where his head was outside all the time, and had to put him in another spot because his hair is so vividly red, and attracted a lot of attention, so to speak (if you get my meaning).”

*“I was never too sentimental as far as the beauties of nature and also other beauties too, but I certainly will be glad to see the U.S.A., ... if ever. All this time overseas is gradually wearing me down, and I stop to think of the U.S.A. only once in a while. Now I am afraid of getting into the mood where I will hate to go west, and miss all the good things in life, and forget all the good things that life has already given to me (*an apparent reference to staying on the East Coast after the war rather than returning to Walla Walla). *Guess that’s silly; but enough of that. How about this: I heard a “Moron” joke today. It’s about the football player who flooded the field with water so the coach could send him in for a sub.”*

“When I saw the picture of you in the G.I. mess kitchen it made me so hungry that I popped open a can of rations. Of course, it had to be cold but I just closed my eyes and dreamed that it was Eagle Pass Turkey. Well gal, take care of yourself. See you for sure in 44! Hal”

December 29, 1943. Unknown location in Italy. V-Mail

“I wear that medal you sent me, and not long ago, an Italian women tried to drag me off to mass at a church, and maybe elsewhere after the service. Nearly got religion, didn’t I.”

February 11, 1944. Anzio Beach, Italy. V-Mail

“We got a barrel of beer brewed in Italy by an American brewmaster. It was a welcome change after such a long dry period here in the beachhead. Also, we got a shipment of fresh eggs, the first we’ve had. Had quite a feast for a whole day. I hope it does not pertain to the old saying, like – the condemned man ate a hearty last meal. We get quite a kick out of listening to Axis Sally each night on the radio. Contrary to German opinion, she really raises our morale and plays way better music than any of the American stations (i.e., Armed Forces Network; AFN). *Well, gal, keep your fingers crossed for us and hope for the best. Love, Hal.”*

A side note: *In an effort to make an end run around (i.e. outflank) the stout German defenses south of Rome, known to U.S. GIs as the Gustav Line, that had stalled the Allied advance northward, the U.S. Fifth Army and the British 15th Army Group, collectively comprising 36,000 troops, made a surprise amphibious landing on January 22, 1944, at a sandy beach and marsh area known as Anzio, 80 miles north of the Gustav Line. The initial landing caught the Germans and their fascist Italian cohorts off guard, however dithering and ill-advised decisions by British and American command staff such as hunkering down on the beach versus immediately pressing inland against the thin German/Italian defense; and targeting Rome, a meaningless objective, versus attacking the Gustav line from the rear allowed the entire invasion force to be pinned down on the beachhead for several months. During these months, the* ***Germans launched several major offensives aimed at shoving the allies off the beach****. The February 11, 1944 V-Mail was written while Lt. Hendricson and the rest of the U.S. Fifth Army were trapped at Anzio. During that month, the Germans bombarded the Allies daily with artillery fire, launched a massive assault on the beach perimeter on February 18, and destroyed the pumps draining the Anzio marsh fields, in a partially successful effort to flood the beach with salt water. After changes in command structure, the Allies finally landed over 100,000 reinforcements, which provided the force needed to break through the German defensive ring at the end of May, 1944. (Atkinson, R. The Day of Battle: The War in Sicily and Italy; 1943-1944.*

The Liberation Trilogy. New York: Henry Holt and Company. 2007) **Comment:** The commendation for Harold's first Silver Star included this narrative. *"For gallantry in action on 18 February, 1944 near Carraceto, Italy. On this date, during the heaviest German assaults on the Anzio beachhead, 1st Lt. Hendricson, in complete disregard for his own safety, forced his tank into the enemy positions, and, although under direct and close fire from a number of Mark VI tanks, fired his entire basic load of ammunition into a wadi containing several companies of German infantry. He killed or wounded four hundred of them before his tank was hit and burned. This action by Lt. Hendricson broke up the German attack for which the Germans had massed major numbers of troops and slowed the German offensive in this sector, a potent factor in holding the beachhead during this critical period."* Note: A "wadi" is a ravine or channel that is dry except in rainy season.

An article in the local Walla Walla newspaper, the *Union-Bulletin,* included a more colorful quote from Harold, apparently extracted from a letter written to his parents: *"The German's looked like they were all dressed up and lined up for a parade, and then they started trying to climb up the side of the ravine. It was like shooting ducks at a carnival stall."* The article went on the report that *"two enemy companies were almost completely liquidated"* and Hendrickson's tank, named Spare Parts, also destroyed an anti-tank gun concealed inside a windmill *and "bagged a Mark IV tank hiding under a haystack, before being hit by an armor piercing shell. Hendrickson and crew jumped to safety and made it back to American lines, taking a German prisoner along the way."* Oddly, the Walla[2] newspaper spelled Hendrickson with a "K". *(Walla Walla Union-Bulletin Archives, 1944. www.wallawallaunionbulletin.newspaperarchives.com. Accessed October 2, 2024)*

April 11, 1944. Anzio Beach, Italy. V-Mail

"Well another day and still healthy, but not wise. Wish somebody would win this war; I'm getting as bored as the devil with this place. Guess it's because there is nothing to do except fight and nobody to see except other soldiers and Germans. Had a stroke of bad luck and broke my only pair of good sunglasses. Now I have to sweat out someone getting killed so I can inherit his. Wish I was there (Bradley Field, CT apparently) *to do a little real partying myself. When I finally get into Rome, I'm going hog wild for sure. Don't let any of those warriors in the soft jobs snow you back there. Love, Hal"*

September 17, 1944. Central Italy. USPS Mail. Three excerpts from a five-page letter.

"I am sorry that I have not written for so long. I got quite a kick out of your last letter. You sound more like one of the soldiers who have been overseas for three years than ones who haven't. Your references to stuffed-shirt officers tickle me. Almost everyone here is now hopeful for a ***quick end of the war*** *with Germany, however, some of them are too optimistic. We may have quite a lot of stiff fighting yet here in Italy."* **Comment:** This letter was written three months after the D-Day landings in Normandy. The U.S. and U.K. media assumed that the Allies' quick advance toward Germany after the invasion would continue unabated. Overly optimistic predictions of German surrender were commonplace in newspapers and radio broadcasts.

"As for myself, I don't know how I'll ever endure a peaceful life again (providing of course!). Seems as if my very being ***was born and raised with gunfire*** *and dust and mud and blood and the dead. I was thinking the other day how hard it would be to stay out of trouble and readjust*

myself as I have absolutely no compunction about killing sex or race or whatever. Well, I must stop being so morbid. Don't know why I am because I sure don't have a hangover. I'm going to be a hard man to hold for some time if I ever get back to the States. When and if I do, I don't think Walla[2] is the best place. I want to go someplace where no one knows me and start from the bottom rung. Probably stay on that rung too."

"You seem to always apologize for sight seeing so much. What do you suppose the boys over here do when they get a chance? Keep their eyes shut? Well soldier, keep your shoulders back and keep em coming. Love, Harold." **Comment:** The September 17, 1944 letter was written after eight months of incessant combat, with high Allied casualties as the U.S. and British armies broke out of Anzio and started a slow slog north through mountainous central Italy against an aggressive German defense.

By Mildred Dennis. September 27, 1944. Windsor Locks, Connecticut. USPS Mail This is the only surviving WWII letter from Mildred Dennis to Harold Hendricson, in which she responds to his September 17 letter. Two excerpts from a five-page letter.

"Returning to a peaceful and quiet life will have its problems no doubt. Somehow, I feel it won't be as much of a readjustment as you are anticipating. Men who have been discharged from the service and are now back from overseas are making very good civilians. With your intelligence and good judgment, I expect you to do the same. Seems it's a human faculty for forgetting or at least letting time dim the unpleasant details of life."

"Wish you were here at Bradley tonight (i.e. the USAF air base at Bradley Field; Mildred was assigned to the Women's Army Air Corp). *Being a brazen hussy, I took it for granted that I would be the one to show you sights around Bradley (if you were ever up here). Frankly, we don't have many in the immediate vicinity that you would be interested in. However, New York has anything one might want to find as you probably know. That would be the place for you to celebrate your return. I might come down to see that no one tries to hold you down too much. Please don't enjoy the belle signoras too much over there. Remember that not all brunettes are in Italy. Love, Mildred"*

October 24, 1944. Central Italy. V-Mail

"Had a proud moment yesterday when two of my original boys were given battlefield commissions by General Clark (Commanding General of the U.S. Fifth Army). Makes me feel swell to see fellows I have trained and fought with really go to town. About those nightspots you mentioned in your last letter, I'd really like you to show them to me. I'll bet with everyone in the U.S. believing in a very near end to the war, there is a lot of celebrations back there. Well pal, keep your chin up. Love, Harold."

February 22, 1945. Santa Lucia, a suburb of Rome. USPS Mail. Two excerpts from a four-page letter.

"Don't be too surprised at receiving an actual letter from me instead of those lousy V-Mails. I am spending some R & R time (i.e., Rest and Relaxation days behind the frontlines) *in a nice little town by the name of "Lucia" where I saw a show of "Panama Hattie" last night. It was fairly good even with a mediocre cast. Have just finished listening to the AFN news. Sounds as if with the advent of good weather, we can finish the European campaign off pretty soon. Hope I*

get a chance to come home to the States after it is over, although it might be interesting to try out the quality of those Japs."

*"Not so long ago, we had a Brigade Officers Dance with the local crop of **Guinea Girls** as guests. They can't dance very well, and when the snack bar opened, the dancing part of their evening was complete. Food was a greater enticement than us soldiers."* **Comment:** In WWII, the phrase Guinea Girls was used by Brits and Americans to refer to women from southern Italy who had a darker complexion, i.e., more Mediterranean in appearance, than women from northern Italy. Today, as then, the phrase is considered to be demeaning.

March 6, 1945. Northern Italy. V-Mail

"This country and the war gets quite rugged at times. What I would really enjoy would be a bottle of whiskey. Not that I have turned into a heavy imbiber, but it chases away my bad dreams sometimes. One of the officers in the Company received a bottle that was packed neatly away in newspapers, to avoid detection, and we drank it last night. The occasion was the return of a buddy who had been listed as missing for some time, but was actually injured, lost some of his memory and was being cared for in an Italian village. Well gal, don't slay those Northerners with your Texas drawl and take care of yourself. Love, Hal"

March 30, 1945. Northern Italy. V-Mail

"I have been regularly receiving your letters and packages of cigs. I really get a boost of morale from both. It makes me ashamed at your faithfulness in writing. I solemnly swear to endeavor to write more often. From all indications we should end the European campaign in a short time. I have been talking to some of the men in my Company who have returned from furloughs in the States, and they say it is a wonderful place. I wonder. Love, Harold"

June 30, 1945. North Italy near the Switzerland border. USPS Mail. The final WWII letter from Harold to Mildred that survived the war. Two excerpts from a five-page letter.

"Sorry to not have written more often. Cannot say I have been working too hard the last few weeks, but have been playing quite hard. There is lots of good beer over in Switzerland and quite a few parties and dances over there too. Was very glad to see the end of the war as I was very tired of sending friends of mine out on jobs where I knew that some would not come back. One day near the end, every officer I had was killed. Some I had known for three years."

*"Two days ago, they declared certain of us as **essential post-war personnel** and will move us to Germany where we are forming a new Administrative Division, called an Occupation Army. I suppose I will remain there for some time, running the government for those damn Germans. Hope that you are having a good time now that the Euro war is behind us. I sure would like to return to the States. Guess I haven't much chance in going back however. Perhaps they think I've got **too many points** to be a proper citizen. Well, gal – don't let them send you to the Army of Occupation. Love, Harold"*

Comment: Harold Hendricson was appointed provisional mayor of the town of Ulm, Germany, located in the German state of Bavaria, shortly after this letter was written. He and a staff of other U.S. officers were assigned to the city during the post-war transition period until suitable (i.e., non-Nazi affiliated) German administrators could be identified. As discussed in the Notes below on the U.S. Army Point System for determining post-war activity, Harold's options at the end of the European War were most likely: (1) assignment to the Army of Occupation, or, as an

experienced and well decorated officer, (2) re-deployment to the Pacific to prepare for the invasion of Japan, anticipated to occur in 1946.

=======

Notes on the U.S. Army Point System at the end of WWII. Near the end of the European war in the spring of 1945, the U.S. Army developed a point system, known as the Adjusted Service Rating Score, to determine, along with unit-level criteria, which of the six million servicemen in Europe would be: (1) demobilized and transported back to the States on hundreds of military and civilian conscripted ships in a program named Operation Magic Carpet, (2) assigned to the Army of Occupation based in Germany, or (3) transferred to the Pacific to participate in the invasion of Japan. As late as June 1945, U.S. military leaders, for the most part unaware of the Manhattan Project, planned to transfer 800,000 officers and soldiers from Europe to the Pacific, anticipating that the Japanese could not be defeated until late in 1946. Soldiers received points for months of service (total and overseas), numbers of named campaigns, medals, promotions, nominations and other recognitions including Purple Hearts for combat wounds and injuries, and number of dependent children. Initially, 85 points were needed for rotation back to the States. This number was considered unattainable by many soldiers and their stateside families, and as a result, large protests broke out in the U.S. and overseas. Late in 1945, the threshold number was reduced to 50. On the other hand, a very high point total might lead to a different, and potentially less desirable outcome. I remember that my dad often claimed that he had accumulated 140 points by May 1945, and thus, due to this high level of combat experience, was a potential target for re-assignment to the Pacific. Instead, he wound up in the Army of Occupation as a provisional mayor, an assignment he was not excited about, but begrudgingly accepted after learning that he could fly to London from a nearby airbase for weekend revelry, which he apparently did often. WACs also had a point system; 44 points were needed for discharge based on criteria pertinent to women soldier's roles and tasks. Mildred Dennis achieved this threshold in December 1945 and was discharged soon after, returning to Walla Walla early in 1946. *(Gault O. Operation Magic Carpet. Chatsworth MA: Challenge Publications. 2005; Ziemke EF. The U.S. Army in the Occupation of Germany, 1944-1946. Center for Military History. Washington DC: U.S. Government Printing Office. 1975; The National World War II Museum. www.nationalww2museum.org. Bamford T. The Points Were All That Mattered: The U.S. Army's Demobilization After World War II. August 17, 2010. Accessed: August 22, 2024)*

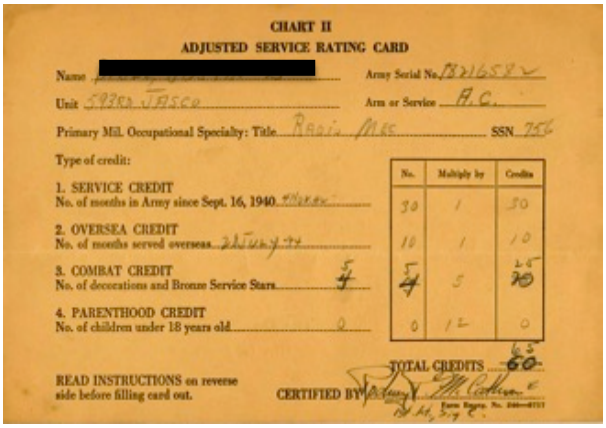


CHART II

ADJUSTED SERVICE RATING CARD

Name [redacted] Army Serial No. 32165[illegible]

Unit 5930 TASCO Arm or Service A.C.

Primary Mil. Occupational Specialty: Title Radio Mec. SSN 756

Type of credit:	No.	Multiply by	Credits
1. SERVICE CREDIT No. of months in Army since Sept. 16, 1940	39	1	39
2. OVERSEA CREDIT No. of months served overseas	10	1	10
3. COMBAT CREDIT No. of decorations and Bronze Service Stars	5 4	5	25 20
4. PARENTHOOD CREDIT No. of children under 18 years old	0	12	0
		TOTAL CREDITS	65 60

READ INSTRUCTIONS on reverse side before filling card out.

CERTIFIED BY [illegible]

An example of a U.S. Army Point System Card that WWII soldiers used to calculate points earned toward demobilization.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 9/15/2024

=======

Excerpts From 42 of 259 WWII Letters Mildred Dennis Sent to Her Parents

Mildred wrote to her parents, Archie and Maude Dennis, at least weekly for the duration of her three years in the Women's Army Air Corps (WACs). A total of 259 letters survived and were maintained in a shoebox by her mother, Maude Dennis. Review of the surviving letters indicates that Mildred likely mailed other letters, but they did not make it into Maude's collection. In her letters, Mildred often commented on her correspondence with Harold. Many of her letters were lengthy, six or more pages, thus the following excerpts provide only small slices of Mildred's total volume of communication with her parents, who also appear to have sent letters and packages of food and other supplies to her almost weekly. None of her parents' letters appear to have survived the war. All of Mildred's correspondence with her parents was by regular USPS mail, including the new service in the continental U.S. – Air Mail. Mildred and her parents also talked with some regularity by telephone, especially in the later years of the war as transcontinental phone service improved to support the war effort. It is evident from her letters that Mildred routinely communicated with a number of servicemen in addition to Harold, some of whom appear to be childhood friends or high school classmates, while her relationship with others is not known. Mildred's surviving letters begin after she completed the six-week basic training phase at Fort Des Moines, Iowa, the centralized WAC educational site for the entire nation.

Four themes are evident in the letters: (1) Mildred's ambition to do useful work that helped the war effort, a goal which she only intermittently achieved from her perspective; (2) her personal goal to receive promotions in military rank, also a frustrating pursuit; (3) her concerns for Harold's welfare and dismay at receiving only sporadic communication from him; and (4) her desire to travel and take advantage of the social and cultural opportunities near the bases where she was stationed, especially in New England during 1944 and 1945. Overall, Mildred's letters to her parents provide perspectives on the stateside war experienced by hundreds of thousands of service men and women who did not go overseas.

<u>July 5, 1943. Fort Des Moines, Iowa</u>

"I really like this army life, even though we are always on the run. I really like all the drilling (i.e., marching in close quarters). It's fun being able to do all the eyes right, eyes left and different types of drilling and different pacings. We just fell out (i.e., dismissed from the classroom), and had an intensive hour of drill as we have our first parade this afternoon."

<u>July 12, 1943. Fort Des Moines, Iowa</u>

"Don't worry about me at night. Any man who tries anything on this post would be a fool. There are hundreds of women here, and plenty of military police. Did you know that Fort Des Moines is called the Women's West Point?"

<u>August 4, 1943, Fort Des Moines, Iowa</u>. Two excerpts from a five-page letter.

"Well, now I am officially Private Mildred M. Dennis. Finally! We were sworn in at a mass ceremony at 8:30am this morning. It was broadcast over NBC (Radio), but it would be so early out there in Lowden that you probably didn't hear it. NBC also made a film of it, so I imagine that it will be shown soon in theaters before the real movie comes on. If you see the film, there were a few girls in the center of the film with white uniforms on. I'm standing about 6 people to the right of them, on the first line of those with white uniforms." **Comment:** WACs were a new

and not universally accepted concept in WWII. Mildred was in the second cohort to graduate from WAC basic training. She and other WACs were called "auxiliaries" until completion of basic training and not given a U.S. army rank until their third month of service, in part because many military leaders assumed, incorrectly, that the majority would drop out during basic training. *(Ziobro M. "Skirted Soldiers." The Women's Army Corp and Gender Integration of the U.S. Army During World War Two. Army Historical Association. www.armyhistory.org. Accessed: August 30, 2024)*

*"I was called into the base dentist office yesterday, and he filled one tooth. He filled two more teeth today, and I'll finish up Friday with another filling, and then have them cleaned. He's a nice young doctor, and seems to be very good. I wore my **cook's uniform** yesterday, so now he calls me "Cookie." Nothing like a little teasing to make me feel right at home."* **Comment:** After completion of basic training, Mildred was assigned to the Cooks and Bakers School for two months to prepare her for duty as a line cook or supervisor of cooks at WAC or regular army mess halls stateside or, potentially, overseas. Training focused on preparing, cooking, serving, transporting and storing mass quantities of food.

Mildred's note on the back of this photo indicates that she is helping a fellow WAC student in the Cooks and Bakers School with the task of boning a ham.

August 29, 1943. Fort Des Moines, Iowa. Excerpts from a letter written to her father.

"I told Mother on the phone yesterday that I would have news September 7. By that, I mean I will know what I will be doing for the next few weeks. I will either stay here and go to Dehydration, Butchers and Mess Sergeants School, or I might be sent to some post in the field. The latter is what I want of course, but chances are that I will have to stay here, darn it! Although everyone tries to tell us the living conditions here are so much better than anywhere else. But I still like the excitement of getting to move around and seeing new places."

"Mother also said I had a letter from Harold that was sent to your address. That was certainly welcome news. I rather felt he would write when it was over in Sicily, but I didn't think it would arrive so soon. Coming to you thru San Francisco seems odd. Must have been a plane coming that way or else there was a clipper going to SF."

September 21, 1943. Fort Des Moines, Iowa

"We're going to Dehydration, Butchers and Mess Sergeants School starting this week. Overall, I'm really glad as it is a very interesting course, all about foods they send overseas and how they are managed. They are prepared by extracting the water, and then adding the water back when it is time to use the foods. The knowledge won't be as valuable for me at this time, but if I am sent overseas after the war to help feed the people in the conquered countries, I will have to

know this, and how to manage delivery. This course will make 13 weeks of school, and still more to come after this, so I think I am really getting my money's worth from the Army."

"Harold wrote a nice letter. He had just received the 1st letter I wrote when first coming to Des Moines. The mail is certainly slow catching up with him. You might tell his folks that it was dated August 28th. He said he had purchased some souvenirs he thought I would like, but had no way of sending them to me due to V-Mail. Oh, Harold did say there were some WACs stationed where he is now, and he is going to meet a WAC 2nd Lt. I had thought about sending him a picture or snapshot of myself, but if he's seen a WAC now, he can imagine what I look like in uniform. They say they let the older WACs go overseas. I hope she was 30 at least and a ***blond****."*
Comment: There was running dialogue throughout the letters from both Harold and Mildred, mostly the latter, about his preference for brunettes and disdain for blondes.

October 17, 1943. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Eagle Pass, Texas

"I have my new assignment here in ***Eagle Pass****. The have put me in the main office for the mess halls at this base. It seems my cooking days are over at least as long as I am in Eagle Pass. I am quite pleased as it seems like a step up in the right direction. I have just met my new boss! He came down to the base Saturday afternoon. His name is Lt. O'Shaughnessy. Nothing like a good Irishman to work in the mess office. He is very nice in a reserved sort of way. After our meeting, he was nice enough to give me most of the afternoon off, and he drove me to my barracks as we was going my way. He is an extremely nice 1st Lt. and safely married! He wants me to supervise the bakers and cooks here in our six mess halls, give them suggestions, make sure things get done properly, and to introduce new dishes into the menu when possible. Sounds pretty good, doesn't it."* **Comment:** Mildred was transferred to Army Air Force Base in Eagle Pass after completion of the Dehydration, Butchers and Mess Sergeants School. Initially, she assumed an administrative role at Eagle Pass, which soon expanded to other roles.

"There are two nice places on the other side of the Rio Grande in Mexico. In the U.S., we would consider them to be nightclubs. Dining and dancing with a bar in an adjoining room. They serve the best lime-ade I have ever tasted. Now all I need is to find me a non-commissioned officer who likes to dance. That's the ones with stripes on their sleeves. We (WACs) are not allowed to go to Mexico with the commissioned officers here, that's the fellows who are the bosses. For a while at least I am going to be so busy getting into the swing of my job with Lt. O'Shaughnessy, I won't have time for much dancing and such."

Mildred, with a WAC colleague identified as Ruth shortly after being transferred from Fort Des Moines to the Army Air Force Base in Eagle Pass, Texas. Mildred had several jobs at Eagle Pass including supervising meal prep at six mess halls, recruiting, and serving as a dietician at the base hospital.

November 7, 1943. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Eagle Pass, Texas

"I'm listening to the "Army Hour" this afternoon. It's a broadcast in tribute of the men serving in the North African area (i.e., Mediterranean). I'm listening to General Eisenhower right now. I hope that the European war is over by this time next year. If it progresses as it has in the last few weeks, it ought to pretty well over. Somehow I feel that Harold is allright. He didn't write before when he was in action in Africa, and when it's over in Italy I think he will write again. I know it isn't easy for his mother to not hear, and he probably doesn't realize how terribly worried she and his father are. Even here when I'm very busy, I lose touch of when I wrote last, so I can imagine that time passes very quickly for Harold."

November 17, 1943. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Eagle Pass, Texas

"Well, believe it or not, I am on detached duty service recruiting WACs. So far, I have mostly just ridden around Texas and laughed at a funny Lt's. jokes. His name is Cavello, and he is really a scream. I and one other WAC, a driver, this funny Lt., and our Company Commander make up the recruiting group. Right now we are at ***Camp Clark Springs*** *near a town called Brackettville, which is an Army cavalry post that has been here since before the Civil War days, so it is old and well established. We're recruiting some of the civilian workers here – we have eight prospects so far. Camp Clark is a huge post made up almost entirely of Negroes. There is a large group of Negro WACs stationed here as well. The camp is quite attractive: it has lots of green lawn, trees, a little brook running through it and stately old stone buildings to house the troops.*

=======

Notes on Camp Clark and the Black Seminole Indian Fighters: Camp Clark Springs was established in the 1850s by the U.S. federal army as a base for troops assigned to protect White settlers west of San Antonio from raids by Comanche, Mescalero, Kickapoo and Lipan tribes that operated out of the Sierra Madre Oriental Mountains of northern Mexico. The land for the base, originally named for the Las Moras Springs, was leased by the Army from the famed Maverick family who were influential in the development of the San Antonio region in the 19th and early 20th centuries. *(Marks PM. Turn Your Eyes Toward Texas: Pioneers Sam and Mary Maverick. College Station, Texas: Texas A&M University Press. 1989)* The Las Moras Springs are one of the largest group of artesian springs in Texas, discharging 12 million gallons of water daily from an underground aquifer. Prior to the intrusion of White homesteaders, the Las Moras Springs (Los Moras = the "Mulberries" in Spanish) were a recreational site for Native tribes in the area.

The Confederate Army took over the fort in 1861, named it after the first Confederate Governor of Texas, Edward Clark, and used it for training recruits and as a hospital. After the conclusion of the Civil War, the U.S. Army reclaimed the facility as a training site and home base for several companies of Seminole-Negro Indian Scouts, a branch of the Army's Buffalo Soldier Divisions, comprised almost entirely of Black soldiers. This military unit was assigned the arduous and dangerous task of minimizing damage from bands of raiding tribes who often swept down from the Sierra Madres and across the Rio Grande to attack the many isolated White and Hispanic settlements in South Texas. The unit also launched counterattacks into Mexico from Camp Clark to try to disrupt the operations of these tribes and capture their leaders.

The Seminole-Negro community, also known as the Black Seminoles, numbered in the thousands by the mid-19th century. This cultural group of mixed Native American and African racial origins, emerged when escaped Black slaves in the 18th and early 19th centuries gravitated to central Florida, which was a Spanish Territory until 1821. Spain welcomed escaped slaves with promises of freedom if they accepted a Catholic baptism. Central Florida was also attractive to fleeing slaves because it was thinly populated by struggling, "hardscrabble," White farmers who had no use for slaves, had limited organized governance, and was the home for several bands of Seminoles, who accepted Blacks within their community. *(Kuiper K. Black Seminoles. Britannica. www.britannica.com. August 11, 2015. Accessed: August 29, 2024)* Over the decades, the arriving Blacks integrated into the larger Seminole culture. In the 1820s, affluent White land developers from Georgia urged the federal government to push out the Seminoles so Florida land could be opened up for plantation agriculture. The U.S conducted three military campaigns to defeat and relocate the Seminoles that concluded in 1855 and ultimately led to the forced removal of 80% of the surviving Seminole and Black Seminole population to a desolate reservation in Oklahoma.

Black Seminoles who escaped the relocation fled to the Caribbean and Mexico. The government of Mexico, desiring to defeat Native Tribes who plundered settlements in this region, enticed several hundred Black Seminoles with land and military jobs to move to the northern states of Coahuila, Nuevo Leon, Sonora and Tamaulipas. Brigades of Black Seminoles in the Mexican Federal Army gained fame for their scouting, tracking and fierce Indian fighting skills on the south side of the Rio Grande in the 1850s and 1860s. In the 1870s, the U.S. recruited, with similar enticements, many of the Black Seminole soldiers to move north and enlist in the U.S. Army to serve in the frontier war against the Sierra Madre-based tribes, who had primarily turned their attention to the north side of the Rio Grande. (*Porter KW. The Black Seminoles: History of a Freedom-Seeking People. Gainesville, Fl. University Press of Florida. 2013)*

Camp Clark served as the base for the Black Seminole units until they were disbanded in 1914. It also served as the base for two regiments of Black Buffalo Soldiers, and then, in the segregated 20th century military, for all-Black Army units, including the 4th Cavalry Brigade, which Mildred Dennis observed on her recruiting trips in 1943. (*Haenn B. Fort Clark and Brackettville: Land of Heroes. Mount Pleasant, South Carolina: Arcadia Publishing. 2002*) Today, Camp Clark Springs is a tourist attraction with camp grounds, a park containing hot springs, a 100 yard spring-fed swimming pool, hiking trails, and the remnants of the military base.

A platoon of Black Seminole soldiers at Fort Clark in 1880. Most of the military campaigns against Native tribes in Texas were implemented by Black Seminole troops and members of the Buffalo Soldier regiments.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 8/29/2024

=======

November 28, 1943. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Eagle Pass, Texas

"Well ... this was my day to really catch up on my correspondence, but somehow all I got done was a letter to Harold. He's getting to be a bit of a problem to write to. You know Daddy, you always said he was cynical. Well, I'm afraid the war is increasing it, or he is trying to cover up his real feelings with gruffness. Maybe it's just his natural desire to argue. He answers my letters the day they arrive seemingly (although they often take weeks to reach him). But I can expect to take some going over about something in every one of them. I guess if I had been through what he has, I wouldn't be so cheerful either. Then again, he seems to can't get over the fact that I joined the WACs. I haven't much to write him but about except what I'm doing in the WACs, so we bicker across the Atlantic about the WACS. Maybe he is just teasing – I hope so. It would be a real tragedy if he lost his sense of humor."

"Humor - That's one thing I look for (in men) quicker than anything else. Maybe that's why I have enjoyed my recruiting trips so much. Lt. Cavello has a great sense of humor and takes delight in teasing me about my rosy cheeks, and my two cows that I accidently mentioned one day. He tells everyone about them. Last week, the Captain didn't go with us, so we really had fun. Lt. Cavello forgot he was a Lt. and the four of us were just a happy little family. We went up to Kerrville for three days and then stopped of in San Antonio for the weekend where Lt. Cavello treated us to a Thanksgiving dinner. Don't think I am getting romantic ideas. He's a little short fellow, and you folks know that I like them tall."

Mildred Dennis and her Army / WAC recruiting colleagues hung posters like this in hotel lobbies and other locations when they set up temporary recruiting stations in towns throughout South and Central Texas. Mildred's correspondence indicates she enjoyed the camaraderie of the recruiting road trips, and felt like she was doing something useful for the war effort.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: August 29, 2024.

December 19, 1943. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Eagle Pass, Texas

"I went to the Christmas dance last night, and had a very enjoyable time. It was given by the Mechanics Battalion stationed at Laredo, and they had 70 gallons of beer, dozens of sandwiches and a beautiful big cake. After a glass or two of beer the fact that I hadn't danced in two years didn't seem to bother me much. I'm not becoming a naughty girl, but a little cheer seems to loosen me up a bit. You folks always did say that I was too quiet. Anyway, I met a rather nice fellow from Laredo, ***Jack O'Neill****, who wants to take me out in the near future. I also danced at least once with the three officers that were there, which was rather fun. One had been a civilian pilot for five years before the war, but was still bashful. His name is* ***also Jack****, Lt. Jack Beeson."*

Comment: Both of the Jacks became dinner and dancing companions for Mildred during her Eagle Pass deployment. Mildred's dates with an officer, a sporadically enforced WAC taboo, apparently caused quite a stir in the women's barracks, based on her descriptions of outings with Lt. Beeson in letters to her parents.

December 29, 1943. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Eagle Pass, Texas

"Jack (Sgt. O'Neill) and I are going to Mexico for dinner Saturday night, that is if he gets back from Laredo in time. He is really stationed there but goes back and forth. He also has to go appear before the Officers Candidate Board for OCS School. I am going recruiting again next week to San Antonio, so the letters may be a bit few and far between. Don't worry about me, I'll try to write better than I did on my last trip."

January 5, 1944. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Eagle Pass, Texas

"Well, I was out recruiting again at Crystal City and Carrizo Springs about an hour from here, and when I got back to the field, a good long letter from Harold was here. He's a first Lt. now, and I gathered from his letter in a pretty cheerful frame of mind. The last line of the letter was - See you for sure in 44. That's wonderful news for me, and I'll be home when he comes even if I have to go AWOL. The letter was written December 15, and posted Dec. 18. It got here in 17 days, the quickest letter to come yet."

"At the last count, I still had 16 thank you letters to write [after Christmas]. Of course, I never have Harold's or my Mom and Pop's name on the letter writing list because those are two letters I love to write. They take preference over all others. If I don't be careful I'll be talking myself into something that doesn't exist as far as Harold's concerned."

January 12, 1944. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Eagle Pass, Texas

"You asked about Jack who I guess I mention often. ***Sgt. Jack O'Neill*** *is from Mississippi, and don't worry it isn't really serious. Last night, I went to Mexico for dinner, and was supposed to be back at the USO to meet him at 10:00 for drinks and dancing. But I was having such a good time with my friends, I didn't get back until 10:45. Well, Jack wasn't waiting around, and I didn't blame him, so I came home to the barracks with the girls. I just got through with calling him and apologizing, and I do hate to do that. He isn't the kind that grants my every whim, thank heavens."* **Comment:** Mildred's relationship with Jack O'Neill was broken off after he departed South Texas for Officer Candidate School (OCS), although they apparently continued to communicate via letters for a unknown period of time.

February 28, 1944. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Eagle Pass, Texas

"Ratings (i.e., promotion lists) *came out and Helen Petty* (Mildred's best WAC friend) *made Sgt. The medical corps hasn't any more rankings to give out, so I'm afraid you will have to bear with your daughter as a Pvt. for some more time to come. Doesn't really matter, when I see how many boys are only Pvt. and are overseas fighting. I would like to take all the ratings away from the fellows stationed here and give it to those overseas."*

March 25, 1944. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Eagle Pass, Texas

"I had a letter I wrote to Harold in July last year returned to me. I wrote it regular mail because I had a lot to say. Evidently, he got the last one I sent. I'll bet he thinks the WAC is having an effect on me. No, I haven't heard from him recently, but I guess I'll swallow my pride and keep on writing to him. His ***V-Mail letters*** *may have gone astray."* **Comment:** The collection of surviving WWII correspondence between Harold and Mildred includes 12 V-Mail or USPS letters that Harold sent to Mildred between July 1943 and March 1944. Mildred must have belatedly received these V-Mails after writing this letter.

March 31, 1944. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Eagle Pass, Texas

"By the way, don't write to Eagle Pass any more as I am leaving here soon. Can't say exactly where I am going [Army regulations], but it's out of the state of Texas. I won't be any closer to home, but it won't take me any longer to get home and I may be able to get there a bit sooner. Much nicer climate and close to some interesting places. Seems silly I can't say where I'm going, but this is the Army! And, don't worry about me going overseas. The air base here is slowly being closed and they are dibbling us WACs out to other bases. I was the only one here with the right qualifications, for the job I am going to next, so I was picked for the ***assignment****."*

Comment: Mildred was transferred to Bradley Air Field near Hartford, Connecticut to serve as a dietician at an Army Air Force hospital. She departed April 4 from Eagle Pass and arrived at Bradley Field five days later via bus and train travelling through seven states on the journey. She wrote at least one letter every day of the trip and mailed them along the way, describing the sites and cities she passed in considerable detail.

April 4, 1944. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Eagle Pass, Texas

"The Army has been a great opportunity for me to see the country and I am enjoying it a great deal. I've learned one other thing however – don't become too attached to any one in the army, because one never knows what is going to happen. I never dreamed that I would be shipping out from here, although a few girls [WACs] have been going now and then for weeks. I guess I felt I would be the last to go, and here it is that I am practically the first. Leaving when everyone is telling you how much they are going to miss you makes it hard, but I would have felt bad if they had just said – well, so long and have a nice trip."

April 12, 1944. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"I like my new dietician job here at the hospital very much and think I will like it even better as time goes by. It isn't going to be hard work and it's the sort of place where everyone calls you Miss Dennis. I appreciate that now that I have become a dietician after being Pvt. Dennis at Eagle Pass. The mess officer, my boss, a captain, has outdone himself being nice. He stops me as I go through the office, asks me how I like my work, says he hopes that I will like the nutrition department, etc. He said any time I had any trouble at the hospital or with the WAC department, just let him know and he would do his best to fix things up. Really nice to know you have your boss behind you."

Private Mildred Dennis' during a trip to New York while stationed at Bradley Field in Connecticut.

April 19, 1944. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, CT. Two excerpts.

"I'm sure I'm going to enjoy this part of the country. Last night, another WAC in my barracks and I went to Hartford. Along the way we saw houses with signs saying they were built in 1768,

1771 or 1800. You know how I like old things, so I'm really going to eat up the old brick houses, and the white and green colonial style houses. Hartford is a town of 170,000 and has plenty of interesting places to go, stage plays from New York, nice restaurants, good stores and service people like us WACs are well liked here. Tickets to stage plays can be obtained free for those of us in the military."

"The girl I went to Hartford with last night is Jewish. She took me to a Jewish Sadder as her guest. It was very interesting, and I have never seen so much food and wine in my life. We sat at a table with two Jewish families, seemingly wealthy and well educated. Their older children were in the service, but there were three younger boys at the table that were cute as bugs ears. They were 5 yrs, 9 yrs and 13. Those Jewish fathers fairly doted on those boys. The dinner, of course, had a long religious preliminary, most of which was chanted in Hebrew. Every once in a while you eat a bitter herb, then certain kinds of crackers, drink some wine, or eat raisins."

May 11, 1944. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"I've been debating quite awhile over telling you folks this, but I guess parents would just as soon take the ups and downs with their kids. I'm applying for a straight commission as a dietician in the ***Army Nurse Corps****. Capt. Peachy at Eagle Pass urged me to do it under a new directive that has come out. I filled out my papers in Eagle Pass before I departed and took the physical for it, but I still have to complete some more papers up here and probably take another physical. I don't know what my chances are and that's why I haven't told you sooner than this. For that reason, don't tell anyone about it. Not even Lloyd or the Hendricsons. If I don't make the grade, we will be the only ones to know. It will mean a second Lts. Commission and a transfer to the Army Nursing Corps. I will need my transcript from WSC* [Washington State College]*, which is in the WSC folder in the top drawer of chest in my closet. Make sure to send transcripts for all of my WSC years including summers 1941 and 1942."* **Comment:** There was no further mention of the Army Nurse Corps, which would have been a regular Army position with an enlistment period of seven years. Either she did not complete the application or it was not accepted. In the later case, she likely communicated the outcome to her parents by telephone. In the spring of 1945, Mildred also applied for Admission to the Army Dietician's School, another regular army commissioned position. This application was arduous involving interviews, physical exams, review of college transcripts, and accumulation of recommendation letters from military and civilian sources. However, with the sooner-than-expected end of the Pacific war in August 1945, the Dietician School was closed until the Army determined the future of the WAC branch, and thus, her application was returned.

July 7, 1944. North Platte, Nebraska. Letter written on the return to Bradley by train after a three-week furlough to Walla Walla

"I'm anxious to get back to Bradley now after reading the news of the big **circus fire at Hartford.** The two Alice's that I often talk about had tickets to go to the circus yesterday afternoon. I hope they couldn't get a day off or changed their minds or something. The newspaper in Cheyenne was full of the circus fire story this morning. They listed it with the major catastrophes of the century."

A side note**:** *A fire started by still unknown circumstances broke out during the July 6, 1944 afternoon performance of the Ringling Brothers and Barnum & Bailey Circus in Hartford. Fed by the paraffin wax that waterproofed the tent walls and ceiling, flames within minutes engulfed*

the arena and bleachers where 7,000 people, including the two Alice's from Bradley Field, were in attendance. At least 168 people were killed and 700 were seriously injured by fire, smoke inhalation, falling debris, burning wax and the crush of the crowd fleeing the arena with many victims trampled in the chaos. Both of the Alice's survived as did notable circus clown Emmett Kelly and the Flying Wallendas, who were performing their aerial high wire routine when the fire spread to the bleachers. (O'Nan S. The Circus Fire: The Story of an American Tragedy. New York: Knopf Doubleday Publishing Group. 2008)

The crowd at the July 6, 1944 performance was largely composed of women, children and soldiers with free passes, including Mildred's WAC friends. The Ringling Brothers and Barnum & Bailey fire is considered the greatest disaster in Connecticut history.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 9/02/2024.

July 7, 1944 letter – continued

"A soldier and a sailor from Washington adopted me as their special charge last night. The car where I was sitting was comfortable, but was full of noisy civilians and crying babies. No one in there seemed to be interested in keeping it clean either, so the boys took pity on me as they say, and found me a seat in their car. This car is all soldiers and sailors, and is the best car on the train, and much cleaner than any other car on the train. That's a lot of words to say that I now have a very comfortable seat in a streamliner car. The soldier is a bit boring and overly attentive, and the sailor is interesting and married with a brotherly attitude. Mildred always seems to hit it that way."

July 15, 1944. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"Some of the new girls that have just come from WAC Basic got there Pfc's or one stripe while I was gone. If I wasn't a good-natured soul. I'd probably blow off a little steam about that. No use feeling sorry for myself. I have plenty of company in the stripeless wonders brigade."

August 24, 1944. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"Have another new job here. I'm doing clerical work in the office of Sergeant Major Hager of the Bradley Field Hospital; no more dietician work. I have a B.A. not a Doctors degree. Wish I had the Drs. degree, but it is still in the dim distant future. I've been thinking seriously of going back to school when this war is over. The fall of Paris was good, but somehow I'm afraid I won't feel like yelling my head off when the war is over. Guess there will be plenty of people to get excited without me." **Comment:** Related to the July 15 and August 24 letters, Mildred's frustration at seeing others promoted ahead of her appeared to reach its peak in the summer of 1944.

November 5, 1944. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"I now have yet another new job as an accountant. Thursday evening Captain Britten, the head of my hospital section, asked me if I could come to his office for a few minutes before I left. He also called Sgt. Hager in. The job of managing one of the two hospital financial accounts was turned over to me completely. It's a big responsibility involving thousand and thousands of

dollars. Frankly, I am pleased as it means that the Captain is satisfied with my work. It's a job that needs doing and big enough one to make me feel I am doing my part in this old war."

November 23, 1944. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

Comment: Many of the hundreds of letters that were not excerpted for this section on Mildred's wartime correspondence included detailed descriptions of her trips with other WACs and servicemen to major cities and locales of the Northeast including Montreal, Boston, New York, the Maine shore, the Jersey shore, Rhode Island and various towns in Massachusetts. Mildred also made at least two trips to Berwick, Pennsylvania by bus, approximately 250 miles from Bradley Field, to visit relatives of her grandfather, Joseph Lloyd Dennis. The following excerpt is from a six page letter describing a trip to Washington DC with one of the Alice's from the WAC corps at Bradley Field. It is characteristic of Mildred's other travel reports.

"Oh yes, something else we did Sunday night. On the way to dinner, we walked down Pennsylvania Avenue, which runs on the backside of the White house. It was all lit up and looked lovely, although not as large as I had expected. By the last day, we hadn't been near the Capital and both of us were disappointed, but we found a change to our train schedule to New York that gave us time to visit the Capital. We were both as tickled as two kids with lollypops. We hated to go back to Bradley without seeing the Capital. I haven't been thrilled about anything for a long time, but it was really a wonderful feeling to know that you were walking through your nation's capital. The most outstanding statue in the Capital foyer was a bronze of Will Rogers, sent by Oklahoma. The statues from each state don't need to be statesmen, but merely people who are typical of the state and suggest what the state represents."

November 30, 1944. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"Heard the Army Hour yesterday afternoon and one of the broadcasts was directly from the 5th Army front in Italy. A Sgt. In the combat zone described the lousy weather that the troops have been having to contend with, and some times the sound of artillery shells bursting around his area would drown out the speaker's voice. Well, anyway, I sat down a bit later and wrote Harold a nice letter. Just yesterday I was figuring up and I have received one letter from him since last May when I got all of those letters all at once. Really a terrific sucker, aren't I?"

January 6, 1945. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"If the first few days of the new year are any indication of the year to come, it is going to be a very good year for me. First, a grand letter came from Harold, then my call home was so successful, and then a 2nd letter from Harold with his picture in it. He looks wonderful. Just as handsome as ever and that old charming smile. It's the next best thing to seeing him, and that I know is impossible for a while. Some one that I showed the picture to, noticed what long fingers he has, and I was glad to see that he has all of them on his left hand. Only part of his right hand shows in the picture, so that must have been ***the fingers he lost****. I hope his mother gets his picture soon. The first letter was written on October 24 and wasn't postmarked until Dec. 3rd. The transportation facilities must have been bad. He mentioned two of his Sergeants receiving battlefield commissions, and how proud he was of them. He also sent a copy of the decoration that he received last February.* **Comment:** The false assumption that Harold had lost fingers on one of his hands lingered on literally until he returned from Europe after the war. Although Harold suffered six wounds and other injuries that required medical attention or hospitalization, his parents, Mildred and her parents were only aware of some of them and also

received, or deduced, inaccurate information about several of these injuries, including, as we will see latter, that his face had been badly burned – like the missing fingers, also not true. For parents of WWII servicemen, the daily stress of not knowing what was actually happening to their sons must have been overwhelming. As in Harold's case, receiving confusing, misleading or completely inaccurate tidbits of information certainly served to extenuate anxiety. Staying busy to divert one's attention away from the grim realities of the war must have been a national pastime. From Mildred's letters, it's obvious that her parents took on a variety of wartime jobs, charitable activities, and joined organizations supporting parents of individuals in the armed services including a Parents of WACs chapter.

February 5, 1945. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"Your WAC is not longer a Pvt. Yesterday, the orders came out, and I am now a Private First Class (Pfc.), which means I will now wear a stripe, when I get around to sewing it on. The most important thing is that I will get $4.00 more pay a month. Please don't put a notice in the newspaper. When boys are dying and getting medals for outstanding accomplishments over there, I don't want an article about a Pfc. promotion."

March 25, 1945. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"Received a V-Mail from Harold yesterday. Very happy go lucky letter. Really sounded like the Harold we knew at home when he was in a good mood. I asked him to send a request for cigarettes, and he said he could use them, and that just any old brand was good enough for him. I have 40 packs of cigs saved up for him, and I intend to take the box to town tomorrow to mail, and when I'm at the PO, add in packaged food to ***finish out the weight****, using their scale."*

Comment: USPS placed a weight limit on overseas packages. Partially filled boxes were taken to the Post Office, along with a bag of other items, which were added to the box until the weight limit was attained. It was then sealed and postmarked. Mildred's parents sent her a dollar bill every month, which she used to buy cartons of cigarettes to ship to Harold. A carton of Camels was 50 cents in 1945. Families were encouraged to mail cigarettes to their servicemen, and 12 smokes and waterproof matches were included in the daily k-ration kit starting in 1942. The military believed that cigarettes enhanced morale and energy, relieved boredom, and reduced appetite, the later a significant issue for food deprived front line soldiers. *("Smoke Em if You've Got Em." Army Historical Foundation. www.armyhistory.org. Accessed September 9, 2024*)

During WWII, brands exhorted U.S. citizens to buy their product and send it to servicemen.

Blum A. Keep Em Smokin'. Tobacco and World War II. Center for Study of Tobacco and Society. University of Alabama. www.csts.ua.edu. Accessed: September 10, 2024.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 9/12/2024.

May 5, 1945. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"Oh yes, I read in yesterday's newspaper where the Italian partisans [i.e., anti-fascists] turned over Mussolini's widow and two children to officers of the 1st Armed Division. [Harold was in the 1st Armed Division of the U.S. Fifth Army]. *That was at* Como, Italy*, and that is the town on the border with Switzerland where I thought Harold was, or is."* **Comment:** Rachele Mussolini, son Romano and daughter Anna Maria, both teen-agers, surrendered to Fifth Army representatives near Lake Como soon after the European ceasefire to avoid likely execution by anti-fascist mobs roaming northern Italian cities in the initial days after the war looking for and killing Mussolini collaborators. Rachele, Romano and Anna Maria were exiled for three years to the island of Ischia 50 miles off the coast of Naples, after which all three returned to Italy and resumed normal lives. Romano became an internationally recognized jazz musician and Anna Marie became a noted Italian radio and television personality. Two of Mussolini's older children fled Italy to escape the mobs, but returned to their homeland later in life. *(Information source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: September 11, 2024)*

A side note: *A long-standing Hendricson family tradition, cultivated by Harold himself, is that he was part of a reconnaissance unit that entered Milan on April 29, 1945 to assess potential Nazi resistance, which turned out to be non-existent as German officers and soldiers were simply waiting to surrender. As they investigated the downtown area, the Recon Detail passed by the bodies of Benito Mussolini and his mistress, Claretta Petacci. Less than two hours before the Americans arrived, Mussolini and Petacci, along with four other fascists, were infamously hung upside down by their heels at a gas station in a central square of the city after execution by firing squad the previous day in a village near Lake Como. Harold stated that he witnessed the cutting down of these bodies. It's one of a very few WWII incidents that he was willing to discuss. Numerous published accounts by U.S. military and Italian eyewitnesses indicate that the first arriving Americans were aghast when their tank column rolled into the square and observed a large, out-of-control mob throwing rocks and shooting at the bodies, among other desecrations. The American cleared the space around the gas station and ordered Italian Partisans to remove the bodies to an Allied controlled morgue. Exactly which Americans were involved in this action remains murky. The event was filmed by a Stars and Stripes (the armed forces newspaper) photographer embedded with Harold's reconnaissance unit as they entered Milan's Piazelle Loreto, where the gas station was located, around 2:00pm on April 29. The Piazelle Loreto had great symbolic meaning for Italian anti-fascists. In 1944, 15 partisans were murdered and their bodies were dumped in the square by Il Duce's paramilitary henchmen. (Luzzato S. The Body of Il Duce: Mussolini's Corpse and the Fortunes of Italy. New York: Henry Holt and Company. 2014)*

May 15, 1945. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"The war being over in Europe seems pretty wonderful, but somehow I have failed to get excited. Either I don't realize it really happening or I have sense enough to know that there is still a long stretch ahead of us in the Pacific. Everyone is filling out their points scorecard for getting out of the army. Practically none of the fellows here have enough points unless they are back from overseas. That is as it should be. I like to see the boys overseas getting a break, and then have the big jerks here have to sweat out going to the Pacific. I am anxious to know if

Harold will get out now. As far as points are concerned, he should be sitting pretty for a discharge. I hope he doesn't get noble now, and decide to volunteer for the South Pacific."

May 30, 1945. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"Still no letters from Harold. Guess I shouldn't expect one yet, but I am not a patient waiter. He is going to get just as many letters back as he writes from now on as he can't be any busier than I am. It was allright to overlook lack of letters while he was in the thick of it, but not now."

June 14, 1945. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"Did something unusual last night that I enjoyed very much. A group of the medic boys at Bradley were going to a baseball game, and they asked if any of the medic WACs wanted to go along. I thought it would be fun for a change. Went to ballpark via a Burma Road truck, one of those big ones with benches on the sides and a canvas cover. There were ten medic guys and four of us medic WACs. That proportion would be a boost to recruiting, but some of them are married, and we have worked with them so long in the hospital that the romantic angle is long gone. Anyway, it was a good game. Williamsport, PA won over Hartford by the score of 2-1. We came back to base in the truck and stopped off at a nice roadside restaurant for a snack. A bunch of us had banana splits, which should do things to my waistline."

June 29, 1945. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"The New York Times yesterday reported a list of the divisions that would make up the Occupational Army for Germany and the 1st Armored Division [Harold's Division] *was listed. I guess that is better than fighting the Japs, but I should think that 3 years overseas is enough. Based on the article, I imagine Harold is coming home for 30 days furlough, and then will go back to Europe. Seems a bit stupid to shift men who fought Germans in Italy to the occupation of Germany. I was sorry to hear about* ***Mrs. Hendricson being so upset****. I wonder if Harold being home for a short time will help any? I hope Mr. H can induce her to finally see a doctor. There are shots and other means to counter that sort of thing. I hate to think of Harold coming home to any discord. He has been through a lot and his recent letters seem to have a fairly healthy outlook on life.* **Comment:** In this excerpt from a June 29, 1945 letter and other letters not excerpted, Mildred commented on a mental health affliction that Harold's mother experienced in the spring and summer of 1945, which apparently contributed to considerable tension within the household. The symptoms appear to be consistent with acute anxiety induced by an apparently exaggerated account of wounds her son reportedly received in the final days of the war. Harold was wounded the day before the 5th Army crossed the Po River south of Milan, effectively ending the German resistance. However, the injury did not require transfer to a rear medical unit, and as described previously he was at the front of an armored column that entered Milan on April 29, 1945. His parents somehow received word that he had been burned, leaving disfiguring scars, which was false. It's possible they confabulated a report of a craniofacial injury he experienced when a cement tank hatch slammed into his head, which happened more than a year earlier, with the wound he experienced the day before crossing the Po River.

July 27, 1945. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"Had a letter from that Captain. [In the spring of 1945, Harold was promoted to Captain]. *The letter was written back in June, which seems like it took a long time getting here considering it*

was airmail. He seemed to be in good enough spirits, although not too happy about being declared as essential and getting stuck in the Army of Occupation. He did not mention any wounds and the scars must not be as serious as Mrs. H was led to believe. I think if they were permanently disfiguring he would have told me."

August 18, 1945. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"So, Harold is home. *I'll bet his mother is walking on air and his dad is trying to act indifferent, and not doing so good at that. It makes a person feel good that the army finally got around to bringing someone home that really deserved it. I imagine he is tired and will probably notice it more now that he is home and can just relax for a while. Just can't seem to realize that the war is all over. Think I will go to church tomorrow as I feel as you do that church is the place to celebrate a victory such as this. I have been a bit disgusted with the WAC girls here as they do not feel that way, and many of them celebrated for three days – every night they got stupid drunk right here on base. Tuesday night I did not get to sleep until 4am, so I jumped at the chance the next day to go to New York for two nights. New York was much calmer and practically back to normal except the streets still had lots of parade paper on them and the food supply in restaurants was running low. There were about six policemen every block around Times Square to say nothing of lots of MPs and SPS."* **Comment:** As evidenced by a flurry of letters shortly after the August 18 letter excerpted above and, apparently, a long phone conversation with her parents, Mildred was quite dismayed by Harold's sudden appearance in Walla^2 (dismay likely does not capture the extent of her emotions), and even more distraught about his lack of communication with her about the furlough back to the States. Little is known about how Harold got home so rapidly other than he arrived on a ship in Florida in early August and, presumably, traveled by train to Walla^2. While in Florida, he apparently called his mother, Mabel, to let her know he was heading home. Mabel called Maude and Archie when her son arrived. Sensing her daughter's distress about the situation, Maude arranged a phone call between Harold and Mildred on August 27, 1945. Mildred's letters do not describe the conversation, other than saying that it *"helped me straighten things out and brought me back to earth."* Subsequent to this call, which was the first time they had talked to each other in four years, Harold and Mildred seemingly went their separate ways for an extended period of time. However ... as we already know, they eventually re-connected when both were back in the Walla^2 full time, and were married November 16, 1946, a whirlwind rekindling of the relationship.

October 1, 1945. Army Air Force WAC Detachment, Bradley Field, Connecticut

"Well, it's official, I ***am going to Westover Field****, up in Massachusetts. I will work on the same financial account I am managing down here at Bradley Hospital, which is what I wanted. Makes a person feel good that their work was good enough that another base requested me."*

Comment: After the end of the Pacific war in August, 1945, Mildred and the other WACs at Bradley heard a variety of rumors concerning their relocation because Bradley Air Field and the base hospital were being deactivated. Most of the rumors involved bases in either Virginia or South Carolina, neither of which were appealing to Mildred. The assignment in Westover also included a promotion to Corporal.

October 22, 1945. 112th WAC AAF Brigade, Westover Field, Massachusetts

"All settled in at Westover. I am writing this in my own room, which I was fortunate to get. Everyone here has been simply grand. The Captain who is CO of the WACs at Westover, and the other officers I work for have gone out of their way to make me comfortable. None of the Captain and Major to Corporal stuff here, and my direct boss at the hospital, Major Baglia, has the grandest sense of humor. I have my own office in the hospital and am the only WAC working in the admin of this Hospital. I also will not have to do much of my own typing when doing account reports as there are two civilian typists available."

November 9, 1945. 112th WAC AAF Brigade, Westover Field, Massachusetts

"I checked on my points at the orderly room yesterday, and as I suspected, I'm still stuck on 26. Unfortunately, the Army deducted the two months that I was deferred in 1943." [Mildred was allowed to defer WAC boot camp by two months so she could complete the spring semester at the high school where she was teaching.] *"My account report is due tomorrow, and I seriously hope I can find the $1.63 that is keeping it from balancing. I have been awfully busy getting the hospital account straightened out, so I know I haven't been writing as often. Between my **two boy friends** and the accounting job, I never have a dull moment."* **Comment:** During the fall of 1945, Mildred *"had an Air Force fella"* by the name of Leonard Hardy, also stationed at Bradley, that she met on a WAC sightseeing trip to Springfield, Massachusetts. Leonard was her movie and dinner partner on weekends, and another "fella" by the name of Jerry Summers, stationed at Westover, played the same role during the week.

November 19, 1945. 112th WAC AAF Brigade, Westover Field, Massachusetts

*"So, I gather from your recent letter that Harold made an inquiry about me via his mother. Well, did he. I will be home one of these days when my points allow it. **When he gets home**, he can look over what the Army has done for me. Frankly, I think it is an improvement. I have a great deal more self-confidence now, and I am certainly independent, and capable of taking care of myself, and sure have shown that I can handle a whole bunch of different kinds of work in the Army. Don't be too harsh in your judgment of Harold. We will never know many of the awful things that happened to him, that he carries with him I'm sure, probably always will carry. And please, I hope you can continue to be friendly with Harold's parents. Don't let Harold and my differences change your attitude, and I hope Mr. and Mrs. Hendricson's difficulties have been ironed out, now that the war is over.* **Comment:** Harold's six-month Army of Occupation assignment in Germany should have ended in December 1945, but it is unclear when he departed the Army of Occupation in Germany, and eventually arrived in Walla[2].

December 18, 1945. WAC AAF Separation Center. Fort Dix, New Jersey. Letter number 259 in the collection saved by her parents.

*"Well, I'm here at Fort Dix in New Jersey going through the **separation process**. Dix is not far from Philadelphia. They have taken away my extra uniform, checked that I have transportation home and asked me where to send my mustering out pay. It's colder than the blazes here – I haven't been warm since I got here, and the bad weather is going to continue, plus terrible traveling conditions. There is blizzard between here and Chicago, makes me wonder if I will make it home by Christmas. I am scheduled to depart Philadelphia on December 20, so it is doubtful. If I think it is too much of a risk of getting stuck somewhere like Chicago on the way, I*

can go back to Westover, and stay until the weather clears up. I number of my friends will be up there at Christmas. Actually, they asked me to stay on for a while to help the civilian who took over my accounts as she is scared of all the bookkeeping. Lots of WAC girls I knew at Bradley and Eagle Pass are here waiting like me to get out. It's fun to see all one's old friends."

Comment: Bowing to pressure from parents and spouses of servicemen to reduce the discharge points, the U.S. Army suddenly dropped the point threshold for GIs and WACs in early December 1945 as a "Christmas gift to the nation." *(Bamford, 2010)* Most of the one million men and women who benefitted from the decision were thrilled, but many, especially those stationed in the States, were caught off guard, and were less excited. Many GIs and WACs had no immediate plans for civilian life, and consequently, were looking forward to military pay, food, and housing for several additional months until they could solidify their next steps. I do not know where Mildred stood on this issue, but based on the tone of her final letters, it seems that she may have welcomed a few more months in the military. Mildred seemed to be especially enjoying her post-war assignment at Westover Field. Mildred did not get home by Christmas due to bad weather. She and two other Westover WACS took a bus back to their former base for the holidays, where she did additional work in the hospital accounting department, receiving civilian pay, for approximately six weeks

Mildred finally returned to Walla[2] in February 1946. She gained acceptance into graduate school at Washington State College (WSC) for the summer semester 1946 to complete coursework toward a postgraduate degree and renewal of her teaching certificate. When Mildred and Harold reconnected sometime in the spring of 1946, she decided to not re-enroll at WSC.

Harold and Mildred's wedding day: November 16, 1946. First Congregational Church, Walla Walla, Washington.

Going to Ballgames – William Dennis Hendricson (1948 -)

My father, Harold Hendricson, and I shared the same birthday, November 4, which I think provided a reason for us to sustain a closer relationship than perhaps we would have otherwise, due to rather sharp differences in personality, temperament, and communication style. Given my Dad's aggressiveness in pursuing career-enhancing assignments in the Army, and his willingness to go literally anywhere on special TDY (i.e., temporary duty) assignments, which often took him places where spouses and dependents could not go such as Lebanon, Korea, and Venezuela, he was not around much during my childhood. Additionally, the bulk of his career as an officer in armored (i.e., tank) divisions took place during the height of the Cold War with Russia. The central premise of U.S. military strategy in the 1950s and 1960s was that Russia would unleash a massive ground attack spearheaded by Russian tank divisions through a wide valley that ran from East Germany's border with Poland to Frankfurt in central Germany known as the Fulda Gap. Consequently, he was constantly away from home during the many years we lived in Europe participating in weeks-long War Games at locations not even known to my mother, preparing to repel an invading Russian horde. *(McCauley M. Russia, America and the Cold War, 1949-1991. Harlow, UK: Pearson Education Publishing. 2008)*

Because of his awayness, my primary childhood memories of my dad are related to the countless 3,000-mile coast-to-coast car trips that occurred before and after each of his stateside or European assignments, and also our guys-only road trips to ballgames when we were stationed in the U.S.. During cross country car journeys, which always occurred in summer or early fall, my Dad calculated routes and daily driving distances based on location of ballparks where major league baseball (MLB) games could be seen. Thus, a family car trip from New York or Virginia to the West Coast would proceed slowly at first, only 200-300 miles a day, because of stops in D.C., Cleveland, Detroit or especially Chicago to see games. Once clear of Chicago, the last MLB outpost on the way to the state of Washington in the 1950s and 60s, the goal was to cover as many miles as possible, up to 700 per day, to make up time, departing at dawn and not pulling into a motor court (i.e. a motel) until well after dark, and only after checking the rates and inspecting the rooms at each of the 3-4 motels that might exist in a smallish town in the vast expanse between Chicago and Walla Walla.

The MLB ballpark visitations on the cross-country drives were Bill and Harold ventures; my mom and Shirley were left to soak up the ambiance of that evening's motor court and prepare and consume a meal in the room; my mom always traveled with a two burner hot plate and ample grocery supplies. Cross-country routes were also modified on the fly during the drive in order to pick up low wattage AM stations, which operated with a 50 to 75 mile range, that were broadcasting MLB games during the daytime. Afternoon ballgames were a common occurrence in that era. For example, a 1960 drive from Walla Walla to my dad's next assignment at Fort Monroe, Virginia corresponded with the Yankees – Pirates World Series, which took place from October 5 to October 13, all day games. My role on game days during that trip was to find stations on the car radio that were carrying the game, and when the signal started to fade after 45 minutes or so, quickly find another station in a town that we were driving toward that was broadcasting the game, and if one couldn't be found, alert my mom, so she could unfold her roadmap in the backseat and chart an alternate route toward a town big enough to have a

station with the game. Much of that trip was spent zigzagging all over the map in search of a signal until we got to the Chicago area and the other big cities of the East with high wattage AM stations. As evident from the dates of that particular trip, Shirley and I were not in school before or during the trip. In fact, we missed nearly two months of the fall semester that year, which was not an unusual occurrence. Between the 2nd grade and my senior year in high school, we received a geographic education versus a classroom education at least five times as our family crossed the country by car in September and October.

My dad also initiated ball game trips when we were not on extended, between assignment, road trips, but were ensconced in our current place of residence. At an early age, I learned that these trips usually were scheduled in advance of an upcoming announcement of a relocation to another Army base. So, if my dad and I drove up to New York to see the Yankees or Mets play (and not one game, but an entire 3-4 game series) or to Philadelphia for an Army-Navy football game, or to Chicago and Washington D.C. to see MLB All-Star Games, or to Munich in Germany to see the Harlem Globetrotters or barnstorming post-season MLB teams play, it was reasonably certain that an imminent departure to a new army base, a new town and a new school would be soon forthcoming. To be honest, from my perspective, it was a good trade-off. By the 3rd grade, my normal expectation already was: new year, new school, new classmates. Getting to see the Yankees in their 1950s prime at the original Yankee Stadium, getting to see Sandy Koufax of the LA Dodgers, in his almost unhittable prime, pitch against the Mets in the old Polo Grounds, getting to watch Wilt Chamberlain dunk up close from a baseline seat, or soaking up the pageantry that accompanied Army-Navy games were galvanizing experiences for me, and undoubtedly forged my lifelong love of sports, in spite of my limited athletic capacities.

There are moments in your life that that make such an impression that they literally create their own little synaptic network in your brain; i.e., they crystallize a moment that is forever captured in a way that enables retrieval of visual images (photographs in your brain), but also sounds and even a sense of one's own emotions in that moment. *(Feldman DH. Beyond Universals in Cognitive Development. New York: Ablex Publishing Corporation. 1994)* For me, one such crystallizing moment occurred during one of the aforementioned Mets-Dodgers game. Sandy Koufax was cruising toward his 19th win in what would ultimately be a 25-5 season for him, allowing just 3 hits with one out in the 9th, and the Dodgers up 3-0. With much of the crowd heading already heading for exits, the Mets Rod Kanehl, a .240 hitter across his brief, three-year MLB career, managed to bloop a single just over the second baseman's glove, which fluttered to the turf as paper debris from the departing crowd swirled in the Polo Grounds outfield. The next batter, Ron Hunt, who had hit only 38 homeruns across a 14 year MLB career, did just that – he ripped Koufax's first pitch deep into the right field bleachers, and suddenly it was 3-2. That was more than 50 years ago, and I still carry the crystallized remembrance with me: the eerie silence that ensued as if fans were silently pondering the likelihood of what they just saw rather than viscerally reacting, the dust swirls kicked up by Hunt as he excitedly raced around the bases, tripping over third base, stumbling, and righting himself to literally dance to the plate, and perhaps most poignantly, looking over and seeing my Dad with the biggest grin and his hands raised high over his head, oddly enough in the classic touchdown display. The pathetic Mets, who lost 120 games the year before, and would eventually lose 111 that year, had a chance to beat the mighty Dodgers. The next batter also got a hit, the following guy walked,

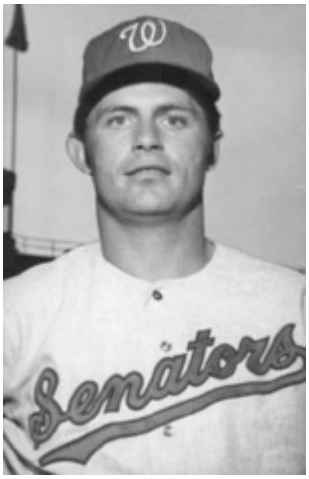
and Koufax was pulled from the game, a very rare circumstance, but the Dodgers reliever managed to get the second and third outs, and the Mets rally ended in yet another defeat. I've always associated that particular moment with my lifelong predilection for rooting for inept, perpetually losing teams, and out-of-favor causes.

In addition to road trips to games, Harold Hendricson closely followed local teams wherever we lived, especially in baseball, and purchased season tickets, even for lowly minor league teams. When we lived in Hampton, Virginia, near his assignment at Fort Monroe, my dad and I attended countless games of the Peninsula Grays, a Class A affiliate of the Washington Senators with our spool of one dollar per game season tickets, which we tore off and handed to the gatekeeper when entering the park, much like the coupons exchanged for turkey legs and hot dogs at a carnival food booth. Seating was first come, first serve, so we always arrived way early as my dad loved to sit in the front row near the Grays dugout. He had an agenda.

Each game, Harold would pick out a Grays player, and heckle him for the entire evening, starting with batting practice before the game, and continuing through the contest. Whenever the anointed player came to the plate, he would hear it from Harold, until ... my dad fell asleep, which usually occurred in the 6th or 7th inning, after about 90 minutes of play (games were faster in the 60s). His heckles were not especially original or creative, but delivered with gusto:, *Unser ... you're a bum, Brinkman .. you're a clutz*, or for slight variety, *Casanova .. you can't hit, or Epstein .. go back to Class B* (a lower league). But for his primary target who received a Harold heckle every game, a big slugger by the name of Brant Alyea, he yelled: "*Alyea .. can you do it tonight*?" After Alyea had heard that somewhat ambiguous query a few times early in the season, he walked over to the stands between innings and asked my dad, *"so, what does that mean?* My dad responded, *"we're just hoping for a homer, big guy."* Alyea, a pleasant sort, replied that he would try to oblige. By mid-season, Alyea and my dad would banter back and forth almost every game, unless my dad was asleep when the Grays slugger wandered over to our seats. In that case, Alyea would say to me something like, *"don't want to mess up the old guy's sleep, but you might nudge him when I come up this inning,"* followed by observations that *"he was feeling lucky this time"*, or *"I got this guy (i.e., the pitcher) figured out,"* or *"the wind turned and is blowing out now",* or other hopeful proclamations. I was always dumbstruck that a very large professional baseball player was talking to me, and probably only mustered a nod, or at best, "okay," but do remember being quizzical, if not concerned, about his observation that my dad was an old man; he was barely 40 at the time.

I remember my mom commenting on more than one occasion that baseball games relaxed my dad, or *"let him unspool and forget his worries".* The shoebox that contained the 259 letters that my mom wrote to her parents during WWII (see pages 330-346) also contained several letters she wrote to her parents during 1951-1952 when Harold was training at Fort Knox, Kentucky to serve as a tank commander in the Korean War. Apparently, it was a stressful training, full of exams, tank maneuvering tests and gunnery assessments. She commented a couple of times that she encouraged Harold to drive the family to Cincinnati and Chicago to take in ballgames in order to *"just get away and relax."* After returning from these ballpark jaunts, she commented in subsequent letters, *"that was such a good idea"*, or "*what a relaxing weekend."* Something about the vibe of the ballpark and the game itself was apparently calming for my dad, a man known for his intensity.

A side note: *All of the Peninsula Grays players that heard the Hendricson heckle at the little ballpark in Hampton, Virginia made it to the major leagues. Del Unser was an outfielder for the Senators and Philadelphia Phillies for 14 years and played in the 1980 World Series. Eddie Brinkman was a shortstop that played 14 years for the Senators and the Detroit Tigers, won Golden Glove awards (for fielding skill) and was named to All-Star teams. Paul Casanova was a Cuban catcher who experienced much racism as a minor league player in the small southern towns that comprised the Carolina League where the Grays played. After a season in the Negro League, Casanova had a successful 10-year career in the majors with the Senators and the Atlanta Braves. Mike Epstein, one of the few Jewish players in the MLB in that era, had a nine year career in MLB with five teams, once hitting 30 homers in a season with Senators and played in the 1972 World Series with the Oakland Athletics. Brant Alyea made it to MLB with the Senators in 1965 and hit a home run on the first pitch thrown to him in a major league game, one of only nine players ever to do so. He played seven MLB seasons with four teams.*



After several years in the minor leagues, Brant Alyea reached the Major Leagues as a rookie for the Washington Senators in 1965. In his best season, for the Minnesota Twins in 1970, he batted .291, hit 16 home runs and had 62 RBIs. In addition to his play in MLB, Alyea was a star player in the Caribbean Winter Leagues for many years, playing for teams in Venezuela that twice won the Caribbean World Series.

Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 9/24/2024.

And so, in the spring of 1961 while we were living in Hampton, my dad read that the Baltimore Colts, a perennial top team in the 1950s and 1960s NFL and the Washington Redskins, a perennial bottom-feeder in the league, but the local favorite as the NFL's "Squad of the South" had signed a contract with the city of Norfolk, Virginia to stage a preseason exhibition game. The data of the game, August 26, 1961, was marked on our family events calendar, and he announced that we were going. At first, the plan was for all four of us to attend the game, but for reasons lost to me, only my dad and I made the journey across the Hampton Roads Bridge – Tunnel Highway to Norfolk and the stadium located on the campus of William and Mary – South Division, now Old Dominion University. Hampton is on the north side and Norfolk is on the south side of the large bay known as Hampton Roads, which serves as the mouth of the James River and two smaller rivers in Virginia.

A bit of stage setting is needed at this point as a lead-in to the events of August 26, 1961. On drives to and from the ball games, the conversation was typically limited to expectations for the upcoming game, discussion of the game we were about to see or just saw, my school work, and my efforts on whatever athletic team I was currently playing on, not my favorite topic as my successes were episodic. Or, we just listened to the radio. Sometimes, my dad had an agenda for the trip. For example, on one drive to New York in 1960 to see an Army (West Point) football

game against Syracuse, he spent considerable time talking about Syracuse's star player, Ernie Davis, and how he had been mistreated in the previous years Cotton Bowl game by University of Texas players that yelled racial taunts at him, and repeatedly hit him late after the ref's whistle stopped the play. Throughout the game, Texas players also spit at other Black players on the Syracuse team, and yelled racial slurs at the line of scrimmage to try to get Syracuse players to jump offside. *(Cosgrove B. LIFE at the 1960 Cotton Bowl: "Battle of the Hardnoses." Time. www.time.com. January 2, 2014. Accessed: September 29, 2024).* My dad seemed to be particularly offended by this behavior because Davis was a member of the Syracuse ROTC, and had been selected by the Syracuse ROTC Director to serve as corps commander. Davis was commissioned as a Second Lieutenant the day before his Syracuse graduation, wore his army uniform at graduation, and pledged to only sign with an NFL team that would help him fulfill his military commitment after graduation, all of which obviously impressed my dad. (*Syracuse University News. Stories of Service: Ernie Davis '62. www.news.syr.edu. November 24, 2020. Accessed: September 28, 2024*)

2nd Lt. Ernie Davis at his graduation day from Syracuse University.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 9/28/2024.

We got to Yankee Stadium hours before kickoff so we could watch the Army Plebe team (freshmen) play the Syracuse frosh team on a field outside the stadium. I remember it as foggy and drizzly, an all around dreary morning, with the game played on a muddy field that had barely visible yard lines. There were no bleachers and the only fans in attendance were a handful of people who were probably players' parents and a few members of the Army and Syracuse varsity teams, likely assigned by coaches to show-up and encourage their younger classmates. Somehow, my dad knew that Davis would be one of the Syracuse varsity on hand that morning, and he quickly picked him out, and set off on a beeline toward him. It was several heartbeats before I noticed he had departed our spot on the sidelines, and puzzled, I cautiously following behind. Contextual note: my dad always wore his dress green uniform to Army football games. As my dad strode quickly toward Davis, who was standing in a tracksuit on the sidelines, the famed player turned to look, and perhaps surprised by an approaching uniformed officer, offered an awkward salute. By the time I caught up with this duo, my dad was sharing his displeasure with the racist behavior of Davis' Cotton Bowl opponents and said he would never tolerate such a display in his army units. I couldn't hear Davis' response, but my dad said later that Lt. Davis, as my dad called him, expressed the notion that those some of those boys had not been brought up properly while others just got carried away by the intensity of the contest, which Syracuse won 23-14. In the Cotton Bowl game, Davis caught a short pass and

ran it 87 yards for a touchdown, intercepted a pass and ran it back for a touchdown, and ran for a third TD, earning game MVP honors. *(Cosgrove, 2014)*

Davis wore number 44 at Syracuse in honor of his idol and mentor, Jim Brown, also an All-American in Lacrosse and football for the Orangemen. Between 1957 and 1967, four consecutive Syracuse running backs were selected as All-Americans and were first round NFL draft picks: Brown, Davis, Floyd Little and Larry Csonka.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 10/2/2024.

After standing around on the edge of their conversation, I eventually was introduced to Lt. Davis, shook his hand, and recall thinking that he was not decidedly taller than I was but ever so much larger in every other way, and I probably managed to mumble a barely coherent greeting. During conversation about the freshmen game unfolding before us, the punter for the Army plebes miss-hit his kick and the ball waffled to our side of the field and landed with a splush in a muddy puddle, not too far from our little group. I recall jogging over to the ball, perhaps imaging myself hurling it back to the approaching referee in a tight spiral, impressing one and all, especially Lt. Davis. I'm speculating here as I do not remember my thoughts as I picked up the muddy football, but I undoubtedly also visualized throwing a wobbly, "wounded duck" that twirled over the ref's head or landed far to his side. Then, as now, I didn't have the capacity to throw a football that didn't flutter and tumble. So, instead of a majestic heave, I scooped up the ball and walked it over to the ref, handing it to him with a glob of mud on the top, which I tried to wipe off at the last moment, and managed to fling the goop onto the top of my shoe, leaving myself with muddy fingers. The reaction of the All-American and my dad when I rejoined them is a thankfully lost memory. At the very least, I suppose they shared some level of bemusement.

Soon after, Ernie Davis found an excuse to move away from us and strolled back toward the Syracuse bench. During the varsity game that afternoon played in a steady and cold rain, the Army defenders swarmed all over Davis, but he had a strong game, rushing for 111 yards, intercepting a pass and making numerous tackles. In that era, the best players played both offense and defense. In an upset, Army won the game 9-6. On the way home, the point was made several times that the military was way ahead of society in treating everybody equally, and my dad bet that those Texas boys were not ROTC material like Ernie Davis. I was also questioned about going to an all-White school for the first time, which probably did not elicit a response laced with insight. Hampton, Virginia schools were segregated in 1960, while the Department of Defense schools I attended previously were integrated. I also learned how my dad knew Ernie Davis would be at the Plebe game. He had read an article in the *Army Times* newsmagazine about Davis' ROTC activities, which included supporting freshmen ROTC members who were football players at their games.

A side note: *In 1961, Ernie Davis was the first Black player to win the Heisman Trophy. He was selected first in the NFL draft by the Washington Redskins, who promptly traded him to Cleveland in a deal that will be visited later in this story. Cleveland and Davis worked out an*

arrangement for fulfillment of his military obligations while playing professional football, and the team made provisions for him to room during training camp and road games with his idol, Jim Brown, the Hall-of-Fame running back. However, Ernie Davis was diagnosed with leukemia shortly after and died at the age of 23 without ever playing in the NFL. (Gallagher RC. The Express: The Ernie Davis Story. New York: Ballantine Books. 2008)

With the context of the Ernie Davis interaction in mind, let's re-join the trip to the Redskins-Colts exhibition game in Norfolk on August 26, 1961, which was sponsored by the Norfolk Kiwanis Club and advertised as the Kiwanis Bowl. Soon after my dad and I began the drive over the Hampton Roads Causeway toward Norfolk and the game site, it became apparent that this would be another "agenda" trip. After no more then a few minutes on the road, we pulled up at an information center at the start of the five-mile bridge across the bay. Wandering around to the side of the building, my dad stood for an uncomfortable number of seconds staring at two side-by-side water fountains, both poorly maintained and gnarly looking. I remember thinking, *"we're not going to drink out of those are we,"* not something that I would utter out loud to my dad, especially when he had an edgy demeanor as he did that day. However, his focus was elsewhere, as he eventually pointed to a sign above the rusty, stained fountains: "White", and "Colored," and offered, *"Quite a world we live in, huh?"* He then strolled over to the adjacent doors that had the same signs. After a few moments of silence, he asked: *"you gotta whiz"* to which I quickly demurred, eliciting, *"suit yourself,"* his standard, I hear your answer but don't necessarily like it or belief it, and we tromped back to the car and took off over the causeway toward Norfolk. I've always pondered what his game plan was for our restroom stroll, but my passivity may have sidetracked attainment of the teachable moment he hoped to create.

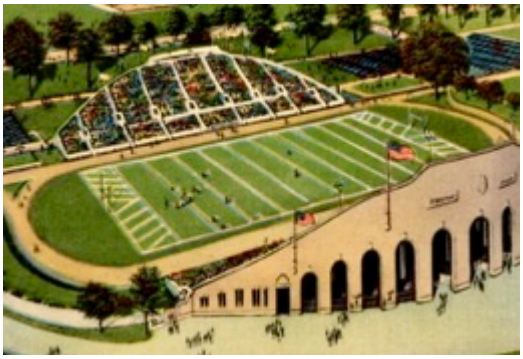
Jim Crow societal rules were still in play in southern Virginia in the early 1960s.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 9/25/2024.

Arriving at the stadium, quite early per usual, dad steered his prized Mercedes 200c into the White Only sector of the parking lot and parked tail-in along the chain link fence dividing the White and Colored lots. He liked to watch the other cars rolling into ballgame park lots, and would relocate our car if he didn't like the looks of somebody parking near us. During this observation, we settled in for his requisite pregame cig break, which turned into several smokes as we watched a steady stream of cars pull into the White lot to the point of being full, but no cars parked in Colored lot behind us. Finally, we left the 200c and headed for S.B. Ballard Stadium, as it was called then. The only thing I remember my dad saying was, and I'm paraphrasing here, something to the effect of, *"this might be a scene on the way; stay near me."* Excited to see my first game between NFL teams, especially one involving the Baltimore Colts, a powerhouse team with many stars such as Johnny Unitas and Lenny Moore, and a

famous coach, Don Shula, I probably assumed he meant the big crowd swarming toward the stadium.

And indeed, it was a large onslaught of people, who funneled into one fairly narrow walkway from the parking lot into the stadium. As we moved through the congestion, I stayed behind my dad who was effective at pushing and weaving his way through ballgame crowds, but this clump of people was moving particularly slowly that night, and was strangely quiet; no din of excited hub-bub that was the norm for fans heading to a ballgame. When the mass of people thinned out a bit, I popped around beside him, and saw one of those sights that are not forgotten, likely made more vivid by the fact that it was dark and the walkway was only illuminated by streetlamps, with moving shadows everywhere, which always seems to dramatize a memory, for me at least.

Johnny Unitas, Don Shula and Lenny Moore of the 1960s Baltimore Colts, three of the biggest stars of the NFL in that era.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 9/25/2024.



S.B. Ballard Stadium, later renamed Foreman Field, in Norfolk, site of the Colts vs. Redskins exhibition game on August 26, 1961. The stadium had 21,000 uncomfortable bleacher seats.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 9/23/2024.

On the right side of the walkway were lines of White people, three or four deep, extending many yards all the way to the ticket gate, virtually all men, stone silent, intently staring across the walkway at a much smaller line of Black people, about equal numbers of men and women, and some of the later were holding hand-made signs with slogans about segregation. There was a small knot of people at the center of that line, dressed up in church clothes, chatting among themselves, just about the only ones on either side doing any talking. I remember no yelling or haranguing from either side, and the ballgame crowd plodded ahead solemnly at a snail's pace much like cars slowing to check out a wreck on the side of a road.

Dutifully trying to keep moving ahead as directed, I lost sight of my dad who had abruptly peeled off to the left. Realizing I was no longer with him, I did a 360 look-around and spotted him shaking hands with the well-dressed Black picketers. Moving against the crowd's current, I made my way over to where the little clutch was huddled, now deep in amicable conversation.

Standing outside a ring of conversing adults was my 12 year-old norm, and so I waiting until my dad acknowledged my presence and initiated the obligatory introductions. First, Marie Young, a Black women about my dad's age, identified as the organizer of the picket line, another women, whose last name was Butt, which likely registered a bit in my adolescent cognition, and a man introduced as a lawyer and the leader of an important organization I had never heard of. I didn't hear the man's name because at that exact moment, another kid ran by, a White boy about my age, and ripped a newly purchased Colts hat from head, running away into the crowd. Surprised into non-action other than rubbing my now hatless head, the group looked at me quizzically, until my dad finally said something like .. *"Well, don't just stand there, go get it back"*, or words to that effect.

This command at least got me to spin around and eyeball the crowd moving past us, as I probably pondered the almost certain failure of such an effort. A few moments of silence ensued. I remember the women named Butt observing, perhaps to add some levity to the moment, that *"for sure, that boy didn't run over to this side",* waving at the smallish entourage of Black sign holders. I likely remained sufficiently paralyzed that the man from the important organization offered that the young thief most likely was attending the game with his parents and perhaps it would be easier to spot him and my hat inside the stadium, which my dad agreed was reasonable. However, my dad directed me to at least go check *"behind those guys on the other side"* because he thought he saw a bunch of kids running around over there when we walked in. I recall that I did uncomfortably wedge my way through the line-up of White men who were doing their best to glare at the black protesters. Given my pre-teen approach to problem resolution, I undoubtedly did not want to find the kid with my swiped hat because that would lead to a confrontation I almost assuredly would not handle well. As in dreams where you jump from place to place without explanation or connections, I don't remember how I reconnected with my dad and got into the stadium, but the purloined hat was not found outside the stadium, and no effort was expended that I can recall to locate the culprit or cap after we took our seats. I imagine my dad felt the theft was a distraction to his intended agenda for the evening, and I probably was more focused on how he knew those people on the sidewalk outside the stadium.

The only memory I have of events inside the stadium that night was that my dad broke the silence code during the national anthem. While a band was playing, and a singer was belting out the verse, he asked me what I noticed about the Redskin and Colt players lined up on the opposite sides of the field. I remember him making a big left to right sweeting motion with his arm, I guess encouraging me to scan the line-ups. The anthem dialogue and gesturing were memorable because even when he was in his civvies, as he was that night, he always stood silently, ramrod erect, eyes fixated on the flag, with hand over heart ... except that night. I know I didn't provide the response he expected, e.g., the Redskins are all White, or the Colts have Black players and the Redskins don't. Instead, I think I offered that both teams looked kind of sloppy and some of the uniforms were dirty. We were sitting down low behind the Colts bench, which afforded a good view of their grooming and attire. Not hearing what he wanted, the response was filled in for me, with a comment I do recall, *"that's what all the fuss is about out there"* punctuated with a rather aggressive thumb over his shoulder gesture in reference to the walk into the stadium. And, that's the last thing I remember about the events of the night other

than a vague notion that the Redskins got stomped, an accurate recollection; the Colts won 41-7. The details of the game, the walk out of the stadium (were the Black protesters with signs still there?) and the drive home have regressed into the fog of unretrievable memory.

I don't know if my dad was discontent with my naiveté and obliviousness to THE social issue of that era, or if he was reconciled to my preteen sensibilities. However, my experiences at that game did have an effect, in unexpected ways. Although I was a "baseball kid" up until that game, which occurred amidst America's fixation on the great Home Run Chase between Roger Maris and Mickey Mantle of the 1961 Yankees, my favorite team, I found myself attracted to the lowly, inept Redskins and followed them closely through their 1-12-1 season that year, the only victory on the final Sunday, over the newly franchised and equally pathetic Dallas Cowboys. Following the "Skins" as almost everybody called them back then, an ironic identifier given the team's racial circumstances, led me to the person who helped me better understand the implications of my dad's question during the national anthem: a sportswriter for 76 years (1922-1998) with the *Washington Post* newspaper by the name of Shirley Povich.

This sportswriter, a guy BTW, covered the Senators and Skins intensely in his daily column, *This Morning With Shirley Povich*, which always appeared in the left column of the first page of the *Post's* sports section. He was the *Post's* Sports Editor-in-Chief for 48 years, and also was a lead editorial writer and essayist on Civil Rights and de-segregation in athletics and society in the paper's Opinion and Editorial Section. In his seven decades with the *Post*, he wrote more than 12,000 columns, feature articles and essays, and won a Pulitzer prize for literature. In 1947, Povich wrote a 15 article series on the societal impact of Major League Baseball's failure to de-segregate, entitled, *No More Shutouts,* that is widely credited with prompting Branch Rickey to finally sign Jackie Robinson to a MLB contract with the Brooklyn Dodgers, and for shaming other foot-dragging owners into long overdue desegregation. On the day that Robinson played his first game for the Dodgers, Povich wrote: *"Four hundred and fifty-five years after Columbus eagerly but accidently bumped into a little Caribbean island and discovered America, the Major Leagues reluctantly discovered the American Negro." (Povich SL. All Those Mornings at the Post. New York: Perseus Books Group. 1994)*

Shirley Povich's scathing attacks on the racist policies of the Washington Redskins franchise in the National Football League were instrumental in galvanizing public opinion against segregation in professional sports and forcing the federal government to take action.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 9/30/2024.

One of the fortunate happenings in my young life was when my parents, tired of the ultra-conservative and segregation-supporting leanings of the local paper in Hampton, Virginia, elected to subscribe to the suburban edition of the *Post*, which led me to Povich's no-hold's barred criticism of the Skin's shabby play, delivered with humor and irony, and his all-out war with the segregationist owner of the team, George Preston Marshall.

A side note: *Povich was one of the main catalysts for my fascination with writing. I remember trying to mimic his witty yet "these are the facts" style of writing in middle school reports, often with a net effect of pleasing myself with my clever narrative and enabling my perplexed teacher's to write "C" on many of them, as in, "next time – try to address the main topic of the assignment." Some of Povich's observations about the "lily-white, segregated representatives of our nation's capital," as he often called them, appear below.*

Today, the Redskins took the field in their traditional colors – burgundy, gold and Caucasian.

Jim Brown, born ineligible to play for the Redskins, integrated their end zone three times today.

The Redskins' end zone has frequently been integrated by Negro players, but never their lineup.

At least the Redskins' have one distinction – the whitest huddle of any team in the league, although they have the blackest future of any team.

George Preston Marshall is an anachronism, as out of date as the drop kick.

The Redskins' are in an excellent no. 1 draft position because their record is unsullied by victory.

Marshall is getting more publicity than any loser since Robert E. Lee.

From 25 yards out, Jim Brown was served the football by Milt Plum on a pitchout, and he integrated the Redskins' goal line with more than deliberate speed, perhaps exceeding the famous Supreme Court decree [Brown vs. the Board of Education of Topeka]. Brown fled 25 yards like a man in an uncommon hurry and the Redskins' goal line at least became momentarily interracial. Note: The phrases "deliberate speed" and "uncommon hurry" appear in the Supreme Court's Brown vs. the Board of Education of Topeka judgment, which decreed that racially segregated, separate but equal, public schools were unconstitutional.

After the NFL owners group reacted to newspaper criticism of the segregated Redskins by issuing a resolution praising George Marshall as "the greatest asset sports has ever known," Povich wrote in his column: *There are those who will contend that a more debatable statement has never been uttered in the entire history of the spoken word.*

Referring to the August 26, 1961 exhibition versus the Colts, Povich wrote: *Perhaps Redskins management noted that all five of the Colts' touchdowns that evening were scored by players deemed unsuitable to wear the Burgundy and Gold.*

Sources for Povich observations about the racially segregated Washington Redskins:

McKenna D. Fight for New Dixie. Washington City Paper. www.washingtoncitypaper.com. September 2, 2011. Accessed: September 30, 2024.

Shaw B. The Whitest Huddle of Any Team in the League. Boundary Stones. www.weta.org. August 14, 2015. Accessed: September 30, 2024.

Smith G. Showdown: JFK and the Integration of the Washington Redskins. Boston, MA: Beacon Press. 2011.

+++++++

By December 1961, when the Skins' desultory season came to an end, and after reading four months of Povich's columns ravaging the impact of Marshall's racial beliefs and segregation

practices on the NFL squad based in the nation's capital and upon the D.C community, I was thoroughly engaged in the *Fight to Integrate the* Redskins (as much as a middle schooler could be), and appreciated the role that the exhibition game in Norfolk played in this high-stakes drama. It almost certainly was the first public affairs/social issue in my young life that I read about avidly in newspapers and the newsmagazines of the day, such as *Sports Illustrated* and *Time*. The key moments of this struggle are highlighted in the **Notes on** section below.

=======

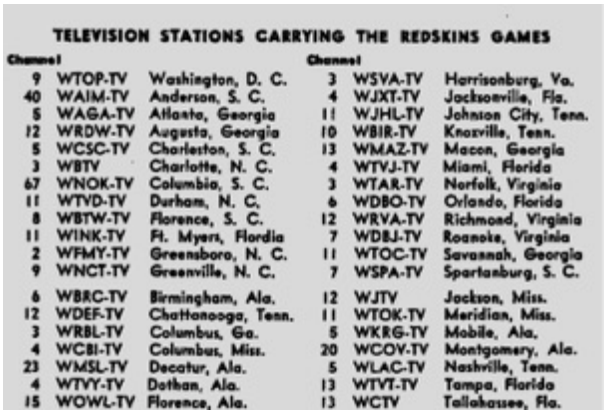
Notes on George Preston Marshall and the Fight to Integrate the Washington Redskins. George Preston Marshall (1896-1969) was in the Laundromat business, owning more nearly 60 self-service facilities in East Coast communities, but his life long passions were professional sports, and promoting racial segregation in the U.S.. He owned several semi-pro basketball teams in the D.C. area in the 1920s, and after they all folded, he turned his attention to the fledgling concept of professional football. Around 1930, college football was widely popular, challenging major league baseball and boxing as America's favorite sport, but pro football was a secondary novelty. Marshall purchased the rights to a failing football club in Boston in 1932, and shortly after renamed it the Boston Redskins, in part because the coach he hired, Lone Star William Dietz, claimed 50% Sioux heritage. Dietz's claim was likely untrue, but Marshall liked the concept, and hired an artist to draw the Indian-themed logos that the franchise used until recent years. Marshall also commissioned the writing of the Redskin's fight song, *Hail to the Redskins*. The fact that he chose Redskins as the team name was an early indication of his racial sensibilities, and the fact that this name was not questioned for 50 years makes a statement about the sensibilities of the American public. To be candid, well into adulthood, I thought the name was unique, loved the team's iconic yet racially insensitive fight song, and was fond of their 1960s helmets adorned with a spear and feather.

George Preston Marshall, left, and Amon Carter at a groundbreaking ceremony for a John Nance Garner memorial in Fort Worth, Texas. Marshall was an aggressive White supremacist and politically supported Southern Democrats (Dixiecrats) who resisted federal efforts to desegregate public facilities.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 10/01/2024.

Redskins' spear and feather helmet of the 1960s.
Image source: www.helmet history.com. Accessed: October 9, 2024.

After barely surviving five years of minimal attendance and press coverage in Boston within the newly re-constituted National Football League (NFL), Marshall moved the club to Washington

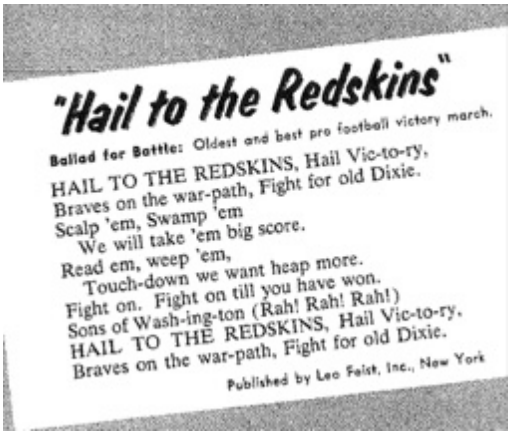
D.C. and sought to market the squad to southern states, which had no professional baseball or football teams in that era, as the Team of the South. Between 1937 and 1961, Marshall tenaciously built up the largest radio, and then combined radio and television network for his team in the NFL. Prior to 1962, none of the primary radio or television networks (i.e., ABC, CBC, NBC and Dumont) broadcast regular season NFL games. Fans that wanted to watch their favorite team had to hope that a local station was part of their team's self-created broadcast network. Not surprisingly given his racial attitudes, Marshall also believed that southern fans would not support a team representing the Old South that had Black players or coaches, or in the case of the Redskins, any Black person in any capacity throughout the entire business enterprise. To fill his squad, Marshall drafted White players at southern universities and recruited a steady stream of older White NFL players, mostly past their prime, who previously had starred at southern schools. As a consequence, after WWII, the team sunk into mediocrity, and by 1961, Marshall's all-White squad was the worst team in the NFL. Between 1957 and 1961, the team won just 16 of 62 games.



TELEVISION STATIONS CARRYING THE REDSKINS GAMES

Channel			Channel		
9	WTOP-TV	Washington, D. C.	3	WSVA-TV	Harrisonburg, Va.
40	WAIM-TV	Anderson, S. C.	4	WJXT-TV	Jacksonville, Fla.
5	WAGA-TV	Atlanta, Georgia	11	WJHL-TV	Johnson City, Tenn.
12	WRDW-TV	Augusta, Georgia	10	WBIR-TV	Knoxville, Tenn.
5	WCSC-TV	Charleston, S. C.	13	WMAZ-TV	Macon, Georgia
3	WBTV	Charlotte, N. C.	4	WTVJ-TV	Miami, Florida
67	WNOK-TV	Columbia, S. C.	3	WTAR-TV	Norfolk, Virginia
11	WTVD-TV	Durham, N. C.	6	WDBO-TV	Orlando, Florida
8	WBTW-TV	Florence, S. C.	12	WRVA-TV	Richmond, Virginia
11	WINK-TV	Ft. Myers, Flordia	7	WDBJ-TV	Roanoke, Virginia
2	WFMY-TV	Greensboro, N. C.	11	WTOC-TV	Savannah, Georgia
9	WNCT-TV	Greenville, N. C.	7	WSPA-TV	Spartanburg, S. C.
6	WBRC-TV	Birmingham, Ala.	12	WJTV	Jackson, Miss.
12	WDEF-TV	Chattanooga, Tenn.	11	WTOK-TV	Meridian, Miss.
3	WRBL-TV	Columbus, Ga.	5	WKRG-TV	Mobile, Ala.
4	WCBI-TV	Columbus, Miss.	20	WCOV-TV	Montgomery, Ala.
23	WMSL-TV	Decatur, Ala.	5	WLAC-TV	Nashville, Tenn.
4	WTVY-TV	Dothan, Ala.	13	WTVT-TV	Tampa, Florida
15	WOWL-TV	Florence, Ala.	13	WCTV	Tallahassee, Fla.

Marshall's Burgundy and Gold Redskin Television Network in 1961 had twice as many affiliated stations as any other NFL team, all in southern cities. I dutifully watched Skins games on WTAR – Norfolk.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 10/01/2024.



"Hail to the Redskins"

Ballad for Battle: Oldest and best pro football victory march.

HAIL TO THE REDSKINS, Hail Vic-to-ry,
Braves on the war-path, Fight for old Dixie.
Scalp 'em, Swamp 'em
We will take 'em big score.
Read em, weep 'em,
Touch-down we want heap more.
Fight on. Fight on till you have won.
Sons of Wash-ing-ton (Rah! Rah! Rah!)
HAIL TO THE REDSKINS, Hail Vic-to-ry,
Braves on the war-path, Fight for old Dixie.

Published by Leo Feist, Inc., New York

***Hail to the Redskins* was the most recognizable NFL fight song for decades, loved or despised by fans. When the desegregation movement started in the 1950s, Marshall changed the last line from "Fight for old DC" to "Fight for old Dixie," which reverted back to the original after his death in 1969.**
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 10/01/2024.

In spite of his team's abysmal record and equally abysmal home game attendance at Griffith Park, their tiny, rundown stadium, the Burgundy & Gold network and marketing of Redskin-themed paraphernalia throughout the South generated huge revenues and made Marshall a wealthy man. His regional Redskins media network was the first of its kind in the U.S. and became the model for the many regional sports networks that dominate U.S. television today. Marshall played a major role in the organizational development of the NFL from a sports afterthought in the 1930s to the dominant professional sport in the U.S. by the 1970s. Along

with George Halas, he created many of the features of the game we know today, especially related to offensive rules and passing. His halftime shows featuring the Redskins Marching Band and celebrity singers, and the use of former players as expert commentators on radio and television were soon copied by other teams in the league. He established the 60-40 revenue sharing system between home and visiting teams that structured team and league finances for 70 years, and created the concept of dividing teams into geographically constructed conferences to create rivalries. He also was the main promoter of the end-of-season Pro Bowl all-star game, which until the 1990s was taken seriously by players, who earned substantial extra cash for playing and even more money for winning the contest.

But, Marshall is best known today for an odious contribution to the NFL during its formative years: the so-called "secret gentlemen's agreement" among team owners to never employ Black players or coaches, which was put into place in 1934. Povich noted, *"Marshall is one of the NFLs greatest innovators, but also its leading bigot." (Smith TG. Civil Rights on the Gridiron. Page 2 Goes to Washington. ESPN Page 2. www.espn.com. 2014)* Defending the notorious agreement in 1940, Marshall said *"I'll start hiring Negroes for the Redskins when the Harlem Globetrotters start hiring White players." (Shaw, 2015)* The gentleman's agreement held until 1946 when an upstart new pro football league, the All-American Football Conference (AAFC), eagerly signed numerous Black Americans. Two of the AAFC teams were particularly successful, the San Francisco 49ers and the Cleveland Browns. Each team implementing an aggressive, passing-oriented offense that was exciting compared to the stodgy style of play in the ground-bound NFL. A substantial number of the star players on the 49ers and Browns were Black, including well-known college All-Americans who were blocked from the all-White NFL.

Fearing that the NFL was losing ground to the AAFC, a merger was soon arranged and the owners of all of the teams in the expanded NFL opened their checkbooks to Black players, except one – George Marshall and the Redskins. The other NFL teams continued to slowly add Black players to their rosters throughout the 1950s. In 1961, a pivotal year in NFL and civil rights history, 20% of all NFL roster positions were filled by Black athletes, with some teams having a dramatically higher percentage. The two southernmost NFL teams had the least Black players: Baltimore, seven, and Washington, zero. Sam Lacy, the long-time head sportswriter for the *Baltimore Afro-American* newspaper, the only Black journalist who covered the Norfolk exhibition game between the Colts and Redskins in person, commented in his write-up of the contest: *"17,008 people were inside the stadium for the August 26th matchup. The only non-White souls in attendance were the seven Black players on the Colts team and me. I wrote my game notes from my perch on the highest row of the bleachers as they did not seem to have room for me in the press box." (Smith TG, 2014*)

In 1961, Marshall was still adamant in his segregationist beliefs, but realized that his franchise was in trouble with the NFL, and he was barely keeping the team afloat with earnings diverted from the Burgundy & Gold Radio/Television Network. Washington D.C. had experienced massive "White Flight to the Suburbs" in the 1950s, and as a result, the population of the D.C. community was 70% Black by 1961. Black NFL fans in D.C. were not interested in paying money to the racist Marshall to watch the lily White Skins play a miserable brand of football in a dilapidated stadium. Instead, at least 10,000 fans on game days made the short drive from D.C. to Baltimore to root for the successful and integrated Colts. (*Smith G, 2011).*

From the perspective of the NFL's new, young (33 years old), somewhat socially progressive but keenly media savvy commissioner, Pete Rozelle, Marshall's rag-tag, segregated team in the Nation's Capital was the leagues' biggest headache. In his first week on the job, Rozelle received a telephone call from President-elect John Kennedy, who told him rather bluntly that integrating the Redskins and getting rid of Marshall were high priorities for his new administration. *(Smith G. 2011)* Independent of the incoming President's demand, Rozelle was attempting to manage intense behind-the-scenes negotiations between the ownership group and the nations' primary television networks to create a nationwide broadcast schedule of NFL games every Sunday afternoon throughout the season and the playoffs. The main sticking point – none of the networks were willing to broadcast Redskin games for two reasons: fear of being associated in any way with segregation, and disdain for broadcast images of the Skins' largely empty and rundown little stadium, which made the league look "bush league." Marshall, of course, was fighting the entire concept tooth and nail for fear that nationally televised games by NBC, CBS or ABC would destroy his carefully constructed southern regional network, and indeed, the networks' were adamant that Marshall's network could not compete with their broadcasts. *(Leggett W. The 28 Million Dollar Deal. High Finance and Hard Infighting Went Into the Acquisition of an Unprecedented Pro Football TV Deal. Sports Illustrated. www.vault.si.com. January 1964. Accessed October 7, 2024)*

In an effort to resolve the television network's distaste for the imagery of the Redskin's dinky home field, and also to entice White fans nestled in the burgeoning D.C. suburbs to journey back into town to attend games, Marshall proposed to move his teams' home games into the new 50,000 seat D.C. Stadium scheduled to open in the fall of 1961. The new stadium was largely funded with federal money and was located on federal property to serve as the home of the Washington Senators MLB expansion franchise. The new Senators team had been literally thrown together overnight to prevent a proposed alternative baseball league, the Continental League, from creating a franchise in D.C. The original and long-suffering "Nats" moved to Minnesota to become the Twins after the 1959 season, and angry U.S. congressmen demanded that MLB promptly replace them with a new D.C. based franchise, because *"it just wasn't American for D.C. not to have a MLB team"* and, more importantly, they did not want to be bogged down with politically toxic legislative proposals filed by MLB and the fledgling Continental League to block each other from the D.C. territory. *(Buhite RD. The Continental League: A Personal History. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press. 2014)* Before D.C. city management even reviewed, let alone approved, Marshall's request to lease the new stadium, he advertised on his radio/television network and in the print media that the Skins were moving into a bright and shiny modern stadium.

The District of Columbia Stadium, renamed RFK stadium after his 1968 assassination, was the first multi-purpose arena built in the 1960s to accommodate baseball and football. Like many of these structures, RFK was a bland oval, lacked personality or uniqueness with particularly poor seating for football.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 10/02/2024.

Because he had broken his lease with old Griffith Park in anticipation of moving into D.C. Stadium, Marshall decided to play several of the team's 1961 preseason exhibition games on the road in southern cities to bolster support for his Team of the South concept, assuming he would find friendly crowds "down in Dixie." Thus, the August 26th match with the Colts was scheduled for S.B. Ballard Stadium, a fully segregated facility with a designated and roped off section of bleachers for Black ticket-buyers, a segregated parking lot and segregated restrooms and water fountains. There were no concession stands within the stadium although vendors wandered through the White-designated seating areas selling drinks and food items. Unbeknownst to Marshall, in the summer of 1961, the NAACP (National Association for Advancement of Colored People) and the U.S. justice department, headed by Attorney General Robert F. Kennedy, independently, and then quasi-collaboratively decided to target NFL exhibition games in segregated stadiums for civil rights advocacy. *(McKenna, 2011; Smith G, 2011).* The NAACP focused on protesting NFL games played at segregated facilities and Bobby Kennedy decided to go after George Marshall directly by attempting to block his plans to play Redskin games at the D.C. Stadium.

=======

Two NFL Exhibition Games in August 1961 Shine a Light on Southern Segregation

Two protests at NFL exhibition games scheduled in Virginia in August 1961 contributed to the NAACP's goals of shining a national spotlight on racial segregation at NFL sponsored events, and prodding the NFL Commissioner's office to finally take a public stand against Jim Crow practices. The first game between the Baltimore Colts and Pittsburg Steelers was scheduled for August 12 in the unlikely location of Roanoke, Virginia, an isolated town tucked away in the western side of the state. The city council of Roanoke, sensing an opportunity to be perceived nationally as more than just a farm town, spent considerable money advertising the game, sprucing up the community's aging Victory Stadium, and paying for a television broadcast of the exhibition game to other cities in Virginia and North Carolina. The city had also pledged that all ticket and concession revenue from the game would go directly to charity organizations. The mayor, Chamber of Commerce and City Council realized that active participation by Roanoke's substantial Black population (20%) was needed to fill-up the 24,000-seat stadium. *(Linden A. More Than Just Victory on Paper: From Roanoke to Kaepernick. Sport in American History. www.ussporthistory.com. September 29, 2016. Accessed: September 26, 2024)*

In violation of Virginia's stringent public facility segregation policies, the city advertised open seating for the game for anyone who desired to buy a $4.00 ticket. When Virginia's Attorney General learned about the open seating plan, he filed an injunction to stop ticket sales and demanded that the game be conducted as a segregated event with threats of repercussions for the city. Roanoke reluctantly agreed to comply. The local NAACP chapter led by the charismatic and proactive Reverend Raymond Wilkinson, filed a racial discrimination suit against the city, threatened to picket the game, including forming a *"wall of protest"* that the Colts and Steelers players would have to walk through to enter the stadium. Next, Wilkinson contacted Black players on the Steelers directly by a telegram that summarized the situation and concluded with *"won't you join us in our fight for freedom by refusing to play in a segregated situation."* He also placed articles in local newspapers urging Black citizens to boycott the game even if they had already purchased tickets. When the Steelers coach, Buddy Parker, a White man, read

a newspaper article about the turmoil preceding the game and read Wilkinson's telegram, he called a team meeting during which *"nearly 100% of the White and Black players voted not to cross an NAACP picket line to play in a stadium that segregates Negro fans."* Coach Parker called his counterpart at the Colts, Don Shula, who held a similar vote, with a similar result, among his players. *(Linden, 2016)*

The players' threatened boycott, well publicized locally, and the prospect of walking through a picket line to reach the stadium dampened enthusiasm for the game, and ticket sales were poor. Game promoters, the Roanoke Chamber of Commerce and the City Council hurriedly organized a meeting with representatives of Colts and Steelers players, Rev. Wilkinson and the local NAACP chapter, the NFL league office, participating by telephone, and lawyers from the Commonwealth of Virginia Attorney General's office. The Commonwealth's attorneys were strident about enforcing segregated seating and restroom facilities at the stadium, in deference to the "Massive Resistance" to federal desegregation of public schools and other facilities led by Virginia's powerful senior Senator, Harry F. Byrd. *(Ely JW. The Crises of Conservative Virginia: The Byrd Organization and the Politics of Massive Resistance. Knoxville, TN: University of Tennessee Press. 1976).*

No minutes of the meeting appear to exist, but in spite of the state's segregation policies, the Roanoke City Council ultimately decided to go ahead with the game as a non-segregated event, perhaps hoping the Attorney General's bark was bigger than his bite. Raymond Wilkinson dropped the NAACP suit, and canceled the public protest at the stadium. The Steelers and Colts both agreed to show up in full force for the exhibition with no player protests, and the city and Wilkinson ran ads in White and Black newspapers encouraging all NFL fans to attend this open seating event. *(Casey D. 1961 Victory Stadium Protest Preceded Sweeping Changes in Pro Football. August 24, 2024. Roanoke Times. www.roanoke.com. Accessed: September 27, 2024)*

Negro Grid Stars Definitely to Play

By BILL BRILL
Times Associate Sports Editor

All Negro players of the Baltimore Colts and Pittsburgh Steelers will participate in the National Football League exhibition game at Victory Stadium Saturday night.

The decision to allow all the Negroes to play in the game was read to the press in a prepared statement by Don Kellett, executive vice president and general manager of the Colts, following a long, drawn out meeting with members of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People Wednesday afternoon.

ing contractual developments are referred to the commissioner."

This was Rozelle's statement:

"The position of the Rev. R. R. Wilkinson, president of the NAACP of Roanoke, is appreciated, and it is felt that the segregation law is repugnant to the American way of life, and although Rev. Wilkinson is not completely satisfied, I feel, because of the charities involved, there will be a real benefit to the children of all races and the game is to be played with all players participating.

"The worthy cause and the

(Continued on Page 4, Col. 4)

An article in the August 10, 1961 *Roanoke Times* reported the outcomes of the negotiation over segregated seating in the city's Victory Stadium for the upcoming NFL exhibition game.
Image source: Newspapers.com (https://newspapers.com) Accessed: 10/1/2024.

The game was played as scheduled in front of a decent sized crown, although not a sell-out. Few Black citizens attended the game won by the Steelers 24-20. Black players who participated in the game, including Baltimore's future Hall of Famer, Lenny Moore, later contended that: *"all the Black fans we saw in the stadium were confined to predetermined seats, separated from other fans by a chain link fence." (Moore L, Ellish JJ. All Things Being Equal: The Autobiography of Lenny Moore. Champaign, ILL: Sports Publishing LLC. 2005)*

Pros Treat Fans To Aerial Show

An article and photo in the August 13, 1961 *Roanoke Times* on the Steelers-Colts NFL exhibition game. Pre-game negotiation over segregated seating was not mentioned.
Image source: Newspapers.com (https://newspapers.com) Accessed: 10/1/2024.

The NAACP was pleased with the national exposure of the controversy surrounding the Roanoke exhibition game, and the city's decision to at least theoretically defy Virginia segregation policies. There was no meaningful repercussion for Roanoke other than verbal condemnation by the Attorney General and state politicians. However, the NAACP and Attorney General Robert Kennedy were disappointed with NFL Commissioner Rozelle's bland and cautiously worded statement about the circumstances of the game, which concluded with:

"This incident has focused the attention of the National Football League on the unhealthy conditions existing in cities of this type. I am hopeful that in the future seasons, clubs of the National Football League will not play games to segregated audiences." (Linden, 2016)

Rather than addressing the segregation policies of the Commonwealth of Virginia, Rozelle threw the city of Roanoke under the bus, and issued a wistful hope for integrated audiences in the future.

Which brings us back to the Redskins-Colts exhibition game in Norfolk on August 26, 1961, just two weeks after the events in Roanoke. I shared my personal recollections of the so-called Kiwanis Bowl earlier. Let's take a look at that game from a broader perspective. The leader of the Black picketers I met that night was Marie Golden Young, a 40-year old city of Norfolk employee who managed city parks and community recreation centers in Black neighborhoods. Marie had recently joined the Women of Virginia's Third Force, a third party voter registration group established and financed by a national civil rights organization, the Congress of Racial Equality (CORE), created and directed by James Foreman, a prominent civil rights leader in the 1960s. Prior to her involvement with the Third Force, Young had petitioned and picketed for desegregation of public schools, picketed and participated in a law suit against a grocery store chain that placed stores in Black neighborhoods but refused to hire Black employees, and also participating in protests against the Catholic Church Diocese in Norfolk, which operated a segregated hospital with inferior medical staffing, bedding and equipment for Black patients. The mission of the Women of Virginia's Third Force was to challenge segregation in public facilities, and protest Virginia's onerous poll tax that was instituted after WWII to discourage voting by Blacks and Hispanics. People who had never voted before, which included a large percentage of the non-White population of Virginia, were required to pay a fee in order to register to vote. Whites who had previously voted were exempt from the tax or simply were never asked to pay it when registering. *(McKenna, 2011)*

The man whose name I did not catch the night of the game due to the pilfering of my Colts hat was Joseph Jordan, a Black attorney and community activist. Several years later, he did the legal

work and courtroom presentations during a series of court challenges to overturn the Virginia poll tax as a violation of the 14th amendment, concluding with arguing the petition before the Supreme Court. *(Joseph A, Jordan Jr., Civil Rights Advocate. Newport News Daily Press. June 16, 1991. www.newspapers. Com. Accessed October 7, 2024)* Joseph Jordan offered the suggestion to search for the hat thief and my hijacked lid inside the stadium.

At a monthly meeting of the Third Force at Marie Young's home on August 11, 1961, discussion turned to newspaper accounts of the NAACP protest in Roanoke, and ultimately the decision was made to add segregation at public stadiums to the groups' activism agenda. Also in attendance at this meeting was a young seamstress, Evelyn Thomas Butts, who would ultimately have a long and successful career as an equal rights activist in Virginia, and as a major player in Norfolk politics. She was the person who tried to inject levity into the discussion of my stolen hat on the stadium walkway.

Independent of the Third Force, the Norfolk NAACP chapter was energized by the Roanoke protest, and was urged by the NAACP national headquarters to replicate that protest in hopes of eliciting a stronger reaction from the NFL. Pre-game protest actions in Norfolk paralleled those in Roanoke: articles in a newspaper serving the Black community recommended a boycott of the game because of segregated seating, parking and rest rooms as well as the segregated Redskins roster, articles in the city's main newspaper, the *Norfolk Daily News*, provided similar information, and a racial discrimination suit was filed against the city and the Kiwanis Club. The NAACP and the Third Force threaten picket lines and other awareness raising activities outside the stadium, and the NAACP and James Forman of CORE sent telegrams to Baltimore's Black players, urging them to boycott the game. *(McKenna, 2011)*

Negroes Urged To Boycott Colt Contest In Norfolk

Norfolk, Aug. 11 (AP) — Robert D. Robertson, head of the State N.A.A.C.P., today called on Negroes to boycott a professional football exhibition game here August 26 because of segregated seating and the allegedly discriminatory hiring policies of one of the teams.

Robertson, who also heads the local N.A.A.C.P. branch, urged Negroes to stay away from the contest between the Washington Redskins and the Baltimore Colts at Foreman Field two weeks from tomorrow. The game, the second annual Kiwanis Bowl, is sponsored for charity.

Redskins Criticized

"We cannot accept separate facilities, nor can we condone the lily-white hiring policies of the Redskins," he said in a statement published in the Journal and Guide, weekly Negro newspaper published here. "We make our stands on these two matters best known by staying away from the game."

The Roanoke branch of the N.A.A.C.P. earlier this week called on Negro players of the Colts and the Pittsburgh Steelers to stay out of a game tomorrow night in Roanoke. After National Football League commissioner Pete Rozelle intervened and called segregation "repugnant" but praised the game's charitable purpose, the N.A.A.C.P. dropped its protest.

A. Carl Schenck, promotion manager for the game, said the Kiwanis Club was only obeying the State's segregated seating law. "We have no alternative. This is the law, no matter how we might feel about it individually, until it is repealed or declared unconstitutional."

Charity Emphasized

Robertson "is entitled to his opinion," said Schenck, who emphasized the game's charitable purpose. "We do not give our charitable help on account of race, creed, or color. A great deal of help has been given to colored children," he added.

The N.A.A.C.P. leader said "Negroes have to decide now whether we want segregated charity or want to get rid of segregation and discrimination."

This article in the *Norfolk Daily News* describes the brewing protest over the August 1961 Colts-Redskins exhibition game, sponsored by the local Kiwanis Club, who argued that Virginia's segregated seating laws had to be obeyed: *"We have no alternative. This is the law, no matter how we might feel about it individually, until it is repealed or declared unconstitutional."*
Image source: Newspapers.com (https://newspapers.com) Accessed: 10/3/2024.

As in Roanoke, publicity about the impending protest and the potential players boycott negatively impacted ticket sales. After a few days of accusations flying back and forth, the Kiwanis Club and Norfolk city officials arranged a meeting of the involved parties with a composition similar to Roanoke's conclave: Chamber of Commerce and Kiwanis Club Presidents, the NFL Commissioner, again by telephone, the Colts' attorney, the Norfolk NAACP leader, city attorneys, the stadium manager, a Commonwealth Assistant Attorney General, Joseph Jordan of the Third Force, and one group not included in the Roanoke negotiations: representatives from the military, thus my dad's involvement in this affair.

Organizers of the Kiwanis Bowl had been in discussion with Army, Navy and Air Force bases in the Hampton Roads area to arrange game attendance by groups of soldiers, a tactic used then, and still to this day, to fill out the crowd and avoid swaths of empty seats visible on television broadcasts. The military, wary of the segregationist policies of the Commonwealth, were reluctant to send soldiers, sailors and airmen, with a high percentage of these servicemen being Black, into a known segregated facility – bad look for the military and likely a bad experience for many of the servicemen. Yet, it was a leverage point for the military and the NAACP: desegregate the stadium and its facilities completely and we might consider sending some troops to make your game attendance look better. *(Ross CK. Outside the Lines: African Americans and the Integration of the NFL. Chapter 7. The Integration of the Washington Redskins. New York: New York University Press. 2022)*

Much to his dismay, my dad's stateside assignment after eight years in the field as a combat officer in Korea and Europe was in an intelligence unit with an assignment to gather information on foreign agents (i.e., communists; it was the Cold War, after all) who may have infiltrated U.S. civil rights groups. His job required interaction with local NAACP and CORE offices and other equal rights advocacy groups, including the Third Force. He apparently drew the short straw in his office, and was assigned to represent the Army at the Kiwanis Bowl negotiations.

As in Roanoke, an agreement was reached. The city of Norfolk would desegregate all seating and stadium facilities, however just for the day of the game, and would guarantee that all Black and White servicemen attending the game could sit together. The issue of restroom use was left in limbo. The NFL agreed to issue a statement asserting its position about segregation. In return, the NAACP would withdraw its suit and not assemble picket lines outside the stadium that fans and players would have to pass through. Black players on the Colts, reluctantly this time, agreed not to boycott the game. Based on a strongly worded appeal sent by James Foreman at CORE, the city of Norfolk consented to a small, silent demonstration by the Virginia Women's Third Force outside the stadium focusing on the Redskins' segregation policy, but they were directed not to implement any voter registration activity. James Foreman designated Marie Golden Young to organize and lead the picketers. (*Basen R. Fifty Years Ago, The Last Outpost of Segregation in the NFL Fell. New York Times. www.nytimes.com. October 6, 2012. Accessed October 2, 2024*) After the agreement was announced, all three military services elected not to send troops to the game; the terms of the agreement were too tenuous. However, it was assumed that some enlisted men and officers were planning to attend the game, perhaps with family members, after purchasing tickets on their own. To observe and report if any privately attending servicemen encountered difficulties, representatives from each service attended the game, thus the primary reason for Harold and Bill being at the stadium that night. In later years, I recollect my dad talking about squads of SPs (Navy Shore Patrol) and Army MPs positioned nearby in case of difficulties, but I did not uncover any accounts of this in newspaper articles or other game reports, and, apparently, there were no racial incidents within the stadium involving servicemen and their families.

Rozelle's NFL office issued a slightly stronger comment after the contest in Norfolk, praising all parties for working out an agreement that allowed the game to take place and condemning segregation in concept, but stopped short of a policy statement about the Redskins or future

NFL games in segregated facilities. However, the Colts owner pledged to never again allow his team to play a game in front of segregated fans. Despite the NFL's hesitancy to take a firm stance against segregation, the protests and threatened boycotts at the Roanoke and Norfolk games were covered in newspapers across the nation and received attention on network television news programs, which increased NAACP and CORE visibility within White and Black communities, and emboldened the leaders of both groups to pursue more assertive protests.

Robert F. Kennedy and George Preston Marshall

Robert F. Kennedy (RFK) had a direct path to desegregating the Washington Redskins. In 1961, as now, the department of the Interior was responsible for management of all public facilities operating on federally owned lands in the U.S.. The D.C. Stadium, constructed with federal money and situated on federal property, was under the jurisdiction of the Department of Interior. With the blessing of his older brother, President John F. Kennedy (JFK), who did not want to personally confront Dixiecrat Marshall for political reasons, RFK directed Secretary of Interior Stewart Udall to bar Marshall and the Redskins from the stadium. The basis: the governance charter of the District of Columbia banned discrimination based on race, gender or religion and prohibited segregation in any public facility. Udall had interacted with Marshall often during the construction of the stadium, and was not a fan of the Redskins' owner, telling Povich and other *Post* reporters, that, "*for Marshall, the purpose of any meeting is for him to be the one and only center of attention,"* and also observed, *"Marshall doesn't only hate Negroes, he hates everybody and everything except his money and his whores." (McKenna, 2011)* Shortly after, Udall informed Marshall that unless the Redskin Football Club officially desegregated, demonstrated willingness to hire Black employees throughout the organization, and specifically hired Black players for the football squad, the team would be banned from the D.C. Stadium. Marshall, predictably, fussed, cussed and fumed, threatened legal action, and pledged political repercussions for JFK, RFK and Udall.

But RFK had another strategy to place even more pressure on Marshall. With begrudging consent from NFL Commissioner Rozelle, Kennedy worked behind the scenes to promote a rumor that quickly evolved into a major newspaper headline. The gist of the story was that the American Football League (AFL), an alternative pro league established in 1960, was planning to place an integrated franchise in Washington D.C. for the 1962 season and that the D.C government was willing to exclusively lease the D.C. Stadium to this new team. The AFL, founded by some of the wealthiest business tycoons in America, who were shut out of the clubby NFL, had opened its checkbook to a large number of Black athletes, including several dozen who jumped from the NFL to AFL. The AFL actually had no intention of moving into D.C. while the Redskins were still based in the city, but Marshall was rattled by the story, and finally agreed to Udall's terms, just a few weeks before the start of the 1961 regular season. Marshall agreed to draft *"at least one, but probably several"* Black collegians in the spring 1962 NFL draft and also agreed to sign *"other Afro-American players as they are available for positions of need on the squad." (Ross, 2022)*

However, Marshall being Marshall, his capitulation had a caveat: he had not allocated budget to hire additional players this late in preseason training, and there was not sufficient time to blend these new players into the team, so he requested deferment of fielding an integrated squad until the 1962 season. RFK and Udall were reluctant, figuring Marshall would find a way to

slither off the hook, and would also put political pressure on President Kennedy, who won the 1960 election by the slimmest of margins. For his part, JFK didn't want to be embroiled in an ugly backyard fight within D.C. with Marshall. And so, JFK okayed the deferment to 1962, hoping to backburner the issue.

A side note: *A Dixiecrat was a Democrat from a southern state who supported racial segregation, such as Senator Harry F. Byrd of Virginia, the Massive Resistance leader. The Dixiecrats were a splinter group within the Democratic Party from 1948 when the U.S. military was integrated by President Truman until 1968 when Richard Nixon was elected President, in large part because former Dixiecrats had joined the conservative wing of the Republican Party after passage of civil rights legislation in 1965. (Buchanan SE. The Dixiecrat Rebellion: Long-term Partisan Implications in the Deep South. Politics and Policy. 33(4): 754-769. 2005)*

Somewhat surprisingly, Marshall honored his pledge to draft a Black player in the 1962 NFL draft, although he stated in advance that he would not allow himself to be photographed shaking the hand of any Black draftee. Also surprisingly, the Redskins selected Ernie Davis, recent Heisman Trophy winner, with the first pick in the draft even though Davis had stated on multiple occasions that he would never play for Marshall given his segregationist beliefs. To be fair, Davis had also identified several other NFL cities where he would not play, stating frequently pre-draft that he wanted to play with his idol and mentor, Jim Brown, on the Cleveland Browns. To salvage the situation, the head coaches of the Redskins and Cleveland Browns, initially unbeknownst to their owners, worked out a trade that sent Davis to Cleveland, his preferred destination, for star wide receiver Bobby Mitchell, who was willing to be an integration pioneer with the Redskins. In the trade, two other Black players went to the Redskins, and Marshall's team selected two Black collegians in later rounds of the draft. Marshall also signed two Black free agents prior to the start of the 1962 season, which jumped his non-White player roster from zero in 1961 to seven in 1962.

ERNIE DAVIS

Washington Picks 1st Negro on Team

CHICAGO (AP) — The Washington Redskins, leading off the National Football League draft today, chose Heisman Trophy winner Ernie Davis of Syracuse, first Negro player ever selected by the Skins.

Los Angeles, picking second in a draft swap previously obtained from Minnesota, selected quarterback Roman Gabriel of North Carolina State.

The Rams, also getting the third choice in regular rotation, took the prize tackle from Utah State, Merlin Olsen.

Dallas traded its first choice to the Cleveland Browns who chose Gary Collins, Maryland end.

The Pittsburgh Steelers, drawing fifth, selected fullback Bob Ferguson of Ohio State.

Owner George Preston Marshall of the Skins was under considerable pressure to hire the club's first Negro player.

Secretary of Interior Stewart L. Udall last week intimated selection of Davis would indicate Marshall's good intentions to hire a Negro player. Udall made the proviso that unless the Redskins opened their roster to Negroes, they could not play in Washington's new stadium on National Park land.

Little League To Elect Officers

A Little League meeting for parents has been scheduled for this Wednesday at 7:30 p.m. in the Kenilworth Recreation Center.

An election of officers will take place for the following years with winners taking their positions Jan. 1, 1962.

At this final meeting of the year, films of the New York Yankees Cincinnati Reds world series will also be shown.

Although Ernie Davis never signed a contract with the Redskins, he played a pivotal role in the integration of the team.

Image source: Newspapers.com (https://newspapers.com) Accessed: 10/5/2024.

We already know the sad outcome for Davis in Cleveland. As for the Skins, even with Mitchell's stellar play, the team remained lackluster in 1962 and 1963, winning only eight games combined in those years, finishing at the bottom of the standings. However, two events turned the franchise around after the 1963 season: Marshall's health precipitously declined as he suffered a series of major medical crises that eventually took his life in 1969. He played no meaningful role in team affairs after the 1963 season. Minority owners Edward Bennett Williams and Jack Kent Cook, took over day-to-day management with Cook eventually becoming majority owner a few years later. One of Williams and Cooks' first actions was to

acquire from the Eagles in a very lopsided trade, All-Pro quarterback Sonny Jurgenson, the league's leading passer. Jurgenson's wide open, pass-heavy, offense (he functioned as his own offensive coordinator) turned the Skins into the NFL's highest scoring team in the 60s, dramatically increased their win totals and attracting several talented Black players who desired to play in his innovative offense. When the new ownership group hired George Allen, a defensive specialist, as head coach in 1971, the Skin's defense finally caught up to the offense, and the team commenced a 25 year period of excellence that led to five Super Bowl appearances and three Super Bowl victories in 1983, 1988 and 1992, the later victory engineered by a Black quarterback, Doug Williams.

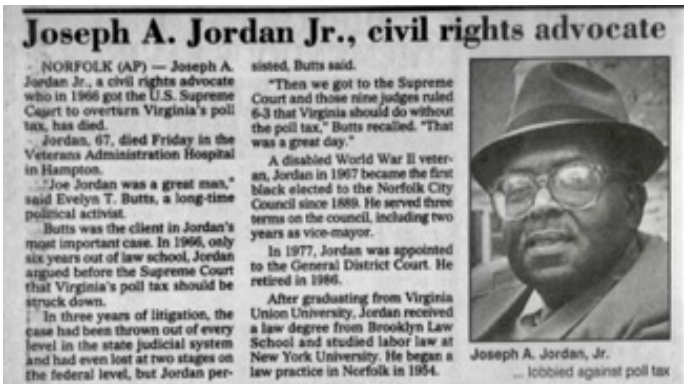
Marshall's 1969 will set up a charitable foundation, but contained the stipulation that *"none of its money would ever be used for any purpose that supported the principle of racial integration in any form."* In 2006, the Virginia legislature unanimously approved a resolution that commended Marie Golden Young's "lifetime dedication to civil rights" and recognized her for *"leading protests and picketing against the Washington Redskins when the team refused to sign African-American players." (McKenna, 2011)*

=======

Notes on Challenges to the Virginia Poll Tax. In November 1963, Evelyn Thomas Butts and Third Force attorney Joseph Jordan sued the Commonwealth of Virginia in *Butts Versus Harrison, Governor of Virginia,* for requiring citizens to pay a poll tax prior to registering to vote. Butts was the chief plaintiff and other plaintiffs included Marie Golden Young. Butts' contended that the tax was not constitutional because it placed an undue financial burden in violation of the 14th amendment. That amendment guarantees equal protection under the law and citizenship to all people born or naturalized in the United States and was primarily added to the Constitution in 1868 to ensure citizenship and legal protections for former slaves whose status was in limbo after Civil War. In addition to ratification by northern states, the 11 states that formed the Confederacy were required to ratify the 14th amendment to regain representation in Congress. The amendment's many clauses include provisions related to due process of law, voting rights, and disqualification from public office for any person who engaged in insurrection against the United States. *(United States Senate. Senate Historical Office. www.senate.gov. Landmark Legislation: The Fourteenth Amendment. Accessed: October 8, 2024)*

The poll tax case was dismissed by lower level state courts and by Virginia's Court of Appeals, but Butts and Jordan filed a revised version of the suit, which, after more dismissals, was again heard upon appeal by the 4th U.S. Circuit Court of Appeals. That court upheld the legitimacy of the Virginia pool tax. Jordan reworked the suit and it was filed yet again in 1965, dismissed without hearing by a state court, and appealed to the 4th Circuit Court, where, once again, the poll tax was upheld. Butts and Jordan appealed that decision to the U.S. Supreme Court, which agreed to hear the case. The Supreme Court had recently received a similar case, *Harper Versus Virginia State Board of Elections*, and it combined the two cases together into a single action. Jordan argued the case before the Supreme Court in October 1965. In March, 1966, the Supreme Court issued a 6-3 decision that declared the poll tax administered by the Board of Elections in Virginia to be unconstitutional because it made the *"affluence of the voter or the payment of a fee an electoral standard; voter qualifications have no relation to wealth."* The decision made poll taxes illegal in the eleven southern states that had instituted the device

early in the 20th century in an effort to disenfranchise Blacks. *(Alexander KC. Developing and Sustaining Political Citizenship for Poor and Marginalized People: The Evelyn T. Butts Story. Doctoral Dissertation. Antioch University. AURA: Antioch University Repository and Archives. www.AURA.antioch.edu. 2019)*



Joseph A. Jordan Jr., civil rights advocate

NORFOLK (AP) — Joseph A. Jordan Jr., a civil rights advocate who in 1966 got the U.S. Supreme Court to overturn Virginia's poll tax, has died.

Jordan, 67, died Friday in the Veterans Administration Hospital in Hampton.

"Joe Jordan was a great man," said Evelyn T. Butts, a long-time political activist.

Butts was the client in Jordan's most important case. In 1966, only six years out of law school, Jordan argued before the Supreme Court that Virginia's poll tax should be struck down.

In three years of litigation, the case had been thrown out of every level in the state judicial system and had even lost at two stages on the federal level, but Jordan persisted, Butts said.

"Then we got to the Supreme Court and those nine judges ruled 6-3 that Virginia should do without the poll tax," Butts recalled. "That was a great day."

A disabled World War II veteran, Jordan in 1967 became the first black elected to the Norfolk City Council since 1889. He served three terms on the council, including two years as vice-mayor.

In 1977, Jordan was appointed to the General District Court. He retired in 1986.

After graduating from Virginia Union University, Jordan received a law degree from Brooklyn Law School and studied labor law at New York University. He began a law practice in Norfolk in 1954.

Joseph A. Jordan, Jr.
... lobbied against poll tax

In addition to the toll tax case, Johnson litigated and won several other cases related to 14th amendment violations in Virginia, and was the first African-American elected to the Norfolk City Council in the 20th century.

Image source: Newspapers.com (https://newspapers.com) Accessed: 10/8/2024.

Epilogue – Dickinson College 1969

In February 1969, the same month that Susan and I first met, I attended a symposium at Dickinson College that addressed the declining interest in civil rights issues on university campuses during the Vietnam War. The main event was a panel discussion that included, most prominently, John Lewis (1940-2020), the second most visible U.S. civil rights activist in the 20th century, after Martin Luther King (MLK). Lewis planned and participated in the Freedom Rides, and helped organize the 1963 March on Washington where his passionate speech received equal acclaim in the days after the event as MLK's "I Have a Dream" oration. Lewis organized and led the Selma to Montgomery, Alabama March where he and other marchers were beaten and jailed by police. Lewis was frequently called to testify before Congress on civil rights matters, wrote dozens of newspaper editorials, keynoted national voter registration and equal rights conferences and organized picketing, restaurant sit-ins, ride-ins on segregated public busses, and protest marches in dozens of cities. Pertinent to the Dickinson symposium that day, Lewis created and directed the Student Non-Violent Coordinating Committee (SNCC) to energize college student engagement in the civil rights movement. *(Greenberg D. John Lewis: A Life. New York: Simon and Schuster. 2024)*

I do not remember what any of the panelists said that evening, but I do vividly recall the first thing Lewis did when the microphone was passed to him. He stood and pointed right at me in my aisle seat about 20 rows back, and said: (I'm paraphrasing here as I don't remember the exact words) *"I'm glad to see you are wearing a SNCC button."* And, indeed a little round SNCC button, pictured below, adorned my big grey winter coat. The Dickinson SNCC chapter president, a fraternity brother of mine, had given it to me after I recently attended a couple of SNCC meetings, mostly out of curiosity, but also looking for an activity that was more high tone than intramural sports, working the morning shift in the college food service, and frat life. Going full Judas on Lewis, I demurred and said, *"well actually, it's not SNCC; it's about achieving racial tolerance,"* or something to that effect. Naturally, many heads swiveled in my direction, and as I was verbalizing my denial, my inner voice was undoubtedly questioning, *"what are you doing dummy, why are these words coming out of your mouth?"* The fog of memory obscures

Lewis' response, but think it was, *"oh, okay, it looked like one from here,"* and he probably stared at me for a few beats before moving to his remarks.

My SNCC pin from college. There were several versions of the SNCC pin, and the acronym, SNCC, was printed on most of them, but not this one. I could obfuscate, and say that is what confused me, but that would not be accurate; I knew what it was, but wavered in the spotlight.
Image source: Hendricson family photo collection.

Disconcerted by my wrongheaded response, I devoted the remainder of the panel discussion to planning my rush up to the stage as soon as the session concluded so I could try to make things right with Lewis. And so, even before the applause died down, I headed down the center aisle toward the stage, but so did other students. By the time I got to the vicinity of Lewis and the other panelists, several layers of people were flinging questions in their direction. Much like my adolescent days, I waited outside the ring of conversation for quite a while until the crowd thinned, and I finally found myself in front of Lewis and another older panelist. I have a visual memory of the moment but cannot recollect what I said to Lewis or exactly his response. I recall that he looked tired and ready to depart, his work done for that day. After whatever apology / rationalization I offered, he indicated that he normally doesn't put audience members on the spot like that, suggesting that may have flustered me. And then came the only words I do remember distinctly from that moment: *"Did you ever find your hat,"* not spoken by Lewis, but by the panelist standing with him. Flummoxed, I likely stammered "huh" and squinted, my prototypical puzzlement reaction. The question came from Joseph Jordan, the Third Force attorney who was standing with my dad and other protestors outside the Colts-Redskins game in Norfolk. I didn't recognize him; Jordan had to explain our connection. The attorney said he noticed me hanging back tonight, waiting to approach Mr. Lewis, and coupled with my size, age, appearance and general demeanor, it reminded him of the young boy who had his Colts hat swiped in Norfolk. He said, *"I took a gamble, but I was pretty sure it was you."*

I'd like to report I became engaged in the civil rights activities of the Dickinson SNCC chapter after my encounter with Lewis and Jordan, but I didn't. Other than serving on a planning committee for a student march to the Army War College in Carlisle on October 15, 1969 to protest the Vietnam War (per John Lewis' concerns), and participating with Susan in that march, my college activism was limited to a bystander's moral support of progressive causes.

The Dickinson "peace now" march to the Army War College was two weeks before the infamous 1969 Halloween Night Parade, previously discussed, that led to the banning of college fraternities and sororities from that event. The events represent a yin and yang of 60s' college experience.
Image source: Hendricson family photo collection.

One week before the War College March, a caravan of 200 cars loaded with D-son students rolled out of Carlisle at about 7:00pm. One of the vehicles was a bright yellow 1969 Pontiac Firebird 450 coupe with a black vinyl Landau top. Susan was driving, I was shotgun, and two other D-son couples were shoehorned into the miniscule rear seat, lap sitting; six people in a space smaller than the lunar lander that plopped down on the moon's surface three months earlier. The caravan, totaling 800 students, was headed for Lancaster, PA, home of Franklin and Marshall College, and site of a Blood, Sweat and Tears (BS&T) concert in the F & M gymnasium. Although the drive from Carlisle to Lancaster normally took an hour, most of the caravan, including the Firebird, managed to get lost on an unusually hot, rainy, and most critically, moonless night traversing poorly marked country roads in "Amish Country." The bulk of the Dickinson cohort walked into the gym 45 minutes after the 8:30pm pm start time. Because Dickinsonians represented 25 percent of the tickets, BS&T, unhappily, agreed to wait for our belated arrival. Throughout the steamy night in an un-air conditioned gym, we enjoyed the music, but endured the lead singer's (David Clayton Thomas) persistent belittlement of "f …. ing Dickersons" and other scatological riffs on the college's name, which were picked up and joyously re-chanted by F & M students.

Three weeks in October 1969: BS&T, Peace Now March, Halloween Night Parade. Two months later, virtually all the men in that D-son caravan would be intently focused on a fate deciding national television broadcast – the nation's first military draft lottery, described in the story of my cousin, William Carey Janes, which follows.

Image sources: Hendricson family photo collection.

Billy (William Carey Janes; 1947-1967)

William Carey Janes, nickname Billy, was the youngest child of my Dad's sister, Yvonne and her husband, Bob Janes. Although just one year apart in age and both of us coming from military-centric families, cousin Billy and I took different paths in the fall of 1966. Finished with high school, at loose ends and uncertain about his future, Billy was drafted into the Army, and as best as I can determine, he was, if not ecstatic, at least content with entering the Army – it provided a focus. That fall, I devoted considerable energy to feeling sorry for myself about my lousy senior year in high school while I moved at roughly monthly intervals from school to school in Germany (August), Fort Lewis, Washington (September), Omaha, Nebraska (October) and Fairfax, Virginia (November) as my dad sought but failed to achieve an optimal upward move in his military career, namely a regiment command in either Vietnam, Korea or back in Europe. He ultimately wound up going to the University of Nebraska to complete a degree needed for entry into a prestigious military graduate education program conducted by the Pentagon, and to make the General's Candidate List, key goals for upper echelon army officers. After a month or so in Omaha, my mom said, "no way" and she moved Shirley and I to Fairfax, down the road from the Pentagon, my dad's next assignment, to await his arrival the following summer. Unbeknownst to either of us, Billy and I were at Fort Lewis (near Tacoma, Washington) at the same time in 1966; he just starting Army boot camp, and me – killing time until my family moved to Omaha.

Nine months later, March 1967, Billy found himself on the ground in Vietnam as a Specialist 4 (SP4) – Light Weapons Infantry, assigned to Company C of the heavily battle-tested 2nd Battalion, 22nd Infantry Regiment (the Triple Deuce; 2/22) of the 25th Infantry Division, stationed at the Dau Tieng Forward Base Camp near the Cambodian border. The mission of the 25th Infantry Division was, as best as feasible, to slow the flow of the Peoples' Army of North Vietnam, known as NVA by U.S. soldiers, pouring down the Ho Chi Minh Trail and into Vietnam to support the Viet Cong revolutionaries intent on toppling the inept government of South Vietnam propped up by the U.S. military. Billy's combat experiences and death in Vietnam in December 1967 was a microcosm of America's entanglement in that war, and, for me at least, it's an important story to tell.

A side note: *Billy and his Charlie Company mates were actually first assigned to the 4th Infantry Division. Shortly after arrival in Vietnam, the 4th and 25th Infantry Divisions executed a trade, much like two baseball teams, in which they swapped regiments for administrative reasons that can be summed up as operational proximity, i.e., having all units of each division near to each other geographically. The practical implication for Billy and C Company of the Triple Deuce was ripping off one shoulder patch and sewing on a different one. For simplicity sake, I will only refer to the 25th Infantry Division from this point on.*

Billy and I met infrequently because we grew up 7,000 miles apart; me in Europe and Billy in the Puget Sound of western Washington. However, contrasting his life with mine often occupied my thinking as a teen-ager and young adult, and Billy was the main link between my dad and his older sister. Two years after his death, my own potential involvement in the Vietnam War came into sharp focus one night during America's first military service draft lottery, and re-activated soul searching about our divergent paths, eliciting a sense of survivor's guilt, not so much just

for Billy, but for all of my age group peers who went to Vietnam and didn't return while I enjoyed college life, went to graduate school, got married and started a family. And of course, I pondered what the future might have been for me and for Billy under different circumstances.

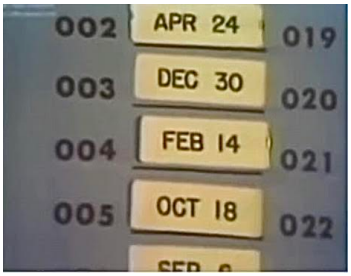
=======

Notes on the Nation's First Draft Lottery: December 1, 1969 was a pivotal day in my life and the lives of one million other draft-eligible American men, born between 1944-1950 (i.e., ages 18-26). On that Monday evening, the CBS network pre-empted *Mayberry RFD*, one of its most popular shows, to broadcast the nation's first military draft lottery "live in prime time," an event that drew one of the largest viewing audiences in 1969, second only to the broadcast of Neil Armstrong's first steps on the moon, five months earlier. (*Abney W. Live From Washington, It's Lottery Night 1969! History. www.historynet.com. November 25, 2009. Accessed: July 1, 2025*) I remember viewing the Selective Service lottery with girlfriend Susan Lienau from a balcony overlooking the living room of my Sigma Alpha Epsilon (SAE) fraternity house at Dickinson College. A large, for that era, 26 inch color-compatible television was purchased for the event at the then exorbitant price of $275, and placed on an elevated fireplace hearth to allow 50 young men, some with girlfriends or campus pals, our frat's faculty advisors and our housemother with her draft-eligible grandson to view the lottery conducted at the Selective Service Headquarters in Washington D.C., which, ironically, was broadcast in black and white.

At the start of the broadcast, a bucket of plastic capsules with twist off tops (they were blue but looked ominously gray on a B/W TV screen) was unceremoniously dumped into an exceedingly large glass jar teetering on a step stool by General Lewis Hershey, Director of the Selective Service. The capsules filled only the bottom quarter of the jar, which required a considerable reach down into the jar to pluck one from the pile. U.S. Congressmen, Selective Service Employees and a few young men, presumably recruited to show support for the lottery, took turns pulling capsules out of the jar. Each retriever twisted the capsule open, pulled out a strip of paper, and handed it to General Hershey who solemnly called out a date. A 3X5 card with the announced date was then pasted on a large board adorned with the numbers 1 to 366, including February 29 for leap year. The first date called was September 14, and accordingly that card was pasted adjacent to 001 on the board. The lottery formula was simple: first chosen = first to serve; the lower the number associated with a randomly selected birthday, the higher the likelihood that draft-eligible men born on that day would be conscripted for military service, which in that decade likely meant, "Good Morning, Vietnam". *(Watson W. Recollections of the 1969 Draft Lottery. The Telegraph. www.thetelegraph.com. November 15, 2015. Accessed: July 4, 2025)*

A secondary lottery was later held using the letters of the alphabet to determine draft order for men selected on each date based on the first letters, in my case, of their last (H), first (W) and middle (D) names in that order, forming for me, HWD. For example, a man born on my birthday, November 4, with the initials HWE would be called for service after me, because E follows D. *(Abney W. 2009)* From the perspective of draft-free 21st century America, try to imagine the emotions of young American men watching on live nationwide TV to see if a random selection of their birthday earned them the opportunity to participate in the Vietnam War, with the most probable MOS (i.e., military occupational specialty) as a combat

infantrymen with a known casualty rate of 12%. The war, and the immense controversy swirling around it, of course was the reason that a randomized draft lottery was created.



Images from the December 1, 1969 Draft Lottery broadcast.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 7/01/2025.

Susan and I waited over an hour for November 4 to be called; it was assigned number 266. Others with even higher numbers included Donald Trump (356; June 14), Billy Crystal (354; March 14), David Letterman (346; April 12), George W. Bush (327; July 6), Bill Clinton (311; August 19), and Rudy Giuliani (308; May 28). Only one of my SAE brothers was assigned a draft number lower than 40, which in the South-Central Pennsylvania Selective Service District was considered "safe." The local Selective Service office had announced before the lottery that it likely would only need to send out draft notices up through lottery numbers 36-39 to fulfill its enlistment quotas. My low number brother, a senior who pulled 16 for his December 29 birthday, immediately contacted a Navy recruitment station, signed up, and arranged a deferral until after graduation. He served on a supply ship off the coast of Vietnam without incident and wound up going to medical school on a Navy scholarship. Overall, 195,000 U.S. men were drafted as a direct result of the initial draft lottery. Department of Defense data indicate that roughly 60% were stationed in Vietnam at some point during their enlistment and that nearly 75,000 of these lottery draftees served in combat roles. I could find no data that indicates the percentage of these lottery draftees who were wounded, injured or died. However, given the documented casualty rate for front line infantrymen, at least 9,000 of the 1969 lottery draftees likely were casualties. *(U.S. National Archives. Military Records Research. Vietnam War U.S. Military Fatal Casualty Statistics. Defense Casualty Analysis System Extract Files. April 29, 2008. www.archives.gov. Accessed: September 17, 2025)*

Why did the Nixon administration decide to implement a draft lottery in 1969? The existing draft system had been in place since 1948 and was widely perceived as being over-reliant on drafting single, low income, and under-educated men without work, family or educational deferments. Twenty-two percent of U.S. combat soldiers in Vietnam during 1965-1969 had not yet graduated from high school, 69% were high school graduates, and only 9% had completed one or more years of college. Less than 5% were college graduates, and virtually none were graduate students or holders of advanced degrees. Almost 80% of combat soldiers were from households that had a median income substantially below the U.S. national average, leading to the claim that the conflict was a working class war. *(Abney W. Random Destiny. How the Vietnam War Draft Lottery Shaped a Generation. Wilmington, Delaware: Vernon Press. 2018;*

Rosebaum DE. Use of Grads by Army is Limited. New York Times. June 17, 1970. www.nytimes.com. Accessed: August 5, 2025)

As American combat involvement annually escalated in Vietnam between 1965-1969, mortality and disabling injuries increased dramatically among infantry units that were heavily populated with young, non-college educated draftees from low income rural or inner city areas. Racial disparities in the war effort also became a touch point for protest. The percentage of White, Black, Hispanic and Pacific Islander/Native American ground soldiers in Vietnam was roughly equivalent to the U.S. population in the 1960s, (White = 75%; Black = 12%; Hispanic = 8%, other = 5%), yet 30% of U.S. army personnel in front line combat roles were Non-White. *(Schermund E. Minority Soldiers Fighting in the Vietnam War. New York: Cavendish Square. 2017)* Although casualty rates among Black and Hispanic troops were essentially identical to White soldiers, perceptions of "burden of duty" and "harms way" unfairness intermingled with the strident anti-war movement on college campuses and the growing unpopularity of the war among mainstream Americans made military recruitment extremely challenging. The Nixon administration became convinced that creating a more fair draft process would reduce opposition to the war effort, especially if the lottery made it more likely that White college students and college graduates would be drafted. (*Baskir LM. Chance and Circumstance: the Draft, the War and the Vietnam Generation. New York: Knopf. 1978*). Thus, the concept of inserting randomness into draftee selection was born. However, the "it's fair because it's random" plan backfired and energized resistance to the draft and the war among college bound and already enrolled students, among the families of these now draft-eligible men, and among the academic, civil liberties and anti-war sets who orchestrated public resistance using strategies learned from the Civil Rights Movement. (*Thompson HA. Speaking Out: Activism and Protest in the 1960s and 1970s. London: Pearson Higher Education. 2009*).

A side note: *Sources for U.S. population data and Vietnam War Military Deployment and Casualties:*

Ahlstrom J. (ed.). The Vietnam War: Military Statistics. The Gilder Lehrman Institute of American History. www.gilderlehrman.org. Accessed: August 9, 2025.

Gibson C, Jung K. Historical Census Statistics on Population Totals by Race and Hispanic Origin, 1790 to 1990. Working Paper No. 76. Population Division. U.S. Census Bureau, U.S. Department of Commerce. February, 2005. www.census.gov. Accessed: August 10, 2025.

U.S. Department of Commerce. Bureau of the Census. 1970 Census of Population and Educational Attainment by Age, Gender and Race for the United States, 1970. Washington D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office. July 1970. www.census.gov. Accessed: August 10, 2025.

U.S. Department of Commerce. Bureau of the Census. Vietnam Conflict – U.S. Military Forces in Vietnam and Casualties incurred: 1961 to 1972. Washington D.C.: U.S. Department of Commerce. Bureau of the Census. 1980. www.census.gov. Accessed: August 10, 2025.

Outrage about the December 1 lottery started immediately after the broadcast, when it was noted that, like my # 16 SAE brother, a high percentage of the first drawn numbers were associated with November and December birthdays, my November 4 birthday being an exception. A bit of investigative digging by the *Washington Post* determined that the Selective Service employees responsible for typing the date-bearing paper strips and stuffing them into

capsules, had started at the end of the year and worked backward, and accordingly tossed the November and December capsules into the bucket first. Thus, the capsules representing those months were at the bottom of this bucket. On the night of December 1, 1969, when General Hershey dumped the contents of the bucket into the glass jar, the end-of-year capsules went in last, and therefore were lying at the top of the pile. No effort was made to stir the capsules before the lottery drawing commenced, or to stir them between selections. Most of the selectors simply plucked a capsule from the top of the pile. *(Baskir, 1978)* There was no evidence that the bungled lottery was intentionally rigged, but there also was no re-do or effort to correct this glitch. With the aide of mathematicians, the Selective Service created an extremely convoluted randomization procedure for the draft lotteries conducted in 1970 and 1971 that was poorly explained to the public and poorly understand, leading to even deeper skepticism about the draft.

In large numbers, young men who drew low lottery numbers pursued a variety of avenues to avoid induction. These included joining components of the military less likely to see combat in Vietnam such as the National Guard, the Coast Guard and, like my SAE brother, the Navy. Policeman, fireman and forest rangers were exempted from the draft, and accordingly thousands of college students dropped out to pursue these careers. Others sought the paternity and family hardship deferment; marriages and childbirth among my Boomer generation skyrocketed in the late 60s and early 70s. In droves, college students in their senior year applied for post-graduate education, which remained a frequently granted deferment even after the 1969 draft lottery. Applications increased precipitously in the health sciences, the most common grad school deferment, triggering the opening of a dozen new dental and medical schools to absorb the glut of applicants. And, nearly 100,000 draft eligible young men moved to Canada and other nations to dodge the draft. *(Abney, 2018)* Collectively, these exemption and deferment strategies torpedoed the effort to diversify the composition of boots on the ground combat units in Vietnam, such as Billy's Triple Deuce Regiment. When the U.S. finally saw no other recourse but to withdraw from the war in 1973, fighting units were still largely composed of non-college educated men with low-income backgrounds.

=======

As Susan and I observed the dour date calling and number posting, we tried to make casual conversation about upcoming final exams and subsequent holiday plans as if unconcerned about the implications of the lottery; possibly the bizarreness of the event had not sunk in, or we were oblivious to the potential disruption to my life and our still forming relationship. I was determined to assume a good outcome most likely because I had no plan if November 4 was called out early. I do recall thinking of my cousin Billy, re-visiting the impact of his death on my dad in particular, and pondering how his fate may have been different if there had been a lottery in 1966. For instance, his birthday, July 1, was selected 93rd in the initial 1969 draft lottery. The Selective Service District for his hometown of Gig Harbor, Washington only issued draft notices to men with numbers up to 58 for that military service cycle.

The last time Billy and I were together was in 1962, shortly before my family left for another multi-year tour in Europe. My parents, Shirley and I spent a weekend at Yvonne and Bob Jane's house in Gig Harbor on a beautiful inlet of the Puget Sound where they raised their four children, including Billy, the youngest. At that visit, Billy was 14, I was 13 and Shirley was 12.

William Carey Janes (Billy) at age 14. Billy's middle name recognized his grandfather on his father's side: Dr. Carey E. Janes.

Billy made quite an impression during that visit. He had his own 12-foot fiberglass boat with an Evinrude outboard and also a smaller trolling motor for shoreline fishing, and he piloted Shirley and I all over the inlet, ultimately anchoring at a boathouse a few yards down from his house. He showed off his water skis and wet suit, his collection of fishing rods and reels, various gear for camping, and notebooks with pictures of he and his dad grinning for the camera while holding up rather big fish. During my youth, on more than a few occasions, my Dad had regaled me with tales about Billy's outdoorsmanship – boating, swimming, fishing, water skiing, hunting, hiking and camping; capabilities and pursuits much admired by my dad, and undoubtedly fondly remembered from his scouting days, after all, he was Eagle Scout of the Year for Walla Walla at age 17. I don't recall that any direct comparisons were drawn between me and Billy, at least not in my presence, but similar abilities were sorely lacking in my teen-age skill set, which was limited to sports with balls. Billy as a good-natured fellow, but I recall being more than a little intimidated after that weekend, not that Billy was in any way a braggart. He just was accomplished in a number of outdoor-oriented activities, consistent with his environment and the passions of his parents and siblings.

Billy's family had three foci: college education, military service and outdoor recreation. Billy's parents and his three older siblings all were college graduates; two from Washington State University, two from the University of Washington and one, his oldest sister Katherine, from the University of Puget Sound. For reasons unknown to me, Billy elected not to go the college route, or had at least not chosen that path by the time he was drafted. Billy's grandfather served during World War I as a medic, and his father served in the Army from 1941 – 1947. Billy's oldest brother Robert was in the Navy submarine service for 23 years as a sonar technician. His sister Katherine was married to a career Navy officer, Bertram Uddenberg. Katherine and Bert were stationed in exotic locales in Asia, the Mediterranean and even in Ethiopia. And, of course, Billy's uncle, my dad Harold, was a career army officer.

The Janes were intensely outdoorsy. Billy's dad and older brother Robert were avid salmon and trout fishermen, traveling far and wide on fishing junkets before and after retirement, often taking Billy along. Bert and Katherine were also dedicated to fishing and water sports, but their true passion was golf, which they turned into a business after his military retirement, working with the PGA to set up men's and women's tournaments all over the U.S. They maintained winter homes in Palm Springs and Hawaii to facilitate year-round access to the links. All the Janes children were proficient at boating and water skiing and the newly emerging sport of windsurfing, the later two requiring a wet suit and true dedication in the icy cold waters of the Puget Sound. For reasons I have not discerned, Billy apparently had no interest in college immediately after high school, but he shared his family's love of the outdoors, and with no

other appealing options at age 19, made his way into the military like his grandfather, father, an older brother, and his uncle.

Billy's time in the army was well documented, not by Billy himself, but by several of his Triple Deuce comrades who wrote detailed accounts of their Vietnam experiences, which have been published as books or appeared online in blogs, veteran newsletters, personal websites and websites of various Veteran's organizations including the 25th Infantry Division. Alumni of the Triple Deuce Regiment also maintain an elaborate website, shown below, replete with veterans' personal accounts of 2/22 combat operations and other events during Billy's year in Vietnam, 1967.

A side note: *Information sources are listed below for the training, deployment and military operations of Billy's unit in Vietnam, and the daily experience of combat infantrymen in Vietnam. Other sources related to specific aspects of the War in Vietnam are cited in the text.*

Blomerth T. David Durham – Combat Near Dau Tieng 1967. Todd's Historical Writings. www.Toddshistory.com. September 5, 2017. Accessed: July 1, 2025.

Clodfelter M. Mad Minutes and Vietnam Months: A Soldier's Memoir. New York: Pinnacle Books. 1996.

Combat After Action Report for the Period Ending December 27, 1967. Operation Camden. 2nd and 3rd Brigades. 25th Infantry Division. Experiences of Units Engaged in Counterinsurgency Operation, December 18-27, 1967. January 23, 1968. Report # 67X1201. Washington D.C.: Department of the Army. www.intel.gov. Accessed: July 9, 2025.

Combat Casualties Current File, 6/18/1956 – 1/21/1998. Records of Military Personnel Who Died, Were Missing in Action or Prisoners of War as a Result of the Vietnam War. Record Group 330. The National Archives and Records Administration. Archival Databases. www.archives.gov. Accessed: July 1, 2025.

Friar J. (SP4). Triple Deuce Destroys Viet Cong Regimental Base Camp. Tropic Lightning News (Weekly Newspaper of the 25 Infantry Division in Vietnam). 25th Infantry Division Association. www.25thida.org. December 25, 1967; 2(51): 1-3.

Heinemann L. Black Virgin Mountain: A Return to Vietnam. New York: Doubleday Books. 2005.

Leonard R. Operation Camden – Combat Operations After Action Report Information for 25th Infantry Division, December 18-27, 1967. Vietnam Helicopters Pilot Association. www.vhpa.org. 2011. Accessed: July 2, 2025.

MacGarrigle GL. Combat Operations: Taking the Offensive. October 1966 – October 1967. Washington D.C.: Center for Military History. 1998.

National Unified Archive of American Gold Star Veterans. www.HonorStates.org. Accessed: July 3, 2025.

Operation Camden After Action Report (AAR). December 18 – 27, 1967. Company C, 2nd Battalion (Mechanized), 22 Infantry Regiment, 25th Infantry Division. U.S. National Archives. U.S. Military Archives, Vietnam War. File: TT168300010207. Page 6. Accessed: July 10, 2025.

Peterson J. The Ambush. Minnesota Remembers Vietnam. The Story Wall. www.mnvietnam.org. January 2016

Ross JW. Outside the Wire. Riding with the Triple Deuce in Vietnam. Mechanicsburg, PA: Stackpole Books. 2013.

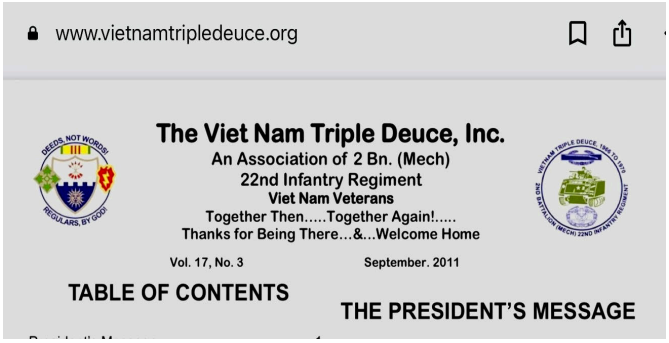
The Vietnam Triple Deuce Inc. www.vietnametripledeuce.org. [Website of the 2nd Battalion of the 22nd Infantry Regiment; 2/22].

Trass A. The U.S. Army Campaigns of the Vietnam War: Turning Point 1967-1968. Fort Leslie McNair, Washington D.C.: Center for Military History. 2019.

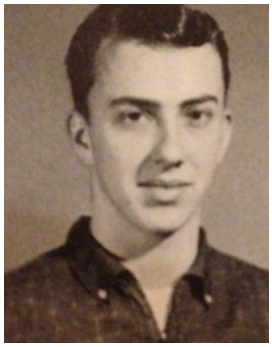
Tropic Lightning News (Weekly Newspaper of the 25 Infantry Division in Vietnam). 25th Infantry Division Association. www.25thida.org. Multiple articles. Initially accessed: July 2, 2025.

Vietnam Vets Memorial Fund. The Wall of Faces. www.vvmf.org. Accessed: July 6, 2025.

Villard E. United States Army in Vietnam Combat Operations: Staying the Course October 1967 to September 1968. Washington D.C.: Center for Military History. 2017.



The Vietnam Triple Deuce website was a valuable resource for investigation of Billy's experiences in Vietnam. Through this website, I accessed every weekly issue of the *Tropic Lightning News* in 1967, as well as accounts of combat and on-base experiences written by officers and GIs in Billy's C Company of the 2/22.
Source: www.vietnamtripledeuce.org
Accessed initially: 7/02/2025.



Billy Janes at age 19, just prior to the start of boot camp in 1966.

Billy completed his nine-week army boot camp at Fort Lewis, Washington, about 40 miles from his home. In an experimental program intended to increase operational efficiency and unit integrity (i.e., teamwork) in Vietnam, Billy's boot camp company were informed that they would train together at Fort Lewis with emphasis on field operations commonly used in Vietnam including night ambush patrols (NAPs), listening patrols (LPs; reconnaissance patrols), convoy protection, search and destroy (SAD) patrols, and RIFs (reduction in force assaults on enemy strongholds supported by Cobra gunship helicopters and F-4 Phantoms). They learned that the entire company would ship out as a unit and form the bulk of Charlie Company of the already famed Triple Deuce Regiment – the 2nd Battalion (Mechanized) of the 22nd Infantry Regiment (i.e., 2/22). In 1966, the 2/22 regiment experienced more field operations and

casualties than any unit in Vietnam; no doubt a daunting concept for the 19 and 20 year old military neophytes that comprised the bulk of Billy's boot camp cohort. Because the 2/22 was mechanized; i.e., platoons traveled to field operation sites via MII3 Armored Personnel Carriers (APCs), Billy's unit was introduced to the APC during training. Some of his comrades were identified as potential drivers or as candidates to serve as gunners for the M-50 and M-60 machine guns typically mounted on the vehicle.

After boot camp, the company trained together for 13 weeks in the Advanced Infantry Training (AIT) Course, also at Fort Lewis. The AIT focused on squad and platoon level operations, as well as company level tactics for SAD operations; as we will learn later, the much despised and demoralizing "bait and bomb" missions. The AIT included combat simulations, planning and carrying out NAPs, survival tactics when cut off from a main unit, ground navigation, and cultivation of stamina – performing tasks while wearing full gear at all times, adding roughly 60-80 pounds, depending on role and mission. For Billy and other Triple Deuce infantrymen, full gear included M16s and side arms, a trenching tool or shovel, a poncho, a machete, a claymore mine (see note below), six grenades, up to 25 pounds of ammunition depending on weaponry, body armor, rations, water, medical supplies and for some soldiers, communication equipment such as the standard PRC-25 field radio that weighed 30 pounds including batteries. *(What Did Vietnam Soldiers Carry? Charlie Company Vietnam, 1966-1972. www.charliecompany.com. January 19, 2013. Accessed: July 21, 2025*)

Typical pack for a Vietnam infantryman on patrol. This Charlie Company, Triple Deuce Infantryman was photographed in November 1967 on patrol near Dau Tieng.
Image source: Tropic Lightning News (Weekly Newspaper of the 25 Infantry Division in Vietnam). 25th Infantry Division Association. www.25thida.org. December 4, 1967; 2(48). Accessed: 7/21/2025.

A side note: *Pictured below is a Vietnam era, U.S. Claymore mine, a key element in perimeter defense of base camps and landing zones. The NVA and VC used claymores even more extensively than the U.S. for mining roads, bridges and buildings, jungle booby-traps, and ambushes. 80% of VC/NVA claymores were stolen, captured or black market-purchased U.S. mines. Triggered by a concealed trip wire or at distance by an electronic command wire, claymores spewed a blast of 700 steels balls in a 60-degree arc, and were incredibly lethal. More than 25% of U.S. combat deaths in Vietnam were attributed to Claymores and other fragmentation devices. Source: Grupp L. Claymore Mines, Their History and Development. Boulder, Colorado: Paladin Press. 1993.*

U.S. Claymores sat up on two legs that were stuck into the ground to keep the mine upright, and some models, such as the one pictured, had a binocular for directional aiming. The U.S. placed Claymores above ground while the VC typically concealed their claymores with dirt, branches or leaves. *Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 7/22/2025.*

A major component of AIT involved training with the M16 and other weapons commonly used in Vietnam including shotguns, claymores, grenades and grenade launchers, mortars, fougasse pits (improvised mortars made from holes dug in the ground packed with explosives, projectiles or petroleum; known as Fo gas to GIs), and bangladore torpedos, tubes filled with explosives and bulky projectiles, often used to clear a path through dense foliage, or in moments of desperation, to punch a hole in a VC human wave charge. *(History.com Editors; Onion A, Sullivan M, Mullen M. Weapons of the Vietnam War. August 2, 2011. www.history.com. Accessed: July 15, 2025)*

Several of Billy's Fort Lewis boot camp colleagues published accounts of the training, which tell the prototypical story of turning young civilians into combat infantrymen during the Vietnam War era: sleep deprivation and dehumanization, with an added layer of anxiety induced by the certainty of being engaged in combat within a few months. *(Blomerth, 2017)* The Fort Lewis drill sergeants were all Vietnam combat vets, and accounts of 1960s boot camps invariably describe the training as brutal because instructors strove to toughen up the draftees for the grim realities that foot soldiers faced in this war and especially weed out those who were perceived to have no chance of survival or who would endanger others in their squad *(Ross JW. Outside the Wire. Riding with the Triple Deuce in Vietnam. Mechanicsburg, PA: Stackpole Books. 2013)*

Billy is noted as being present in several of the boot camp hijinks stories I read in blogs and other publications by 2/22 vets, but little is said about him as a person, a trend that continued after he disembarked "in country." The image I drew from accounts of Billy's unit at boot camp and during his Vietnam tour is that he was cooperative, industrious, and most critically, reliable on patrols beyond the perimeter, but reserved and stayed in the background on base. I would know more about Billy if he had been best pals, or at least a frenemy of one of the many foot soldier authors who contributed to the vast Vietnam War literature. I did learn that Billy likely was known as William or Will by his colleagues, and that he was religious (belonging to a branch of the Methodist Church known as the Evangelical United Brethren), attending services whenever possible.

Photographs of boot camp at Fort Lewis submitted to the Triple Deuce website by other members of Billy's training company.
Image source: The Vietnam Triple Deuce Inc. www.vietnametripledeuce.org. Accessed: 7/16/2025.

On March 7, 1967, after everyone in his company had graduated from AIT, Billy and his comrades were loaded onto busses and driven to nearby Tacoma where they stayed in transit

barracks for a week before climbing up the ramp into a troop transport operated by the Military Sea Transport Service (MSTS). Until the summer of 1966, virtually all U.S. troops deploying to Vietnam traveled by boat. However, beginning the fall of 1966, the vast majority of Vietnam-bound troops arrived by chartered aircraft in an effort to speed-up the movement of Americans into combat positions. In recognition of the unusual mode of transportation, the members of Billy's company decided to name themselves the Original Boat People, perhaps an ironic reference to the mass influx of Southeast Asian war refugees striving to reach the U.S. by any nautical means available - often small, overcrowded and barely seaworthy vessels. These refugees were labeled as Boat People in the U.S. press. The MSTS ship was the *USNS General Nelson M. Walker* and it was an uncomfortable home to 3,000 soldiers during a three-week journey to Cam Ranh Bay in Vietnam where Billy and his mates boarded landing craft that ferried them to a dock in the harbor. On March 29, 1967, Billy set foot in Vietnam. *(Records of U.S. Forces in Southeast Asia. Army Build-Up Progress Reports, 1965-1969. Military Sea Transport System. Department of Defense Pacific Command; Military Assistance Command Vietnam Studies and Analysis Unit. National Archives Record Group 472. National Archives ID 2749574. U.S. National Archives. www.archives.gov. Accessed: July 16, 2025)*

Soldiers bound for Vietnam crowd the railing of the *USNS Walker* at the Port of Tacoma prior to departure. Members of Billy's family were in the crowd on the dock.
Image source: The Vietnam Triple Deuce Inc. www.vietnametripledeuce.org. Accessed: 7/22/2025.

Before proceeding with the story of Billy's time in Vietnam, let's consider why he and the others in Charlie Company of the Triple Deuce Regiment set foot in that country 58 years ago.

=======

Notes on U.S. Entry into the Vietnam Civil War: In the early 1960s, at the height of the Cold War, U.S. foreign policy was driven by America's perceived mission to contain the spread of Communism worldwide. In the pursuit of this mission, the United States stumbled into a long-standing internal civil war in Southeast Asia. Indochina (essentially, Laos, Cambodia and Vietnam) had been a colony of France since 1887 providing that nation with a near monopoly on trade of products produced within this region: opium, salt, rice, rice alcohol (wine), tea, lumber, coal and most prominently rubber. By the 1920s, French Indochina was the world's leading exporter of rubber products, which dramatically bolstered the economy of France. All colonial rule by European powers was inherently oppressive for the populations of Africa, Asia and Latin America, but the French took exploitation and oppression to an extreme level in Indochina with brutal suppression of any efforts to improve plantation workers' lives, violent smashing of self-governance initiatives, and cultivation of a highly profitable, viciously predatory sex trade industry that institutionalized and normalized sexual abuse and literal enslavement of Vietnamese, Laotian and Cambodian women by Europeans. *(Nyo YL. Before the Revolution: The Vietnamese Peasants Under the French. New York: Columbia University Press.*

1991; Rydstrom H. Politics of Colonial Violence: Gendered Atrocities in French Occupied Vietnam. European Journal of Women's Studies. 1-17. 2014. Accessed July 17, 2025)

After the French surrendered to Germany in 1940 at the start of WWII, the puppet pro-Nazi Vichy government of occupied France allowed the Japanese army to enter Indochina almost totally un-opposed, except for one brief skirmish. The Japanese, in turn, allowed the French Indochina administration to remain in place. Until the summer of 1945, France and Japan co-ruled Indochina in uneasy but largely collaborative alliance, which only intensified hatred of the French among indigenous Southeast Asians. Hatred was strongest among the Vietnamese who endured mass execution atrocities by Japanese troops, paid punishing levels of taxation on agricultural lands and crops, and barely survived the exportation of virtually the entire 1944 rice crop to Japan and Japanese military units in the Pacific, leading to mass famine in 1945, while the French governors stood passively aside. Several anti-imperial and anti-colonial underground rebel groups, including one led by the western-leaning (at that time) and European educated Ho Chi Minh, conducted low level attacks, mainly bombings, ambushes, kidnappings and assassinations, throughout the war against both Japanese and French targets. *(Dreifort JE. Japan's Advance Into Indochina, 1940. The French Response. Journal of Southeast Asian Studies. 1982; 13(2): 279-295. Accessed from Cambridge University Press Online: July 18, 2025)*

After the Japanese occupation army departed Indochina at end of World War II, nationalism and demands for independence increased dramatically throughout the region as the rebel groups turned their attention to ousting the French. Agitation soon turned to violence – against French military installations and also among the anti-colonial rebels, as they jockeyed for prominence in the fight to expel the French. After bloody in-fighting among these nationalist groups, the now communist-leaning Ho Chi Minh and his Viet Minh army emerged victorious, and soon commenced a hit and run guerilla war against the French colonial government, hoping to lure the French military arm, the *Corps Expeditionnaire Francais en Extreme Orient*, or CEFEO, as it was known to the local Vietnamese, into a single "winner take all" battle. (*Windrow M. The French Indochina War, 1946-1954. Oxford, U.K.: Osprey Publishing. 1998)*

In the spring of 1954, the Viet Minh finally maneuvered a large component of the CEFEO into a conventional battle, which took place in far north of Vietnam at Dien Bien Phu. Slowly gaining the upper hand via bloody human wave assaults and artillery bombardment, the Viet Minh ultimately surrounded the bulk of the French troops, largely conscripted from French colonies in Africa, and cut off supply lines. Out of food, water and ammunition after a two-month siege, the CEFEO surrendered, and the French colonial administration soon after agreed to vacate Indochina completely. *(Waite J. The End of the First Indochina War: A Global History. Routledge Studies on History and Globalization. Milton Park, Abington, Oxfordshire, U.K.: Routledge. 2012)*

As an outcome of the French departure under terms of the Geneva Accords of July 1954, Vietnam was divided into two sectors, separated by a demilitarized zone at the 17th parallel. The Accords were the product of complex geopolitical negotiations among the U.S., Russia, China, U.K., the Viet Minh, and France. The northern zone, the Democratic Republic of Vietnam, was communist-oriented and led by Ho Chi Minh, idolized throughout Vietnam, north and south, as a national hero, similar to America's George Washington. The southern zone was pro-western, but lacked popular or visionary leaders from inception. At the Geneva Conference, the

nations of Laos and Cambodia were also carved out, and notably, the populace and leaders of these neophyte nations also deeply admired Ho Chi Minh. *(Logevall F. Embers of War: The Fall of an Empire and the Making of America's Vietnam. New York: Random House. 2012)*

A side note: *Several years ago, one of my assignments as a Citizen Archivist for the U.S. National Archives was to decipher and digitize a number of hand-written and typed letters, memos and telegrams that Ho Chi Minh sent to the U.S. government between 1945 and 1950, including several letters sent directly to President Harry Truman. During this period, Ho Chi Minh still deeply admired U.S. democracy, considered the U.S. Revolutionary War to be the model for Vietnamese emancipation from the French, and fondly remembered his years working as a chef and attending school in Boston and New York. He begged Truman to exert political pressure on the French to withdraw from Indochina, and described his dreams for creating a democratic society in Southeast Asia and building economic collaboration between Vietnam, in particular, and America. Truman rebuffed his inquiries, believing Ho to be a communist at heart and continued to express support for French efforts to suppress the Viet Minh and continue colonial rule. (National Archives. Records of the Office of Strategic Services. Online Exhibits. Episode 1: Truman Sides With France. Looking Back: Ho Chi Minh's Long Quest for American Support. Exhibit: Ho Chi Minh's Telegram to President Harry Truman, February 28, 1946. www.archives.gov. Accessed: July 19, 2025)*

The map depicts the nations created as sovereign entities by the 1954 Geneva Accords. The division of Vietnam into north and south zones was intended to be temporary until a national unification election could be held in 1956. The election never occurred when the U.S. declined to endorse the Accords and South Vietnamese leadership withdrew from the proposed elections, fearing a landslide victory for Ho Chi Minh.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 7/11/2025.

So, to the question – why did the United States get entangled in this small, economically challenged region of Southeast Asia that had no historical, social, political or economic relationship to our nation? Enter the Domino Theory, which was the principle focus of America's foreign policy from 1948 until the collapse of the Soviet Union in 1991. According to this theory, the first domino fell when the war-weary United States and it's allies stood by and allowed Stalin to gobble up numerous once-free countries in Eastern Europe immediately after WWII. Then, the Communists seized power in China in 1949, kicking the Nationalists off the Asian mainland and onto adjoining Taiwan. From 1950-1953, Communist North Korea, aggressively backed by China, attempted to overrun the Korean peninsula, but as we know this effort stalled and settled into the still fragile co-existence of North and South Korea. In the late 1950s, the Soviets initiated efforts to turn nationalists groups in Latin American toward

communism, with success in Cuba, leading to the 1962 Cuban Missile Showdown. *(Slater J. The Domino Theory and International Politics: The Case of Vietnam. Security Studies. 1993; 3(2): 186-224. Accessed: July 12, 2025)*

The Domino Theory rationale for U.S. military intervention in the Vietnamese Civil War was that "if Vietnam fell to the communists," Laos, Cambodia, Thailand and other Southeast Asia nations would soon follow.
Image source: Slideplayer.com. Accessed: 7/14/2025.

For many in America's foreign policy elite, the communist led insurgency in South Vietnam was yet another domino in the Kremlin's orchestrated effort at world domination that had to be stopped; in other words, we can't let the next domino fall. Motivated by Winston Churchill's famed "An Iron Curtain is Descending" speech in 1947 ironically delivered in Truman, Missouri, President Harry Truman first articulated a version of the Domino Theory in his Truman Doctrine (1948) that pledged U.S. support for nations threatened by communism, initially focusing on Greece and Turkey. Truman's successor, Dwight Eisenhower, endorsed the Truman doctrine, and on many occasions in the 1950s used the domino analogy to describe the consequences of a communist take-over of Southeast Asia. And so, defense of Southeast Asia from communism became a focus of our foreign policy. *(Merrill D. The Truman Doctrine: Containing Communism and Modernity. Presidential Studies Quarterly. 2006; 36(1): 27-37)*

During the 1950s, the U.S., without a long-range plan or any real understanding of the cultural or political history of Southeast Asia, bit-by-bit assumed the role of economic and political prop for the weak and unpopular leadership of South Vietnam. By 1957, bands of communist-sympathizing South Vietnamese rebels, known as the National Liberation Front (NLF), commenced a new War of Liberation in the South, using the same guerilla tactics that ultimately defeated the French. The NLF goal was to unify both Vietnamese zones into a new nation. At first, Ho Chi Minh and North Vietnam only provided encouragement to the NLF, but by 1960 had become the primary source of economic and military support for the South Vietnamese Revolutionaries, who U.S. military advisors had anointed with the Viet Cong (VC) nickname. In the Vietnamese language, Viet Cong is a contraction for Vietnamese Communist. *(Burchett W. Liberation Front: Formation of the NLF, The Furtive War. New York: International Publishers. 1963)* The United States poured military support into South Vietnam, which by 1965 was in grave danger of collapse. Communist China and the USSR provided weapons and financial resources for the South Vietnamese communist insurgents and the North Vietnam Army, who joined the fight in full force in 1965.

Vietnam became a live fire proxy war within the overall Cold War that was fought on the ground, air, and on rivers by Billy and 1.3 million other U.S. servicemen between 1965 and 1973. Note: 2.6 million U.S. servicemen deployed to Vietnam but only 50% saw combat. More than 150,000 soldiers were wounded or injured, and 58,270 did not survive their tour of duty.

What were the immediate and long-term outcomes of our eight-year involvement in this war? Immediate: Less than two years after the U.S. military withdrew in 1973, the Viet Cong and North Vietnamese Army (NVA) captured Saigon and claimed victory. The north and south zones were united as the Socialist Republic of Vietnam in 1976, although Ho Chi Minh died in 1969 and did not live to see his dream of a unified Vietnam. *(Young M. The Vietnam Wars: 1945-1990. New York: HarperPerennial Publishing. 1991)* Long-term: The U.S. and Vietnam have been "comprehensive strategic partners" with full diplomat and trade relationships since 1995, often supporting each other on economic policy, trade negotiations and security issues. During 2021-2023, the U.S. was the 7th largest trading partner of Vietnam with an annual two-way trade volume of 125 billion dollars. More than 60 U.S. Fortune 500 companies have joint ventures or substantial investments in Vietnam. *(Duc T. American Businesses Make Strong Progress in Vietnam. The Investor Magazine. www.theinvestor.vn. September 12, 2023. Accessed: July 21, 2025)*

A side note: *The majority of Viet Cong were born in South Vietnam while the NVA, as the name implies, were almost exclusively born north of the 17th parallel. Although effective collaborators in the insurrection to topple the South Vietnamese government, there were tensions between the VC and NVA. The VC and NVA were both intent on the same goal – unifying Vietnam, yet many VC had deep antipathy toward the north rooted in regional pride and culture, and were not necessarily on board with Ho Chi Minh's twin assumption that northern leaders would lead the new nation and that the capital city would be located in the north. However, in exchange for financial support of the Viet Cong's insurrection efforts, Ho Chi Minh made it clear that NVA generals and politicians would be in charge of overall military and political strategy, operational planning and deployment of troops. Yet, at the squad level, where most of the engagements with the Americans and South Vietnamese army occurred, the Viet Cong tended to function independently, to the consternation of their NVA superiors who saw the VC as rash and undisciplined. The VC, on the other hand, perceived that they were second class soldiers expected to do unsavory and dangerous grunt work such as futile attacks on U.S. bases for propaganda purposes or defending the perimeters of dense terrain while the NVA remained behind in the relative safety of well concealed camps. VC also complained about the stress of leading dual lives: pro-U.S. shop keeper, farmer, teacher or civil servant by day, and rebel soldier at night who on any day may not return to their family from a dangerous nighttime mission. (Lanning ML, Cragg D. Inside the VC and the NVA: The Real Story of North Vietnam's Armed Forces. College Station, Tx: Texas A & M University Press. 1992)*

=======

SP4 William Jane's next stop in Vietnam was the large operations base at Cu Chi, headquarters of the 25th Infantry Division, approximately 50 miles northwest of Saigon and 20 miles from the Cambodian border, strategically located near a major staging area for Viet Cong and NVA troops known as the Iron Triangle, a heavily wooded area with dense underbrush, although not a tropical jungle as often depicted in movies about the Vietnam War. In fact, the climate and terrain in the area of Vietnam experienced by Billy and his Triple Deuce comrades was viciously hot and humid, but largely flat and dusty, almost arid in appearance, with pockets of dense woods or brushy thicket areas. Most instances of fighting with the VC and NVA occurred in these wooded areas and within rubber tree plantations that were prevalent in this region. By

the time Billy arrived, most of the forests had been denuded into a grim dystopian landscape by intense B-52 bombings in a futile effort to destroy VC and NVA regiments hidden underground in tunnel systems as well as Cobra gunship (an attack helicopter) and F-4 Phantom bombing runs following the almost daily bait and bomb firefights.

Location of the Cu Chi Base Camp, headquarters of the 25th Infantry Division, which had been based in Hawaii prior to deployment to Vietnam. The 25th Infantry was the parent Division of Billy Janes' Triple Deuce Regiment.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 7/9/2025.

Billy's first impression of the sprawling Cu Chi Base may have suggested that this deployment might not be so horrific after all. For all intents, it was a mid-size city, home to more than 25,000 military and civilians, with the conveniences of a stateside community. At the center, there were numerous large concrete administrative buildings "and a PX the size of a K-Mart" featuring a large snack bar with indoor and covered outdoor seating. *(Ross, 2013)* Billy may have walked past several impressively large mess halls, an imposing MP station, a stateside-looking post office, several restaurants with different cuisine, a substantial hospital and a number of service clubs for enlisted personnel and for officers, each with a bar, game room, dining room, small movie theatre, a lounge (night club) with a stage for musicians and singers, and a library / reading room. There was also a substantial base movie theatre that doubled as an auditorium for USO shows, several athletic complexes, parade grounds, training fields, and mobile, air conditioned, barbershops roaming the base. The base even had a television station that broadcast AFN (Armed Forces Network) programming to TV rooms in barracks, restaurants and clubs. A substantial section of the base was devoted to a 2500-foot runway for C-130 transport aircraft, and landing pads, maintenance and storage areas for Chinook and Huey helicopters. Dozens of fixed buildings on base were devoted to motor pool, equipment storage and maintenance. Asphalt roads with street signs crisscrossed the base. Higher-ranking officers lived in air-conditioned quarters landscaped with flowers and shrubbery, and there were barracks for lower ranking officers and upper level NCOs. Infantrymen like SP4 Janes resided in a series of less grand buildings near the base's layered, multi-component defensive perimeter, or, if unlucky, shared a sandbag-lined tent with 7-8 other GIs.

Moving outward from Billy's housing, the perimeter, or "green line" consisted of a five-foot high earthen berm to prevent intruders from firing directly into the camp, then hundreds of three-man bunkers armed with M-60 machine guns, the first line of human defense if VC/NVA managed to breach the perimeter. Beyond these bunkers, several layers of barbed and concertina wire were embedded with Claymore mines every few feet, trip flares to signal approaching VC, and numerous wire activated hidden Fougasse barrels. Beyond the wire, there

was 100 yards of clear-cut (bulldozed and de-foliated) and heavily mined topography to deny concealment to approaching VC and provide better observation and lines of fire for perimeter guards. Every night, several hundred soldiers served on perimeter patrol that commenced an hour before sunset and concluded an hour after sunrise. Active perimeter patrol, walking the green line, continued through the daylight hours although VC attacks were rare between dawn and dusk. *(Heineman, 2005; Ross, 2013; Blomerth, 2017)*

An aerial view of the massive Cu Chi Base Camp, home to thousands of U.S. and ARVN soldiers and civilian support staff during the Vietnam War.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/10/2025.

The complex defensive perimeter was a reminder that the Cu Chi Base was not as insolated from the war as first impressions may have implied. In their brief time at Cu Chi undergoing "acclimation and orientation," incoming paperwork checks, and a medical exam to make sure they were operationally ready, Billy's Charlie Company was startled out of their slumber at night several times by VC mortaring, which did minimal damage but served the purpose of keeping the foot soldiers near the green line on edge, especially the newbies, and introducing them to the reality of incessantly interrupted sleep. *(Ross, 2013)*

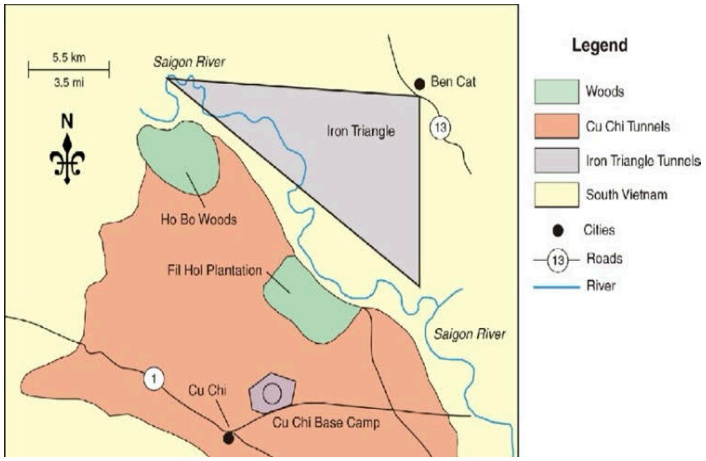
The Cu Chi Base was the target of several major VC and NVA assaults during the war. For example, in February 1969, NVA sappers snuck into the Cu Chi and blew up nine Chinooks, while another cohort of 80 VC simultaneously launched a ground attack inside the base with the goal of blowing up an ammunition dump and the base water tanks, which was rebuffed. The VC then attacked groups of soldiers in bunkers near the perimeter berm, an assault that was ultimately repelled with loss of life on both sides before the bulk of the intruders managed to slip away. On other occasions, VC commandos snuck onto base and detonated bombs in buildings where GIs and officers congregated including the mess hall and service clubs, resulting in numerous U.S. fatalities, or managed to cut through the concertina wire, infiltrate the base at night to attack defensive bunkers in front of the berm. *(Cain LM. History of the 242nd Aviation Company, 269th Aviation Battalion, 12th Aviation Group. Then Tragedy Struck: Cu Chi Base Camp, Events of February 26, 1969. Vietnam Helicopters Pilot Association. www.vhpa.org. 2011. Accessed: July 19, 2025)*

The February 1969 attack on Cu Chi and dozens of others that occurred monthly across Vietnam were known to the VC as "stand-offs" in that the insurgents did not expect to accomplish their goals and were willing to absorb a stand-off in casualties in order to achieve the long-term goal of sowing doubt, uncertainty and anxiety in U.S. ground combat soldiers and chipping away at confidence in the war effort among the U.S. public *(Hay JH. Vietnam Studies. Tactical and Material Innovations. Department of the Army. Washington D.C. U.S. Government Printing Office. 1989)*

How were the VC and NVA capable of launching surprise attacks on the Cu Chi Base, attacks in which they evaded nightly ambush patrols by squads of U.S. soldiers, a wide mine field and 100 yards of completely barren earth that surrounded the base? The answer: In 1965, the base was unknowingly constructed on top of the Viet Cong's largest tunnel system in all of Vietnam; the Cu Chi tunnels that existed long before the base was built, dating back to the war against the French in the 1950s. U.S. military leadership did not become aware of the tunnels in this region until early in 1966, and never fully understood the massive scope of the Viet Cong's underground infrastructure that was a cornerstone of their overall military strategy to invade Saigon and topple the South Vietnamese government.

As indicated in the map below, the Cu Chi Tunnel Field was comprised of more than 250 miles of interconnecting tunnel routes and 500 miles of 3-4 feet deep trenches that allowed rapid and virtually undetectable movement of VC and NVA troops, weapons, equipment and supplies before and after attacks on U.S. positions. Tunnels stretched the entire distance from the Cambodian border to the Saigon suburbs. In addition to facilitating clandestine movement, the Cu Chi tunnels and a similar system in the Iron Triangle served as living quarters for thousands of soldiers (by most estimates, 8,000 at a time), munition-proof bunkers for both soldiers and sympathetic villagers during B-52 bombing raids, hospitals and traumatic wound care stations, meeting and office space for VC and NVA commanders, communication centers with printing presses and telephones connected by miles of wires running through the tunnels, storage areas for food, ammunition and weapons, and production areas for bombs, mines and grenades.

The tunnels were electrified by manual (i.e., cranked) generators, often ingeniously linked to bicycles for pedal power, and by power lines run out of houses in urban areas that were connected to a power grid (many of the entry/exit points for the tunnel system were through homes of VC sympathizers). In dense foliage areas, battery or even engine power from abandoned U.S. military equipment electrified sections of the tunnels. *(Mangold T, Penycate J. The Tunnels of Cu Chi. New York: Berkley Books. 1986)* It's quite possible that the Cu Chi attacks were initiated by VC who snuck into the base via tunnels dug under the mine fields, perimeter wire, bunkers, and berm, perhaps with assistance from Vietnamese employees at the base who were sympathetic to the communist cause, not an unusual occurrence.



This map shows the Cu Chi (in orange) and Iron Triangle (gray) tunnel systems 20 miles from the exit point of the Ho Chi Minh Trails in Cambodia. NVA troops traveling from North Vietnam transferred into this tunnel system that extended all the way to the outskirts of Saigon.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 7/19/2025.

It's safe to say that virtually all of the firefights that Billy and his Triple Deuce mates experienced involved small VC or, less frequently, NVA teams of 7-8 soldiers that popped out of tunnels for attempted ambushes or quick hit mortar, RPG (Rocket Propelled Grenade) or claymore attacks, and then just as quickly crept away into camouflaged tunnel entrances. (*Blomerth, 2017; Villard, 2017; Ross, 2013; Heinemann, 2005)*

A side note: *Billy's combat experiences in the Triple Deuce are described in the following pages. The military units listed below are mentioned frequently.*

Unit	***Composition / Numbers***	***Leadership***
Squad	*Two fire teams, each consisting of 5 enlisted soldiers, one of which was a medic and one a radioman* *Total: 10*	*Staff Sergeant*
Platoon	*Typically composed of four squads* *Total: 40*	*2nd Lieutenant, aided by platoon sergeant*
Company	*Typically composed of three platoons* *Total: 120*	*Captain*
Battalion	*Typically composed of three companies, but often more* *Total: Approximately 360 – 600 depending on mission*	*Lt. Colonel*
Regiment	*Three to five battalions* *Total: Approximately 1000 to 3000 depending on mission*	*Colonel*

Source: Knight C. U.S. Army Units in Vietnam Explained. PBS Thirteen. www.thirteen.org. April 19, 2022. Accessed: 8/6/2025.

After approximately a week at Cu Chi, Billy and his Charlie Company traveling companions, transferred to their main deployment site, the forward base at Dau Tieng, 12 miles to the north. Charlie Company and several other units of foot soldiers moved by truck convoy up a single lane dirt road, a notorious Ambush Alley, escorted by APC mounted infantrymen and a military police detachment. The convoy crept through the village of Trang Bang, rife with VC sympathizers, the scene of many ambushes, and then crossed the Soui Cao Bridge, called the Soui-Cide Bridge because of frequent VC mortar attacks as U.S. vehicles negotiated the exposed, rickety and narrow crossing at a snail's pace. The route passed wooded and brushy areas fed by the Cu Chi tunnel system that provided cover for ambushes. Literally every Dau Tieng convoy on Ambush Alley ran the gauntlet of VC small arms fire at some point in the journey. It's likely that Billy experienced his first enemy gunfire as the convoy chugged along this rutted road toward Dau Tieng. *(Dau Tieng Convoy. 720 Military Police Battalion Association. Vietnam History Project. www.720mpreunion.org. October 21, 2014. Accessed: July 23, 2025)*

The Dau Tieng road, a notorious Ambush Alley. Black Virgin Mountain, a 3500-foot extinct volcano, is in the distance. The mountain towered over the terrain and was a reference point for soldiers on both sides. As the literal end of the Ho Chi Minh Trails, the mountain had special meaning for NVA's: their long journey was over, and they could slip into the Cu Chi tunnels, travel underground to the Iron Triangle and join the fight. *Image: 720 Military Police Battalion Association. www.720mpreunion.org. Accessed: 7/22/2025.*

Whether attacked or not, on this trip Billy undoubtedly experienced his first Mike-Mike, where the commanding officer signaled for a "Mad Minute" of unrestrained, non-stop firing into the brush and woods on both sides of the road by all of the convoy escorts. The M-60s and M-50s mounted on the APCs sprayed the tree line back and forth with tracer rounds illuminating the arc, and the escort infantrymen unloaded their M16s into the brushy landscape leading up to the woods, clods of dirt and other mangled debris spewing into the sky and raining back to earth. The goals: (1) drive hidden VC, contemplating a hit and run, further back into the woods or into their tunnels, (2) weaponry check, and, perhaps most importantly, (3) tension relief for the U.S. soldiers. Mad Minute's would become a familiar daily routine for Billy in the months ahead when on patrol beyond the base wire, and during perimeter guard duty. For this Mad Minute, it's likely he and his Charley Company mates remained hunkered down in the transport trucks. Hopefully, they were informed in advance of the impending fuselage. *(Clodfelter M. Mad Minutes and Vietnam Months: A Soldier's Memoir. New York: Pinnacle Books. 1996)*

As the convoy rolled into the Dau Tieng Forward Base Camp, Billy could not have missed the large billboard with the greeting, "Welcome to Camp Ranier." The base had been constructed in the spring of 1966 adjacent to the village of Dau Tieng by the first arriving units of the 25th Infantry Division that had trained, like Billy, at Fort Lewis, where Mt. Ranier, on clear days, was an impressive sight on the horizon. The first occupants of the camp coined the name and developed signage at the entrance and around the camp to drive the name home, even though official army records never referred to the base as Camp Ranier.

If Billy and his C Company mates had received a mission and goals orientation to the Triple Deuce's role at Camp Ranier (they didn't), they would have learned that the base was built to impede the flow of NVA troops infiltrating from the Ho Chi Minh Trails at Black Virgin Mountain toward the heavily forested Iron Triangle region, the Boi Loi Woods and an area of dense foliage known as the Trapezoid, all just a few miles from the base. These impeding, or interdiction actions, primarily would be squad level Nighttime Ambush Patrols (NAPs) and company level daylight search and destroy missions with air support ... bait and bomb patrols. He also would have learned that the Triple Deuce would periodically participate in large regiment-level missions to sweep the Iron Triangle, Boi Loi and Trapezoid regions and also the gigantic 35,000 acre Michelin Plantation, the largest rubber plantation in Southeast Asia, located adjacent to Camp Ranier, yet another area of VC/NVA concentration. Charlie Company also would have learned that Camp Ranier was one of a dozen U.S. and ARVN (Army of the Republic of South Vietnam) bases roughly arrayed in a curved line 25-50 miles west of Saigon, designed to prevent a concentrated insurgent push into Saigon. However, any orientations that Billy received during his first days at Ranier almost certainly were dispensed by his squad sergeant, and very likely did not focus on big picture strategy, but instead on instructions and survival tips for whatever patrol was coming up next for his squad.

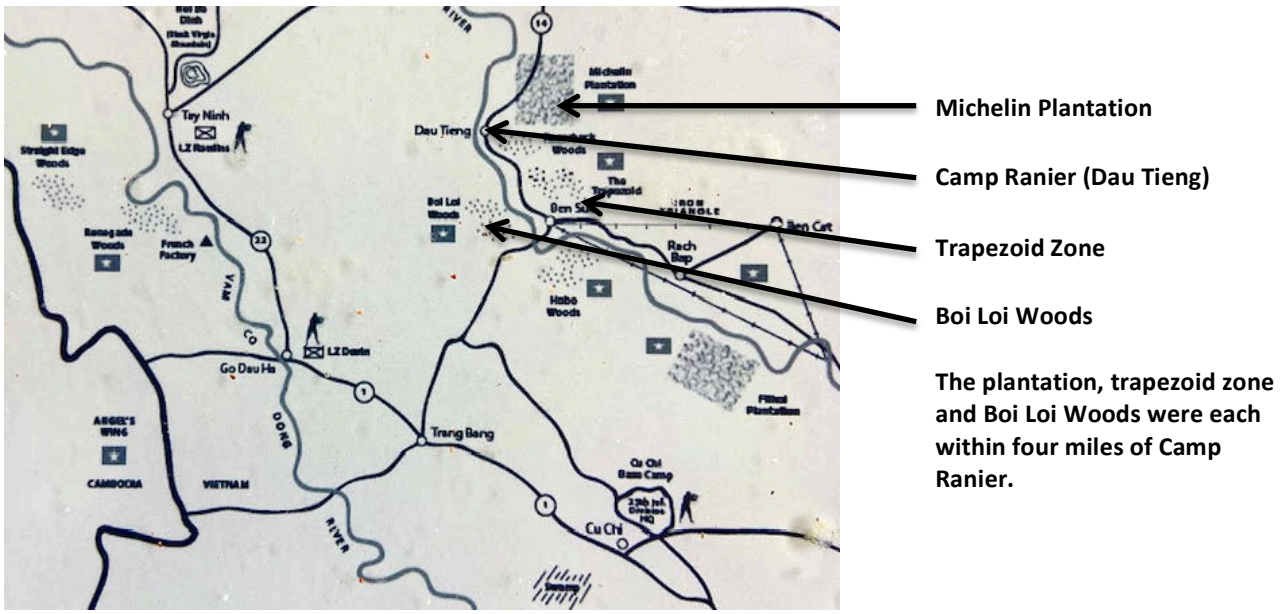
A side note: *Although less than 1/10 the size of the Cu Chi Base, Ranier had a few comforts and several unusual features. By the time Billy arrived in April 1967, ten days after a major Stand-Off attack had inflicted substantial damage within the base perimeter, Ranier had several fixed wooden structures for base administration, a small PX, a mess hall, an air-conditioned library featuring 10,000 books, a collection of 6,000 LP albums and several thousand eight track cartridges that soldiers could enjoy in the cool interior of the library or check-out for play in their*

hooches (sandbagged tent complexes) using players distributed to each platoon. Ranier had a barbershop, a hospital building with several surgical annexes in large sandbag-lined tents, two chapels and even a barracks, mostly for officers, top NCOs and visiting brass. Of course, much of base acreage was devoted to a runway long enough to handle C-130s and a substantial heliport for Hueys, Chinooks and Cobras. As in all forward bases, the center point was the artillery zone with several batteries of 105mm howitzers, each arranged according to the five points of a star.

One of striking features at Camp Ranier was a large multi-story colonial mansion, surrounded by smaller yet stylish residences formerly occupied by the owners and managers of the Michelin Rubber Plantation during the French Indochina era, and now employed for administrative offices, meeting rooms and living quarters for high-ranking officers. The camp's other unique feature was an Olympic size swimming pool, built in the 1930s for Michelin personnel and their families, long abandoned, but restored in 1966 to it's original glory during initial construction of the base. The pool was resurfaced and painted, ringed by shaded cabanas, had an elaborate bar that wrapped around one end of the pool, a snack bar, ten shower stalls, living quarters for GIs and a new pump / filtration system with parts gleaned in trade from the still functioning Dalat Palace Golf Club north of Saigon, often frequented by top U.S. brass, South Vietnamese politicians and civilian employees of the U.S. embassy. The Ranier pool was initially restricted to officers only, but by the time Billy arrived in the spring of 1967 enlisted men had access to the pool at designated times every day.

Several accounts of the pool restoration indicate that it was led by a Lt. Willis, who was particularly invested in the project. Willis and the restoration crew installed low and high diving platforms with the diving boards constructed from damaged UH-I Huey rotor blades. With his own money, Willis ordered a waterproof hi-fi stereo sound system from Japan and had it installed. And, for a final touch, Willis outlined a large image of a Playboy bunny on the floor of the pool in chalk, and had it painted black. Lt. Willis, assigned to an administrative desk job in Saigon for the first six months of his deployment, had pestered his CO for a combat role and was finally assigned to the Triple Deuce as a platoon leader shortly before he commenced the restoration of the Camp Ranier pool. One week after a celebratory opening of the pool facility, Willis was killed on an ambush patrol when he stepped on a pressure-activated mine.

The Camp Ranier pool is still in use today. In addition to the swimming pool, the camp is the site of a museum devoted to the Vietnam War with many exhibits of U.S. military equipment, and the airstrip has been developed into an amusement park.
Image Source: Camp Ranier, Dau Tieng. Vietnam War Travel: Discovering the Hidden Places From the Vietnam War. www.vietnamwartravel.com. Accessed: 7/28/2025.



Billy Janes and Charlie Company of the 2/22 operated in the highlighted areas, which are adjacent to the Saigon River. *Image Source: Ross JW. Outside the Wire. Riding with the Triple Deuce in Vietnam. Mechanicsburg, PA: Stackpole Books. 2013. Accessed: 8/03/2025.*

After Charlie Company of the mechanized Triple Deuce settled into their 10 man sandbag fortified tents at Camp Ranier, their daily activities soon evolved around eight combat-related tasks listed below. Assignments that most directly impacted Billy are highlighted and subsequently described.

- **perimeter patrol**,
- **nighttime ambush patrols (NAPs)** 1-2 miles beyond the base perimeter,
- convey protection along Ambush Alley,
- road and bridge security including mine clearing (i.e., keeping roads open),
- **retrieval missions** to locate and extract survivors of VC ambushes, including retrieval of damaged APCs,
- creation of chopper landing zones (LZs) and forward fire support bases (FSBs) in advance of battalion level search and destroy missions,
- **search and destroy (SAD) missions** into woods and rubber plantations, designed to entice the enemy to launch an attack, thus revealing their location, and facilitating U.S. counter-attacks by air and artillery, and,
- **large scale regimental or division level RIF (Reduction in Force) operations** with codenames (e.g., Operation Saratoga, Yellowstone, Junction City, Camden).

My review of After Action Reports (AARs), available through the massive Vietnam War files at the U.S. National Archives, and other data sources including weekly summaries of unit activities in the *Tropic Lightning News,* retrospective commentaries by dozens of 2/22 veterans via their personal blogs, and combat stories published on the Vietnam Triple Deuce Website indicate the Billy and his squad in Charlie Company ventured outside the Green Line at least 150 times during his nine months at Camp Ranier, approximately 17 times a month, or four times a week. On several occasions, the reports indicate his squad or platoon operated outside the wire 2-3

times in a single day, particularly on retrieval missions following NAPs that came under fire, or spontaneous, "ready reaction" searches of surrounding terrain trying to find VC mortar teams that had just rocketed the base. This amount of time in harms way appears to be consistent with the countless Vietnam Vet blogger's reports of 200 or more days of direct combat during a 12 month tour, and the often repeated, yet undocumented, notion that Vietnam vets encountered roughly ten times the amount of mortal danger combat as WWII vets; roughly 200 days to 20 days per year. *(Hack D. Vietnam War Facts, Stats and Myths. US Wings. www.uswings.com. Accessed: August 12, 2025)* My understanding of my dad's WWII experiences cast serious doubt on this 10 to 1 danger ratio, but he was at the frontlines for virtually all of his three years in North Africa and Italy, which is probably not representative.

Needless to say, Billy was involved in a lot of combat in what was essentially a day to day guerilla war with no discernable front lines fought by small squads of Americans and VC or NVA each trying to ambush each other and pile up the only metric that seemed to matter: body count, or KIA. Unlike WWII, where combatants were often dozens or hundreds of miles apart except for major engagements, Triple Deuce soldiers and their VC/NVA counterparts were constantly in close proximity, just yards from each other during night ambush patrols and daytime SADs.

Two photos of Billy's Triple Deuce squad mates, attributed to his camera; November 1967.
Image source: Family photo collection

When not assigned to combat roles, the *Tropic Lightning News* reported that Billy and Charlie Company mates were often involved in bridge and road repair operations in conjunction with engineer companies and participated in the never-ending task of clearing foliage and potential hiding spots in the 100 yard free fire zone that ringed Camp Ranier. Billy's platoon also participated in construction of wooden barracks for infantrymen to replace the rag-tag tent and lean-to encampments that he encountered during his initial time at the base. Billy apparently excelled in these base maintenance and construction tasks; he was awarded a Bronze Star for Meritorious Non-Combat Service in June 1967.

He experienced an unknown type of non-gunfire injury during a massive VC / NVA attack on Camp Ranier on June 24 when dozens of 82mm mortar rounds were fired from the Michelin Plantation, destroying 29 Huey choppers, a C-130 transport, a fire truck, numerous supply transport vehicles and several base generators. Twenty-five other aircraft were temporarily disabled and nearly 50 soldiers were wounded or injured, including SP4 Janes. *(MacGarrigle GL. 1998)* Although many of the injured were air evacuated to the Cu Chi Base Hospital, Billy was reported on recuperation rotation at Camp Ranier for the week following the June 24 attack.

Three days after returning to duty, Billy was on perimeter patrol on the night of July 4 when the NVA launched a rocket and mortar attack against fixed structures on the base in conjunction with squad sized attacks at various points of the perimeter wire. At least two NVA units

managed to suddenly appear near Ranier's main entrance, perhaps aided by tunneling, but were eventually repelled. Five U.S. soldiers died in the firefight, a dozen were wounded, including Billy, and 16 NVAs soldiers were killed near the front gate. As usual, the remainder of the attacking force quietly melted away after the assault was repulsed. Billy received the first of his two Purple Hearts; the nature and severity of his wound were not reported in any document I could locate. However, Charlie Company daily reports noted he was back at work the following week on a team assigned to restore a bridge that had been blown up by an NVA unit.

AARs of the July 4 attack indicate that Billy and other members of his squad manned several bunkers on each side of the road leading to the Ranier main gate. The main entrances of forward bases like Ranier were heavily fortified because the VC/NVA tended to concentrate their ground attacks there in spite of stiff protection, which included artillery pieces and additional M-60 bunkers inside the gate. The road leading up to the main gate was obviously not mined, and there were no permanently affixed wire rolls; they were raised and lowered on a swinging gate. However, an easier route to the target was not the main reason for the front gate attacks. Aware of the influence of television coverage of the war on U.S. public opinion, NVA commanders believed that reports and film of intense firefights at the gates of army compounds diluted war support. The date of the attack, July 4, surely was not a coincidence.

Vietnam was the first fully televised war. Breathless depictions of combat by embedded journalists, supported by grim images, on nightly evening news broadcasts, contributed powerfully to the public's dismay about the human costs of the war in 1965-1966, which evolved into open opposition in many sectors of U.S. society by the time Billy served at Camp Ranier. *(Ward M, Kratz J. Vietnam: The First Television War. National Archives: Pieces of History. Remembering Vietnam. www.blogs.archives.gov. January 25, 2018. Accessed: August 9, 2025)*

The AARs shed no light on Billy's specific involvement in the July 4 attack, but in August 1967 he was awarded a Bronze Star for Combat Valor in recognition of his actions during the Ranier main gate battle, indicating that he played a significant role in thwarting the NVA. It would be the first of two Combat Valor recognitions he would earn. I have not yet been able to locate the commendation letters that platoon or company commanders wrote to recommend either medal so these sources of information about his actions were not available to help flesh out the story. A number of the Vietnam vet authors and bloggers I read to research Billy's Vietnam experience stated that the recommendation process for Bronze Stars was less formal than for Silver Star or Medal of Honor nominations. Bronze Stars could be initiated at the platoon level and only needed endorsement by the Company CO. Silver Star and Model of Honor nominations proceeded up the chain of command through a series of reviews and endorsements by sequentially higher levels of brass. These writers also observed that many Bronze Star approval memos were misplaced because platoon leaders rotated every six months, and also experienced a high rate of mortality leading to sudden replacements and lost paperwork. *(Ross, 2013)*

SP4 Billy Janes in June 1967 near Camp Ranier.
Image source: The Wall of Faces. Vietnam Veterans' Memorial Fund. www.vvmf.org. Accessed: 8/5/2025.

Perimeter Patrol

Perimeter patrol was a rite of fire for newbies in Vietnam; Billy almost certainly manned a bunker in the no man's land between the berm and the perimeter wire during his first week at Camp Ranier, an assignment universally described in Vet's blogs and books as one of the most terrifying of Vietnam experiences – isolated during a intensely muggy if not rainy pitch black night in a wet, smelly, flea and mosquito infested bunker often shared with bands of rats, straining to see or hear movement beyond the wire, knowing full well the VC's uncanny capacity to cut and sneak through wire and dodge claymore trip lines, allowing several intruders to pop up right beside a bunker and commence mayhem. The Vietnam experience blogs I read almost universally started with an account of the vet's remembrances of his first night on perimeter patrol, trying to stay calm and praying not to screw up.

GIs in the mechanized Triple Deuce Regiment pulled perimeter patrol duty less often than infantrymen in non-mechanized units primarily because the 2/22 spent more time beyond the wire in convoy escort, landing zone (LZ) establishment/protection, extraction and retrieval missions, and road/bridge security than ground-bound troops. Yet, like virtually every other junior enlisted man, E4 and below even the so-called REMFs (rear echelon mother f_ _ _ ers), Billy and his 2/22 colleagues were assigned perimeter guard duty at least once a week. Several hundred dugout bunkers, some with cement roofs, were evenly spaced behind the massive rolls of perimeter wire and in front of the earthen berm that surrounded Camp Ranier. Three soldiers with M16s and grenades manned each bunker, and a M-60 machine gun was mounted, if feasible, on the bunker roof. Note: Many bunker roofs were corrugated metal, timber or ammo crates; far less stable than cement, not capable of supporting heavy weapons, and also less likely to survive a mortar round.

Guards in each bunker alternated two-hour shifts throughout their watch, scanning the clear-cut ground in front of them for signs of movement or noise aided by night vision starlight scopes. To cover the miles long perimeter of Camp Ranier, the bunkers were organized into twelve groups, each linked to a sector command post (CP) led by a second lieutenant who spent the night walking the perimeter from bunker to bunker in his sector with radio in hand. Bunkers were required to check in with the CP at the conclusion of each two-hour shift. The CP radio was linked to base command, all other sector CPs, base artillery and one or more ready reaction platoons of the 2/22 on call to roll APCs out gates in search of potential intruders, or to repel

enemy who managed to breach the perimeter. (*Durish J. Every Base Camp Perimeter was a Front Line in the Vietnam War. Jack's Blog. wwwjackdurish.com. June 13, 2012. Accessed August 7, 2025*)

The simple fact that VC or NVA routinely conducted morale-rattling stand-off raids on Camp Ranier and other forward bases made perimeter guards implicitly aware of "being the ones" who missed signs of a looming attack, which often had dire personal consequence for the men in a perimeter bunker. As occurred in the February 1969 assault on the Cu Chi Base, insurgents almost always targeted several perimeter bunkers in their attack plan, largely because they were easiest to strike, lying in a no-man's land between the concertina wire and the berm. Many things made the perimeter guard's task challenging. At large forward camps like Ranier, base artillery fired flare rounds at irregular (i.e., unpredictable to the VC) intervals all night to illuminate the free fire zones surrounding the base. These flares slowly drifted to the ground suspended by parachutes, casting shadows across the terrain as the flares wafted back and forth in sync with wind gusts, eliciting Mad Minutes of fire from sector bunkers almost every night, which invariably triggered similar blasts from other perimeter sectors, waking up most of the base personnel, nerves frayed and cursing the perimeter guards if it turned out to be a false alarm. *(Durish, 2012; Ross, 2013)* Movement of animals in front of the wire also kept the guards on edge, often triggering gunfire, particularly if a critter became entangled in the wire and thrashed about frantically. Dawn and dusk were particularly tricky periods because Ranier administration allowed Dau Tieng farmers to pass to and from their fields or rice paddies along designated pathways at the edge of the clear-cut zones. Sometimes, farmers and their carts, often followed by other family members, would depart for their plots before dawn to get a head start on the day, or return late as evening darkness enveloped the terrain. In the morning gloom or descending dusk, edgy perimeter guards had to decide: alert my CP, eliciting wrath if the shadowy movements were indeed farmers; let the figures pass, perhaps in error as VC often used dusky light to creep toward a base, or open fire with outcomes and consequences that could go either way.

Night flares descending on the clear-cut zone outside of Camp Ranier in July 1967. Flares illuminated the terrain but also contributed to moving shadows that were difficult for perimeter guards to decipher.
Image source: Tropic Lightning News (Weekly Newspaper of 25th Infantry Division in Vietnam). 25th Infantry Division Association. www.25thida.org. November 5, 1967; 2(44). Accessed: 8/13/2025.

Night Ambush Patrols (NAPs) and Extraction Missions

If perimeter patrol stirred vivid memories for Triple Deuce vets, night ambush patrols (NAPs) were similarly remembered, with recollection of dread due to the challenging physical and emotional circumstances of the patrol. Although a member of a mechanized platoon, which was less often called for night ambush duty, AARs indicate Billy participated in at least 15 of these ventures, and at least a dozen times went out on emergency extraction missions via APCs to rescue NAP teams under attack when an ambush backfired. Night ambush patrols were the lowest level of General William Westmoreland's (i.e., Commander of all U.S. forces in Vietnam

from 1964-1968) strategy to *"aggressively take the war to the enemy"* and *"win a war of attrition"* with superior ground and air firepower and rapid transportation technology – helicopters and APCs. Westmoreland convinced President Johnson and the Joint Chiefs of Staff that constant harassment of the VC and NVA, cutting off movement at night with incessant ambush patrolling, and destroying operations centers during the day with air-supported search and destroy missions would ultimately deter the NVA who would then withdraw support from the less well organized VC. Through the lens of history, this constituted a uniquely naïve war strategy; after fighting the French and now the Americans for 20 years, the NVA were just going to give up and go home? *(Karnow S. Vietnam: A History. New York: Penguin Books. 1991)* In a war where territory changed hands daily and no other traditional metrics of military progress existed, Westmoreland placed intense focus on enemy body counts, KIAs, as evidence of success. On several occasions in 1967 during Billy's tour, Westmoreland made optimistic *"the end is in sight"* pronouncements to the press and Congress based primarily on KIA reports. *(Karnow, 1991)*

The NAP structure and execution was simple: each evening after nightfall, a series of 11 man squads (with a medic as 11th man) hiked out of Camp Ranier and all other U.S. bases in Vietnam, large and small, toward pre-determined AOs (Area of Operation) on each side of bases - north, south, east, west. AOs typically were one of the following: (1) trails identified by preceding NAPs or listening posts (i.e., LPs – two man recon teams hidden in underbrush with microphones) as known or likely paths for VC night movement, (2) an apparent VC gathering spot based on left behind debris, (3) the entry/exit point of a discovered tunnel, and (4) low water/slow current crossing points on rivers. Because Camp Ranier was near the Saigon River, the largest body of water in the region, NAPs were stationed almost every night at river's edge. Based on reports or suspicions, NAPs also set up alongside road intersections and bridges, or on the outskirts of villages known to foster VC activity.

The NAP squad set up, in the best obscuring foliage they could find, several yards from the kill zone in a **"L"** formation, typically with a three man team handling the unit's M-60 on the horizontal axis, and two four-man teams with their M16s (and likely several shotguns) on the vertical axis about five yards apart. Claymores with detonation lines and trip flares were scattered in the kill zone and the squad sergeant carried illumination flares to fire off in case of hostile contact. Back at the base, at least two mechanized extraction (retrieval) teams (a frequent duty for Billy's squad) and their APCs were on ready reaction until all NAPs trudged back into the base. Once the "L" was established, the NAP squad waited, and took turns sleeping within each 3 or 4 member cluster. And on most nights, they waited, and waited some more until just before dawn. Estimates vary, but U.S. Army reports and Triple Deuce vets' personal accounts indicate that less than 10% of NAP stakeouts elicited VC or NVA contact, with some vet's reporting only one or two engagements in dozens of NAPs over their 12 month tour.

Triple Deuce veteran's descriptions of the NAP experience abound:

"For me, half the patrols were an experience of lying quietly in the dirt, mud and dampness all night while trying not to be saddened by melancholy thoughts of missing home. But the other half of the time was an experience of being alert, afraid and tense, all at the same time, and being prepared to fight like hell for my survival at a moment's notice."

"We'd reach our designated target and set up in the L-shaped position and just wait. Sitting still like a statue with sweat dripping down our faces and hearing large spiders and centipedes dropping out of the tree canopy above us and hoping nothing landed on you. Sometimes we'd wait for hours frozen and not daring to move or make a sound that could signal our presence."

"Ambush patrols at night were boring mostly. We would usually set up near a high traffic route used by the enemy. We would then just try to stay alert and hope that someone would walk into our little trap. I was on numerous ambushes at least once a week for my whole year in Vietnam, and to be truthful, most ambushes failed to snare anyone."

Source: 2/22 Testimonials and Stories. The Vietnam Triple Deuce Inc. www.vietnametripledeuce.org. Accessed: 8/14/2025

However, on the rare nights when someone entered the trap zone, chaos ensued and soldiers on both sides often were wounded or killed within seconds of contact. At the first burst of gunfire, the squad sergeant fired a flare to light the trap field, claymores were triggered and all squad members sprayed the zone indiscriminately, Mad Minute-style, until a halt was called. Most often, the trap "bagged" just 1-2 VC who often were killed by a claymore blast before intense gunfire commenced. If the front end of a strung out VC/NVA patrol stumbled into the trap, the leads of the patrol perished instantly, but the remainder of the enemy patrol would disseminate left and right in the underbrush and return fire, sometimes encircling the NAP squad, a dangerous situation for the Americans. In cases of encirclement, the extraction APC squads were called in to provide suppressing firepower, hopefully sufficient to drive the enemy away long enough to load up the NAP squad and depart the AO. NAP squads were never more than a mile or two from the base, but it could still take extraction squads 20 to 30 minutes to arrive on scene, a dangerous time interval in a firefight. In extreme cases, Cobra's and air evacuation Huey's were also called in for fire support and "dusting off" the wounded (i.e., removing wounded to medical units). Occasionally, an American NAP squad managed to wander into an ambush set by the VC, which invariably led to casualties and an extraction under adverse conditions. *(Peterson J. The Ambush. Minnesota Remembers Vietnam. The Story Wall. www.mnvietnam.org. January 2016. Accessed: August 11, 2025; Belis M. Night Ambush Patrols. Company C, 1/22 Infantry. www.1-22infantry.org. Accessed: August 12, 2025.)*

Many Triple Deuce and other Camp Ranier based soldiers posted accounts of their NAP experiences. One retrospective narrative published in 2017 *(Blomerth, 2017)* by SP4 David Durham of C Company in the 3rd Battalion, 22nd Infantry (3/22), which frequently operated in conjunction with the Triple Deuces, describes the realities surrounding the NAP process and an extraction by Billy's APC-mounted squad when an ambush went wrong.

"Troopers from NAPs would come in, clean up, sleep with the fleas, skitters and rats in sandbagged barracks, let off a little steam the next morning – and then repeat the process, often on the next night." Durham reported that there were sightings and contacts with the enemy on just a handful of NAPs that led to gunfire and explosions, but during these frantic moments, he rarely caught a glimpse of who was shooting at his squad or who he was shooting at. *"Both sides were just ripping up the foliage hoping to hit somebody or drive the other side away."* Just like Billy and his Charlie Company mates, Durham had been told during Boot Camp that his squad was training together because they would conduct missions together in Vietnam;

yet the reality at Ranier was different. Even though continuous unit integrity was the goal, when squads were tasked with a NAP, members were almost always missing due to injury or wounds, illnesses (respiratory, gastrointestinal and skin infections were rampant), three day R & Rs at Cu Chi, special training assignments, or because replacements for rotated or deceased personnel had not yet arrived. Increasingly, when NAPS walked past the green line each evening, squad composition was a mixed bag of anyone available: several original squad members, but also conscripted truck drivers, mortar or artillery men, mechanics and even REMFs such as operations and supply clerks or admins in the personnel department.

On November 1, 1967, Durham was assigned to a NAP with his friend Joe Golf. David and Joe recognized no one else in the eleven-man squad. *"We guessed the others were in a different platoon in C Company."* Leaving at dusk in steady rain, and moving less than two miles from Ranier's perimeter, the patrol set up for an ambush along a suspected infiltration route just inside the Michelin Plantation. In groups of threes or fours, soldiers were arrayed in the L shaped ambush formation. Trip flares and claymores were set up. David and Joe found themselves together with two other troopers they didn't know, sharing the same poncho liner to stay out of the mud. It was David's turn to sleep when … *"all hell broke loose. I was asleep and the next thing I knew, someone was covering my mouth with a hand. The VC or NVA, I'm not sure which, were fifteen or twenty feet away and firing, and they were a lot of them. Somebody had accidently keyed a radio mike alerting the VC, and our world exploded. An RPG hit the two men next to me; they were killed instantly. I was hit in the face by spraying shrapnel that wasn't stopped by their bodies."* Joe was hit by shrapnel in his legs but managed to pull David twenty yards back into underbrush and momentary safety; however both had lost their M16s in the melee. Both sides threw grenades, additional claymores were detonated, and David could not hear Joe, screaming at him from a foot away as the deafening roar of several dozen machine guns obliterated all other sound… and then suddenly, silence.

The enemy had pulled back into a safe position, perhaps to consider their options including regrouping for another charge. David recalled, *"The distress extraction alert was sent out, but it took quite awhile before we heard the tread rattle of the approaching APCs because we had gone out the wrong gate at Dau Tieng, and were hard to locate. While waiting and anticipating another attack, our patrol's medic ran out of morphine; a wounded soldier filled the air with his wailing. With all that screaming, there was no question that Charley knew we were still in place. We were terrified they would come back; Joe and I didn't have our M16s."* Finally, the squad leader took a chance and fired off a flare to alert the APC extraction unit, which was Billy's Triple Deuce squad. The flare ignited renewed gunfire from the VC/NVA as the APCs rolled through underbrush toward the pinned down NAP squad. One team of five in Billy's squad formed a defensive line, returning fire Mad Minute style, while the other team loaded members of David's patrol into an APC. A Huey dust off was called for two soldiers with life threatening wounds. As enemy fire petering out, David remembered *"the sound of chain saws that were being used to cut down rubber trees allowing a medevac Huey to land."* The VC/NVA slipped away to a position deeper within the plantation. Back at Ranier, the American outcomes of the NAP were tallied: two KIA, and six wounded (two severely) but all wounded would survive. There were no casualties in Billy's extraction squad. Enemy casualties: unknown. The experiences of Durham, Golf and Janes that night in the Michelin Plantation encapsulate the

Vietnam experience of hundreds of thousands of U.S. ground troops: violent, terrifying, heroic and inconclusive.

David and Joe were evacuated to Japan for surgery and recovery. Neither returned to Vietnam. David finished his tour in Korea and Joe was sent to Fort Lewis. Several days later, Billy and Charlie Company of the 2/22 embarked on a search and destroy mission in the Trapezoid, aspects of which were depicted in the 1986 film *Platoon* directed by Oliver Stone. Stone was an SP4, Light Weapons Infantry, assigned to C Company, 3rd Battalion, 22nd Infantry that conducted the Trapezoid SAD in tandem with the 2/22. *(Vergon D. Film Director Stone Was a Soldier in Vietnam. DOD News. www.defense.gov. January 22, 2022. Accessed: September 1, 2025)*

Oliver Stone, center, stands with 3/22 squad mates in Vietnam.
Image Source: Vergon, 2022. Accessed: 9/1/2025.

Billy Janes in November, 1967, wearing a Black Beret, worn by Navy seamen who comprised the Brown Water Navy in Vietnam. It's not hard to imagine the water loving Billy swapping gear to obtain the beret with a seaman on a Saigon River patrol. By the end of 1967, after three years of combat, uniform diligence was lax at forward bases, especially among infantrymen. Convenience, coolness, comfort and personal accessorizing prevailed. *Murphy J. The Colorful and Controversial History of the Army's Berets. Audacy – Connecting Vets. October 23, 2019. www.audacy.com. Accessed: 8/13/2025.*

Search and Destroy Patrols

At least half of Billy's forays outside the green line were company-sized search and destroy (i.e., SAD) patrols intended to: (1) discourage VC and NVA daylight operations, (2) prevent assembly of enemy base camps from which major assaults could be launched, and, (3) most importantly, given Westmoreland's war of attrition and body count concepts, serve as bait to invite VC and NVA units to launch assaults on the patrol; in other words, to draw the VC/NVA out of their tunnels and hidden camps so they could be attacked with U.S. airpower. Patrol leaders were directed to maintain engagement long enough to allow Cobra gunships and artillery to blast the enemy, the Bait and Bomb tactic. *(Lung HN. Indochina Monographs. Strategy And Tactics. U.S. Army Center for Military History. Washington D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office. 1983)*

Bait patrols were a significant source of low morale and discontent among U.S. infantrymen and their leaders in Vietnam. Many historians, military and civilian, contend it was the singular most significant source of plummeting morale within the U.S. ranks. As the stalemated war slogged into the 1970s while President Nixon sought a face-saving exit, this tactic altered squad,

platoon and company leaders' decision-making as they rotated away from aggressiveness and toward minimizing risk for their soldiers, as we shall see later in this section. *(Kimball J. Nixon's Vietnam War. Manhattan, Kansas: University of Kansas Press. 1998; Hay, 1989; Karnow, 1991; Villard, 2017, Trass, 2019)*

SADs out of Camp Ranier typically were comprised of a mechanized platoon (four squads) from Billy's 2/22 and two traditional foot soldier platoons (8 squads) from Oliver Stone's 3/22. The combined force of 12 squads, roughly 120 men, were charged with scouring areas with dense foliage and difficult access, such as the Trapezoid, for: (1) enemy personnel, which they were to engage, hoping for an airborne bombing opportunity, and, (2) enemy camps, supplies and equipment, which they were to destroy if feasible, or call-in air strikes to pulverize the site. However, detecting the approach of a SAD patrol was not much of a challenge for the VC/NVA given their substantial array of informants within U.S. bases and nearby towns such as Dau Tieng, and their own LPs surrounding U.S. bases. Squad or platoon level VC units could easily flee with most of their gear before U.S. soldiers and their noisy treads neared their camp. Larger and formally structured VC or NVA units with hundreds of soldiers and accompanying weaponry, massing for a major initiative, typically were able to move underground into tunnels or creep away in deep trenches. Food, ammunition, weapons and equipment were sometimes left behind. Also left behind were 1-2 squads of VC, 10-20 soldiers, with directions to move toward the SAD patrol and aggressively attack, hoping to slow the American's advance, buying time for their compatriots to disappear. *(Childs F. Search and Destroy Missions. Charlie Company, 1/22, Vietnam, 1966-1972. January 8, 2017. www.charliecompany.com. Accessed: August 17, 2025)*

Such was the case on November 17, 1967 when Billy's mechanized platoon was paired with two infantry platoons from the 3/22, including Stone's platoon, for a mission into the Trapezoid. Their goal: search for a substantial regimental build-up of NVA and VC long rumored to be hunkered down somewhere in the dense vegitation of that 10,000 acre zone, preparing for an offensive toward a major town, perhaps even Saigon. Four Triple Deuce APCs, spaced about 25 yards apart, each led a cohort of infantrymen as they plowed over and through a thicket of tangled vines, head-high weeds, immense ferns, fallen trees, and decaying stumps that compromised the forest floor. Billy's squad and their APC led the far left column. Roughly a mile into the woods and approaching the designated search area, Billy's squad encountered heavy fire from front and left (the classic ambush "L") via mortars, RPGs and hand thrown grenades coming out of dense underbrush by unseen enemy. A similar attack out of the weeds raked the right hand column moments later. Nearly 20 minutes of explosions and machine gun fire left the thicket shredded, in some cases on fire, with low hanging smoke shrouding the scene. Billy's squad eventually realized they were doing all the firing; the VC had ceased, perhaps a minute or so previously. A nervous stillness enveloped the site as the smoky haze melted to the ground, and then squad leaders gave the all clear and ordered a search of the attack zone, which led to six VC bodies; an unknown number of survivors managed to slip way.

Two members of Billy's squad huddled behind a fallen log were wounded by an RPG that deflected off an APC and exploded over their heads. The wounded were sent back to Ranier in a tread while the remaining treads pushed ahead through the brush with foot soldiers following closely behind each vehicle. Soon after, the APCs rolled into heavily tree-canopied area where

the underbrush had been extensively and almost pristinely cleared. It appeared to be a recently constructed, but now abandoned enemy camp site with a left behind ammunition stockpile, a crate of mines, evidence of a grenade, rocket and fuse factory and many entry holes for what appeared to be a massive tunnel system beneath the surface camp. The area was surrounded by a defensive trench system with camouflaged bunkers that led into tangled undergrowth on both sides of the site, suggesting that the campsite in the clearing may be part of a much larger camp. Nervous about a counterattack in an open area, the mission CO ordered the treads and infantrymen to head back to Ranier, and called in an air strike on the campsite and surrounding terrain. By the scorekeeping of the Vietnam War, the November 17 SAD was a success: 6 verified enemy KIA versus none for the U.S., a major VC/NVA camp discovered, and munitions hopefully destroyed by airstrike.

=======

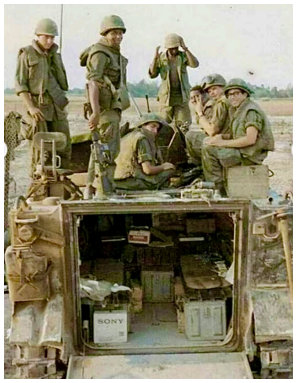
Notes on Armored Personal Carriers; APCs

A squad of Triple Deuce soldiers riding an APC in November 1967.
Image source: www.Blogger.com. Viet Su Ky. Posted June 11, 2012. Accessed: 8/15/2025.

The prototypical photo of the Vietnam War is a group of infantrymen riding an M113 APC, or "tread," down a dusty road toward a jump off destination. APCs were a key component of the U.S. Army's search and destroy strategy that depended on rapid troop mobility to launch attacks on VC and NVA units. The APC were designed to serve three functions: (1) provide protection from machine gun fire and grenades for troops as they approached the enemy, (2) break through and tamp down thick foliage so ground troops did not have to laboriously and slowly hack their way through dense vegitation, and (3) provide suppressing firepower with mounted machine guns to support ground assaults. *(Seelinger MJ. M113 Armored Personal Carrier. The Army Historical Foundation. www.armyhistory.org. October 9, 2016. Accessed: August 18, 2025)*

Vietnam era APCs were designed to transport a squad of 10 or 11, with one soldier driving the vehicle and a second manning the M-60. Squads almost always installed additional firepower on the roof, usually an M-50. The APC had a gasoline engine, could hit a top speed of 20 mph, although it rarely did, and was amphibious, capable of crossing shallow rivers. The APC's aluminum hull made the vehicle relatively lightweight and maneuverable, but on the down side, afforded minimal protection against the thousands of IEDs (Improvised Explosive Device) that littered Vietnam roadways, bridges and trails through woods and underbrush. The APC's exposed gasoline engine adjacent to the driver's position and gas tank on the rear left-hand side were major hazards in an IED explosion and often were punctured by RPG direct hits. *(Seelinger, 2016)* To guard against IEDS, soldiers walked in front to the APC with metal detectors, which slowed the pace of an APC column to 2-3 MPH, exposing them to automatic weapons fire and RPGs from adjacent foliage. IEDS caused 33% of the injuries and 28% of

deaths among U.S. servicemen in Vietnam. Between 1967-1970, 1342 APCs were destroyed by IEDs placed by VC, or by more sophisticated anti-tank rockets fired by NVA troops. *(Nuckels WT, Cameron RS. United States Army Infantry Branch History Division. Don't Harness an Ox to a Racehorse: Get the M113 Out of the Armored Brigade Combat Team. www.benning.army.mil. 1998. Accessed: August 15, 2025)*



Soldiers of Alpha Company, Triple Deuce Regiment, on their APC. Infantrymen preferred to ride topside rather than squeezing into the transport compartment.
Image source: www.Facebook.com. Timeline Photos: Ghosts of the Battlefield. Alpha Company, 2/22 Triple Deuce Regiment. Posted: September 24, 2024. Accessed: 8/15/2025.

The picture above illustrates a key APC design flaw: soldiers almost never rode inside; it was dangerously hot, claustrophobic and too crowded considered the bulky packs GIs carried in addition to the squad's medical and communications gear, and ammunition. Fear of being inside the tread if it rolled over an IED was rampant, and in an ambush by rifle and machine gun, soldiers preferred to take their chances leaping to cover from atop the tread rather than being picked off one by one as they existed the rear door. *(Ross, 2013)*

APCs were effective in mashing undergrowth and quickly clearing a path into the Trapezoid, Boi Loi Woods, and Michelin Plantation, primary operation areas for Billy's mechanized company.
Image source: www.cherrieswriter.com. Cherries Writer-Vietnam War Website. Accessed: 8/16/2025.

APCs roll out for a daylight operation. APC mounted squads got to an AO faster than on foot, and could be extracted quicker, but there was no element of surprise. The dust swirls kicked up by an APC column, the clackity-clack of tread on hardpan roads, and reports by VC sympathetic villagers, for example the two people in this picture, alerted VC/NVA to the Americans' approach.
Image source: Tropic Lightning News. 5(28): 8; July 27, 1970. Photo by SP4 HG. Zukowski. Accessed: 8/16/2025.

=======

The November 17 discovery of elements of a VC and/or NVA base within the Trapezoid stimulated a follow-up by a larger SAD to explore the extent of the camp. On November 21, 1967, Bravo and Charlie Companies of the 2/22 were dispatched to return to the camp under the overall command of Billy's Company CO, Captain William Allison. Allison subsequently wrote a detailed account of the mission that was published by the Vietnam Triple Deuce Association and partially informs my description of that patrol, along with After Action Reports by the 2/22 Regiment Commander. (*Allison W. The Trapezoid, November 21-28, 1967, 10 Clicks Southeast of Dau Tieng. Vietnam Triple Deuce. www.tripledeuce.org. Accessed: August 2, 2025)* An account of the November, 1967 Trapezoid SAD by Lt. Skip Fahel, a platoon leader in Bravo Company of the 3/22 also served as source material (*Fahel S. November 1967 2/22 Company B Narrative. Vietnam Triple Deuce. www.tripledeuce.org. January 2023. Accessed: August 3, 2025)*

Bravo Company went directly to the abandoned site in the clearing while the Charlie Companies from the 2/22 and 3/22 commenced searches of adjacent terrain on either side of the camp. As they expanded their search into the underbrush, troops found more and more trenches, bunkers, tunnel openings and supply caches, suggesting that this might be a regiment size NVA/VC staging area long conjectured by U.S. Army Command. Throughout the fall of 1967, from Westmoreland on down through the higher echelons of the U.S. military in Vietnam, there was a palpable sense that the VC and NVA were going to do something big. Numerous interrogations had extracted descriptions of NVA or VC operation centers, troop movement and stockpiles of munitions throughout all combat zones in Vietnam. These reports were supported by search and destroy patrols that occasionally stumbled upon evidence of recently constructed base camps, as occurred with Billy's squad on November 17.

Westmoreland's command staff assumed that the VC and NVA were ramped up for a repeat of Dien Bien Phu – overrun a large but isolated forward base camp and force a surrender of a U.S. division. Accordingly, commanders of the 25th Infantry Division at Camp Ranier were particularly determined to *"find and flush"* any enemy regiments in the Trapezoid, merely four miles from the eastern perimeter of that base. Camp Ranier met all the Dien Bien Phu criteria – home to thousands of troops, a division headquarters, relatively isolated, and reliant on daily supply convoys that traversed two ambush intensive roads. The surrendered troops could then be used as bargaining chips to extract U.S. exit from the war. As we know, something big was indeed in the works for early 1968 – but it wasn't Dien Bien Phu Part Two; it was the Tet Offensive that violently brought the war to the streets of major Vietnamese cities for the first time, with the urban violence in 36 of 44 province capitals and five of the six largest cities in South Vietnam; attacks that were heavily covered by international news media, leading to CBS news anchor Walter Cronkite's two week on-the-ground investigation of the status of the U.S. efforts to suppress the insurrection. (*Willbanks JH. The Tet Offensive: A Concise History. New York: Columbia University Press. 2007*)

A side note: *In addition to U.S. military high command, Cronkite interviewed front line combat soldiers, platoon and company commanders, South Vietnamese civilians and South Vietnamese military leaders in key Tet battle sites: Hue, Khe Sanh, and the Saigon suburbs, sometimes conducting interviews from a jeep as fighting raged around the reporter and his camera crew. During a subsequent prime time special "Report From Vietnam," Cronkite offered a scathing critique of U.S. military strategy and painted a dour picture of the prospects for success,*

concluded that the war "was mired in stalemate," and recommended that the U.S. begin negotiations to extract itself from an unwinnable conflict. After the broadcast, President Lyndon Johnson said to his inner circle of advisors, "If I've lost Cronkite, I've lost middle America," referencing the public's admiration for Cronkite, known as the "most trusted man in America" in the 1960s and 70s. (Brinkley D. Cronkite. New York: Harper Collins. 2012)

A Triple Deuce infantryman moves through dense brush surrounding the VC base camp discovered in the Trapezoid.
Image source: Fahel, 2023. Accessed: 8/23/2025.

On November 21st, infrequent sniper fire from the woods only sporadically interrupted Bravo's investigations, but early on the 22nd, heavy automatic weapons fire, mortars and RPGs drove Bravo Company out of the clearing, which afforded no cover, into a defensive position just beyond a scrub brush line. On the 23rd, Thanksgiving Day, Billy's Charlie Company came into position with Bravo and the companies launched a joint assault to return to the enemy base, which was met with intense fire, including light artillery, from defenders who had increased dramatically in number over night. Bravo and Charlie Companies retreated back into the brush, and Captain Allison called in airstrikes, after which, *"our men enjoyed a Thanksgiving meal with turkey, dressing and all the fixings in a protected position." (Allison, 2014; Fahel, 2023)*

The next morning (November 24), Allison reported, *"at 0300, the company was hit with a mortar attack. We took 29 hits directly within our company perimeter. We had nine men wounded, but none critically, so were able to evacuate them by personal carrier with one of our medics."* The attacking mortar team had managed to crawl within a few hundred yards of the Company C perimeter, and dug foxholes, where they positioned and fired mortars. *"As soon as they stopped firing, we could see that the mortar team had picked up their equipment and we could count eight of them running down a trail toward high brush. The lead man was waving a flashlight as he led his team away from us."* What the attackers did not know was that Billy and his squad had been sent on a NAP that night, and set their trap at a trail fork in a thicket just inside a tree line. The fleeing VC mortar team ran smack into the ambush. Allison reports, *"One of the men in our ambush team yelled HALT, and then a couple of seconds later, the ambush patrol opened fire, killing seven of the mortar team. The man carrying the mortar base plates must have been lagging behind and escaped the ambush because he and the plates were not recovered."*

The NAP squad leader reported in to ask what they should do next. Allison directed them to verify that the mortar team members were actually dead for his KIA report, harvest their weapons, ammunition, papers and maps, and then do a quick search for the missing plate man. *"A few minutes later, there was another heavy burst of automatic weapons in the vicinity of the patrol. I clicked the leader to report in – were they under attack? The squad leader responded, you wanted me to make sure they were all KIA. I just wanted to make sure they were dead*

before the guys checked to see if they were dead." Allison did not record his response, but did say that he directed that squad to bury the dead attackers in the foxholes they had dug.

Charlie and Bravo Companies then returned to the enemy camp to continue destroying bunkers, trenches and equipment without opposition, and they uncovered about 20 dead VC in the underbrush near the camp. Allison noted that *"yesterday's air strikes had cleared 10 to 15 acres of jungle surrounding the camp, revealing the massiveness of the camp. It was the biggest I had ever seen. All that hot and humid day, our men crawled into bunkers and trench systems where we discovered and destroyed more of the bomb factory complex, and spent the day blowing up equipment before returning to the laager site at 1700 hours."* Allison effusively commented on the demolition work of C Company, 3rd Platoon (Billy's platoon) managed by *"the combat seasoned and thoroughly professional Sergeant Sammy Kay, who understood better than anyone the danger we were facing."* Note: A laager was a defensive position just outside the combat zone formed by circled APCs, much like a circled wagon train.

"As we returned to our laager, the VC made it evident that they were very close to us, and were watching everything we did. The enemy mortar team that was buried in their original foxholes was not completely buried. A hand was left sticking up out of one of the graves. As we rolled past the gravesite this evening, the hand was no longer visible. In fact, all the graves had been neatly mounded and the area around the graves had been smoothly raked. That gave me an uneasy feeling. I felt that if I reached out from the APC, I would probably touch a VC, and that all eyes were concentrated on us, a feeling that stayed with me the rest of my tour."

Bravo and Charlie Companies of the 2/22, now reinforced by Oliver Stone's C Company of the 3/22were sent back by battalion command the next day, November 25, to complete destruction of the camp. Allison: *"So we were given the mission of going back into the area to finish destruction of bunkers on the 25th. We had operated in that camp the day before without a single round being fired. However, things would be different on the 25th. Maybe we let our guard down a little bit because we had moved around so freely the day before."*

Triple Deuce soldiers proceed toward the Trapezoid tree line on November 25, 1967. They were met by hostile fire as they entered the woods, and a major engagement commenced.
Image source: Fahel, 2023. Accessed: 8/23/2025.

As soon as the 1st, 2nd and 3rd platoons of Charlie Company entered a trail leading into the woods, VC firing from a trench system with multiple well-hidden bunkers pinned them down alongside the path with little cover. The 1st platoon Lt. was killed in a 50 yard wide clearing in front of the VC trenches, littered with immense cone-shaped termite hills and clumps of decaying logs. The 1st and 2nd platoons crawled to a brushy area, and then made several futile attempts to retrieve his body, which was slumped over a log about thirty yards away. The retrieval effort led to the death of a second Lt. attached to the 2nd platoon as an artillery coordinator. Without orders to do so, the young officer started crawling toward his fallen comrade's body. Allison, stunned to see one of his officers creeping through the clearing,

ordered suppressing fire by Charlie Company *"that flew just over the Lt's helmet and sawed off the tops of the termite cones, spewing debris into the air."* When the dusty mist floated away, Allison's men saw that the artillery coordinator had reached his colleague, but he too was dead. Bravo Company of the 2/22 and C Company of the 3/22 soon arrived to add firepower in hopes of overwhelming the dug-in VC. Two hours of intense automatic weapons fire and grenade throwing ensued with both sides firing across the clearing that held the bodies of the two U.S. officers. Each side attempted to sneak squads from log pile to log pile inside the clearing to get close enough for grenade and claymore tossing, but were beaten back with casualties.

Allison feared a flanking attack on his pinned down troops; he ordered Billy's 3rd Platoon to crawl around the edge of the clearing to the right and attack the flank of the VC position and, most importantly, silence a bunker that was pouring heavy fire into his troops, producing numerous casualties. *"The platoon hit the ground and as they moved forward, started to put deadly fire on the trench and bunker to their front. The VC replied with a large volume of fire that passed just over the heads of the men as they crawled through the brush. Later on they told me that they could feel the heat from the rounds as flew by. As they approached the troublesome bunker, the 3rd (Platoon) crawled over very wide and deep holes that were covered with webbed bamboo; the holes were most likely air vents for a tunnel system.* Billy's platoon advanced to within 20 yards of the bunker and directed all their firepower toward it, hurling grenades and firing bangladores. "*The VC bunker in front of the 3rd eventually became silent; several VC bodies were visible; it had been knocked out of action."* Allison then directed the 3rd platoon to establish a position to defend against a flank attack.

Billy was awarded his second bronze star for combat valor in recognition of his actions during the assault on the VC bunker.

Although Allison brought up APCs to join the attack with their M-50s and M-60s, the battle settled into a stalemate, as both sides held firm in their positions. Allison wrote, *"It became apparent that we were facing a well dug-in and determined force, and that if we continued to assault the fortified positions, we would sacrifice too many men. Contact was too close (50 yards) to call-in air power. At 1430 hours, we broke contact and pulled back."* Billy's 3rd platoon was out of ammunition and suffered several wounded from VC snipers as they crawled away from their position to the right of the clearing, *"dreading that they would be shot from below when they again had to traverse the tunnel shafts. Although they could see lights underneath as they inched over the shafts while still under heavy fire from the VC, there was no upward gunfire, and they made it back to our laager."*

Allison reported that his CO (Regiment Commander) wanted to send the companies back into the trapezoid *"to make another push to drive back the VC and recover the deceased officers from the clearing."* Allison resisted, noting that the bodies were likely in the hands of the VC (a prized retrieval for propaganda purposes), and if not, they were almost certainly booby-trapped with pressure activated mines, concluding: "*It's just not worth the risk at this point in time."* After a tense stare-down, the CO relented, ordering Allison's men to continue their pull back. Artillery shelling and Cobra air strikes followed the American's departure that afternoon and continued for the next two days, a typical outcome for a search and destroy mission.

Following a 2.5-day bombardment, Bravo and Charlie Companies of the 2/22, and Oliver Stone's C Company of the 3/22 once more were sent into the Trapezoid to survey the camp. Allison reported, *"after about an hour at the camp, we were hit with automatic weapons and RPGs, taking multiple casualties included one KIA."* After regrouping his men into a defensive position, rebuffing two VC charges with additional casualties, Allison, fearing encirclement, withdrew his troops to the laager just beyond the Trapezoid tree line. "*After this contact, the 2/22 and 3/22 brass elected to move out of the area, and the VC camp received a visit from our B52s."*

This search and destroy mission was declared a success. The all important KIA scorecard was: 35 confirmed VC versus four U.S. fatalities, although 43 U.S. soldiers were wounded including SP4 Oliver Stone, who was hit by shrapnel in his legs and buttocks, but refused evacuation and stayed with his unit medic to receive treatment, returning to duty soon after. The bodies of the two slain Lts. were eventually recovered after the bombing. Charlie Company of the 2/22 had 24 of the U.S. casualties. *(Fahel, 2023)*

A front page article in the 25th Infantry Division's *Tropical News* announced: *Triple Deuces Destroy Viet Cong and NVA Regimental Base Camp*, with a quote from the 2/22 regiment commander: *"The base camp was a key to an expected attack on the District Headquarters at Dau Tieng, and the bombing pounded it into a veritable dust heap." (Friar J. SP4. Triple Deuce Destroys Viet Cong Regimental Base Camp. Tropic Lightning News. Weekly Newspaper of the 25 Infantry Division in Vietnam. 25th Infantry Division Association. www.25thida.org. December 25, 1967; 2(51): 1-3)*

Large Scale Regimental or Division Level Interdiction Operations

After the B-52 bombing of the Trapezoid, additional searches confirmed that the enemy base camp had been abandoned, but only a few VC bodies were found and most of the tunnels and trenches at the site had been cleared of weapons and equipment. Where did the NVA regiment and affiliated VC troops go? Based on interrogations and increased enemy contact during NAPs and SADs, 25th Infantry Division leaders concluded that the answer was: the Boi Loi Woods, another woody area of dense undergrowth just a couple of miles from the Trapezoid (see map on page 396). Early in December, a night ambush led to the recovery of maps and documents indicating that a regiment-size cohort of VC had moved into the Boi Loi Woods, presumably to hook-up with the NVA regiment that recently slipped out of the Trapezoid. After concluding that the Trapezoid search and destroy mission had been under-resourced, and thus too easily pushed out of position, the 25th Infantry Division command organized a major initiative codenamed Operation Camden designed to trap two regiments, one NVA, and one VC, in the Boi Loi Woods. This area was smaller and less dense than the Trapezoid, thus easier to search, and also was thought to be less integrated into the Cu Chi tunnel system, affording fewer hiding spots. Instead of the several hundred infantrymen sent into the Trapezoid during the November 21-28 operation, Camden consisted of two regiments of the 25th Infantry Division, which were Billy's mechanized Triple Deuce and Oliver Stone's 3/22; two full battalions of the 27th Infantry Division; a artillery Battalion for additional firepower, and two ARVN regiments, nearly 12,000 troops in all, supported by two assault helicopter companies and 30 Hueys and Chinooks for equipment and troop transport. *(Combat After Action Report for the Period Ending December 27, 1967. Operation Camden. 2nd and 3rd Brigades. 25th Infantry Division. Experiences of Units*

Engaged in Counterinsurgency Operation, December 18-27, 1967. January 23, 1968. Report # 67X1201. Washington D.C.: Department of the Army. www.intel.gov. Accessed: July 9, 2025)

The start of Camden was delayed by two weeks because of exceedingly wet weather and infrastructure issues - several units were severely undermanned and had to wait for replacements. Camden finally commenced at 4:00am on December 18, 1967 when Billy's Triple Deuce APCs rolled out of Camp Ranier toward a designated LZ followed on foot by two platoons of the 3/22, several platoons of the 27th Infantry, and numerous supply trucks carrying everything from medical supplies to sandbags. The missions of these troops were to clear and defend an LZ for troop drops later in the day, build the site into a Fire Support Base (FSB), which was later named FSB Lafayette, and then join the search for the VC/NVA regiments. Now nine months into his year-long Vietnam rotation and approaching short-timer status, Billy recently had been promoted to a fire team leader.

The Triple Deuce finally reached the site at 11:00am, behind schedule due to defensive detonation of IEDs in the road and fending off several hit and run RPG attacks that derailed two treads. First, a M121 daisy cutter bomb was dropped on cue from a C-130 to clear a 150-yard circle that was further flattened out by a bulldozer ferried in by a Chinook Skycrane. Other Chinooks dropped pallets of sandbags and wire for perimeter security and construction of medical and communications bunkers. While the 3/22 and other infantrymen dug trenches, built bunkers, and spooled concertina wire, Billy's company stationed their APC's wagon-train style just outside the newly forming green line, ready to fend off attacks and periodically engaging in Mad Minutes to deter the VC who were undoubtedly watching the LZ construction just beyond the Boi Loi brush line. There was no pretense of deception when the U.S. army rolled into an area. When perimeter defenses were completed, Huey Tugs flew in five howitzers that were arrayed at the center of the FSB in the five pointed star formation. Finally, troop landings of the bulk of the 3/22, 27th infantry and ARVN troops commenced. FSB Lafayette was one of three FSBs rapidly constructed to support Operation Camden. The armored battalion arrived later on the 18th and was dispersed among the three FSBs.

A Huey transports a howitzer to a FSB during Operation Camden.
Image source: www.wordpress.com. Bell Model 211 Huey Tug. July 11, 2012. Accessed: 9/1/2025.

After all components of the FSB were in place, the Triple Deuce APCs rolled inside the perimeter and took up defensive positions around the arc of the camp. At FSB Lafayette, the VC promptly made it clear they intended to aggressively resist U.S. entry into Boi Loi. After dark on the 18th, substantial numbers of VC twice emerged from the woods and attacked perimeter guards on several sides of the FSB with automatic weapons, RPGs and claymores hurled at bunkers, both times starting firefights that engaged many of the troops at Lafayette. Two GIs were killed by a thrown mine, and more than a dozen wounded before the attackers dissolved

into the Boi Loi brush. Early the next morning, five Triple Deuce and 3/22 platoons, including Billy's 3rd platoon, rolled past the FSB perimeter on APCs heading toward the Boi Loi brush line, where they jumped off and proceeded on foot to begin a search. VC sniper fire commenced immediately as the platoons scattered and scurried toward cover behind the hollowed out dead trees and stumps at the edge of Boi Loi. M-60 bursts from the APCs soon quieted the VC. The first target inside the Boi Loi was a trail previously identified by a recon team. Locating the trail, the platoons re-organized and stepped out, only to be met with withering heavy arms fire from a hidden bunker. Caught out in the open, 12 infantrymen were killed and 14 wounded, several from Billy's platoon. APCs were called in; they rolled through the brush toward the bunker, shielding the troops and eventually silenced the VC gunners. Exploration behind the bunker uncovered an abandoned VC command center. The search squads pressed forward for the rest of the day, encountering sporadic and light resistance, but found no evidence of a regiment sized camp. They were recalled to FSB Lafayette at 4:00pm. (*Combat AAR for Period Ending December 27, 1967. Operation Camden. Accessed: July 9, 2025)*

Triple Deuce squad entering Boi Loi on December 19, 1967.
Image source: Tropical Lightning News. December 25, 1967; 2(51): page 5. www.25thida.org. Accessed: 9/2/2025.

As the Triple Deuce and 3/22 platoons exited Boi Loi and approached the waiting APCs around 5:00pm, the VC attacked with RPGs, damaging two treads and pinning down the infantrymen, likely including Billy and his remaining squad mates in open ground with little cover. Additional treads were called out of the FSB and their M-60 and M-50 fire drove away the VC attackers.

On the morning of December 20th, due to the casualties suffered the previous day, the remaining members of Billy's 3rd platoon were folded into Charlie Company's 2nd platoon, which also had a number of men wounded and evacuated. FSB Lafayette and the other two FSBs bombarded the Boi Loi with artillery all morning, supported by several Cobra gunship strafing runs, hoping to drive VC defending the Boi Loi entrances deeper into the woods. The newly integrated 2nd and 3rd platoon did not move through the FSB perimeter until 2:30pm to continue searching for evidence of an enemy base camp; within minutes, they met resistance. From the Operation Camden AAR: *"At 2:55pm, the platoon engaged an unknown number of VC in a firefight about two hundred yards inside the woods. VC fire appeared to emanate from a cluster of fallen trees and stumps near a bomb crater filled with waist high elephant grass." (Operation Camden AAR. December 18 – 27, 1967. Company C, 2nd Battalion (Mechanized), 22 Infantry Regiment, 25th Infantry Division. U.S. National Archives. U.S. Military Archives, Vietnam War. File: TT168300010207. Page 6. Accessed: July 10, 2025)*

Within minutes, VC fire diminished and then ceased. After a lull of silence followed by a Mad Minute fuselage, two five-man fire teams were directed to move forward to search for VC positions, one to the left of the crater and the other, Billy's fire team, to the right with the goal

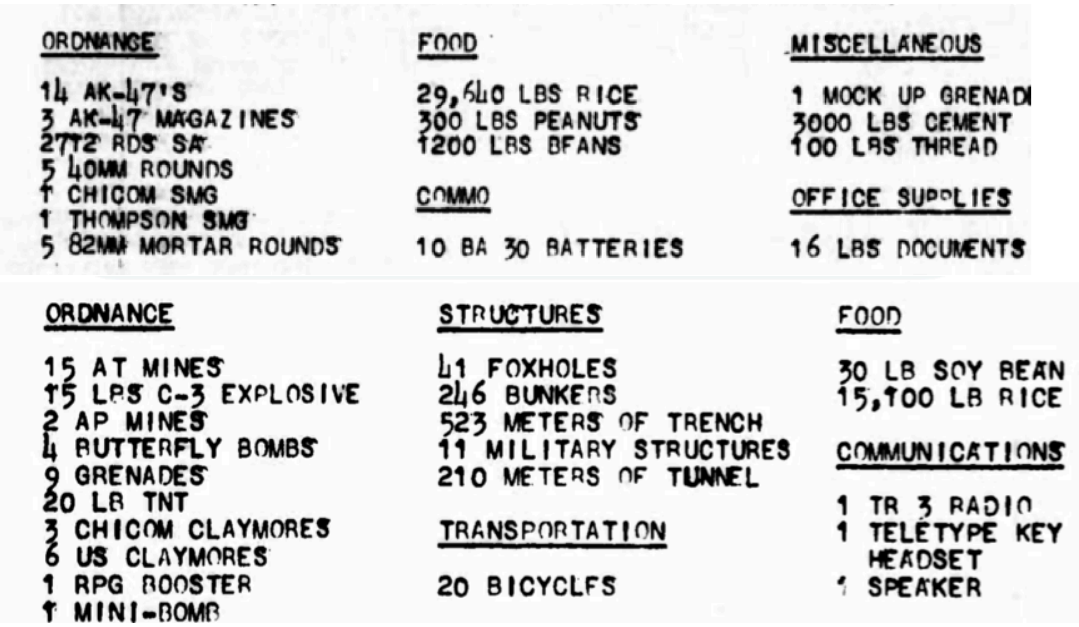
of meeting up at the backside of the crater. To avoid the potentially mine-laden elephant grass, Billy led his men along the scrub line about ten yards from the crater rim. As the team crept forward between the elephant grass on the left and the scrubby trees on their right shoulder, the pop-pop-pop of small arms fire rang out, unexpectantly from the direction of the crater. One of Billy's men was hit and bent to his knees. As more shots were fired, Billy and a mate grabbed the wounded soldier, hauling him to his feet and started moving toward a cluster of fallen trees as the other two men triggered their M16s in the direction of VC gunfire. From the After Action Report of Company C, 2nd Battalion (Mechanized), 22 Infantry Regiment, 25th Infantry Division: *"The ground in front of these men then exploded; casualties occurred. The fire team at the left rim was not attacked." (Combat AAR for Period Ending December 27, 1967. Operation Camden. Accessed: July 9, 2025)*

Billy did not survive this action. The other four members of his team were wounded by flying fragments; one later died at the Ranier medical unit. The survivors managed to crawl several yards into the scrub and were extracted by a recovery squad 30 minutes later. In addition to the Company C, Triple Deuce After Action Report (AAR) for December 20, 1967, I found two other AARs that mention the attack at the bomb crater including one written by the commander of one of the helicopter assault squadrons attached to Operation Camden. As best as I can determine from these AARs, the entire encounter including the initial firefight shortly after entering the Boi Loi appears to have been a VC trap. Anticipating that the U.S. soldiers would avoid the crater, the ambush was set for the scrub line. The small arms fire was intended to push the Americans toward the trees where either pressure activated mines or claymores were concealed. Almost simultaneously, another VC ambush several hundred yards away led to the deaths of two additional Triple Deuce soldiers. After these encounters, the platoon leader pulled his men back and called in F-4 Phantom air strikes. When the fires and smoke from the bombing cleared, the platoon re-entered the area but found no VC bodies or left-behind equipment. The VC had filtered away once again, with no casualties left behind.

An F-4 peels off after strafing the Boi Loi Woods minutes after the ambush at the bomb crater.
Image source: Tropical Lightning News. December 25, 1967; 2(51): page 6. www.25thida.org. Accessed: 9/2/2025.

Operation Camden continued until December 27, 1967 with daily morning and afternoon sweeps of the Boi Loi, met with increasingly limited resistance as the days went by. Ultimately, remnants of a substantial NVA base camp were discovered, and as usual, the camp was deserted. However, various types of supplies, communication equipment, weapons and ammunition were left behind. The final AAR for Operation Camden largely consisted of long lists of recovered munitions, weapons, ammo, food and supplies. At the end of Camden, the

whereabouts of the VC and NVA regiments were unknown, although in a few days they would re-appear in a burst of violence.



ORDNANCE	FOOD	MISCELLANEOUS
14 AK-47'S	29,640 LBS RICE	1 MOCK UP GRENADE
3 AK-47 MAGAZINES	300 LBS PEANUTS	3000 LBS CEMENT
2772 RDS SA	1200 LBS BEANS	100 LBS THREAD
5 40MM ROUNDS		
1 CHICOM SMG	COMMO	OFFICE SUPPLIES
1 THOMPSON SMG		
5 82MM MORTAR ROUNDS	10 BA 30 BATTERIES	16 LBS DOCUMENTS

ORDNANCE	STRUCTURES	FOOD
15 AT MINES	41 FOXHOLES	30 LB SOY BEAN
15 LBS C-3 EXPLOSIVE	246 BUNKERS	15,100 LB RICE
2 AP MINES	523 METERS OF TRENCH	
4 BUTTERFLY BOMBS	11 MILITARY STRUCTURES	COMMUNICATIONS
9 GRENADES	210 METERS OF TUNNEL	
20 LB TNT		1 TR 3 RADIO
3 CHICOM CLAYMORES	TRANSPORTATION	1 TELETYPE KEY
6 US CLAYMORES		HEADSET
1 RPG BOOSTER	20 BICYCLES	1 SPEAKER
1 MINI-BOMB		

Inventory of Materials Found at Boi Loi Camp; Operation Camden, December 18-27, 1967.
Image Source: Combat AAR for the Period Ending December 27, 1967. Operation Camden. 1968. Accessed: 7/9/2025.

For Westmoreland's KIA scorecard, the outcomes of Operation Camden were not impressive: U.S.: 21 KIA and 67 wounded soldiers requiring air-evacuation, surgery and hospitalization. A substantial number of the KIA and wounded were from Triple Deuce's Charlie Company, 2nd and 3rd Platoons. For the VC/NVA: 27 KIA with unknown wounded.

After December 20, 1967

Billy's remains returned to the States near the end of January, 1968. He was buried near his Gig Harbor home in the Haven of Rest Memorial Park. For my dad, the funeral was wrenching; military etiquette required that he attend funerals of servicemen and veterans in his full dress uniform yet he was apprehensive about the effect of his military attire on Billy's mother. He anguished back and forth; he packing both a civilian suit and his dress uniform. The morning of the funeral, he decided to wear his uniform. I asked to attend the funeral, but only my dad attended – he was concerned about the emotions that my appearance might engender. When he returned home, he said only that *"it was dreadful – how else could it be."* My dad and his older sister, Yvonne, were never close, and lived thousands of miles apart for most of their adult lives. However, Billy's death in Vietnam ended their relationship for years, even after my parents moved to the Puget Sound. Brother and sister finally resumed a relationship years later at the urging of their spouses.

Billy's combat death intensified my dad's desire to obtain a field command in Vietnam. I did not understand his urge to be there; it made little sense for him career-wise, and of course, it was hazardous. Maybe it was guilt, curiosity about Billy's Vietnam experience or simple desire to be where the action was, I don't know. He and his Career Guidance Officer pushed for an assignment, but 50-year old officers with no experience outside of heavy armor were not in

demand for a guerilla war. He finally secured a regiment command in Korea. Ironically, a major part of that assignment was training Thailand troops for Vietnam combat. I know he went to Vietnam twice, likely more, to observe the Thai battalions in action. Maybe that quelled his itch to be there, or perhaps his need to come to terms with Billy's nine months "in country."

Five days after the conclusion of Operation Camden, on January 1, 1968, the remaining members of Billy's 2/22 Charlie Company and Oliver Stone's 3/22 Charlie Company found themselves at another Fire Support Base, known as FSB Burt, five miles from the Boi Loi, near the Cambodian border. Members of both companies spent New Year's Day opening mail that was dropped early that morning, along with crates of *"well above average grunt rations." (Vergon, 2022)* At the request of Pope Paul VI, a 48-hour ceasefire had been agreed to by both sides. However, the two VC and NVA regiments that escaped the Boi Loi had other plans. Just before midnight, VC and NVA launched intense assaults on FSB Burt from all directions with hundreds of soldiers attacking in waves interspersed with mortar attacks. LPs and perimeter bunkers were overrun, and soon the attackers had penetrated into the camp on three sides, with the biggest breach on the south end defended by the 2/22 on the left side of the camp and the 3/22 on the right. Furious close quarter fighting occurred, and running low on ammo, the 2/22 and 3/22 were pushed together into one defensive position, trying to block the onrushing VC/NVA with pistols, knives and rifle butts. A few minutes later, and now completely out of ammo, the 2/22 and 3/22 were driven into the base interior toward the command bunker. Fearing a complete overrun, the Burt CO called air strikes onto the FBS. Encircling the command bunker for a last stand, most of the U.S. troops survived the bombardment, but the attackers faired less well, and the assault was beaten back after dozens of Cobra sorties. The Battle for FSB Burt, also known as the Battle of Soui Cut to the Vietnamese, is one of the most famous encounters of the war, and Oliver Stone's remembrances of this battle are depicted during the frenzied final 15 minutes of *Platoon. (Fahel, 2023; Heinemann, 2005; Vergon, 2022)*

The names of 58,000 Americans who lost their lives during this war are engraved in granite in the Vietnam Veterans Memorial in Washington D.C.. SP4 William Carey Janes is recognized on panel 32E, line 31. Billy is one of 7,749 American Gold Star Veterans from the state of Washington who died in U.S. military action during the 20th century. He is one of 1,051 servicemen from Washington who were "mortal casualties in the line of duty" in Vietnam. *(National Unified Archive of American Gold Star Veterans. Vietnam Veterans Memorial Fund. www.vvmf.org.)* As best as I can determine, Billy Janes is the only North American member of the nine families chronicled in *Who We Are* that died in military combat from 1611 to 2025.

Becoming Who We Are (Susan and Bill Hendricson; 1971-1978)

Other members of our immediate family are likely familiar with the San Antonio phase of my life with Susan. In contrast, our eight years in metropolitan Chicago, i.e., Chicagoland (1971 – 1978), the first chapter of early marriage challenges, relationship building, and moving toward who we would be as adults, may be less well known. Even for Susan and I, it's easy to forget that we had a substantially different existence in that decade. The five intervening decades have left a fuzzy veil over the Chicagoland phase, almost as if other people lived those years, but it was indeed a much younger version of us, and it was a meaningful period of our life together, as we started to learn how to navigate ups and downs, and lay the foundation for who we are today.

After our marriage ceremony on a snowy morning in Susan's parent's church, the First Baptist Church of Sliver Spring, Maryland, and the reception near Susan's home at the Manor Country Club in Rockville, Maryland during an even more intense snowfall, we ran off into the future.

January 2, 1971 – Departing After Our Wedding

The first stop was a honeymoon in Bermuda, which was excellent until the final day when we both were struck with a rather violent gastrointestinal bug. After an uncomfortable flight home, we spent several miserable days in bed at the Hendricson house in Fairfax Virginia on GE Haynesworth Place, named in an extreme piece of irony after George E. "Tuck" Haynesworth, the trigger-happy Citadel cadet we met in John Lienau's story. But, our gastrointestinal systems finally re-balanced, and Susan and I headed back to Carlisle, Pennsylvania to finish our college careers at Dickinson, balancing academics with jobs; Bill, Montgomery Ward paint department manager; Susan, Teaching Assistant and care provider for children with Down Syndrome.

Susan on a Bermuda beach in early January. It was sunny but definitely not sunbathing weather.

Our humble abode in Carlisle, PA. Susan's Pontiac Firebird is parked out front in a parking lot we shared with the Carlisle Elks Club. We had the bottom floor of an old farmhouse, which we rented from a blind lawyer who was tightfisted with repair money. The couple living upstairs were pleasant and friendly, although they shot porn videos for a living.

Two days after graduation, I started my first post-college employment, working on a construction crew, installing doors, windows and bathtubs, for a new 50-acre Ramada Inn Resort in Mechanicsburg, PA, a suburb of Harrisburg, the state capital. Ramada at that time was embarking on an image upgrade campaign, building swankier facilities to attract higher dollar reservations, especially in communities adjacent to the nation's rapidly expanding interstate highway system. For the grand opening in Mechanicsburg, Ramada Corporation hired none other than Jerry Lee Lewis, the famed "Killer," a Rockabilly star second only to Elvis (*Great Balls of Fire, Whole Lot of Shakin Going On', High School Confidential, Breathless, Crazy Arms,* and more than 30 other Billboard Top 10 hits) to perform at a gala in the resort's ballroom. The Killer's journey to the resort led to my most memorable day on that job, which involved figuring out a way to get his beloved white baby grand piano, not surprisingly known as "Baby" into his suite on the second floor of the facility. Rather than rehearsing in the ballroom, which Lewis and his traveling partner, an attractive women introduced as his agent and spokesperson, claimed would lead to much gawking, autograph seeking and disruptions, they demanded that the piano be transported upstairs to Lewis's suite to allow solitary preparation, and, because Jerry Lee, having scoped out the setting, decided that playing from the balcony above the ballroom would be a majestic experience for the gala attendees. This was news to our hotel manager who had already set up a cordoned-off performance area for Lewis and Baby near an inexplicably large fireplace, which had the appearance of a grand hearth in a medieval castle, along one side of the parquet floor ballroom in the Mechanicsburg Ramada Resort.

With five of us crew members standing around watching this conversation, happy to be indoors in air conditioning and out of the oppressive central PA heat and humidity, the hotel manager dug in his heels, saying he didn't believe it was possible to move Baby upstairs. The

agent/spokesperson whipped out a folder from her large over the shoulder bag, flipped to a marked page and began loudly reading contract terms, *"to include private rehearsal accommodation within Mr. Lewis' assigned residence up until one hour before commencement of designated engagement."* After a awkward stare down between the agent and the Ramada manager, with Jerry Lee leaning up against a pillar, grinning, nodding and strumming his fingers on his pants leg, probably listening to music in his head, (maybe his big 1971 hit: *Would You Take Another Chance on Me*) the manager waved us over, and, trying to act gruff, not his core nature, said in effect, *"try the elevator first, and if that won't work, haul that thing up the stairs,"* pointing at me – *"you're in charge; don't break his damn piano."*

Lewis, Baby and Myra Gale, a cousin he married when she was 13, one of his seven wives. In spite of a chaotic existence, alcohol and drug abuse, frequent performance injuries (he was frenetic on stage, jumping on and off Baby, and into the crowd), The Killer was still touring in his 80s and released a best selling album when he was 85.
Image source: Wikimedia Commons.
www.commons.m.wikimedia.org. Accessed: 9/17/2024.

When we started to tilt Baby on its side so we could unscrew the legs, Lewis broke out of his reverie and told us to stop tipping the piano because it "jangled up" the innards, throwing it out of tune, and then informed us that the legs could not be unscrewed anyway because were bolted on with metal plates for reinforcement, probably due to the Killer's gymnastics on and off Baby during shows. And Lewis didn't want it rolled, more jangle avoidance, so the Ramada Five picked up Baby, which likely weighed 500 pounds, and shuffled it over to the nearest elevator. Given the direction of this story to this point, it's probably no surprise that the roughly 7-foot (long) and 6-foot (wide) baby grand did not fit into the standard Otis 6.5 by 5.5 elevator. It would not have fit even if Lewis allowed us to carry it sideways. The staff elevator for cleaning and maintenance crews was only inches larger, and also a no-go. So, we shuffled Baby back to the remaining option, a curving staircase ascending up from the ballroom parquet to a balcony area on the Ramada's Executive-Suite Wing. Up we went with Jerry's Baby; I foolishly allowed myself to be on the upside, and thus had to back up the winding stairs. Fortunately, the staircase was wide so we didn't have to lift Baby higher than the side railings, but the curve was pronounced and their were a.. lot.. of.. stairs. Up close, Jerry's piano was banged up and obviously had been recently touched up and lacquered. We knew this because sticky lacquer was rubbing off in our hands as we wrangled it upward, making Baby slippery, leading to several encounters with the metal railing that separated us from the floor 20 or so feet below. Despite the slippery surface and the cumbersome heft of the device, Baby and the Ramada crew survived the staircase climb.

For some reason, Susan and I were not invited to the by-invitation only, VIP, concert, but I did get to listen to Lewis and his agent yelling at us not to scratch the white piano as we struggled up the staircase to the balcony. And, after carrying, not rolling, Baby down a long hallway to Lewis' suite, no tips were doled out once we deposited it in the room. Instead, the

spokesperson, fussed at us for our dirty boots, the dusty soles of which were adding color contrast to the dead white shag carpet. The last I saw of Lewis as we trudged out of the room was him looking down through a bay window at the ballroom below, shoulders hunched, hands in his baggy slacks, a forlorn image. I imagined him pondering to himself: has it really come down to this – a Ramada Inn in some place called Mechanicsburg? But I don't know really what he was thinking; maybe he was working through the lyrics of another song. Fortunately, I was not scheduled to work the day that Baby made the return trip down to ground level, and into a moving van, off to Killer's next gig, just a few miles away at the Williams Grove Amusement Park.

A photo of the 1956 all-night recording session of Jerry Lee Lewis, Carl Perkins, Elvis and Johnny Cash, the Million Dollar Quartet. From 1954-1960, Lewis was the top rockabilly recording artist in the world, topping even Elvis. His career dipped in the 1960s due to negative press over his marriage to a 13-year old cousin, but rebounded after their divorce in 1971.

Image source: Wikimedia Commons. www.commons.m.wikimedia.org.

Independent of the piano lifting, just a few days before the end of my summer employment, I was offered a managerial job at the Resort in charge of the linen and maintenance services and night operations twice a week. After a few days of consideration, I said no in favor of heading off to graduate school. I must say that I did consider it; the starting salary was tempting. It took eight years for me to earn a salary in the educational world equal to Ramada's offer.

In 1970, I thought I wanted to be a high school history teacher, *"to be better than all the bad ones I endured"*, but my mentor at Carlisle Middle School where I taught during the senior year in Dickinson's teacher prep program emphasized two pieces of career advise over and over: (1) interview for teaching jobs with an advanced degree already in hand; you'll start with a higher salary and you'll always be financially ahead of other teachers who start without a Masters, and (2) get an educational technology degree (in 1970, that meant mainframe computers or the emerging medium of video recording) so you can also be certified as a school's technology specialist, leading to an even higher starting salary. *"Even more than coaches"* he advised from experience because he was a long-time football coach. So off to graduate school we went to achieve those goals. Accepted by several schools, the choice came down to Boston University or Northwestern University in Evanston, Illinois, just north of Chicago. We visited both and concluded that the academics were equivalent, but the cost of living in Boston was exorbitant. The rental of marginally passable apartments located far away from the BU campus was more than double that of much nicer accommodations in Evanston.

And, it must be admitted that the community of Evanston itself was as much or more of an attraction as NU. When we drove for the first time north on Sheridan Road, the suburban extension of the famed Lake Shore Drive along Chicago's Lake Michigan Gold Coast and crossed into Evanston, the decision was made at that moment. Sheridan Road, like virtually every other street in the town, was canopied with stately Elm and Maple trees. Well-restored apartment buildings and private homes from the 1920s and 30s lined both sides of the street with glimpses

of the massive lake in between homes on a shoreline that ran the length of the town. There were parks, many along the lake, and beautiful 19th century churches, and a spectacular section of the Chicago Greenbelt System extended along both sides of the North Branch of the Chicago River curving through town. After several miles of gawking, we rounded another curve in the road, past a large sandy beach, and there was Northwestern, canopied by trees with the full length of the campus directly on the water. In our eyes, Evanston was the place for us.

The Northwestern lakeside campus in Evanston.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 5/23/2023.

Organizations that assess community quality of life saw it the same way, including the U.S. National Civic League (NCL) that awards All-American city designations. Evanston has been selected as an All American City numerous times, including most recently in 2021.

Image source: City of Evanston. www.cityofevanston.org. Accessed: 5/27/2023.

The All-American recognitions from the conservative-leaning Civic League were surprising because Evanston always has been a community with decided progressive tendencies, likely driven by the predominance of church-led social activism throughout its history. Evanston is known as the City of Churches, and when we lived there, it had the highest church to population ratio of any U.S. city over 50,000. In the 1850s, an offshoot of the third Great Awakening that WF Hendricson encountered during one of his wagon train journeys, known as the Eyes Open Movement, originated in the Methodist Church of Evanston. It was comprised of men and women *"awake to social inequalities and indignities that burden and belittle our fellow humans." (Kidd, 2007)* During the 1970s, among the sequence of North Shore suburbs of Evanston, Willamette, Kenilworth, Winnetka, Glencoe, Highland Park and Lake Forest that become increasingly affluent/opulent as you drive north, Evanston was the only community with a diverse population at 55% White, 30% Black and 15% Asian or Hispanic.

However, it's important to recognize that Evanston's Black population was largely restricted by racially motivated real estate practices to the southern edge of the city bordering Chicago until the 1950's. White homeowners and real estate agents slowly became comfortable with the

concept of selling to Black buyers during the 1960s, but even when we lived in Evanston, there was an area of town primarily populated with Black families. As far back as the 1920's, Evanston city leadership desired to promote racial integration, which was inconsistent with prevailing trends in the U.S. during that era. City Hall and the School Board, fighting stiff opposition from White parent groups and law suits that went all the way to the Illinois Supreme Court, constructed a new 65 acre campus for the Evanston Township High School (ETHS) in 1924 within a traditionally Black neighborhood of Evanston. The move is generally credited with slowly breaking down segregationist attitudes and real estate practices within the city. ETHS is considered to have the largest campus acreage of any high school in Illinois, is almost annually listed as a top U.S. high school in the U.S. News and World Report rankings, and maintains a diverse student body, economically and racially. Ironically, in spite of its role in the U.S. civil rights movement, the school is likely best known today as the site of the 2004 movie, and current Broadway play, *Mean Girls*, written by Northwestern alumni, Tina Fey.

A map of the communities comprising Chicago's North Shore. Annually in the fall with the leaves turning color, we drove north on Sheridan Road from Evanston to Lake Bluff taking in the stately homes, lake views, sailboats, and parks. Then we headed south on Green Bay Road to return home via inland villages surrounding with a long section of Chicago's Green Belt.
Image source: North Shore Chicago. www.northshorechicago.com. Accessed: 5/24/2023.

To imagine what Evanston was like back then, think about any outdoor scene in these 1980s movies: *Risky Business, Ferris Bueller, Sixteen Candles, Pretty in Pink, Breakfast Club, Weird Science, Say Anything* (John Cusack with his boom box), *Uncle Buck, and Home Alone.* All of these movies implied that they were set in the vastly more posh villages of Kenilworth or Winnetka, but, in actuality, they were mostly filmed in Evanston to provide a less ostentatious backdrop that would better connect with movie audiences. *(Gora S. You Couldn't Ignore Me If You Tried: The Brat Pack, John Hughes and Their Impact on a Generation. New York: Three Rivers Press. 2011.)* Indeed, Evanston was solidly middle income in the 1970s. Even a low-income couple like us could live there if residences were selected carefully.

Our Evanston home in 1976-1978, a 15 minute walk to the NU Marina, where we often spent Sunday evenings watching long lines of yachts come in from lake weekends. The house is three blocks from Dyche Stadium (now Ryan Field), handy on football weekends. The south end of the stadium was open in the 70s. Our first son, Adam, often got strolled back and forth on the south end on game days.

We both worked full-time from the moment we arrived in Evanston to make ends meet during the graduate school years. Susan obtained a job with the Educational Psychology Department at Northwestern University where she did research at elementary schools including a lab school

run by Northwestern. At the same time, she interviewed for and obtained a full time job at Evanston's famed Tom Thumb School. This school provided excellent child development experience, and importantly, provided an eclectic and supportive social group for a young, recently transplanted couple like us. Susan became fast friends with a substantial cohort of interesting urban-oriented people with diverse backgrounds who, happily, liked to throw dinner parties (that's what people did before internet and Netflix), holiday parties and facilitated our entry into a gourmet club where we met people from all sectors of Chicagoland.

Several vivid recollections remain from our early years in Evanston. One is Susan riding off to Tom Thumb on her bike, bundled in a heavy winter coat, plowing through the slush on a gloomy winter morning with even more falling snow swirling around her, blown by lake wind and enveloping her in a cocoon as she peddled down the street. Another is our move into our first house in Evanston, accomplished DIY during a blazing hot weekend in July 1973.

July 1973 moving day in Evanston.

After turning down a job to be a bodyguard at a school for emotionally challenged adolescents (a good decision in retrospect), I somehow managed to land a job at Lutheran General Healthcare (LGH), a teaching hospital in the University of Illinois-Chicago (UIC Med) Medical School system of affiliated institutions known as the Metro Eight. The upside of the Lutheran General job was their willingness to accommodate my NU class schedule and the downside was arriving VERY early in the morning, typically 5:00am, to accomplish a substantial part of the job, which was videotaping and photographing surgeries for use in resident training and for publications. LGH was in a far west suburb, Park Ridge (near O'Hare Airport), 30-40 minutes from Evanston if traffic was light and it was not snowing or icy. So – a lot of early mornings. Other tasks at LGH included editing the surgical tapes into 15 minute training videos, broadcasting 8:00am M & M (Morbidity and Mortality) Conferences, where the MDs critiqued each other's work, to the other Metro Eight hospitals, broadcasting the daily Noon Conferences (teaching sessions for Metro Eight residents and attendings sponsored by pharmaceutical reps (lots of good food!), and at least an hour a day of photocopying journal articles for UIC Med faculty that were writing manuscripts and preparing lectures. Reminder: this was 20 years pre-internet. One other notable moment at Lutheran General was participating in the first nationwide fax transmission in the U.S. in 1971. The National Library of Medicine (NLM) sent the inaugural fax to a hospital in each of the 50 states. Lutheran General represented Illinois. My job was to install the fax machine on the auditorium stage and hope that it worked at the big moment. It did! As a large crowd full of physicians and nursing staff watched, a 8 X 11 inch image of George Washington noisily rolled out of the machine, which I handed to the hospital's CEO, who held it up to the crowd, eliciting applause and cheers. I then faxed a page with our

hospital logo back to NLM, and received a confirmation fax with a big image of the NLM logo, triggering more cheering. The hospital librarian, who was assigned responsibility for the machine, then launched into reading a long list of instructions and Fax usage guidelines, which thinned the audience considerably as I loaded the device on a cart and rolled it off stage.

I probably filmed and/or photographed over 100 surgeries in my time at LGH. When filming (this was still the pre-video era), I stood behind the surgeons, residents and scrub nurses at a console where I operated a 16mm camera mounted on a dolly positioned over the table. The surgeon or his resident would bark orders to zoom in or out, or ask me to move to the side, foot or head of the table to shoot at an angle with a secondary hand-held film camera. Later in the week, I edited film from both cameras into the final 15-minute product, typically with the guidance of Surgery Chief Resident or sometimes, the surgeon himself. For still photography intended for journal articles or lecture slides, I stood next to the lead surgeon and snapped shots at his direction, often sliding around the table to get better sight lines, sometimes bumping or standing in front of residents or nurses, which annoyed them to no end. Certainly the most memorable surgery occurred very near the end of my time at LGH. The procedure that morning was a new approach in that era for correcting hip dysplasia, which involved surgically cutting and realigning the upper area of the femur (thigh bone) to change its angle so that it meshed better with the hip socket. The surgeon, whose name I cannot recall, wanted full documentation by film and photography for a planned manuscript and a presentation at an upcoming surgical conference.

For still photography, I most often used the Surgery Department's Nikon, but prior to the surgery that morning, the lead surgeon presented me with his personal camera, a fabled Hasselblad 500cm, widely considered to be the ultimate camera of that era, the personal favorite of Ansel Adams and other noted photographers, and the camera that NASA sent into orbit with the Mercury, Gemini and Apollo astronauts. The iconic photo of the Earthrise from the moon was taken in 1969 by astronaut William Anders with a Hasselblad cm. (*O'Hare M. How the Stunning Earthrise Became the World's Most Famous Photograph. New Scientist. www.newscientist.com. December 18, 2018. Accessed: January 5, 2025*) In 1973, a Hasselblad 500cm with a top of the line Zeiss lens system could cost as much as $3,000, equivalent to $15,000 today, and it also required expensive rolls of film specially made for that camera.

Astronaut William Anders' Earthrise photo captured with a Hasselblad cm500 on Christmas Eve, 1969.
Image source: LinkedIn. www.linkedin.com. Accessed: 6/28/2023.

The surgeon handed me a half dozen rolls of the costly 500cm film, telling me to *"get everything."* Unnerved, I used the 30 minutes before the patient was wheeled into the operatory to practice, zooming in and out on a tray of cafeteria food. Inside the OR, the surgeon admonished the group to *"let the photographer get his shots."* The surgery and the shooting proceeded without incident as I burned through film in full "fire away" mode until ….. the

electric saw the surgeon was applying to the patient's femur decided to seize up and stop. Attempts to re-start the device failed. He handed the saw to a resident standing next to me and told him to go to an adjacent operatory and locate a functioning saw. The resident, whipped around with defunct saw in his hand and … yep … mashed it right into the Hasselblad. I apparently did not have an adequate grip on the camera because it flew out of my hands like a ball off a bat, bouncing hard off the tiled concrete floor, spewing parts as it tumbled to rest against an equipment cart. I recall the dead silence that enveloped the room and remember the resident and I staring at each other much too long, likely fearful of turning toward the surgeon. Our trance was broken by the surgeon's calm voice, urging the resident to quickly retrieve a replacement saw, and telling me to go grab the Surgery Department's Nikon and return ASAP. The resident and I scurried out of the OR to collect our respective replacement devices, both of us likely dreading the aftermath of the Hasselblad's demise.

The Hasselblad 500cm model in 1973.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 6/29/2023.

Swedish camera maker Viktor Hasselblad, pictured with a different Hasselblad model. He tested each of his new models by photographing birds, his other passion. During World War II, the Swedish military hired Hasselblad, who worked in an optics company, to create a bombsite and aerial camera equivalent to devices found in a German bomber that crashed in Sweden. Work on these instruments led to his fascination with cameras after the war.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 6/27/2023.

After our return, the femur re-alignment proceeded to a successful conclusion, after which, the patient and much of the surgical team moved away to other destinations, and those staff responsible for operatory clean-up and disinfection turned to their tasks. Awaiting the re-appearance of the surgeon, the resident and I collected the pieces of the camera and deposited them on a tray. Fortunately the main body of the Hasselblad was intact so it was likely that the film was not compromised. Eventually the surgeon returned and informed us that he didn't consider either of us at fault: we were both carrying out tasks he had assigned, but, perhaps, we both should have had more situational awareness. He directed the resident to make sure the faulty saw was assessed, repaired and tested, and told me to get the Hasselblad and Nikon film processed promptly so we could schedule a photo review session. He motioned to the wounded Hasselblad on the tray and asked me to bring it to his administrative assistant after the film was extracted. And then he walked away. When we met to select photos for his manuscript and his conference presentation, he didn't mention the Hasselblad, but said that the department chair had agreed to purchase a second Nikon as a back-up, and that residents

would do still photography in the future to reduce clutter around the table. A lesson learned for me: there always is consequence.

In addition to my surgical photography duties my job description also stated *"and all other tasks as assigned by the Chair of the Surgery Department,"* (who also was Chief of Staff and Director of Medical Education, the ultimate BMOC; Big Man On Campus). And thus, I routinely performed two other duties. During the school year, I drove his daughter from her middle school to a nearby equestrian center where she practiced dressage for 45 minutes three days a week in lieu of her PE class at school, and then returned her to school. I typically did this on my way back to Northwestern for afternoon classes, and not a few times was late arriving on campus due to the daughter's casual approach to time management. A related task, but more pertinent to LGH's medical education mission, was assisting guest speakers who came to LGH to present Friday 8:00am seminars, called Grand Rounds in the medical world, and then driving them in the surgeon's car, a Mercedes, not my VW bus, to other Metro 8 affiliated hospitals for similar presentations later in the day. An upside of this job was meeting and having time to chat with several luminaries in 1970s health care, including Dr. Elisabeth Kubler-Ross, author of *Death And Dying* (*Kubler-Ross E. On Death and Dying. New York: Macmillan Publishing. 1969*), which was named one of the 100 most important books of the 20th century by several organizations including the New York Public Library and Simon and Shuster Publishers. Time Magazine recognized her as Woman of the Year in 1977, and she appeared on many lists of most influential people of the 20th century.

=======

Notes on Death and Dying Dr. Elisabeth Kubler-Ross (1926-2004) was commonly known as EKR at the peak of her fame, and the acronym is used to this day for her philanthropy – the EKR Foundation. EKR is best known for her elucidation of the stages of grief that individuals progress through emotionally and cognitively: *denial, anger, bargaining, depression, and acceptance*, as they come to grips with the reality of an impending life-altering event. These events include one's own death, the passing of a loved one, or major disruptions to life circumstances including divorce, loss of a job, or major work environment changes that dramatically alter a person's role. By 1972 when she visited LGH, EKR was already internationally famous for her pioneering research on the experiences and emotions of the terminally ill as they approached death, data that she gathered by interviewing hundreds of dying people during their final months. Over the following decades, she would garner even more acclaim for her passionate pursuit of initiatives to improve the quality of medical and psychological care for dying persons, which triggered the hospice movement and the field of palliative medicine worldwide. Between 1969 until her death in 2004, EKR collaborated with health care systems in the U.S. and other nations to create hospice care facilities and develop palliative care training programs, and she also started several holistic health institutes. EKR traveled the world conducting workshops to promote better understanding among health care providers of the emotional processes that the terminally ill experience, and to share strategies for enhancing quality of life of those approaching death (i.e., to make passage from this life a meaningful experience). In her view, approaching death was a pivotal transition period in a person's existence, just as meaningful as marriage, birth of children, career accomplishments

and retirement. (*Chaban MCG. The life Work of Dr. Elisabeth Kubler-Ross and Its Impact on the Death Awareness Movement. New York: E. Mellen Press. 2000)*

Dr. Elisabeth Kubler-Ross about ten years after her visit to Lutheran General Hospital.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 7/9/2023.

Prior to entering medical school in her native Switzerland, EKR worked for refugee-aid organizations in Poland, Romania, France and Germany in the years after World War II, including an aid station for survivors of Nazi concentration camps. During her psychiatric residency training at hospitals in New York City and Long Island and later as a postdoctoral fellow in Denver, EKR was appalled by the treatment, or lack thereof, of those individuals labeled by physicians as hopeless patients (i.e., the terminally ill) who were neglected medically and psychologically, almost completely ignored for long periods of time by nursing staff and needlessly over sedated to make management easier. These experiences triggered her lifelong dedication to restoring the dying patient's sense of dignity and improving medical care during the final phase of life.

Her rise to fame in palliative care began somewhat by accident. When her physician husband, Emanuel Ross, MD, was hired as Director of Neuropathology at Loyola University Medical School in Chicago, EKR took a job as a junior faculty member at the University of Chicago Pritzker School of Medicine in the Psychiatry Department. One day, the department chair had a scheduling complication that prevented him from delivering a lecture to medical students. With just a few hours notice, the chair directed EKR to step in and conduct the class, but provided no lecture notes, indicating she could select her own topic. With no time to adequately prepare a presentation, EKR asked one of her patients, a 19-year-old women in the final stages of her battle with cancer, if she would be willing to be interviewed in front of the class, and the patient agreed.

The session was a riveting experience for the medical students; for many it was their first encounter with a dying patient and the first time they heard the patient's perception of the dying process. *(Chacon, 2000)* Many students broke into tears during the interview, and others stayed long after the class concluded to speak with the patient and pepper EKR with questions or share personal experiences with grief. Based on this experience, EKR intensified her efforts to interview terminal patients, and based on these encounters, produced a brief article for publication in a limited circulation Chicago-based journal that reported her findings along with an early version of her five step grief model. (*Kubler-Ross E. On Death and Dying – The Dying Patient As A Teacher. The Chicago Theological Seminary Register. 1966; 17(3): 2-18*) The editor of this journal sensed that the article may attract a wider audience, and forwarded it to several major publishing houses in New York. After reading the article, Macmillan Publishing immediately offered EKR a contract with a lucrative advance payment for an expanded 250-

page manuscript that was ultimately published in December 1969. The book instantly became an international best seller. On *Death and Dying* remained on the New York Times Top Ten Best Seller list until 1977.

=======

After the Grand Rounds presentation at LGH, EKR was scheduled to repeat the presentation at 11:00am and 2:00pm at other Metro 8 hospitals, and then return to LGH for a seminar open to the public at 5:00pm, followed by a reception, a busy day, but I learned that EKR often experienced days like this. My job was to chauffer her, in the Chief of Staff's Mercedes, to and from these events. Assuming that discussion of the five stages of grief would occur as we motored around Chicago, I had read her book and memorized a few questions to ask, hopefully not obvious ones that everybody asks, but more personal inquiries related to my own concerns about how to react when someone dies. One of these questions, if I could work up the courage, was about my sequestered away feelings (a cocktail of embarrassment, guilt and feigned indifference) evolving from the 1967 combat death of my cousin, Billy Janes, in Vietnam while I was cavorting around a college campus. However, I never got a chance to ask any of these questions during my day with EKR – a lost opportunity, especially in regard to Billy, a conversation I never have had with anyone to this day.

As soon as I exited the LGH parking lot, EKR asked if she could smoke in this car as she pulled a pack of Dunhills from her satchel. Caught off guard I said I didn't know and let the query hang in the air a few beats, until she offered, *"probably your boss would not appreciate it,"* and asked if we could stop shortly before reaching her next destination on the speaking tour, so she could smoke, commenting: *"it's part of my pre-talk ritual, you know."* And also her post-talk ritual as I learned a couple of hours later. Abruptly switching gears, she asked, *"Well then, what should we talk about?"* While my thoughts went immediately to the pre-planned list of question, she almost immediately declared, surprisingly, that she wanted to pick my brain about automobiles.

EKR explained that she and her husband, whom she called Manny, were debating options for a new car. I gleaned that her husband was driving a Chrysler New Yorker, which she considered too flashy for her taste, and she offered that now Manny wants a car like the one Steve McQueen drove in *Bullitt*, rattling off the name without missing a beat, a Ford Mustang GTO 390 Fastback; *"he even wants a green one, just like in the movie."* She then mumbled something unintelligible in the hybrid German that many Swiss speak, which I understood as *"that'll turn some heads at Loyola,"* followed by a silent interlude of staring out the window, while I tried to visualize EKR and her husband in a movie theatre watching *Bullitt.*

In a moment or two she became present again, and returned to her own car situation. She was driving a two door 1962 Ford Fairlane, which was well used and abused. EKR related that she was ready for something new and a bit more professional but not so much that people would think it ostentatious, or stereotypical of a doctor. EKR ran through a number of models, often commenting she had seen this or that car in a movie or on TV, and asked my impressions of each. She had far more knowledge of car models, custom features, engine types and prices than I did, so it was largely a one-sided conversation. By the time we arrived back at LGH, she had seemingly settled on a station wagon, such as a Buick Estate, which would be helpful for shuttling her eight and 11 year old kids and their friends to their events, *("so many parties, practices and competitions"* she muttered), and because it would not look like a wealthy

doctor's automobile, offering that her husband had the flashy doctor's car stereotype well covered.

As we pulled up to the main entry of LGH where the administrative assistants of the CEO and Chief of Staff were waiting to escort Dr. Kubler-Ross to her next destination, I felt compelled to say something about the grief stages before she exited the car, so I said that I enjoyed her talk and observed that her model applied to a lot of life events, to which she replied, *"well .. I'm glad you think so; it's still taking shape in my own mind; the acceptance phase might be too much of a happy Hollywood ending, don't you think,"* followed by shrug and quizzical facial expression. And then she was out of the car, striding quickly to yet another Death and Dying presentation, and later in life to a fascination with spirituality, life after death scenarios, and ultimately disillusionment with her model as her own health declined after a series of strokes. (*Lattin D. Expert on Death Faces Her Own Death. Kubler-Ross Now Questions Her Life's Work. SFGate. www.sfgate.com. May 31, 1997. Accessed January 6, 2025*) I don't remember my thoughts as I returned the Mercedes to the Chief of Staff's parking slot, other than a general recollection that EKR was not what I expected: chain smoker, surprisingly deep knowledge of cars, movie-goer, harried working mom often on the road chauffeuring her kids, maybe signs of spousal friction (Manny and EKR separated soon after, and divorced a few years later), and uncertain about the veracity of her famous grief model, but perhaps she was just pulling my leg. However, EKR didn't strike me as a joker.

While employed at Lutheran General, I earned a Masters from the NU School of Education and Social Policy in 1973 after bouncing from program to program to get the specific degree and list of courses desired by UIC Med to be considered for an academic appointment at the medical center. Teaching at the high school level was now a discarded goal. I interviewed and showed one of my LGH surgical training tapes during the oral presentation to the faculty. Something must have clicked because the job was offered and I started work at UIC Med as an Assistant Professor of Health Professions Education in a medical school department known as the Center for Educational Development (CED), now known as the Department of Medical Education. (www.chicago.medicine.ic.edu/medical-education) Work in CED over the next five years involved teaching courses in a Masters of Health Professions Education for international medical educators operated in conjunction with the World Health Organization, and directing the UIC Med Instructional Television Unit (ITU). During these five years, the ITU produced more than 100 training videos and films for medical, dental, pharmacy and nursing students/residents, including a four-part series commissioned by the UIC Medical Sociology Department, funded by a HUD (Department of Housing and Urban Development) grant on the social and behavioral impact of living in high rise urban housing. The series focused on the controversial Cabrini Green Development, a mile from the UIC Medical Center.

This series was triggered by the closing of a McDonald's Restaurant that was placed, with great fanfare, within the Cabrini Green High Rise Complex. It was the first McDonald's anywhere in Chicagoland to be closed for any reason. The urban myth is that this McDonald's site was shut down after rumored incidents of people shooting at the neon McDonalds Arches sign from the walkways of the housing project, which was never verified. It is known that the sign was hit several times by gunfire or objects thrown from passing cars. The actual reason for the closing is less dramatic – the economics of families in the project limited their capacity to use the

restaurant. Additionally, and more chilling, a young child was killed by a stray bullet, apparently fired from a passing car during a road rage incident, while waiting with her parents in the McDonald's drive through lane. This incident, often confabulated with the sign shooting rumors, fueled the perception that the Cabrini Green Complex was dangerous. *(Chatelain M. The Intertwined History of McDonald's and Black America. BunkHistory (www.bunkhistory.org). University of Richmond, New American History Initiative. January 6, 2020. Accessed: November 17, 2023)*

We filmed onsite in Cabrini Green in the winter of 1975-76, interviewing 15 resident families about life in Cabrini Green. It was often below zero and our cameras locked up when shooting exterior scenes because the internal lubricating oil sludged up. Residents who agreed to be interviewed drew the ire of other residents. Little boxes that looked like coffins were left on their doorsteps with dead rats inside, with a chilling effect on participation. To clarify project goals with the Cabrini Green community, the supervising UIC faculty member arranged for two cast members (Esther Rolle and John Amos) of the TV series *Good Times*, which depicted a family living in Cabrini Green-like development, to speak to residents at a town hall meeting. Rolle and Amos stressed the uses and benefits of the film, and resistance declined, although the camera crew was harassed a few times by teenagers looking to show off, and hoping to appear in the film. The film was shown on the Chicago PBS affiliate and in other U.S. cities in the 1970s.

Built in stages between 1942 and 1962 and fully demolished by 2011, the 70-acre Cabrini Green Homes became a national symbol of urban blight and the failure of low-income high-rise housing. In addition to the main 16 story building pictured here, the Green included 150 two-story row houses and two eight floor apartment buildings, with a population of 15,000 at its peak.
Image source: Wikipedia. www.en.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed: 5/26/2023.

I also learned from my UIC - CED colleagues that there were opportunities to supplement a university salary via consulting and outside contract work. My consulting career, which paralleled university work, started in 1975 after signing a contract with the media arm of Chicago-based Aldine Publishing Company, which had a strong academic orientation. The job was to produce training videos for allied health fields such as radiological technology, respiratory therapy and clinical lab science. Aldine became the first of 211 consulting clients I had in my career; about 2/3s were other universities and 1/3 were professional associations and educationally oriented businesses.

I wrote the scripts for these videos in conjunction with allied health faculty at the College of DuPage in suburban Glen Ellyn, Illinois, and we taped the programs at a commercial television production facility at Naval Air Station Glenview. During World War II, Glenview Station was a naval aviation training site, but in the 1970s, operations were limited to search and rescue on Lake Michigan via seaplanes, with many buildings leased to commercial ventures including the television studio. The Glenview Station Studio (GSS) was heavily scheduled for shooting commercials, and used by Chicago ABC, CBS and NBC affiliates for post-production editing. It

was also used by national networks for pre and postproduction work on sports programming, including the tape-delayed Sunday night broadcast of the Indianapolis 500 on ABC.

A side note: *During the 1970s, major sporting events were often broadcast in the evening in a tape-delayed format, usually edited to fit a two-hour time slot. This was done to avoid preempting popular prime time shows. Even the NBA and NHL finals were tape delayed, starting at 10:30pm, to avoid disrupting regular programming and the local news. There was no way that CBS, for example, was going show an NBA Finals game instead of All in the Family, MASH, The Mary Tyler Moore, Bob Newhart and Carol Burnett on a Saturday evening. (Brooks T, Marsh E. Complete Directory to Prime Time Network TV Shows. (29th ed.). New York: Ballantine. 2007; Gross E. Saturday Nights on CBS in 1970s: The Greatest TV Line-Up Ever. Woman's World. October 8, 2023. www.womansworld.com. Accessed: December 4, 2023)*

Aldine purchased studio time at GSS whenever it was available, which often involved evenings and Sunday afternoons. We were taping a show on a Sunday afternoon in late May 1977 on positioning patients with musculoskeletal injuries for radiographic imaging. The GSS manager told us we had to absolutely vacate the facility by 4:00pm because he had a new and important client from ABC scheduled at 5:30pm for a live broadcast. Unfortunately, our production proceeded slowly. The on-camera demonstrator often misspoke his lines, and some of the camera angles I envisioned in the script did not work, requiring re-writes. At 3:45pm, we were setting up to shoot the final sequence when an entourage of people sauntered into the control room including Jim McKay, host of ABCs *Wide World of Sports*, Jackie Stewart, a famous race car driver of the 60s transitioning to TV commentary, and Howard Cosell of *Monday Night Football*. *(Holliman R. Indy 500 Comes Alive on ABC. St. Petersburg Times. May 30, 1976. Accessed: April 3, 2023 via www.newspapers.com.)* McKay was friendly but also looked bemused at our instructional television production, Stewart leaned against the wall and looked bored, and Cosell, surprisingly given his caustic TV persona, asked questions about what we were doing, and then launched into a lengthy anecdote about instructional television programs he once did for little leaguers on batting, throwing, fielding and base running.

A side note: *Cosell, a practicing attorney in the 1950s and 60s, was chief counsel for the corporate entity that operates Little League Baseball. He was largely responsible for creating the infrastructure and bylaws of Little League America and Little League International, the operating policies that leagues and teams follow to this day, and revised several rules of the game including all players must participate in each game and the ten run mercy rule. (Bloom J. There You Have It: The Life, Legacy and Legend of Howard Cosell. Amherst MA: University of Massachusetts Press. 2010)*

Cosell's little league story pushed us past the 4:00pm deadline, but McKay chimed in and said they had plenty of time, so go ahead and finish the production, and even offered a camera position suggestion. We re-racked the tape and managed to get thru the final script page without incident. When we were done, McKay explained what they were going to do, which was to pretend to live broadcast the middle of the Indy 500 race, joking: *"don't tell anybody that this is how we actually do it."* He invited us to stay and watch if we had time. During the 1970s and 80s, the Indy 500 Race was shown on the Sunday evening before Memorial Day starting at 9:00pm Eastern time. McKay, the lead announcer, and Stewart, the racing commentator, recorded their call of the 10:00am start and the initial 12 laps (30 miles) of the

race from the track broadcast booth in Indianapolis. As the race progressed, they walked around the track and taped interviews with pit crews and racing VIPs, and then returned to the broadcast booth to record their commentary for the final 12 laps.

As soon as the race was over and the top finishers were interviewed, the announcers were hustled off to a private jet that whisked them to Glenview Naval Air Station. While the announcers were in the air, ABC producers edited the middle section of the 3.5-hour race down to 90 minutes. At GSS, McKay, Stewart and Cosell, who just happened to be in Chicago and agreed to add color perspective, watched the condensed footage displayed on 70s style RBG (i.e., red, green, blue) big screen projectors and announced the race as if it was a live event. They did a rehearsal from 5:30 to 7:00pm, worked out kinks for 30 minutes, ate a quick dinner, and went live at 8:00pm Chicago time, 9:00pm in the East. I watched the rehearsal. It was amazing how fast they switched from idle chitchat to on-camera professional announcer mode.

With the UIC job and consulting, our income was finally sufficient to turn our attention to family building. During her pregnancy, I learned about Susan's inner strength, the core element of who she has been throughout our five-decade marriage. The pregnancy experience was indeed a trial for Susan. During her first trimester, Susan was exposed to Rubella, a viral infection similar to measles, at her school, had to resign her position, and per the medical norm of that era, was confined to home, and largely to bed rest, for the remaining six months of her pregnancy. She kept both of us as calm and optimistic as possible given the real risk for miscarriage or birth defects. However, near the end of her pregnancy, tests increasingly pointed to a normal birth. By September 1974, Susan had gone two weeks past the due date and was developing a concerning uremic condition impacting kidney function, not uncommon in overly long pregnancies. Her Ob-Gyn told her *"deliver in two days or we are inducing."* I'll always remember Susan's rather emphatic response to the doctor: *"I definitely did not want that. I am going to do this myself."* She told me, *"we're going to Orchard Plaza,* (a large shopping mall and home to the theatre where we saw *Jaws and Star Wars for the first time*), *and I'm walking until contractions start."* And that's what we did. We arrived at Orchard Plaza at opening time, 10:00am, and started walking, around and around. By 5:00pm, Susan was in labor and we drove straight to Evanston Hospital. Showing her confidence in the mall walk-around, Susan had packed the VW van with everything we would need at the hospital. Once there, it took a while, 12 hours, but Adam Charles Hendricson was born at 5:30am Sunday, September 22, 1974.

Susan on September 21, 1974, getting ready for the long walk at Orchard Plaza Mall. Moments after this picture was snapped, we climbed into our VW camper and drove to the mall. Susan's smile shows her confident that her plan would work, and it did!

After Adam joined the family, Susan, who then as now loves to be outdoors, was determined to make up for the many months she was shuttered inside during pregnancy. Susan and her bike, which she rode everywhere, with Adam strapped into the coach seat, were a common sight on

the streets of Evanston. She was adept at steering the bike along busy streets, even with a bag of groceries in one arm.

Susan did shopping and ran errands by bike in the Evanston years. Adam often accompanied Susan in the back seat.

A tradition started the summer after Adam's birth. In July 1975, the three of us went to Whidbey Island for a two-week holiday at Harold and Mildred's beachfront home on the Puget Sound. The Hendricson's traveled to Whidbey every year until 1988, and periodically thereafter. Activities on the beach or on the water abounded. It was especially memorable when we visited over July 4th. Adam and Aaron's granddad Harold enjoyed nothing better than driving to the Swinomish Tribal Reservation at the north end of Whidbey Island, buying hundreds of dollars of fireworks, stoking a big bonfire on the beach and firing the rockets and boomers (M80s, M100s, and others now illegal) out over the water, encouraging us to shoot at boats anchored in Mutiny Bay that annoyed him, particularly his frenemy neighbor's 80 foot teak hulled cruiser. Of course, he knew that the anchorages were far beyond reach of our fireworks.

Summers at Whidbey Island started during the Evanston years and continued after our move to San Antonio. The third young man in some of the pictures is Dillon, a childhood friend of Adam. In the game above, Aaron readies to take a hand-off to throw a pass to Susan, 2nd from right, defended by Aunt Shirley while Adam and Dillon rush in to break up the play.

During our Evanston years, we had adventures in both of our VW vans. The first van was not technically a camper, but we attempted to use it that way by pulling out the two rows of back seats, covering the floor with sofa cushions and topped them with sleeping bags. Weekend trips were relatively close range: Ravinia Park, site of hiking trails and outdoor concerts on-the lawn where we saw performances by Chicago's Joffrey Ballet, Gray's Lake on the Wisconsin border or Geneva, the first city in the Wisconsin Dells recreational area. In 1972, we went on our first extended journey in the pseudo camper, driving 3,800 miles round trip from Evanston to Walla Walla to see Grandma and Grandpa Dennis, roughly paralleling at least the route, if not the duress, of the wagon train journeys by the Dennis, Goodman, Morgan and Hendricson families. Looking back on it now, it seems rather reckless. The 1965 VW obviously had a lot of miles on it, but the odometer was broken so we didn't know how many. It was probably for the best that we did not know. We didn't have the engine checked before we departed, and we had never driven it more than 200 miles on a trip. But we completed the two-week round trip without major mechanical incident.

However, other issues arose. One night we camped next to the Great Salt Lake, which we drove far off the logical path to see. While eating outside, we were set upon by a swarm of mosquitoes so gigantic (both the swarm and the Skeeters) that they must have escaped from a genetic mutation experiment. We raced inside the van, slammed the door and cranked all the windows shut, assuming we would be safe. Not so. The mutant mosquitoes slithered into the van, and things were tense until we decided to abandon the VW for several hours. When we returned, the mosquitoes were somewhere else, and we got on the road as fast as we could.

On the way home while driving east on I-84 just past Boise, Idaho and listening to music on a local radio station, Susan spied a very bright object in the sky with a pronounced multi-color contrail. The radio announcer cut in suddenly and started fielding telephone calls from listeners who saw the same flaming object. One after another, callers described with increasingly levels of alarm and high levels of certainty that the flight path of this UFO or even worse, a Russian ICBM, was aimed directly at Mountain Home, the next town along I-84, location of a major Air

Force base, and as everyone in that area seemingly knew, the home to nuclear missile silos. The escalating call-in hysteria, egged on by the radio announcer, continued until the streaking object (described in subsequent, less histrionic reports as a trash-can sized meteor) descended and incinerated in the atmosphere. The decimation of Idaho averted, I looked over at Susan who was now staring out her window at a disturbingly large tornado moving at an angle toward the road. We considered options, and concluded that moving forward was better than sitting on the shoulder of the Interstate in an easily flipped over VW van. That turned out to be the correct call; the twister kept moving toward us, but suddenly popped upward and flew the other direction. The remainder of the drive back to Chicago was devoid of atmospheric events.

The next summer (1973), on a camping trip to Door County Wisconsin (i.e., Sturgeon Bay, fish boil capital of the U.S.A.), we endured an incredibly violent wind and hailstorm huddled inside the van, made especially disturbing because it occurred In the middle of the night. We waited for the roof to be punctured, windows shattered, and the van to be blown over, but somehow the tin can held together, only to be virtually totaled in a collision about a month later. That incident occurred when we were driving to Galena, Illinois to look for antiques. While stopped at a red light on the outskirts of Galena on a rainy day, the driver of the car behind us hit the accelerator instead of the brakes and plowed into the van at high speed, knocking us 20 yards down the road into a culvert and pancaking the back half of the VW. We were fortunate to escape without injury, but that was the end of van # 1, which we eventually sold for parts. We then traded Susan's Firebird, which had a transmission problem (would not shift out of second gear) for VW van # 2, which was a legitimate camper, relatively new (1969) and had a functioning odometer. I don't want to imply that we pulled a fast one on the car dealer, but for the test drive on the streets around the dealership in Chicago, we were counting on the fact that mid-day traffic would keep the speed below 30 MPH, which it did. In retrospect, we failed an ethical check on that transaction. When we relocated to Texas, we drove that camper to San Antonio, and soon after traded it for an AMC Pacer (i.e. the George Jetson car), for reasons that I do not remember, but it strikes me now as an odd decision.

Susan and the 1969 VW van, the camper with sink, fridge, fold out table, and mini sofa, which made the journey to San Antonio in 1978.

Although Susan and I enjoyed living in Evanston, and took advantage of restaurants, theatres, world class museums, shopping and sporting events in Chicago, three factors compelled us to consider other places to live: (1) we could afford to rent decent places to live, but purchasing a house was beyond our capacity, (2) I was informed that I would not be eligible for promotion within the UIC Medical School above Assistant Professor without an M.D., and my seven year tenure clock was ticking toward a 1980 terminal date, and (3) there's no sugar coating it – the

weather in the Chicago area is brutal seven months a year. I fared less well in the winter than Susan. My asthma was triggered by the sudden change from pleasant fall weather to full-on harsh winter at the end of October, which frequently left me sick in bed on my birthday (November 4) with bronchitis or pneumonia. When a newly opened health science center in the University of Texas System dangled an offer in 1978, we decided to take the leap.

Chicago Retrospective

What was it about the Chicagoland area that Susan and I liked so much? It certainly was not the weather for more than half the year, and we paid a winter tax by living in Evanston right on the water. Nobody told us about Lake Effect Snow! If it snowed 9 inches at O'Hare Airport 15 miles inland, it snowed 18 inches in Evanston. In summing up our experience in the Second City, the main attribute that sticks with us is the lack of pretentiousness; there was no *"look at us – we're so special,"* attitude that oozes from some coastal cities; not naming names, but you know what coastal cities and regions I'm talking about.

When living in Chicagoland, the vibe was *"we're doing our thing here, and we don't care if anybody knows it."* That attitude may still apply. In 2023, Chicago had 35 restaurants with Michelin stars, second only to NYC (49), but few people elsewhere realize this and people in Chicago likely don't care that others don't know. Chicagoland in 2023 had three universities designated by the Academic Ranking of World University (ARWU) System as top 50 worldwide: University of Chicago (10), Northwestern University (29), and the University of Illinois, multiple campuses including UIC and its Medical Center (49), the only American city to achieve this recognition. *(2023 Academic Ranking of World Universities. www.shanghairanking.com. Accessed: December 13, 2023).* Depending on the ranking system, Chicago's Institutes of Art, Shedd Aquarium, Field Museum of Natural History, and Adler Planetarium are ranked from first to third in the nation, and top 20 worldwide. Chicago has 159 two and four year colleges, 3rd to LA County (230) and the greater NYC region (209), both of which have more than double the population, but 30 to 50 more universities than Boston, Philadelphia, Washington DC, Dallas, and Houston. In 2023, Chicago was fifth in the world for theatre companies (207) that have existed for ten consecutive years following New York at 430, Paris with 353, Tokyo with 231, and London at 214. The Chicago Public Library has 82 branches (2nd only to New York) and has been ranked top five in the U.S. by the American Librarian Association since 1984. The University of Chicago Library is the 9th largest academic library in the world, and second largest in the U.S. after Stanford University. *(Data in preceding paragraph primarily obtained from: Beard J. 50 Best Cities in the World in 2024. January 23, 2024. TimeOut Magazine. www.timeout.com. Accessed March 8, 2024, and McCann A. Wallethub. City-Data.com. Best Big Cities to Live In, 2021. www.wallethub.com/edu/best-worst.. Live-in/14358/. Accessed: March 8, 2024)*

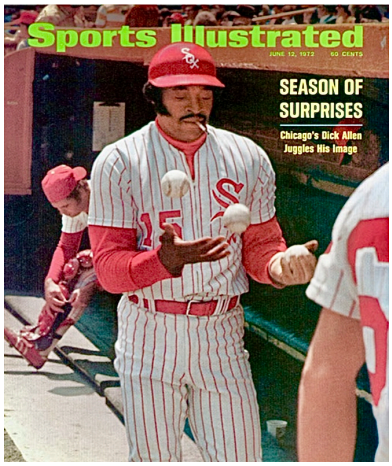
Back to the preceding coastal comments. Actually, Chicago is quite coastal; the city has 29 miles of public access Lake Michigan shoreline and the North Shore communities have 38 miles of largely public access beaches. Only New York, Seattle and Los Angeles have more public access shoreline in the U.S. *(National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration. Office for Coastal and Shoreline Management. Shoreline Mileage of the United States. www.coast.noaa.gov. July 2022. Accessed: December 5, 2023)*. Among major coastal cities, only San Diego, with a substantially smaller population, has more acres of beaches per 100,000 residents than

Chicago, although much of San Diego's beach acreage is not accessible to the public. *(Source: Statistica. Cities With the Largest Expanse of Beaches per 100,000 Residents in the United States. 2022. www.statistica.com. Accessed: March 8, 2024).*

One Chicago attachment has provided more frustration than joy. My emotional investment in the ***Chicago White Sox*** started in 1971, and has managed to stay with me ever since, for inconceivable reasons. When my former favorite team, the Washington Senators, cowardly skulked away to the Dallas suburbs to become the Texas Rangers in 1971, I was in need of a new team when Susan and I arrived in Chicago. Having always been an American League fan (Yankees until mid-60s and then the Senators), I went with the ChiSox over the more lovable and accessible Cubs. Wrigley Field is a few stops south of Evanston on the L (Chicago's rapid transit system named for its elevated loop around the downtown core). Susan and I attended games in Wrigleyville out of convenience, because getting to Comiskey Park (now known as Rate Field) was a hassle, and honestly, could be dangerous in the 1970s.

To catch ChiSox games, I often drove directly from work at the UIC Medical Center, also located on the Southside, over to Comiskey Park, only eight miles, but between 6:00pm and 7:00pm, often was a 45 minute drive, depending on traffic flow on Wells Avenue as I rolled between stop lights through Chicago's Chinatown to avoid the evening rush hour log jam on the I-90 Expressway. The last time I can remember making that journey to Comiskey, I was held over at work with a jinxed television production, where everything that could go wrong, did go wrong, with precision. Fighting through early evening traffic, I arrived at the private pay lot I typically used at least 30 minutes after the game started. Important note: White Sox fans, myself included, who attended night games during the 70s routinely hired teenagers from neighborhoods near the ballpark to watch our cars during games.

On this evening, eager to meet up with several UIC Med colleagues already in their seats, I rushed off from the lot without paying the young man who collected the parking fee, the extra $10.00 to have one of his younger cohorts watch over my vehicle, the aforementioned 1969 VW camper. I don't remember any details about the game, but I do remember the brick that had been thrown through the driver's side fly window of the camper, which facilitated easy access to the inner door handle, and then convenient access to the inexplicably upscale Blaupunkt radio that VW installed in their 1960s era campers, which by the time of my postgame arrival at the lot, no longer resided in the VW. To cap off the evening, I managed to cut my hand rather severely while brushing the glass shards off the drivers seat, permanently imbuing the faded tan cloth seat cover with a profound reddish hue, which was fun to explain when we sold the camper several years later. To date, my loyalty to the ChiSox has been rewarded by only one World Series victory (2005) in five decades, and during the 2024 season, I cringed my way through an all-time MLB record for ineptitude – 121 losses in a single season! My unflinching blind loyalty to the Sox remains, even with the 2025 season representing a painful continuation of yet another bleak re-building cycle.



No player better epitomizes the 1970s Chicago White Sox than Dick Allen, baseball's ultimate Bad Boy of that era. Allen's iconic dangling cigarette, juggling photo overshadowed his play on the field. While with the ChiSox, he was American League MVP in 1972, three times selected for the All Star team, and twice won home run titles. Allen was ultimately elected to the Baseball Hall of Fame.

Image source: www.instagram.com/soxon35th. Accessed: January 19, 2025.

Since Susan and I departed Chicago, there is no doubt that quality of life has declined in that area. Gun violence has been disgracefully out-of-hand for decades. Turf battles among street gangs have raged for generations in the perpetually plagued South Side, and cast a pall over the entire city. However, Chicagoland may be bouncing back. In 2024, *Conde Naste Traveler* magazine named Chicago as the best North American city to visit for a vacation for the 7th year in a row. It would be enlightening to go back and see what has become of our first home, which had a dramatic impact on who we are.

Image source: URBN Social. www.urbnsocial.com. Accessed: 3/9/2024.

Chapter V – Post Script, San Antonio

On the day that our Evanston life concluded, the final act of clearing out the Noyes Street house on a sunny but bruisingly cold day was to run Susan's favorite houseplants out to the VW camper. It had been idling for quite a while to get the internal temperature up to 50. The camper's heater was not the greatest. That feat accomplished, we headed south toward our new life, with Adam sitting in a spare tire in the camper's kitchen nook wrapped in blankets.

A side note: *Rear seat belts were not really a thing in 1978, especially when your rear seats are removed to allow room for boxes. When we arrived in San Antonio three days later, it was still sunny, but 80 degrees rather the five degrees below zero, and it did not get cooler until October.*

One my first day of work at the University of Texas Health Science Center at San Antonio (UTHSCA; pronounced You – Tuss – Cah) I wore my academic uniform: a three piece wool suit, ideal for spring in Chicago, but not so much for San Antonio. It was 95 degrees that day. On day two at UTHSCSA, Susan called my office phone around lunchtime, the first phone call in my 45 year career at the University, with the following information, (Susan speaking here) – *"Bill, there are a bunch of men in our backyard and they built a bonfire and they're cooking something over the fire."* Turns out they were the landscape crew hired by the builder to plug our yard with sod, which would ultimately grow into a rather thick Bermuda grass lawn. They were cooking lunch – roasting chickens on a spit.

And so, Susan, Adam and I spent our first year in San Antonio adjusting to a different climate, different landscape (i.e., short trees, no lake, sticky clay-like caliche instead of dirt, St. Augustine and Bermuda grass, and heat tolerant plants); different ways of doing things (i.e., the landscape crew); new critters (close encounters with water moccasins and rattlers, and regular backyard visits by coyotes and bobcats); central air conditioning (not a thing in Chicago); and new wardrobes. We knew it would be hot, but the impact of five straight months of 95 degrees did not register until we lived through that first summer. And nobody mentioned the humidity during the recruitment process. Yikes! In spite of moving into a neighborhood in the little suburb of Leon Valley with a lot of young children and friendly neighbors, it's safe to say we experienced considerable transitional shock during year one in San Antonio, and were not convinced that this was the place for us – at first!

Our first home in San Antonio, purchased for $37,500, and sold for twice as much four years later.

But life moves forward, and a new and different home gradually becomes the home you know. Likely the cementing event that made us into the San Antonio Hendricson's was the December 1978 birth of our second son, Aaron Charles Hendricson. Susan speaking here: *"When I received the due date, I was determined that this child would not have a birthday right before Christmas*

that would be overshadowed by Christmas activities and presents." The first week of December came and passed with no sign of impending delivery, so a specific inducement date was set, December 15 at 1:00pm, and that is when Aaron joined the clan. Our first winter in San Antonio was especially joyous with Aaron's arrival, and with Susan's mother and my parents visiting. With extra people in the house, we almost immediately realized that our nice little starter home was not going to work for very long. Plans were laid for moving ahead into the next house in San Antonio where our children would hopefully grow up.

One of my parenteral goals was to allow Adam and Aaron to move completely through one school system, grades 1-12, with the same set of peers; in other words to feel rooted in the community where they lived and connected to their friends and classmates, the opposite of what my sister and I experienced growing up. That goal was accomplished with the exception of one year. Adam completed first grade in Leon Valley Elementary prior to moving to our second house in the Churchill Estates neighborhood. Except for that single year, Adam completed 11 years in the public schools that were closest to our neighborhood, which were Larkspur Elementary (grades 2-5), Eisenhower Middle School (grades 6-8) and Winston Churchill High School (grades 9-12). Aaron ran the gauntlet of 12 straight years in Larkspur, Eisenhower and Churchill. Both of our sons graduated from Churchill with peers they first met in the lower levels of elementary school. I hope this continuity made a difference in their lives.

Baby Aaron with brother Adam, Grandpa Harold and Grandma Mildred in early 1979 in San Antonio.

One of our blessings is that Adam and Aaron got along so well. Even today, they stay in contact and get together when they can, in spite of living far apart. As an FYI, the boys are sitting on the hood of our 1977 Diesel Mercedes, another in our series of used car acquisitions, but a decided notch up from our previous car, an AMC Pacer.

After selling the starter home on Sunlight Drive (aptly named) in Leon Valley, which did its job well during our initial years in San Antonio (SA hereafter), we have purchased three more houses in the city. In this sequence, the homes were in the subdivisions of Churchill Estates (13 years), Deerfield (15 years) and Point Bluff, our current home (16 years). We have unique memories from all three, but the home on Reigh Count will always be place where the boys experienced their childhood, and where Susan and I have the most emotional investment. We bought that house in 1982 as a HUD House, meaning the government had taken it over after

the previous owner failed to make payments on an FHA loan. The 3,000-foot house and an acre of property, which had stood empty for two years, REALLY needed a lot of TLC to bring it up to speed. We poured much sweat equity into Reigh Count over the years. It will be remembered for the Lincoln log play set that we constructed in the back yard (only God knows how). The logs you see in the photo below each weighted a hundred pounds.

The play set at Reigh Count. The photo should dispel the notion that it does not snow in San Antonio. The picture was shot during the Great 1986 Storm.

Susan's Work in San Antonio

After a brief stint at an early childhood development center near UTHSCSA, Susan began work at Coker Methodist Day School, a few miles from our Reigh Count home. It became a home away from home. She worked at Coker for 30 years, forming life-long friendship with a large cohort of fellow teachers who still get together to this day. Many hundreds of young children took their educational first steps in Susan's classroom, and she loved each one of them, no matter what … and there was a lot of happenings to challenge "the no matter what" adage. After ten years at Coker, the "*Mrs. Hendricson, you probably don't remember me …*" phenomenon began. No matter where we went, especially grocery stores, restaurants, theatres and big box stores, Susan was approached by teenagers, and/or child and parent combos who would timidly lead off with the *Mrs. Hendricson, you probably don't remember me* line. Most of the time, she did remember them, even after 10-20 years, especially if a parent was nearby. And if a name didn't pop into her head right away, Susan asked subtle questions to pin down the year or a memorable event to help identify the former student or parent standing in front of her, eager to reminisce about their Coker years. Extra time on outings was allocated to accommodate former student approaches and the ensuing conversations.

Susan with students and an assistant in 1995. Halloween was a day of much excitement at Coker.

A favorite place: Coker classroom.

Spurs Day at Coker School.

The Coker Methodist teachers – a fun and long-lasting social circle for Susan since the 1980s. Susan is 3rd from left in the left hand picture and 5th from the left in Coker's Oscar Night Party.

Needing a change of pace in 2013 after Coker management changed hands, Susan answered a call for help at Adam and Aaron's former elementary school, Larkspur, to become a do-it-all assistant for the Kindergarten program, initially signing on to tutor children individually, but the role expanded far beyond that. During Susan's time at Larkspur, the student population was largely composed of children living in challenging economic circumstances, and many Larkspur students had limited English language skills. The school was resource-challenged to the nth degree, requiring creativity to implement the curriculum. From 2013 through the onset of COVID in 2020, every day posed new challenges and excitement as Susan rotated among the seven Kindergarten classrooms assisting teachers and students with a wide variety of tasks.

The Larkspur Kindergarten program in 2017.

When COVID forced Larkspur to switch to online learning, Susan turned her focus to the Assistance League of San Antonio (ALSA), a major philanthropic organization that operates a Thrift House and provides numerous support programs for children. ALSA collaborates with public school districts to provide clothes for elementary school children in need through a program known as Operation School Bus (OSB) and clothes and supplies for infant care through the Togs for Tots program. Annually, ALSA provides clothing for 35,000 San Antonio area children. At ALSA, Susan is a member of the Thrift House Art Department, works in the OSB and Togs programs and helps customers on the Thrift House floor on designated days each month. In 2023, ALSA was recognized as the philanthropic organization of the year by the *San Antonio Express News*. In 2024, Susan was recognized as ALSA Volunteer of the Year. Since 2018, Susan also has served on the Board of Directors of our neighborhood's (Point Bluff) Women's Club, a large and active group sponsoring more than 20 events annually for the community.

Susan, second from left, and colleagues at the 2024 Assistance League of San Antonio (ALSA) Gala where she was recognized as ALSA Volunteer of the Year.

Susan, middle, and ALSA colleagues delivering Coats for Kids, an annual jacket drive with the San Antonio Independent School District.

My Work in San Antonio

For the initial 20 years at UTHSCSA, I functioned as a Project Manager for accreditation, curriculum, educational research and professional development. In 1998, I was appointed Chair of the Educational Research and Development (ERD) Department comprised of 12 educational, evaluation and technology specialists who supported and staffed the academic programs of the five health professions schools at UTHSCSA. In 2005, I became Assistant Dean for Education and Faculty Development at the UTHSCSA School of Dentistry, remaining in that position until retirement 2018. As Assistant Dean, I directed a top to bottom curriculum revision, managed honors programs and fellowships in research, community service and teaching for students and residents, coordinated the School's monthly faculty development program, served as Co-I on six federally funded faculty development and Center of Excellence grants, conducted 10 selective courses for students, and directed a year-long mentorship for newly hired faculty known as *TExAS* (*Teaching Excellence and Academic Skills*). From 1998 to 2010, I also served as Associate Editor of the *Journal of Dental Education*, working for the American Dental Education Association, which was an evening and weekend job.

My advisees in 2006. Each year, I advised a student from each class and one student in the International Dental Education Program (IDEP) for foreign dentists seeking a license in the U.S. The best day of the month at UTHSCSA was when we all got together for lunch.

I stayed retired in 2018 for two weeks, and then returned to a joint appointment in the UTHSCSA School of Graduate Biomedical Sciences and the School of Medicine, to manage dissertation and thesis completion for Doctoral and Masters level students, conduct scientific communication courses for graduate students and postdoc fellows, and serve as Co-director of *UTEC* (*University Teaching Excellence Consortium*), which helped PhD candidates and postdocs prepare for careers in science teaching at undergraduate-focused universities. During my five years with UTEC, an NIH funded initiative, 47 PhDs and postdocs in UTEC obtained university level faculty appointments with emphasis on teaching.

Members of the 2018 UTEC program at UTHSCSA.

From 2019-2022, I added a part-time job as grant writer and program evaluator with the Public Health program of the School of Dentistry, writing three federally funded grants to support community-based training for dental residents in rural counties with no or few dentists, and also in nursing homes. In September 2022, I finally retired from UTHSCSA after 45 years on the job. Parallel to my UTHSCSA career, much extracurricular time was devoted to consulting jobs. Clients included 28 health professions associations, 62 dental and medical schools, 11 years as training director for a year-long grant writing fellowship funded by NIH and sponsored by the North American Primary Care Research Network, 18 years as senior consultant and course director for the Academy for Advancing Leadership (AAL) in Atlanta, Georgia, and accreditation and curriculum work for nine universities that established new dental schools.

Leading a grant critique in the Grant Writing Fellowship sponsored by the North American Primary Care Research Network. Twenty internal Medicine and Family Medicine faculty completed the 12-month fellowship annually, during which they each wrote and submitted an NIH, CDC or HRSA grant application.

Our Sons

Susan and I are blessed with marvelous sons who have brought indescribable joy and pride to our lives. Adam and Aaron both excelled academically, artistically and athletically in high school, graduated from Tulane University (Adam) and Emory University (Aaron) with honors, where each were student-athletes, (Adam, rugby; Aaron, swimming), and completed postgraduate education in Neuropharmacology (Adam, PhD) and law (Aaron, JD). Both have enjoyed successful professional careers over the past 25 years in their respective fields of endeavor.

Adam and Aaron in 2010.

Susan and I plan to spend the rest of our days in San Antonio, our home for the past 47 years. Although we were initially uncertain about San Antonio, and still find the many months of searing summer heat to be challenging, we cannot imagine living anywhere else. It is where we fully became who we are.

Chapter VI: Information Sources

Online Sources

- Ancestors in Schleswig-Holstein.com (https://www.Ancestorsinscheswigholstein/home.com)
- Ancestory.com (www.ancestory.com)
- Ancestor Records.org (https://ancestorrecords.org)
- Association of Professional Genealogists (APG) (www.apgen.org)
- British Home Children (BHC) website (www.Britishhomechildren.weebly.com/)
- Chester County Pennsylvania Genealogy Project (https://www.chester.pa-roots.com)
- CommonSearches.net (https://commmonsearches.net)
- FamilySearch.org (www.familysearch.org)
- Schleswig-Holstein Civil Registration/Census Reports 1769-1864. (www.familysearch.org)
- www.FamilyTreeMagazine.com
- Genealogy Bank (https://www.genealogybank.com)
- Genealogical Society of Pennsylvania (www.genpa.org)
- Goodman History and Genealogy (www.GoodmanHistory.com)
- Internet Surname Database (https://www.surnamedb.com)
- Hendricks and Hendrickson Dutch Heritage Association (www.hhda.org)
- Higginson Book Company (www.higginson.com) [Reprints genealogical histories]
- House of Names.com (https://www.houseofnames.com)
- Professional Genealogy and Family History Research by Joseph Beine: U.S. Ports of Arrival and their Available Immigration Records Through 1957. (www.Gensearch.com/index.html)
- Kentucky Historical & Genealogical Society (https://www.history.ky.gov)
- Latter Day Saints Online Genealogy. Family History Resources and Records (www.FamilySearch.com)
- Legacy Tree Genealogists (www.legacytree.com)
- Library of Congress. www.loc.org. George Washington Papers. Series 3, Varick Transcripts, 1775-1785.
- Lienau Genealogy and Family History Information. Surname.Lienau.Profiles at www.geni.com
- Linn County Oregon Genealogical Trails History Group. (www.genealogytrails.com)
- Monmouth County Connection. Monmouth County (NJ) Genealogical Society. (www.rootsweb.com)
- My Heritage (www.myheritage.com)
- My Roots Foundation (https://www.myrootsfoundation.com)
- Newspapers.com (https://newspapers.com)
- Olive Tree Genealogy (www.olivetreegenealogy.com/ships/ Ship Passenger & Crew Rosters; 1855-90.
- Project Gutenberg Ebook (www.gutenberg.org)
- Rootdigger.de/names. Emigration from Schleswig-Holstein 1841–1911. (www.rootdigger.com)
- Rootschat (www.surname.rootschat.com)
- Seeking My Roots.com (www.seekingmyroots.com)
- Seattle Genealogical Society (www.seagensoc.org)
- Sorted By Name.com – Lienau Family Page (www.Sortedbyname.com/letter_1/Lienau.html)
- Spokeo (www.spokeo.com)
- U.K. Society of Genealogists (www.SOG.org.uk)
- U.K. Extracted Probate Records (Available from www.ancestory.com)
- Werelate.org; Foundation for Online Genealogy (www.werelate.org)
- Wikipedia (www.en.m.wikipedia.org)
- *Wikimedia Commons* (www.commons.m.wikimedia.org)
- WikiTree (www.wikitree.com)

State and Federal Records

- U.S. Federal Census Data Reports; 1790 –
- Canada: Reports of Inspectors of Pauper Children Sent to Canada by Immigration Officers of the Dominion Government. December 12, 1888
- U.S. Federal Index to Death Certificates; 1735 – 1948
- U.S Federal Report: U.S. Arriving Alien Passengers and Crews at New York Depots 1820-1957
- U.K. Alien and Work Immigrant Port Entry and Exit Ledgers 1793-1893
- State of Oregon Marriage Certificates 1868-1909
- State of Oregon Birth Index 1848-1920
- State of Oregon Death Certificates 1859-1922
- State of Washington Marriage Certificates 1889-1956
- State of Washington Birth Index 1883-1929
- State of Washington Death Certificates 1889-1956
- State of Kentucky Land Grants 1782 – 1924
- State of Kentucky Marriages 1797-1865
- State of Kentucky Birth Registrations 1797-1865
- State of Kentucky Death Registrations 1797-1865

Publications: Books, Dissertations, Journal Articles and Online Papers

A majority of these publications are cited within the text of this history. However, a few books, articles and websites that served as general resources are also included. Prior family histories pertinent to William Hendricson and Susan Lienau are **highlighted in bold font.**

Ackroyd P. The History of England. Volume III: Civil War. Cambridge: University Press. 2015.

Abney W. Random Destiny. How the Vietnam War Draft Lottery Shaped a Generation. Wilmington, Delaware: Vernon Press. 2018.

Abney W. Live From Washington, It's Lottery Night 1969! History. www.historynet.com. November 25, 2009. Accessed: July 1, 2025.

Ahlstrom J. (ed.). The Vietnam War: Military Statistics. The Gilder Lehrman Institute of American History. www.gilderlehrman.org. Accessed: August 9, 2025.

Albany States Right Democrat. William Hendricson Hunting Trip. December 11, 1885. Accessed from MyHeritage. www.Myheritage.com on April 13, 2023.

Albany States Right Democrat. Mascot Gun Club's Monthly Shoot. August 14, 1891. Accessed from MyHeritage. www.Myheritage.com on April 13, 2023.

Albany Daily Democrat. A New City Band Has Been Organized. October 12, 1900. Accessed from MyHeritage. www.Myheritage.com on April 15, 2023.

Allen C. The Applegates. Portland, OR: Oregon Historical Society; Oregon History Project. www.oregonhistoryproject.org. 2003. Accessed: February 17, 2024.

Allison W. The Trapezoid, November 21-28, 1967, 10 Clicks Southeast of Dau Tieng. Vietnam Triple Deuce. www.tripledeuce.org. Accessed August 2, 2025.

Alexander KC. Developing and Sustaining Political Citizenship for Poor and Marginalized People: The Evelyn T. Butts Story. Doctoral Dissertation. Antioch University. AURA: Antioch University Repository and Archives. www.AURA.antioch.edu. 2019.

American Defense Society (ADS) Executive Committee. Hand Book of the American Defense Society. New York: ADS National Headquarters. 1918. Available via Internet Archive. www.internetarchive. Accessed: April 16, 2023.

Anderson AH. Big Bow. Handbook of Texas Online. Texas State Historical Association. www.tshaonline.org. 2010. Accessed: August 17, 2023.

Andrew C. Her Majesty's Secret Service: The Making of the British Intelligence Community. New York: Viking Press. 1986.

Applegate L. Notes and Reminiscences of Laying Out the Old Emigrant Road into Southern Oregon in the Year 1846. Oregon Historical Quarterly. 1921; 22: 12-34. www.ohs.org. Accessed: April 2, 2023.

Ashley M. Charles I and Cromwell. London: Methuen Publishing. 1987.

Atkinson, R. The Day of Battle: The War in Sicily and Italy; 1943-1944. The Liberation Trilogy. New York: Henry Holt and Company. 2007

Atwood M. Half-Hanged Mary. Poem Analysis. https://litcharts.com. 2006. Accessed: May 21, 2023.

Atwood M. The Handmaidens Tale. New York and Toronto: McClelland and Stewart, Houghton Mifflin Harcourt. 1985.

Axtell J. At the Water's Edge. Trading in the 16th Century. Essays in the Ethnohistory of North America. New York and Oxford: Oxford University Press. 1988.

Babbits LE, Howard JB. Long, Obstinate, and Bloody: The Battle of Guilford Courthouse. Chapel Hill NC: University of North Carolina Press. 2009.

Bagnall K. The Little Immigrants. The Orphans Who Came to Canada. London: Dundorn Publishing Group. 2001.

Bagley W. Scoundrel's Tale: The Samuel Brannon Papers. Spokane WA: Arthur H. Clark Publishing and Utah State University Press. 1999.

Bagley W. Across the Plains, Mountains and Deserts. A Bibliography of the Oregon-California Trail. National Park Service, National Trails, Intermountain Region. Salt Lake City, UT: Prairie Dog Press. 2014.

Baker EW. Storm of Witchcraft: The Salem Witch Trials and the American Experience. New York: Oxford University Press USA. 2015.

Baker G. Cadets in Gray. The Story of the Cadets of the South Carolina Military Academy and the Cadet Rangers in the Civil War. Lexington South Carolina: Palmetto Books. 1989.

Balderston M. Pennsylvania's 1683 Ships and Their Passengers. Pennsylvania Genealogical Magazine. Philadelphia: Genealogical Society of Pennsylvania. 1965; 24(2): 69-114. Accessed from www.werelate.org on March 2, 2023.

Bamberg R. Captain James L. Lindley. www.ncpedia.org/biography/lindley-James. 2013. Accessed: June 19, 2023.

Bamford T. National World War II Museum. www.nationalww2museum.org. The Points Were All That Mattered: The U.S. Army's Demobilization After World War II. August 17, 2010. Accessed: August 22, 2024.

Barman J. French Canadians, Furs, and Indigenous Women in the Making of the Pacific Northwest. Vancouver, BC: UBC Press. 2014.

Barthel T. Abner Doubleday: A Civil War Biography. Jefferson, NC: McFarland and Company. 2010.

Basen R. Fifty Years Ago, The Last Outpost of Segregation in the NFL Fell. New York Times. www.nytimes.com. October 6, 2012. Accessed October 2, 2024.

Baskir LM. Chance and Circumstance: the Draft, the War and the Vietnam Generation. New York: Knopf. 1978.

Bathgate G. Radio Broadcasting: A History of the Airwaves. New York and London: Pen and Sword History. 2020.

Beard J. 50 Best Cities in the World in 2024. January 23, 2024. TimeOut Magazine. www.timeout.com. Accessed March 8, 2024.

Becker CL. Everyman His Own Historian. American Historical Review. 1931; 37(2): 221-236. www.historians.org. Accessed May 19, 2024.

Beekman GC. Early Dutch Settlers of Monmouth County, New Jersey. Freehold, New Jersey: Moreau Printing. 1915. Accessed via Internet Archive (www.archive.org) on March 11, 2023.

Beharry S. The Prehistories of Baseball. Jefferson, NC: McFarland and Company 2016.

Bell B. Another Early 17th Century Map By Cornelius Hendrickson Referencing Siwanoys. In: Historic Pelham Online. www.historicpelhamblogspot.com. August 13, 2018. Accessed June 10, 2024.

Bellamy R. Morgan's Riflemen at the Battle of Monmouth. Friends of Monmouth Battlefield. www.Friendsofmonmouthbattlefield.org. 2003. Accessed: June 24, 2024.

Belis M. Night Ambush Patrols in Vietnam. Company C, 1/22 Infantry. www.1-22infantry.org. Accessed: August 12, 2025.

Belue TF. Draper's Life of Daniel Boone - Updated. Mechanicsburg, PA: Stackpole Books. 1994.

Belue TF. Daniel Boone's Yellowstone Hunt. True West Magazine. March 31, 2022. www.truewestmagazine.com. Accessed: April 4, 2023.

Black R. Machiavelli: From Radical to Reactionary. London: Reakton Books. 2022.

Blark G. Surnames and the History of Social Mobility. Princeton NJ: Princeton University Press. 2014.)

Block D. Baseball Before We Knew It: A Search for the Roots of the Game. Lincoln, Neb: University of Nebraska Press. 2006.

Bloom J. There You Have It: The Life, Legacy and Legend of Howard Cosell. Amherst MA: University of Massachusetts Press. 2010.

Bluhm RK. Battle of Monmouth, American Revolution (1778). Britannica. www.britannica.com. June 22, 2024. Accessed: June 25, 2024.

Blum A. On the Homefront. Keep Em Smokin'. Tobacco and World War II. Center for the Study of Tobacco and Society. University of Alabama. www.csts.ua.edu. Accessed: September 10, 2024

Blum H. Dark Invasion. 1915 – Germany's Secret War and the Hunt for the First Terrorist Cell in America. New York: Crown Publishing Group / Harper Brothers Inc. 2014.

Blumenthal W. Women Camp Followers of the American Revolution. Philadelphia: GS McManus Press. 1952. Accessed via WorldCat www.search.worldcat.org on June 23, 2024

Boatner MM. Encyclopedia of the American Revolution. Mechanicsburg. PA. Stackpole Books. 1994.

Bohlen M. Rebecca Bryan Boone Remembered. North Wilkesboro, NC: Wilkes Journal Patriot. January 3, 2023. www.JournalPatriot.com. Accessed: August 29, 2023.

Bohrer ML. Glory, Passion and Principle: The Story of Eight Remarkable Women at the Core of the American Revolution. New York: Simon and Schuster 2007.

Boucher E. Empire's Children: Child Emigration. Welfare and the Decline of the British World. 1869-1967. London and Cambridge: Cambridge University Press. 2014.

Bowditch J, Komer RW. Anzio Beachhead. Nashville, TN: The Battery Press. 1954.

Bowers BE. Johannes de la Montaigne. The Old Homestead: History of the Bowers and Allied Families. http://bowershomestead.com/de-la-montagne.html. Accessed: July 14, 2023.

Brands WH. The Age of Gold: The California Gold Rush and the New American Dream. New York: Anchor Books. 2002.

Brinkley D. Cronkite. New York: Harper Collins. 2012

Brooks T, Marsh E. Complete Directory to Prime Time Network TV Shows. (9th ed.). New York: Ballantine. 2007.

Brown FM. Strain of Violence: Historical Studies of Violence and Vigilantism. London: Oxford Press. 1975.

Buchanan J. The Road to Guilford Courthouse. The American Revolution in the Carolinas. New York: John Wiley and Sons. 1971. Reprinted for Google Goodreads – 2021.

Buchanan SE. The Dixiecrat Rebellion: Long-term Partisan Implications in the Deep South. Politics and Policy. 33(4): 754-769. 2005.

Buckland JH. The First Traders on Wall Street: The Wiechquaeskeck Tribe of Southwestern Connecticut. Westminster: Heritage Books. 2009.

Buhite RD. The Continental League: A Personal History. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press. 2014.

Bunkers SL. Midwestern Diaries and Journals. What Women Were, and Were Not, Saying in the Late 1800s. In: Studies in Autobiography. Olney J (ed.) New York: Oxford University Press. 1988.

Burchett W. Liberation Front: Formation of the NLF, The Furtive War. New York: International Publishers. 1963.

Burns FDA. Heigh for Cotswold! A History of Robert Dover's Olimpick Games: A New and Revised Edition. London: Robert Dover's Games Society, and Harry Righton and Evesham. 1981.

Byrne V. Hidden Annals: A Thousand Years of the Kingdom of Connaught. Universal Publishers. 2003.

Byrnes ME. James K. Polk. A Biographical Companion. Bloomsbury Digital Resources. ABC-CLIO. www.abc-clio.com. 2001. Accessed: October 15, 2024.

Cain LM. History of the 242nd Aviation Company, 269th Aviation Battalion, 12th Aviation Group. Then Tragedy Struck: Cu Chi Base Camp, Events of February 26, 1969. Vietnam Helicopters Pilot Association. www.vhpa.org. 2011. Accessed: July 19, 2025.

Calhoun CW. The Gilded Age: Perspectives on the Origins of Modern America. (2nd ed.) Washington DC: Rowman and Littlefield Publications. 2007.

Callahan JM. History of the Making of Morgantown. Morgantown, WVA. West Virginia University Press. 1926. Digitized 2017. Available from Google Books. www.books.google.com. Accessed: June 11, 2024.

Canty-Jones EE. "History is Who We Are and Why We Are the Way We Are." The Oregon Historical Society Blog – June 2, 2020. www.ohs.org. Accessed May 20, 2024.

Carey B, Plank G. Quakers and Abolition. Urbana, Illinois: University of Illinois Press. 2011.

Carey CH. General History of Oregon Prior to 1861. Portland Oregon: Metropolitan Press. 1936. Re-released by Binford and Mort Publishers (Hillsboro, Oregon) in 1971. Now available from Exodus Books (www.exodusbooks.com) and from Amazon Books.

Carleton C. Going to the Wars: The Experience of the British Civil Wars, 1638-1651. London: Routledge. 1994.

Carpenter C. War of the Roses: Politics and the Constitution in England, c. 1437-1509. (2nd edition) Cambridge Medieval Textbooks. New York: Cambridge University Press. 2002.

Carpenter SDM. Southern Gambit: Cornwallis and the British March to Yorktown. Norman, OK: University of Oklahoma Press. 2019.

Carr W. Schleswig-Holstein, 1815-1848: A Study in National Conflict. Manchester, UK: Manchester University Press. 1963.

Carroll F. The American Civil War and British Intervention: The Threat of Anglo-American Conflict. Canadian Journal of History. Spring-Summer 2012; 47(1): 1-87. Available from Gale Academic OneFile. (www.go.gale.com) Accessed: March 2, 2023.

Casey D. 1961 Victory Stadium Protest Preceded Sweeping Changes in Pro Football. August 24, 2024. Roanoke Times. www.roanoke.com. Accessed: September 27, 2024.

Casson L. Speed Under Sail of Ancient Ships. Transactions of the American Philosophical Association. 1951; 82(1): 136-148. Accessed June 3, 2024 via www.penelope.uchicago.edu.

Chamberlayne CG. Vestry Book of Blisland Parish, New Kent and James City Counties, Virginia, 1721-1786. Richmond, VA: Churchill Gibson Printing. 1939. Digitized 2015 by Internet Archives. www.Internetarchives.com. Accessed: January 29, 2023.

Chandler D. Waterloo, The Hundred Days War. Oxford: Osprey Publishing. 1981.

Chatelain M. The Intertwined History of McDonald's and Black America. Bunk History (www.bunkhistory.org). University of Richmond, New American History Initiative. January 6, 2020. Accessed: November 17, 2023.

Chatelain NP. Repurposing Captured Vessels. Star of the West. Emerging Civil War. www.emergingcivilwar.com. October 20, 2022. Accessed: September 20, 2023.

Chaban MCG. The life Work of Dr. Elizabeth Kubler-Ross and Its Impact on the Death Awareness Movement. New York: E. Mellen Press. 2000

Chernow R. Washington, A Life. London: Allen Lane Publishing. 2010.

Childs F. Search and Destroy Missions. Charlie Company, 1/22, Vietnam, 1966-1972. January 8, 2017. www.charliecompany.com. Accessed: August 17, 2025.

Chisholm H. Nicolls, Richard. In: Encyclopedia Britannica. 11th ed. Cambridge University Press. 1911. Accessed via www.wikisource.org on June 26, 2023.

Chisholm H. Francois Henri de Montmorency-Bouteville, Duke of Luxemburg. In: Encyclopedia Britannica. 11th ed. Cambridge University Press. 1911. Accessed via www.wikisource.org on February 15, 2023.

Churchman CR. Chapter 3: Zackquill Morgan. Kentucky Descendants of Colonel Morgan Morgan. Louisville, KY: University of Louisville Library Document Service. 1994.

Clarke N. Brothers of the Quill: Oliver Goldsmith in Grub Street. Cambridge MA: Harvard University Press. 2016.

Clarke S. Olympus in the Cotswolds: The Cotswold Games and Continuity in Popular Culture, 1612-1800. International Journal of the History of Sport. 1997; 14(2): 40-66.

Clodfelter M. Mad Minutes and Vietnam Months: A Soldier's Memoir. New York: Pinnacle Books. 1996.

Clute JJ. Old Families of Staten Island. New York: Clearfield Printing. 2013 Accessed on June 5, 2024 via www.genealogy.com. Also available at Google Books. www.books.google.com.

Cody MW. Peter Stuyvesant: Dutch Leader of New Netherland. New York: Chelsea House. 2013.

Cohen JM. The Four Voyages of Christopher Columbus: Being His Own Log-Book, Letters and Dispatches with Connective Narrative Drawn From the Life of the Admiral by His son Hernando Colon and Other Contemporary Historians. New York: Penguin Books. 1969.

Colon, Fernando and Keen, B (editor and translator). The Life of the Admiral Christopher Columbus by his Son Ferdinand. New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press. 1992

Coleman JT. Here Lies Hugh Glass. A Mountain Man, A Bear, and the Rise of the American Nation. New York: Hill and Wang Books. 2012.

Combat After Action Report for the Period Ending December 27, 1967. Operation Camden. 2nd and 3rd Brigades. 25th Infantry Division. Experiences of Units Engaged in Counterinsurgency Operation, December 18-27, 1967. January 23, 1968. Report # 67X1201. Washington D.C.: Department of the Army. www.intel.gov. Accessed: July 9, 2025.

Combat Casualties Current File, 6/18/1956 – 1/21/1998. Records of Military Personnel Who Died, Were Missing in Action or Prisoners of War as a Result of the Vietnam War. Record Group 330. The National Archives and Records Administration. Archival Databases. www.archives.gov. Accessed: July 1, 2025.

Connolly SJ. On Every Tide. The Making and Remaking of the Irish World. New York: Basic Books. 2022.

Conway WF. The Incredible Adventures of Daniel Boone's Kid Brother – Squire Boone. 1818. Reprinted - Lexington, KY: Squire Boone Village Printing. 1992. Available from Amazon Books.

Cooper T. Dictionary of National Biography. Life and Works of Thomas Stapleton. London: Smith, Elder and Co. 1898. Digitized by Forgotten Books (www.forgottenbooks.com). Accessed January 24, 2023.

Copeland DA. Colonial American Newspapers: Character and Content. Newark, NJ: University of Delaware Press. 1997. Accessed: June 27, 2024 via The Printing Museum. www.printingmuseum.org.

Core EL. The Monongahela Story. Chapter Nineteen: The Pioneers. A Bicentennial History. Parsons, West Virginia: McClain Printing Company. 1976.

Cosgrove B. LIFE at the 1960 Cotton Bowl: "Battle of the Hardnoses." Time. www.time.com. January 2, 2014.

Cottret B. Huguenots in England. Immigration and Settlement. Cambridge and Paris: Cambridge University Press. 1991.

Crawford G. Account of the Firing onto the Star of the West. Charleston, SC: The Charleston Courier. January 10, 1861. Digitized 2015 by Newpapers.com. Newspapers.com (https://newspapers.com). Accessed: July 20, 2023.

Crawford SW. The Genesis of the Civil War: The Story of Sumter, 1860-61. London: Forgotten Books. 2018. Originally published in 1887 by Charles L. Webster Publishing in New York City, a printing house owned by Mark Twain. Accessed from the Library of Congress www.loc.gov on July 12, 2024.

Cressy D. Charles I and the People of England. Oxford: Oxford University Press. 2015.

Cross D. Washington's First War. www.ColonialWilliamsburgOnline.org. September 12, 2020. Accessed: April 17, 2023.

Crouch, D. The Normans: History of a Dynasty. London: Hambledon and London. 2002

Danby J. Men of Armor. Havertown, PA: Casemate Publishers. 2022

Darby HC. Domesday England. Cambridge: University Press. 1986.

Davies W. Early Welsh Microcosm: Studies in the Llandaff Charters. London: Royal Historical Society. 1978.

Dawson J. Rock Around the Clock: The Record That Started the Rock Revolution. London: Backbeat Books. 2005.

de Quetteville H. History of Cologne. The Catholic Encyclopedia. November 28, 2009. www.catholic.com/encyclopedia. Accessed December 3, 2022.

Delaney J. Roger Maris' & Mickey Mantle's Home Run Race of 1961. New York Daily News. www.nydailynews.com. September 19, 2022.

DeLassus D. Princeton Yearly Results -1869. College Football Data Warehouse. Accessed on June 10, 2024 via Internet Archive. www.archive.org.

Des Jardins J. Women and the Historical Enterprise in America: Gender, Race and the Politics of Memory, 1880-1945. Chapel Hill, NC: University of North Carolina Press. 2003

DeSantis VP. The Shaping of Modern America, 1877-1920. Wheeling, Illinois: Forum Press. 1989.

Desrochers S. Bride of New France. Toronto: W.W. Norton and Co. 2013.

Diefendorf BB. The St. Bartholomew's Day Massacre: A Brief History with Documents. Bedford: St. Martin's Press. 2008.

Dixon S. Recollections of Cornwallis' Encampment. Carrboro NC: Orange County Printing. 1781. Available at: www.ncpedia.org/biography/dixon-simon. Accessed: June 30, 2023.

Dobson D. Transatlantic Voyages, 1600-1699. Baltimore, MD: Genealogical Publishing Co. 2009.

Domesday Book Census of 1086 (Great Survey; Liber de Wintona). London: National Archives. 1st published 1783; published online in contemporary English 2011. www.Archives.gov.uk. Accessed: March 9, 2023.

Doubleday A. Reminiscences of Forts Sumter and Moultrie in 1860-61. Charleston, SC: Nautical and Aviation Publishing. 1998. Reprinted from 1884 original.

Dreifort JE. Japan's Advance Into Indochina, 1940. The French Response. Journal of Southeast Asian Studies. 1982; 13(2): 279-295. Accessed from Cambridge University Press Online: July 18, 2025

Dubin LS. North American Indian Jewelry and Adornment: From Prehistory to the Present. New York: Harry N. Abrams Inc. 1999.

Duc T. American Businesses Make Strong Progress in Vietnam. The Investor Magazine. www.theinvestor.vn. September 12, 2023. Accessed: July 21, 2025.

Duncan D. The West: An Illustrated History for Children. Boston: Little Brown and Co. 1996.

Dunn M. Personality of William Penn. Proceedings of American Philosophical Soc. 1983; 127(5): 316-321.

Durish J. Every Base Camp Perimeter was a Front Line in the Vietnam War. Jack's Blog. www.jackdurish.com. Accessed August 7, 2025.

Eckert A. The Frontiersman (7th Ed.). New York: Bantam Books. 1980.

Ecelberger G. Did Charles Lee Disobey George Washington's Attack order at Monmouth? Journal of the American Revolution online. www.allthingsliberty.com. March 7, 2024. Accessed: June 25, 2024.

Eid LV. American Indian Military Leadership: St. Clair's 1791 Defeat. Journal of Military History. 1993; 57(1): 71-88.

Ehrlich AM. Encyclopedia of the Jewish Diaspora: Origins, Experiences and Culture. Camden, UK and NY: Bloomsbury Publishing USA. 2008.

Elliot BC. Irish Immigrants in the Canadas: A New Approach. McGill: Queen's University Press. 1988.

Elliot TC. The Murder of Peu-Peu-Mox-Mox. Oregon Historical Quarterly. 1934; 35(2): 123-130. Accessed via Journal Storage (JSTOR) www.jstor.org on March 17, 2023.

Elsbury W. Racial, Ethnic, and Religious Minorities in the Vietnam War. A Resource Guide. Library of Congress Research Guides. www.guides.loc.gov. September 12, 2022. Accessed: July 1, 2025.

Elukin J. Living Together, Living Apart: Re-thinking Jewish-Christian Relations in the Middle Ages. Princeton NJ: Princeton University Press. 2007.

Ely JW. The Crises of Conservative Virginia: The Byrd Organization and the Politics of Massive Resistance. Knoxville, TN: University of Tennessee Press. 1976.

Etienne Girault, French Politician, 1756-1793. www.fr.m.wikipedia.org. Accessed May 27, 2024.

Fahel S. November 1967 Company B Narrative. Vietnam Triple Deuce. www.tripledeuce.org. Accessed August 3, 2025.

Faragher JM. Daniel Boone: The Life and Legend of an American Pioneer. New York: Holt. 1992.

Feldman DH. Beyond Universals in Cognitive Development. New York: Ablex Publishing Corporation. 1994.

Fenton W. The Great Law and the Longhouse. Political History of the Iroquois Confederacy. Norman OK: Univ of Oklahoma Press. 1998.

Ferber H. History of the Family of Schenck van Nydeggan, 1225-1860, in particular of the Warlord Martin Schenck van Nydeggan with Historical Information Regarding Afferden, Blyenbeck and Other Estates. Cologne, Germany: Neuss Printing. 1860. English Translation by Marijke T. Neuberger. Baltimore: Gateway Press. 1987. Accessed December 3, 2022 via Google Books. www.books.google.com.

Filby PN (editor). Passenger and Immigration Lists Bibliography, 1583-1900. Guide to Published Archives of Arrivals in the United States and Canada. 2nd Ed. Detroit: Gale Research Co. 1988.

Filby PN, Meyer MK. Arrival Records of 500,000 Passengers Who Came to the United States and Canada 1638 – 1899. (Volume 2: NYC Arrivals). Detroit: Gale Research Co. 1981.

Fitzgerald D, Duane K. The Cherokee Trail of Tears. Portland, OR: Graphic Arts Books. 2008.

Fitzpatrick JC. The Writings of George Washington in the Revolutionary War From Original Manuscript Sources (39 volumes). Volume 7: General George Washington Recounts the Battle of Monmouth Court House. Washington DC: United States Government Printing Office. 1931-1944. Curated by HathiTrust (www.hathitrust.org). Accessed via the New Jersey State Library. www.njstatelib.org on June 26, 2024.

Flora S. Emigrants to Oregon in 1852. The Oregon Territory and its Pioneers. www.oregonpioneers.com. 2019. Accessed: February 2, 2023.

Foner E. Reconstruction: America's Unfinished Revolution. NY: Harper and Row. 1988.

Foner E. Gateway to Freedom: The Hidden History of the Underground Railroad. New York: W.W. Norton and Company. 2015.

Forbes HM. Zackquill Morgan. Encyclopedia of West Virginia. www.wvencyclopedia.org. November 20, 2023. Accessed: June 13, 2024.

Franz M. Preparedness Revisited: Civilian Societies and the Campaign for American Defense, 1914-1920. Journal of the Gilded Age and Progressive Era. 2018; 17(4): 663-676.

Frykman GA. Creating the People's University: Washington State University, 1890-1900. Pullman: WSU Press. 1990.

Fuller GW. A History of the Pacific Northwest (2nd ed.). New York: Alfred A. Knopf. 1931. Re-released by Creative Media Partners, LLC (www.supportcreativemedia.io) in 2018 and is also available via Google Books (www.books.google.com). Accessed: February 8, 2013.

Furstenau SO. Christopher Columbus in Iceland. Icelandic Roots. www.icelandicroots.com. January 5, 2021. Accessed: October 16, 2024.

Gabriel M. Hundred of Lesnewth, 17th Century Freeholder Elector Lists. Online Parish Clerks (OPC) Genealogy. www.opc-cornwall.org. August 9, 2013. Accessed: April 7, 2023.

Gabriel-Powell A. Richard Grenville and the Lost Colony of Roanoke. Jefferson, NC: McFarland Co. 2016.

Gallagher RC. The Express: The Ernie Davis Story. New York: Ballantine Books. 2008.

Garcia MT. Nativists, Anti-Immigrant Sentiment in the U.S. Has a Long History. National Catholic Reporter (NCR). June 27, 2018. www.ncronline.org. Accessed May 6, 2024.

Gault O. Operation Magic Carpet. Chatsworth MA: Challenge Publications. 2005.

Gearhart B. Did Columbus and Europe Know about Vinland Before 1492? Medium. www.medium.com. July 5, 2020. Accessed: October 13, 2024.

Genealogical Forum of Portland, Oregon. Oregon Donation Land Claims 1845 – 1865. Oregon Genealogy Society Publications. 1923. Published in 2013 in the Bulletin, the Quarterly Magazine of the Genealogical Forum of Oregon (GFO). www.gfo.org. Accessed March 12, 2023.

Gehring CT (translator and editor). Fort Orange Records and Civil Minutes for 1656-1678. Syracuse, New York: Syracuse University Press. 2000.

Gehring CT. New Amsterdam. Colonial Wars of North America, 1512-1763. New York: Routledge. 2015.

Germania Life Insurance and Neptune Marine Insurance Companies. Baltimore American and Commercial Advertiser. U.S. Newspaper Collections at the Library of Congress. www.LOC.gov/united-states-newspapers. Accessed: January 17, 2024.

Gibbs RW. Documentary History of the American Revolution. Volume I: 1764 – 1776 (2nd ed.). Miami Florida: Hard Press. 2017.

Gibson C, Jung K. Historical Census Statistics on Population Totals by Race and Hispanic Origin, 1790 to 1990. Working Paper No. 76. Population Division. U.S. Census Bureau, U.S. Department of Commerce. February, 2005. www.census.gov. Accessed: August 10, 2025.

Gilbert D. The Project Gutenberg E-Book of the Parochial History of Cornwall. Volume 1. 2017. ProjectGutenberg.net (http://www.pgdp.net). Accessed: January 28, 2024.

Gilbert FT. Historic Sketches of Walla Walla, Whitman, Columbia and Garfield Counties, Washington Territory and Umatilla County, Oregon. Portland, Oregon: George H. Himes, Book and Job Printer. 1882. Digitized in 2022 by Creative Media Partners. Available from Library of Congress, Internet Archives and Google Books. Accessed from Internet Archives on April 16, 2023.

Goldenberg R. African American Troops Fought to Fight in World War I. History Website of the U.S. Department of Defense. www.defense.org. February 1, 2018. Accessed: April 20, 2023.

Goode A. College Archivist. The Gog Magog Olympics at Cambridge. The Emmanuel College Blog. www.emma.cam.ac.uk. February 9, 2022. Accessed June 12, 2024.

Goodfriend J. Slavery in Colonial New York. Urban History. 2008; 35(3): 485-496. Accessed: October 16, 2024.

Gossett TF. The Teutonic Origins Theory in Race: The History of an Idea in America. Gossett TF. London and New York: Oxford University Press. 1997.

Gowdy-Wygant. Cultivating Victory: The Women's Land Army and the Victory Garden Movement in Britain and the U.S. Pittsburgh, PA: University of Pittsburgh Press. 2013.

Graymont B. The Iroquois in the American Revolution. Syracuse NY: Syracuse University Press. 1972.

Green DH. Language and History in the Early Germanic World. New York and Cambridge: Cambridge University Press. 1998.

Greenberg D. John Lewis: A Life. New York: Simon and Schuster. 2024.

Griffiths RA. The Principality of Wales in the Later Middle Ages, 1277-1536. Cardiff: University of Wales Press. 1972.

Griffith WR. Molly Pitcher and the Battle of Monmouth. American Battlefield Trust. www.battlefields.org. November 16, 2011. Accessed: June 7, 2023.

Grant M. The Passing of the Great Race, or The Racial Basis of European History. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons. 1916.

Gross E. Saturday Nights on CBS in 1970s: The Greatest TV Line-Up Ever. Woman's World. October 8, 2023. www.womansworld.com. Accessed: December 4, 2023.

Grupp L. Claymore Mines, Their History and Development. Boulder, Colorado: Paladin Press. 1993.

Gora S. You Couldn't Ignore Me If You Tried: The Brat Pack, John Hughes and Their Impact on a Generation. New York: Three Rivers Press. 2011.

Guardian's History: Guardian Life Insurance Company of America (formerly: Germania Life Insurance of New York). www.guardianlife.com. Accessed: June 19, 2023.

Guise K. Mail Call: V-Mail. The National WWII Museum. www.nationalww2museum.org. December 7, 2019. Accessed: August 22, 2024.

Gust FO. Dixon, Simon, 1728-1791. (2nd ed.). In: Powell WS. Dictionary of North Carolina Biography. Chapel Hill, NC: The University of North Carolina Press. 2021.

Haenn B. Fort Clark and Brackettville: Land of Heroes. Mount Pleasant, South Carolina: Arcadia Publishing. 2002.

Halsall P. Modern History Sourcebook: Excerpts from William Bradford, History of Plymouth Plantation, c. 1650. www.sourcebooks.fordham.edu. 1998. Accessed: 7/27/2024.

Hammon N, Harris J. Daniel Boone the Businessman: Revising the Myth of Failure. Register of the Kentucky Historical Society. 2014; 112(1): 5–50.

Haneckow D. On This Day in Stumptown History, President Teddy Roosevelt is in Town. May 22, 2012. Stumptown Blogger. www.stumptownblogger.com. Accessed: April 16, 2023.

Hack D. Vietnam War Facts, Stats and Myths. US Wings. www.uswings.com. Accessed August 12; 2025.

Hanks P, Hodges, F. A Dictionary of Surnames. London: Oxford University Press. 1989.

Harc L. Cuius Regio? Ideological and Territorial Cohesion of the Historical Region of Silesia, Circa 1000-2000. Wroclaw, Poland: www.ebooki.com.pl. Accessed May 16, 2024.

Harcourt F. Ku Klux Kulture. America and the Klan in the 1920s. Chicago: University of Chicago Press. 2017.

Harris, MC. The Philadelphia Campaign, 1777. Havertown, PA: Casemate Publishers. 2023.

Harrison G. Abner Hackleman's 1845 Trip to Oregon. Columbia Gorge Interpretive Museum Publications. 2013. www.columbiagorge.com. Accessed: March 5, 2023

Hart MCT. The Dutch Wars of Independence. Warfare and Commerce in the Netherlands, 1570-1680. New York: Routledge (Taylor and Francis Group). 2014.

Hart S. Prehistory of the New Netherland Company: Amsterdam Notarial Records of the First Dutch Voyages to the Hudson and Delaware Rivers. Amsterdam: City Historical Museum Press. 1959.

Hastings L. Emigrants' Guide to Oregon and California – A Guide for the Westward Traveler. 1st ed. St. Louis, MO: Charless Printers. 1843. Reprinted in 1994 by Applewood Books and available online from Washington University in St. Louis Library (www.libguides.wustl.edu) - Rare Books Collection.

Hay JH. Vietnam Studies. Tactical and Material Innovations. Department of the Army. Washington D.C. U.S. Government Printing Office. 1989.

Hendricks and Hendrickson Dutch Heritage Association (www.hhdha.org). History of the Hendrickson Family. 2017. Accessed: December 1, 2022.

Henline T. Zackquill Morgan: Fighter, Frontiersman, Founder of Morgantown. Zackquill One Morgantown (website) www.zackquill.com. November 10, 2016. Accessed: June 12, 2024.

Higginbotham D. Daniel Morgan: Revolutionary Rifleman. Chapel Hill, NC: University of North Carolina Press. 1961

Hine RV, Faragher JM. The American West: A New Interpretive History. New Haven: Yale University Press. 2000.

Hinshaw WW. Encyclopedia of American Quaker Genealogy. Volumes 1 – 6: 1607-1943. Ann Arbor Michigan: Edwards Brother Publishing. 2014.

Historic England. SOUTHILL PARK HOUSE. Southill, Bedfordshire. National Heritage List for England. https://historicengland.org.uk. Accessed: April 2, 2023.

History.com Editors (Onion A, Sullivan M, Mullen M). Weapons of the Vietnam War. August 2, 2011. www.history.com. Accessed: July 15, 2025

History of the Catholic Church in Iceland. 2019. Official Website of the Catholic Church of Iceland. www.catholica.is. Accessed: March 17, 2022.

History of Wilmington Friends Meetings. Wilmington Monthly Meeting of the Religious Society of Friends. www.wilmingtondefriendsmeeting.org. Accessed: August 7, 2023.

Hochfelder D. The Telegraph in America, 1832-1920. Baltimore, MD: The Johns Hopkins University Press. 2012.

Hodges GR. Slavery and Freedom in the Rural North: African Americans in Monmouth County, New Jersey, 1665-1865. Madison, WI: Madison House Books and Publications. 1997.

Hoff HB. Two Dutch Families Reinterpreted: Origins of the Hendrickson Family of Monmouth County., New Jersey. New York Genealogical and Biographical Record (NYG&B). Volume 106. New York: New York Genealogical and Biographical Society. 1975. NYG&B issues available via www.familysearch.org. Accessed: March 11, 2023.

Hoffman R, Albert PJ. Diplomacy and the Revolution: the Franco-American Alliance of 1778. Charlottesville: University Press of Virginia. 1981.

Hofstra WR. George Washington and the Virginia Backcountry. Madison, Wis: Madison House Publishers. 1998.

Holland J. The Savage Storm: The Battle for Italy 1943. London: Transworld Publishing. 2023.

Holmes JDL. The End of the *Star*. Texas State Historical Association. www.tshaonline.org. Accessed: June 15, 2023.

Holliman R. Indy 500 Comes Alive on ABC. St. Petersburg Times. May 30, 1976. Accessed: April 3, 2023 via www.newspapers.com.

Howe H. Adriaen Block Explores New England. In: Prologue to New England. Port Washington NY: Kennikat Press. 1969. Available via Internet Archive. www.archive.org. Accessed June 7, 2023.

Hjorthen A. Reframing the History of American Genealogy: On the Paradigm of Democratization and the Capitalization of Longing. Genealogy. 2022;6(1): 21-37. Accessed May 1, 2024.

Horsman R. Race and Manifest Destiny: The Origins of American Racial Anglo-Saxonism. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press. 1981.

Howe GF. The Battle History of the 1st Armored Division, "Old Ironsides". Washington DC; Combat Forces Press. 1954.

Howe HF. Prologue to New England. (4th ed.) New York & Berkeley, CA: Farrar and Rinehart, Inc. 2007.

Hull WI. William Penn and the Dutch Quaker Migration to Pennsylvania. Baltimore, MD: Genealogical Publishing Company. 1970.

Hunsacker JB. Seeing the Elephant: Voices From the Oregon Trail. Lubbock, Tx: Texas Tech University Press. 2003 (1st ed.). Subsequent editions available from Internet Archives. www.archives.org. Accessed: February 22, 2023.

Hunt T. The English Civil War at First Hand. London: Cambridge Press. 2003.

Hutton PA. Davy Crockett, Still King of the Wild Frontier, And a Hell of A Nice Guy. Texas Monthly. www.texasmontly.com. November 1986. Accessed: February 12, 2023.

Huzzey R. Freedom Burning: Anti-slavery and Empire in Victorian Britain. Ithaca NY: Cornell University Press. 2012.

Ingle L. First Among Friends. George Fox and the Creation of Quakerism. New York & London: Oxford University Press. 1996.

Jackson JC. A Little War of Destiny. The First Regiment of the Oregon Mounted Volunteers and the Yakima Indian War of 1855-56. Portland: Ye Galeon Press. 1996.

Jackson JC. Children of the Fur Trade: Forgotten Metis of the Pacific Northwest. Corvallis: Oregon State University Press. 2007.

Jacobs J. New Netherland: A Dutch Colony in Seventeenth Century America. Leiden: Brill Academic Publishers. 2005.

Jackson WH. Time Exposure: The Autobiography of William Henry Jackson (3rd ed.; original 1933). St. Louis, MO: Patrice Press. 1994

Jaffe SH. New York at War. Four Centuries of Combat, Fear and Intrigue in Gotham. New York: Basic Books. 2012.

Jette M. Lithograph of the Valley of the Willamette River. Oregon History Project. www.oregonhistoryproject.org. 2003. Accessed May 20, 2024

Johansen DO. Empire of the Columbia. A History of the Pacific Northwest (2nd ed.) New York: Harper Collins. 1967.

Johnson B. Camelot, Court of King Arthur. Historic UK. The History and Heritage Accommodation Guide. www.historic-uk.com. June, 2015. Accessed: May 7, 2023.

Johnson B. The Spanish Armada. Historic UK. The History and Heritage Accommodation Guide. www.historic-uk.com. June, 2016. Accessed: July 17, 2023.

Johnson K. How Columbus's Winter in Iceland Helped Him Get to America. European Conservative. Issue 27, Spring 2022. (www.Europeanconservative.com/essays/). Accessed: September 27, 2023.

Johnson LH. Fort Sumter and Confederate Diplomacy. Journal of Southern History. 1960; 26: 441-477.

Joseph A. Jordan Jr., Civil Rights Advocate. Newport News Daily Press. June 16, 1991. www.newspapers. Com. Accessed October 7, 2024.

Jumonville N. Henry Steele Commager: Midcentury Liberalism and the History of the Present. Chapel Hill NC: University of North Carolina Press. 1999

Karlesen C. The Devil in the Shape of a Women. Witchcraft in Colonial New England. New York: W.W. Norton and Company. 1998.

Karnow S. Vietnam: A History. New York: Penguin Books. 1991.

Kelly J. The Graves Are Walking. The Story of the Irish Famine of the 19th Century. New York: Henry Holt and Company. 2012.

Kemper C. Early Westward Movement of Virginia, 1722-1734. As Shown by the Proceedings of the Colonial Council. Virginia Magazine of History and Biography. 1905; 13(2): 113-138. Digitized by Journal Storage (JSTOR) and available at www.jstor.org. Accessed February 26, 2023.

Kenny K. The American Irish: A History. New York: Longman Publishing. 2000.

Ketchum RM. Saratoga: Turning Point of America's Revolutionary War. New York: John Macrae/Henry Holt Publishers. 1999.

Ketchum RM. The Winter Soldiers: The Battles for Trenton and Princeton. Princeton, NJ: Owl Books. 1998.

Kidd TS. The Great Awakening: The Roots of Evangelical Christianity in Colonial America. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press. 2007.

Kilgo DA. Likeness and Landscape: Thomas M. Easterly and the Art of Daguerreotype. St. Louis: Missouri Historical Society Press. 1994.

Kilmer J. Trees and Other Poems. New York: George A. Doran Company. 1914. Digitized by Project Gutenberg EBook (www.gutenberg.org). Accessed: March 2, 2023.

Kimball J. Nixon's Vietnam War. Manhattan, Kansas: University of Kansas Press. 1998.

Kirsch GB. Baseball in Blue and Gray: The National Pastime During the Civil War. Princeton NJ: Princeton University Books. 2002.

Klotter JC. Genealogies of Kentucky Families: From the Register of the Kentucky Historical Society (Volume 1). Baltimore, MD: Genealogical Publishing Co. pages 48-76. 1981.

Klotter JC, Thompson-Friend C. A New History of Kentucky (2nd ed.). Lexington, KY: University Press of Kentucky. 2019.

Knapp S. "Bloody Bill" Cunningham: Profile of a South Carolina Loyalist. The Newberry Observer. www.newberryobserver.com. December 31, 2022. Accessed: May 24, 2024.

Knight C. U.S. Army Units in Vietnam Explained. PBS Thirteen. www.thirteen.org. April 19, 2022. Accessed: August 6, 2025.

Kristen B. The Oldest Road in America, the King's Highway, Passes Right Through New Jersey. www.onlyinyourstate.com. April 27, 2023. Accessed: August 3, 2023.

Kubler-Ross E. On Death and Dying – The Dying Patient As A Teacher. The Chicago Theological Seminary Register. 1966; 17(3): 2-18.

Kubler-Ross E. On Death and Dying. New York: Routledge Publishing. 1969

Kuiper K. Black Seminoles. Britannica. www.britannica.com. August 11, 2015. Accessed: August 29, 2024.

Lancour H. Passenger Lists of Ships Coming to North America, 1607-1825. New York: Bulletin of the New York Public Library. Summer, 1937. Accessed via www.discovery.nypl.org. on March 4, 2023.

Landis L. Oregon State University. Oregon Encyclopedia. Project of the Oregon Historical Society. 2020. www.oregonencyclopedia.org. Accessed: April 11, 2023.

Landrigan L. Mary Molly Webster, the Witch of Hadley Survives a Hanging. Boston, MA: New England Historical Society (www.newenglandhistoricalsociety.com). April 2017. Accessed: May 21, 2023.

Lang HO. History of the Willamette Valley and Personal Reminiscences of Its Early Pioneers. Portland, Oregon. Geo. H. Himes, Book and Job Printer. 1885. Uploaded to Internet Archive (www.archive.org) on July 11, 2008. Accessed: February 21, 2023.

Lanning ML, Cragg D. Inside the VC and the NVA: The Real Story of North Vietnam's Armed Forces. College Station, Tx.: Texas A & M University Press. 1992.

Larson E. The Demon of Unrest. New York: Random House. 2023.

Lattin D. Expert on Death Faces Her Own Death. Kubler—Ross Now Questions Her Life's Work. SFGate. www.sfgate.com. May 31, 1997. Accessed January 6, 2025.

Lawrence C. Origins of the Cult and Iconography of Dutch Naval Heroes. Netherlands Quarterly of the History of Art. 1992; 21(4): 265-295.

Leary WM. Woodrow Wilson, Irish Americans and the Election of 1916. The Journal of American History. 1967; 54(1): 57-72.

Ledger PM, et al. New Horizons at L'Anse aux Meadows. Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences. 2019; 116(31): 15341-15345.

Lee G, Thorpe F. English Conquest of New Netherland, 1655-1664. The History of North America. Vol. 4, pages 117-146. Cambridge: Harvard Press. 1904. Digitized in 2016 and available from On Demand Books (www.ondemandbooks.com) and Amazon Books. Accessed: March 2, 2023.

Leggett W. The 28 Million Dollar Deal. High Finance and Hard Infighting Went Into the Acquisition of an Unprecedented Pro Football TV Deal. Sports Illustrated. www.vault.si.com. January 1964. Accessed October 7, 2024.

Lender ME, Stone GW. Bloody Sunday: George Washington, the Monmouth Campaign and the Politics of Battle. Norman, OK: University of Oklahoma Press. 2016. Volume 54 of the Campaigns and Commanders Series.

Lienau R. Pictures and Figures From My Life. Berlin: Lichterfelde Archive. 1949. Digitized 2019 by Internet Archive. Accessed from Internet Archive (www.archive.org) on April 11, 2023.

Lipsky S. Hope American Soldiers Read Stars and Stripes Forever. Wall Street Journal. September 7, 2020. Accessed: September 12, 2024

Lewis JD. The American Revolution in South Carolina. South Carolina Loyalists in the American Revolution; William "Bloody Bill" Cunningham. 2018. www.carolana.com. Accessed: February 20, 2023.

Lewis DW. Tribal Histories of the Willamette Valley. Portland State University: Ooligan Press. 2023.

Linden A. More Than Just Victory on Paper: From Roanoke to Kaepernick. Sport in American History. www.ussporthistory.com. September 29, 2016. Accessed: September 26, 2024.

Lofaro M. Daniel Boone: An American Life. Lexington KY: University Press of Kentucky. 2012.

Logevall F. Embers of War: The Fall of an Empire and the Making of America's Vietnam. New York: Random House. 2012.

Lung HN. Indochina Monographs. Strategy And Tactics. U.S. Army Center for Military History. Washington D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office. 1983.

Luthern A. Testing for Poison Still a Profession for Some. Smithsonian Magazine. June 26, 2009. www.smithsonianmag.org. Accessed May 9, 2024.

Luzzato S. The Body of Il Duce: Mussolini's Corpse and the Fortunes of Italy. New York: Henry Holt and Company. 2014

Lyman WD. Lyman's History of Old Walla Walla County. Chicago: SJ Clarke Publishers. 1918. Re-released as an ebook by Project Gutenberg Digital Library on September 8, 2014. www.gutenberg.org. Accessed: February 19, 2023. Also available from Higginson Book Company as a hardcover. www.higginson.com.

Madley B. An American Genocide: The United States and the California Indian Catastrophe, 1846-1873. New Haven: Yale University Press. 2016.

Maika DJ. The Tale of the White Horse: The First Slave Trading Voyage to New Netherland. Dutch National Archief (Archive). www.nationalarchief.nl. Accessed: October 14, 2024.

Malkiel D. Reconstructing Ashkenaz: The Human Face of Franco-German Jewry, 1000-1250. Palo Alto, CA: Stanford University Press. 2016.

Maloney W. WWI African American Soldiers Battle More than Enemy Forces. Library of Congress Blogs: Timeless Stories from the Library of Congress. www.blog.loc.org. February 23, 2018. Accessed: April 7, 2023.

Man Meets Tragic Death On Threshing Machine. The Daily Morning Astorian. August 27, 1893. www.OldNews.com. Accessed: on September 21, 2024.

Mann M. Records of the American Defense Society. Patricia D. Klingenstein Library at the New York Historical Society Museum and Library; Manuscripts and Archival Collections. 2017.

Mangold T, Penycate J. The Tunnels of Cu Chi. New York: Berkley Books. 1986.

Mann M. The Home Room Front. The ADS and the Battle for Teacher Loyalty During WWI. New York Historical Society Museum and Library. June 2, 2023. www.nyhistory.org. Accessed: November 7, 2023.

Marcy RB. The Prairie Traveler. London: Trubner and Company. 1859. Restored and reprinted by Perigee Books in 1994. Available from Thriftbooks. www.thriftbooks.com. Accessed: February 26, 2023.

Maris GL and Pinkerton Maris A. The Maris Family in the U.S. A Record of the Descendants of George and Alice Maris, 1683-1885. West Chester, PA: FS Hickman Printing. 1885. Digitized by HathiTrust in 2013. Available from www.onlinebooks.library.upenn.edu and Amazon Books. Accessed: February 3, 2023.

Marks PM. Turn Your Eyes Toward Texas: Pioneers Sam and Mary Maverick. College Station, Texas: Texas A&M University Press. 1989.

Marshall B. Mary Reeve Webster, Witch of Hadley. Lowell, MA: University of Massachusetts Lowell Publ. https://faculty.uml.edu//bmarshall/Mary%20Webster.htm. April 2011. Accessed: August 13, 2023.

Marwick D. Possessing Albany, 1630-1710. The Dutch and English Experiences. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press. 1990.

Mather C. Cotton Mather on Witchcraft. Original: 1696. Reprinted by Dorsett Press (Boston), 1991.

Mather C. The Wonders of the Invisible World: Tryals of Several Witches Lately Executed in New England. London: JR Smith Printing. 1692. Soho Square Printers – reprinted with notes in 1862. Digitized and available from Google Books (www.books.googleusercontent.com). Accessed: May 4, 2023.

Mathews DG. The Second Great Awakening as an Organizing Process, 1780-1830. American Quarterly. Baltimore MD: The Johns Hopkins University Press. 1969; 21(1): 23-43.

Mate F. The World's Best Sailboats. New York: W.W. Norton. 2008.

Matson C. Damned Scoundrels and Libertism of Trade. Freedom and Regulation in Colonial New York's Fur and Grain Trade. The William and Mary Quarterly. 2001; 51: 347-372.

Maxwell-Stewart H. Convict Transportation from Britain and Ireland 1615-1870. History Compass. 8(11): 1221-1242. 2010.

McCauley M. Russia, America and the Cold War, 1949-1991. Harlow, UK: Pearson Education Publishing. 2008.

McCann A. Wallethub. City-Data.com. Best Big Cities to Live In, 2021. www.walethub.com/edu/best-worst... Live-in/14358/. Accessed: March 8, 2024.

McConnell M. Hendricksons of New York, New Jersey and Pennsylvania. Dealing with the Background, Family and Descendants of William Hendrickson (Wilm Hendriksz). Microfilm produced by Bell and Howell Labs in Wooster, Ohio. 1972. Available from FamilySearch genealogical website. www.familysearch.org. Accessed: March 14, 2023.

McConnell M. Ten Early Pennsylvania Families Who Lived From the Eastern Border to the Western and Gradually United by Marriage. Google Library Project (Rutgers University Dissertation Microfilms). 1975.

McCormick RP. Rutgers: A Bicentennial History. New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press and Rahway, NJ: Quinn and Boden Co. 1966. Accessed from Internet Archives (www.archives.org) on May 27, 2024

McCullough D. 1776. New York: Simon and Schuster. 2005.

McCullough D. The Pioneers: Heroic Settlers Who Brought the American Ideal West. New York: Simon and Schuster. 2019.

McKenna D. Fight for New Dixie. Washington City Paper. www.washingtoncitypaper.com. September 2, 2011. Accessed: September 30, 2024.

McLaughlin B. The Most Famous Combat Surgeon of the Revolutionary War. Mountain Man Medical. July 27, 2023. www.Mountainmanmedical.com. Accessed: August 10, 2023.

McLoughlin WG. Revivals, Awakenings and Reform: An Essay on Religion and Social Change in America, 1607-1977. Chicago, ILL: University of Chicago Press. 1980.

Merrill D. The Truman Doctrine: Containing Communism and Modernity. Presidential Studies Quarterly. 2006; 36(1): 27-37.

Michie RC. British Banking: Continuity and Change from 1694 to the Present. New York and London: Oxford University Press. 2016.

Michno GF, Michno SJ. Circle the Wagons! Attacks on Wagon Trains in History and in Hollywood Films. Chicago: McFarland Press. 2008.

Mintz MM. The Generals of Saratoga: John Burgoyne and Horatio Gates. New Haven: Yale University Press. 1990.

Moller W. West German Noble Families of the Middle Ages. Foundation for Medieval Genealogy (www.fmg.ac). Darmstadt: Verlag and Degener & Co. 1995. Available via the Center for Medieval and Renaissance Studies. Oxford University Library Accessed December 8, 2022.

Monroe JA. Colonial Delaware: A History. Delaware Heritage Commission. Wilmington: Delaware Heritage Press. 2003. Available from www.Archivesfiles.delaware.gov. Accessed: March 15, 2023.

Moore L, Ellish JJ. All Things Being Equal: the Autobiography of Lenny Moore. Champaign, ILL: Sports Publishing LLC. 2005.

Moore OF (ed.). The Rebellion Record: A Diary of American Events, with Documents, Narratives and Illustrative Incidents. The Firing on the "Star of the West" and "Captain McGowan's Report" in the January 26, 1861 edition of Harper's Weekly. New York: G.P. Putnam. 1861. Digitized by the University of Pennsylvania Library and available from www.onlinebooks.library.upenn.edu. Accessed: February 23, 2023.

Moosmuller OP. (Translated by Upton G.) Columbus' Interview With Bishop Magnus in 1477. In: Pre-Columbian Discoverers of America. Chicago: A.C. McClurg Co. 1911. Digitized in 2021 by Heritage History (www.heritage-history.com). Accessed: March 19, 2022.

Morgan A. A History of the Family of Morgan from the Year 1089 to Present Times. Original Printing: 1902. Reprinted and digitized in February 2015 by Forgotten Books USA Facsimile Publishing. Accessed from www.AbeBooks.com on January 11, 2023.

Morgan CW. Morgan: History of That Branch of the Morgan Family Beginning With James of New London. Original Printing: 1911. Reprinting and digitized in 2015 by Higginson Book Company (www.higginsonbooks.com). Accessed: December 26, 2022.

Morgan FE. A History of the Family of Colonel Morgan Morgan, the First White Settler of the State of West Virginia. Washington DC: McClain Printing. 1950 and reprinted in 1966. Digitized July, 2007 by the University of Wisconsin – Madison Press. Accessed on December 14, 2022 via www.familysearch.org.

Morgan F. Genealogy of the Colonel Morgan Morgan Family. Being a Record of Some of the Descendants of David, Zackquill and Morgan, Sons of Morgan Morgan. Parsons, West Virginia: McClain Printing. 1966.

Morgan M. Henry Hudson Visits Delaware Bay In Quest For Route to the Pacific. Delmarva Now Magazine. www.delmarva.now. September 18, 2021. Accessed June 10, 2024.

Morgan NH. A History of James Morgan of New London, CT and his Descendants from 1607 to 1869. Hartford, CT. Self-Published. 1869. Digitized and available via Internet Archive. www.achive.org. Accessed: December 19, 2022.

Morris P. But Didn't We Have Fun? A History of Baseball's Pioneer Era, 1843-1870. New York: Ivan R. Dee Books: 2008.

Morris R. Ambrose Bierce: Alone in Bad Company. London and NY: Oxford University Press. 1999.

Morrisey, B. Monmouth Courthouse 1778: The Last Great Battle in the North. Oxford, UK: Osprey Publishing. 2004.

Mosk C. Nationalism and Economic Development in Modern Eurasia. NY: Routledge. 2013.

Motley JL. History of the United Netherland. New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers. 1867. Digitized 2018. Available from www.books.google. Accessed: January 19, 2023.

Murphy AR. William Penn: A Life. New York: Oxford University Press USA. 2018.

Myhre EL. The History of Sigma Alpha Epsilon: Part One, 1856-1865. Pullman, WA: Washington State University Press. 2007.

National Archives. Records of the Office of Strategic Services. Online Exhibits. Episode 1: Truman Sides With France. Looking Back: Ho Chi Minh's Long Quest for American Support. Exhibit: Ho Chi Minh's Telegram to President Harry Truman, February 28, 1946. www.archives.gov. Accessed: July 19, 2025.

National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration (NOAA). Office for Coastal and Shoreline Management. Shoreline Mileage of the United States. www.coast.noaa.gov. July 2022. Accessed: December 5, 2023.

National Park Service (NPS). The Civil War – Facts. www.nps.gov. October 27, 2021. Accessed July 15, 2024.

Nelson WW. Colonial History of the State of New Jersey. Index: Names of Persons for Whom Marriage Licenses Were Issued by the Secretary of State or the Provincial Secretary Prior to 1784. New Jersey State Historical Society. www.StateHistory.NJ.gov. 1958. Accessed: January 5, 2023.

Nemec B. Black Pioneers and Settlers: Moses Black Harris. Portland, OR: Oregon Historical Society; Oregon History Project. www.oregonhistoryproject.org. 2019. Accessed: July 30, 2023.

Newberry J. A Little Pretty Pocket-Book, Intended for the Instruction and Amusement of Little Master Tommy, and Pretty Miss Polly with Two Letters From Jack the Giant Killer. Worcester, UK: Original Self-published by John Newberry. 1744. Reprint - New York: Harcourt Brace and World. 1967.

Newell D. The Dickinson Student After 200 Years. 49(5): 8. October 1972. www.archives.dickinson.edu. Accessed: 8/19/2024.

Newman J. The Buildings of Wales: Gwent and Monmouthshire. London: Penguin Books. 2000.

New York Passenger List, 1820-1891. Database with Digitized Images of Port of Entry Logs. *FamilySearch.* https://FamilySearch.org: February 10, 2024. Citing NARA Microfilm Publication M237. Washington D.C.

U.S. National Archives and Records Administration (NARA). [records of 13 million passengers arriving in NYC] Accessed: December 16, 2022.

New York State Library. New Netherland Institute and Research Center. Cornelius Jacobsen Mey. Director of New Netherland. www.nysl.nysed.gov. March, 2011. Accessed: June 25. 2023.

New York Times. One-Third of Americans Killed in Vietnam are Draftees. February 12, 1970; Page 12. www.nytimes.com. Accessed: July 6, 2025.

New York Times Obituaries. January 18, 1891. Obituary: Captain John McGowan, USRMS, Elizabeth City, New Jersey. www.nytimes.com/archives. Accessed: September 3, 2023.

New York Times Obituaries. Obituary: January 19, 1875. Obituary: William H. Aspinwall. www.nytimes.com/archives. Accessed: July 20, 2023.

Nichol S. MacQueen's Legacy: Ships and Crews of the Royal Steam Mail Line. Brimscombe Port, UK and Charleston SC: Tempus Publishing. 2001.

Nuckels WT, Cameron RS. United States Army Infantry Branch History Division. Don't Harness an Ox to a Racehorse: Get the M113 Out of the Armored Brigade Combat Team. www.benning.army.mil. 1998. Accessed: August 15, 2025.

Nyo YL. Before the Revolution: The Vietnamese Peasants Under the French. New York: Columbia University Press. 1991.

North Sea Flood. Encyclopedia Britannica Online. www.britannica.com. January 24, 2023. Accessed: May 27, 2024.

Obituary: George E. Haynesworth. January 12, 1888. The Calhoun Times. Calhoun-Gordon County Obituaries Project. Digital Library of Georgia (www.dlg.usg.edu). Georgia Public Library Service. University System of Georgia. Accessed: September 21, 2023.

O'Brian P. Feudalism in Medieval Europe. NY: Cavendish Square. 2016.

O'Brien H. Miles Morgan, Intrepid Explorer from Tredegar House. www.WalesOnline.com.uk. October 15, 2015. Accessed: April 21, 2023.

O'Brien, T. The Things They Carried. Meerut, India: Flamingo Publications. 1991.

O'Callaghan EB. History of New Netherland, or New York Under the Dutch. NY: Appleton & Company; 1848. Available from Internet Archive. www.archive.org. Accessed: January 20, 2023.

O'Callaghan EB. Laws and Ordinances of New Netherland, 1638-1674. Albany: Wood, Parsons Co. 1868. Digitized 2022 by Appleton and Company; available from www.books.google. Accessed: January 20, 2023.

Official Website of the Delaware Tribe of Indians. www.delawaretribe.org. The Walking Purchase of 1686 and 1737. Accessed May 29, 2024.

O'Hare M. How the Stunning Earthrise Became the World's Most Famous Photograph. New Scientist. www.newscientist.com. December 18, 2018. Accessed January 5, 2025.

O'Hare S. Genealogy and History. Common Place: The Journal of Early American Life. www.commonplace.com. 2002: 22(3): 17-31.

O'Nan S. The Circus Fire: The Story of an American Tragedy. New York: Knopf Doubleday Publishing Group. 2008.

O'Shaughnessy AJ. The Men Who Lost America. British Leadership, the American Revolution, and the Fate of the Empire. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press. 2014.

Palmer T. Field Guide to Oregon Rivers. Corvallis, OR: Oregon State University Press. 2014

Palmquist PE, Kalbourn TR. Pioneer Photographers from the Mississippi to the Continental Divide: 1839-1865. Stanford, California: Stanford University Press. 2005.

Papas P. Renegade Revolutionary: The Life of General Charles Lee. New York: NYU Press. 2014.

Parmenter JW. Separate Vessels. The Worlds of the Seventeenth Century Hudson Valley, and Other Lands to the South. Binghamton, NY: SUNY Press. 2014.

Parker R. Uprooted: Shipment of Poor Children to Canada, 1867-1891. Bristol: Policy Press. 2010.

Parker JC. Parker's Guide to the Revolutionary War in South Carolina. Atlanta: Infinity Publishing. 2014.

Patrick H. Dictionary of Family Names. Volume 2. London and Oxford: University Press 2003.

Pennock CD. On Savage Shores: How Indigenous Americans Discovered Europe. Washington D.C.: National Geographic Books. 2023.

Peterson J. The Ambush. Minnesota Remembers Vietnam. The Story Wall. www.mnvietnam.org. January 2016. Accessed: August 11, 2025.

Pingenot BE. The Great Wagon Expedition of 1850. Southwestern History Quarterly. 1994; 98: 183-225.

Phillips J. 1890 and 1892 Linn County, Oregon Tax Papers. Report by WG Obenauer, County Tax Assessor. Linn County Oregon Genealogy Trails. Genealogy Trails History Group. 2022. www.genealogytrails.com. Accessed: April 14, 2023.

Porter KW. The Black Seminoles: History of a Freedom-Seeking People. Gainesville, Fl. University Press of Florida. 2013.

Powell K. Why Mormons Research Their Ancestors. Learn Religions. www.learnreligions.com. Accessed May 1, 2024.

Preston DL. Braddock's Defeat: The Battle of the Monongahela and the Road to Revolution. Oxford: Oxford University Press. 2015.
Pucha FP. American Indian Treaties: History of a Political Anomaly. Berkeley, CA: University of California Press. 1997.

Quinn DB. Columbus and the North: England, Iceland and Ireland. William and Mary Quarterly. 1992; 49(2): 278-297.

Ragan OG. History of Lewis County, Kentucky. Cincinnati, Ohio: Jennings Graham Press. 1912. Digitized and available online from Alpha Edition Books and MyPrepbooks (www.myprepbooks.com). Accessed: April 2, 2023.

Rattiner D. An Amazing Journey: How Adriaen Block Discovered Montauk for Europe. www.danspapers.com. December 14, 2018. Accessed: June 3, 2023.

Rau WW. Surviving The Oregon Trail – 1852. As Told by Mary Ann and Willis Boatman and Augmented With Accounts by Other Overland Travelers. Corvallis, Oregon: Oregon State University, Oregon Trail Historical Museum and Collection. 1894. Reprinted by Washington State University Press. April, 2001. www.wsupress.wsu.edu. Reprint available from Internet Archive (www.archive.org). Accessed: March 28, 2023.

Records of U.S. Forces in Southeast Asia. Army Build-Up Progress Reports, 1965-1969. Military Sea Transport System. Department of Defense Pacific Command; Military Assistance Command Vietnam Studies and Analysis Unit. National Archives Record Group 472. National Archives ID 2749574. U.S. National Archives. www.archives.gov. Accessed: July 16, 2025

Reden C. How Transatlantic History Shaped the World as We Know It: The Transatlantic Crossing. www.royalcaribbean.com. April 25, 2022. Accessed May 17, 2024.

Rice O, Brown S. West Virginia: A History (2nd ed.). Lexington: University of Kentucky Press. 1994.

Riker J. A Brief History of the Riker Family From Their First Emigration to This Country in the Year 1638 to the Present Time. New York: D. Fanshaw Printer. 1851. Digitized 2016. Accessed via Internet Archives (www.archive.org), on July 5, 2013.

Ripley WZ. The Races of Europe: A Sociological Study. NY: Appleton and Company. 1899. Accessed via Google Books at www.books.google.com on April 18, 2024.

Rittner D. Adriaen Block and the Onrust: Setting the Stage for the Dutch Colonization of North America. 2016. Available via Amazon Prime. www.amazon.com.

Roach ME. The Salem Witch Trials: A Day-By-Day Chronicle of a Community Under Siege. Boulder, CO: Taylor Trade Publishing. 2004.

Roach ME. Six Women of Salem. The Untold Story of the Accused and Their Accusers in the Salem Witch Trials. Boston, MA: De Capo Press. 2013.

Robbins WG. Oregon Donation Land Law. Oregon Encyclopedia. Project of the Oregon Historical Society. 2021. www.oregonencyclopedia.org. Accessed: April 7, 2023.

Roberts CV, Ely WS. Early Friends Families of Upper Bucks County, With Some Accounts of Their Descendants. Philadelphia PA: Genealogical Publishing Co. 1925. Available via www.familysearch.org.

Roos D. How Crude Smallpox Inoculations Helped George Washington Win the War. History. www.history.com. June 20, 2023. Accessed: June 21, 2024.

Rosebaum DE. Use of Grads by Army is Limited. New York Times. June 17, 1970. www.nytimes.com. Accessed: August 5, 2025.

Ross CK. Outside the Lines: African Americans and the Integration of the NFL. Chapter 7. The Integration of the Washington Redskins. New York: New York University Press. 2022

Royle T. Civil War: The Wars of the Three Kingdoms. New York and London: Abacus Books. 2005.

Ruddock AA. Columbus and Iceland: New Light on An Old Problem. The Geographical Journal. 1970; 136(2): 177-189. www.Jstor.org. Accessed October 11, 2024.

Rydstrom H. Politics of Colonial Violence: Gendered Atrocities in French Occupied Vietnam. European Journal of Women's Studies. 1-17. 2014. Accessed July 17, 2025

Saberton I. The Cornwallis Papers. The Campaigns of 1780 and 1781 in the Southern Theatre of the American Revolution. London: The Naval and Military Press. 2010.

Rudnick A. Humor and Horror: Printed Propaganda During WWI. New York: The Metropolitan Museum of Art Bulletin. December 28, 2017. From the Series: WWI and the Visual Arts. www.metmuseum.org. Accessed: November 12, 2023.

Sainsbury WN. (ed.) Dutch National Archives. Archives of the States General - Calendar of Dutch State Papers, Reports, Notes and Archives; the Colonial Series, 1574-1660. In: State Papers Department of the Royal Dutch Public Records Office. Dutch to English Translation. London. 11th edition. 1972. Digitized by Forgotten Books on August 24, 2018 and accessed from www.forgottenbooks.com on January 17, 2023.

Salter E, Beekman GC. Old Times in Old Monmouth. Historical Reminiscences of Old Monmouth county, New Jersey. Originally self-published in 1887. Digitized by Forgotten Books in 2018. Accessed via Internet Archive (www.archives.org) on June 7, 2024.

Santry C. The Family Tree Irish Genealogical Guide. www.books.google.co.uk. 2017. Accessed May 28, 2024.

Savor CO. Sixteenth Century North America. The Land and The People As Seen by the Europeans. Berkley: University of California Press. 1971.

Scharf JT. History of the Confederate States Navy: From its Organization to the Surrender of the Last Vessel. Fairfax, VA: Fairfax Press. 1977.

Schenck AD. (Augustus) The Rev. William Schenck: His Ancestry and His Descendants. Washington DC: Rufus Darby Publisher. Originally published in 1843 with updates in 1869 and 1883. Re-released by Higginson Book Company (www.higginson.com) in 2015 and also available at Google Books. (www.books.google.com) Accessed: December 3, 2022.

Schenck AD. (Alexander) The Blyenbeck and Afferden Branch of the Family of Schenck van Nydeck From the Family of Schenck van Nydeggen. Original: Cologne, Germany. 1860. [Printer unknown]. Accessed from Internet Archive (www.archive.org) on May 17, 2024.

Schenck AD. (Alexander) The Blyenbeck and Afferden Branch of the Family of Schenck Van Nydeck (with additional Information on Roelef Schenck, who came to Long Island in 1650). Hampton, Virginia: Normal School Press and Printing. 1885. Reprinted by Higginson Book Company (www.higginson.com) in 2017 and also available at the WorldCat Digital Library Catalog. www.searchworldcat.org. Accessed: January 8, 2023.

Schenck RB. The Ancestors and Descendants of Rulef Schenck, A Genealogy of the Onondaga County New York Branch of the Schenck Family. From records and notes complied by A.A. Schenck. Detroit, Michigan. 1911. Accessed via wikitree (www.wikitree.com) site for Christianhus Schenck, aka Pincerna de Nideke (Nydeggan in medieval Dutch) on March 13, 2023.

Schermund E. Minority Soldiers Fighting in the Vietnam War. New York: Cavendish Square. 2017

Schmidt B. Innocence Abroad: The Dutch Imagination and The New World; 1570-1670. Cambridge: University Press. 2001.

Schultz APKE. Race or Mongrel: A Theory That the Fall of Nations is Due to the Intermarriage of Alien Stocks. Boston, MA: LC Page and Company. 1908 (3rd ed.). Digitized in 2010 and available via Harvard University Library, CURIOSity Collection (www.curiosity.lib.Harvard.edu). Accessed April 29, 2024.

Schumm L. America's Patriotic Victory Gardens. History. www.history.com. September 1, 2018. Accessed: April 13, 2023.

Seelinger MJ. M113 Armored Personal Carrier. The Army Historical Foundation. www.armyhistory.org. October 9, 2016. Accessed: August 18, 2025.

Shattuck MD. A Civil Society: Court and Community in Beverwijck, New Netherland, 1652-1674. Boston: Boston University Press. 1993.

Shaw B. The Whitest Huddle of Any Team in the League. Boundary Stones. www.weta.org. August 14, 2015. Accessed: September 30, 2024.

Shephard C, Taylor B. Intercollegiate Rowing Association Regatta Results, 1871-1981. Rowing Association of American Colleges. May 5, 2008. www.irarowing.com. Accessed: March 27, 2023.

Silverman K. The Life and Times of Cotton Mather. New York: Welcome Rain Publishers. 2002.

Sims-Williams P. The Book of Llandaff as a Historical Source. Suffolk: Boydell and Brewer. 2019.

Sinclair DA, Stakes AL. Hendrickson Genealogy in Monmouth County, New Jersey. Boston: New England Historic and Genealogical Society (www.americanancestors.org). 1936. Accessed from www.americanancestors.com on December 7, 2022.

Six Mile Run Historic District. www.visitsomersetnj.org. New Jersey Department of Travel and Tourism. Accessed June 29, 2013.

Slawson RG. Medical Training in the United States Prior to the Civil War. J Evidence-based, Complementary and Alternative Medicine. 2012; 17(1): 11-27.

Slater J. The Domino Theory and International Politics: The Case of Vietnam. Security Studies. 1993; 3(2): 186-224. Accessed: July 12, 2025.

Smith Barney Inc. Company History. Funding Universe – Company Profiles. 2021. www.fundinguniverse.com/companies-histories/. Accessed: March 13, 2023.

Smith Barney: The Early Years. Ten Decades of Continuity and Change. Smith Barney Forum. May-June 1973. In: International Directory of Company Histories. Vol. 15. St. James, MO: St. James Press. 1996.

Smith D. Whispers Across the Atlantick: General William Howe and the American Revolution, London: Bloomsbury Press. 2017.

Smith G. Showdown: JFK and the Integration of the Washington Redskins. Boston, MA: Beacon Press. 2011.

Smith TG. Civil Rights on the Gridiron. (Page 2 Goes to Washington). ESPN Page 2. www.espn.com. 2012.

Smithsonian National Postal Museum. www.postalmuseum.si.edu. The Art of Cards and Letters: V-Mail. Accessed: August 22, 2024.

"Smoke Em if You've Got Em." Army Historical Foundation. www.armyhistory.org. Accessed September 9, 2024.

Smolinski R, Minkema KF. A Cotton Mather Reader. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press. 2022.

Socolow MJ. Live From "America's Rhineland": The Poughkeepsie Regatta and Early American Network Sports Broadcasting, 1925 – 1940. J Sport History. 2016; 43(2): 149-167.

Southern RW. The Making of the Middle Ages. New York: Yale University Press. 1953. Re-published and digitized by Yale University Press in 1993. Available from www.yalebooks.yale.edu.

Spijkerman H. The Amsterdam Municipal Archives: A Source for the History of the United States of America. American Archivist. 1989; 52: 88-93.

Spiro J. Defending the Master Race: Conservation, Eugenics and the Legacy of Madison Grant. Boston: University Press of New England. 2009.

Spraker HA. A Genealogical History of the Descendants of George and Mary Boone Who Came to America in 1717. Rutland, VT: The Tuttle Company Publishers. 1922. Digitized edition produced in 2018 by Forgotten Books. Accessed from www.books.google.com on June 19, 2023.

Stebbins SJ. Pocahontas: Her Life and Legend. National Park Service. U.S. Department of the Interior Publications. 2010.

Stapleton T. Magni Rotuli Scaccarii Normaniae sub Regibus Angliae (Great Rolls of the Board of Normandy and the Kings of England) Volumes I and II. London: Society of Antiquaries. Original Printing: 1841. Reprinted by Biblio in 2007 (www.biblio.com). Digitized by Internet Archive on March 3, 2011. Accessed from Internet Archive (www.archive.org) on January 6, 2023.

Stapler M. “Adriaen Block”. Society of Colonial Wars in State of Connecticut. www.colonialwarsct.org. 2011. Accessed: June 9, 2023.

State of Washington. Governor’s Office of Indian Affairs (www.goia.gov). Treaty of Walla Walla, 1855. Accessed: May 23, 2024.

Stefansaon V. Ultima Thule: Further Mysteries of the Artic. New York: MacMillan Company. 1944. Digital version available from Barnes and Noble Nook for the Web. www.nook.barnesandnoble.com. Accessed October 17, 2024.

Stewart LS. Deception and the Battle of Yorktown. U.S. Army Intelligence Center of Excellence. Fort Huachuca, AZ. October 18, 2022. www.army.mil.>USAICoE. Accessed: July 22, 2023.

Strachen H. The First World War in Africa. New York: Oxford University Press. 2004.

Stryker WS. Adjutant General, New Jersey Adjutant General’s Office. Official Register of the Officers and Men of New Jersey in the Revolutionary War. Trenton, NJ: T. Nicholson and Co. Publishing. 1872. Accessed via the New Jersey State Library (www.nystatelib.org) on June 26, 2024.

Sugden J. Sir Francis Drake. London: Henry Holt and Company. 1991.

Swanberg WA. First Blood: The Story of Fort Sumter. New York: Charles Scribner Books. 1957. Accessed via Google Books. www.books.google.com on June 7, 2023.

Sypher FJ. The First Families: News From New Netherland. New Amsterdam History Center. www.newamsterdamhistorycenter.org. February 10, 2016. Accessed: June 8, 2023.

Syracuse University News. Stories of Service: Ernie Davis ’62. www.news.syr.edu. November 24, 2020. Accessed: September 28, 2024

Tantillo, LF. Visions of New York State. Ellenville, NY: Shawangunk Press. 1996.

Talley W. Oke “Okey” Hendricson: Patriot and Pioneer of Popular Flat. The Lewis County Herald. www.Lewiscountyherald.com. April 30, 2002.

Teague BT. Cane Creek, Mother of Meetings. Greensboro NC: North Carolina Friends Historical Society. Annals of the 1994 North Carolina Yearly Meeting of Friends. 1995.

Teipe EJ. Will the Real Molly Pitcher Please Stand up? Prologue. 1999; 31(2). Accessed via Internet Archive www.archive.com on June 24, 2024.

Terrel R. Here Are the Best of the Ivies. Sports Illustrated. November 30, 1959. www.vault.si.com. Accessed: March 29, 2023.

Tepper M, Fellows-Bailey R. Immigrants to New Netherland. Lists of Passengers 1654-1664. New York Genealogical and Biographical Records. 1974; 94(4): 193-200.

Thompson HA. Speaking Out: Activism and Protest in the 1960s and 1970s. London: Pearson Higher Education. 2009.

Todt KR. Countries Without Borders – Marketing With Opportunities. Dutch Trading Networks in Early North America. 1626-1670. Cornell University Dissertation Archives. 2012.

Trafzer C. Walla Walla Treat Council 1855. Oregon Encyclopedia. A Project of the Oregon Historical Society (www.oregonencyclopedia.org). September 26, 2023. Accessed: May 23, 2024.

Trafzer C, Scheuerman R. Renegade Tribe: The Palouse Indians and the Invasion of the Inland Pacific Northwest. Pullman, WA: Washington State University Press. 1986.

Tuchman B. The Zimmermann Telegram. New York: Ballantine Books. 1958.

Tucker PT. George Washington's Surprise Attack: A New Look at the Battle that Decided the Fate of America. New York: Skyhorse Publishing. 2014.

Tucker ST. Blue and Gray Navies: The Civil War Afloat. Annapolis: Naval Institute Press. 2006.

Twain M, Warner CD. The Gilded Age: A Tale of Today. Hartford, CT: American Publishing Company. 1873.

Ullah R, Adnan S, Afzal AS. Top-Cited Articles from Dental Education Journals: A Bibliometric Analysis. Journal of Dental Education. 2019; 83(12): 1382-1391.

United Kingdom Merchant Navy Seaman Records, 1835-1941. Database and Images. Findmypast. http://findmypast.com. The National Archives of the UK. Kew, Surrey. Accessed: May 7, 2023.

United States Senate. Senate Historical Office. www.senate.gov. Landmark Legislation: The Fourteenth Amendment. Accessed: October 8, 2024.

U.S. Department of Commerce. Bureau of the Census. 1970 Census of Population and Educational Attainment by Age, Gender and Race for the United States, 1970. Washington D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office. July 1970. www.census.gov. Accessed: August 10, 2025.

U.S. Department of Commerce. Bureau of the Census. Vietnam Conflict – U.S. Military Forces in Vietnam and Casualties incurred: 1961 to 1972. Washington D.C.: U.S. Department of Commerce. Bureau of the Census. 1980. www.census.gov. Accessed: August 10, 2025.

U.S. National Archives. Military Records Research. Vietnam War U.S. Military Fatal Casualty Statistics. Defense Casualty Analysis System Extract Files. April 29, 2008. www.archives.gov. Accessed: September 17, 2025.

Unger HG. The Last Founding Father: James Monroe and a Nation's Call to Greatness. New York: Da Capo Press. 2009.

Unger RW. Dutch Shipbuilding in the Golden Age. History Today. 1981; 34(1): 29-46.

Unruh JD. The Plains Across: The Overland Emigrants and the Trans-Mississippi West: 1840-1860. Urbana: University of Illinois Press. 1993.

Utley RM. After Lewis and Clark: Mountain Men and the Path to the Pacific. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press. 2004.

Vallance E. The Glorious Revolution: 1688 - Britain's Fight for Liberty. Boston: Little Brown. 2006

van den Broek O. Maarten Schenck van Nijdeggen: Career in War Time. Boxmeer, NL: Van Dinter Media. 2016.

van der Dussen WFGL (Willem Frederic George Lodewijk). Genealogy of the Old and Very Illustrious Family of Schenck van Nydeck (Nydegge) Beginning with Year 1368. Nijmegan, Netherlands: 256 hand-written pages (self-printed). 1872. Housed at Brooklyn, NY Museum Libraries. Special Collections. www.brooklynmuseum.org. Accessed December 1, 2022.

Van Kirk S. Many Tender Ties: Women in Fur-Trade Society, 1670-1870. Norman OK: University of Oklahoma Press. 1984.

Van Lier AJF, Pearson J. Early Records of the City of Albany and Colony of Rensselaerswyck. Volume 3. Albany, New York: University of the State of New York. 1918. Digitized by HathiTrust (www.catalog.hathitrust.org) in 2007. Accessed via www.library.upenn.edu on April 4, 2023.

Varekamp JC. Adriaen Block, the Discovery of Long Island Sound and the New Netherlands Colony. Middletown, CT: Wesleyan University Publication. 2011. Accessed June 2, 2024 via www.savethesound.org.

Vere F. Salt in Their Blood. The Lives of Famous Dutch Admirals. London: Cassell & Co. 1955. Available from Amazon www.amazon.com.

Vergon D. Film Director Stone Was a Soldier in Vietnam. DOD News. www.defense.gov. January 22, 2022. Accessed: September 1, 2025.

Vinaver E. The Works of Sir Thomas Malory (3rd ed.). Oxford: Oxford University Press. 1990.

Wadsworth J, Crick W. A Hundred Years of Joint Stock Banking. London: Hodder & Stoughton Pub. 1936. Digitized by Cambridge University Press (www.cambridge.org). Accessed: April 13, 2023.

Waite J. The End of the First Indochina War: A Global History. Routledge Studies on History and Globalization. Milton Park, Abington, Oxfordshire, U.K.: Routledge. 2012.

Walla Walla Union-Bulletin Archives, 1944. www.wallawallaunionbulletin.newspaperarchives.com. Accessed October 2, 2024.

Ward C. The Dutch and Swedes on the Delaware 1609-1664. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press. 1930. Accessed June 2, 2024 via www.archivesfiles.delaware.gov.

Ward M, Kratz J. Vietnam: The First Television War. National Archives: Pieces of History. Remembering Vietnam. www.blogs.archives.gov. January 25, 2018. Accessed: August 9, 2025.

Watson W. Recollections of the 1969 Draft Lottery. The Telegraph. www.thetelegraph.com. November 15, 2015. Accessed: July 4, 2025.

Weiner R, Arnold JR. Delaware: The History of the Delaware Colony, 1638-1776. Heinemann and Raintree Publications. 2004.

Wells SR. How to Read Character: A New Illustrated Handbook of Phrenology and Physiognomy, with a Descriptive Chart. New York: Fowler and Wells Publishers. 1885. Available from APA PsycBooks website (www.psycnet.apa.org). Accessed April 19, 2024.

What Did Vietnam Soldiers Carry? Charlie Company Vietnam 1966-1972. www.charliecompany.com. January 19, 2013. Accessed: July 21, 2025.

Willbanks JH. The Tet Offensive: A Concise History. New York: Columbia University Press. 2007.

Whitaker W. Centennial History of Alamance County Historical Association. Burlington NC: Alamance County Historical Association. 1974.

Wickwire F, Wickwire M. Cornwallis: The American Adventure. Boston: Houghton Mifflin. 1970.

Willamette Valley Historical Society; Heritage Center. www.williametteheritage.org. Portrait and Biographical Record of the Willamette Valley, Oregon. Chicago, Illinois: Chapman Publications. 1903. Available in digital format from Library of Congress (LOC). Control Number: 10023243. www.loc.org. Accessed from LOC on March 29, 2023.

Williams J. The Curious Mystery of the Cotswold "Olimpick" Games: Did Shakespeare Know Dover, and Does it Matter? Sport in History. 2009; 29(2): 150-170.

Windrow M. The French Indochina War, 1946-1954. Oxford, U.K.: Osprey Publishing. 1998.

Witcover J. Sabotage at Black Tom: Imperial Germany's Secret War in America, 1914-1917. Chapel Hill, NC: Algonquin Books of Chapel Hill. 1989.

Weslager CA. Dutch Explorers, Traders and Settlers in the Delaware Valley, 1609-1664. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press. 1961. Digitized and available via The Ohio Digital Library (www.ohdbks.overdrive.com). Accessed: March 11, 2023.

Wilson L. From Buryan to Bondi: The Dennis Family of Cornwall and Some Australian Descendants. Amazon: Goodreads.com (https://www.goodreads.com). 2016.

Wojick, DM. The Brazen Overlanders of 1845. Portland, OR: Heritage Books Inc. 1992.

Yeung AWK, Tanaka R, Leung WK. Top 102 Most Cited Publications Relevant to Dental Education. Current Dentistry. 2021; 3(1): 46-59.

Young M. The Vietnam Wars: 1945-1990. New York: HarperPerennial Publishing. 1991.

Ziemke EF. The U.S. Army in the Occupation of Germany, 1944-1946. Center for Military History. Washington DC: U.S. Government Printing Office. 1975.

Ziobro M. "Skirted Soldiers." The Women's Army Corp and Gender Integration of the U.S. Army During World War Two. Army Historical Association. www.armyhistory.org. Accessed: August 30, 2024.

About The Author

Bill Hendricson is 77 years old, and has been married to Susan Lienau Hendricson for 55 years. Their hobbies include gardening, finding art for their home, reading, and jigsaw puzzles. Bill and Susan are longstanding fans of University of Texas Longhorn football and San Antonio Spurs basketball. Bill published 123 journal articles and chapters on health professions education during his academic career, which have been purchased or downloaded from access sites in 188 of the 193 nations recognized by the United Nations, and cited by authors in 176 nations. Although not a physician or a dentist, he has written several of the most referenced publications pertinent to health professions education over the past 100 years. *(Yeung AWK, Tanaka R, Leung WK. Current Dentistry. 2021)* In retirement, he reviews approximately 100 manuscripts annually for six academic journals, and is a Citizen Archivist for the United States National Archives, deciphering, coding and transcribing more than 100 historical documents annually ranging from letters and records of the Revolutionary War era, to patrol reports of U.S. submarine commanders during World War Two, to accounts of UFO sightings in the 1960s, and as noted in *Billy's* story, Ho Chi Minh's post World War II correspondence with President Harry Truman and other State Department officials.